

THE
COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.

WRITTEN BY SIR
PHILIP SIDNEY
Knight.

NOW THE THIRD TIME
published, with sundry new additions
of the same Author.

LONDON
Imprinted for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini. 1598.

COVENTRY
OF THE



TO MY DEARE LADY AND
SISTER, THE COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKE.

HEre now haue you (most deare, and most
worthie to bee most deare Ladie) this idle
work of mine : which I feare (like the Spi-
ders webbe) will bee thought fitter to bee
swept away, then worne to any other pur-
pose. For my part, in very trueth (as the
cruell fathers among the Greekes, were wont to doe to the
babes they would not foster) I could well find in my heart,
to cast out in some desert of forgetfulnes this child, which I
am loth to father. But you desired me to do it, and your de-
fire, to my heart is an absolute commandement. Now, it is
done onely for you, onely to you : if you keepe it to your
selfe, or to such friends, who will weigh errors in the bal-
lance of good will, I hope, for the fathers sake, it will be par-
doned, perchance made much of, though in it selfe it haue
deformities. For indeed, for seuerer eyes it is not, being but
a trifle, and that triflingly handled. Your deare selfe can
best witnes the maner, being done in loose sheetes of paper,
most of it in your presence, the rest, by sheetes, sent vnto
you, as fast as they were done. In summe, a yong head, not
so well staied as I would it were, (and shall bee when God
will)

will)hauing many many fancies begotten in it,if it had not been in some way deliuered, would haue growne a monster, and more sory might I be that they came in, then that they gat out. But his chiefe safety, shall be the not walking abroad; and his chiefe protection, the bearing the luerie of your name; which (if much much good will do not deceiue me) is worthy to be a sanctuary for a greater offender. This say I, because I know the vertue so, and this say I, because it may be euer so, or to say better, because it will be euer so. Reade it then at your idle times, and the follies your good iudgement will finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And so, looking for no better stuffe, then, as in a Haberdashers shop, glasses, or feathers, you will continue to loue the writer, who doth exceedingly loue you, and moste moste heartilie praies you may long liue, to be a principall ornament to the family of the *Sidneis*.

Your louing brother.

Philip Sidney.



To the Reader.

TH E disfigured face, gentle Reader, where-
with this worke not long since appeared to the
common view, moued that noble Lady, to whose
Honour consecrated, to whose protection it was
committed, to take in hand the wiping away
those spots wherewith the beauties thereof were
vnworthely blemished. But as often in repairing a ruinous house,
the mending of some olde part occasioneth the making of some
new: so here her honorable labour begun in correcting the faults,
ended in supplying the defects; by the view of what was ill done,
guided to the consideration of what was not done. Which part
with what aduise entred into, with what successe it hath been pas-
sed through, most by her doing, all by her directing, if they may be
entreated not to define, which are unfurnisht of meanes to dis-
cerne, the rest (it is hoped) will fauourably censure. But this
they shall, for their better satisfaction, understand, that though
they finde not here what might be expected, they may finde neuer-
thelesse as much as was intended, the conclusion not the perfection
of Arcadia: and that no further then the Authors own writings,
or knowne determinations could direct. Whereof who sees not
the reason, must consider there may be reason which he sees not.
Albeit I dare affirme he either sees, or from wiser iudgements
then his owne may heare, that Sir Philip Sidneies writings can
no more be perfected without Sir Philip Sidney, then Apelles

To the Reader.

pictures without Apelles. There are that thinke the contrary: and no wonder. Neuer was Arcadia free from the conber of such Cattell. To vs, say they, the pastures are not pleasant: and as for the flowers, such as we light on we take no delight in, but the greater part growe not within our reach. Poore soules! what talke they of flowers? They are Roses, not flowers, must doe them good, which if they finde not here, they shall doe well to goe feed el/where: Any place will better like them: For without Arcadia nothing growes in more plentie, then Lettuce sutable to their Lippes, If it be true that likenes is a great cause of liking, and that contraries, infer contrary consequences: then is it true, that the worthles Reader can neuer worthely esteeme of so worthy a writing: and as true, that the noble, the wise, the vertuous, the curteous, as many as haue had any acquaintance with true learning and knowledge, will with all loue and dearenesse entertaine it, as well for affinitie with themselues, as being childe to such a father. Whom albeit it doe not exactly and in euery lineament represent; yet considering the fathers vntimely death preuented the timely birth of the childe, it may happily seeme a thanke-worthy labour, that the defects being so few, so small, and in no principall part, yet the greatest vnlikenes is rather in defect then in deformity. But howsoeuer it is, it is now by more then one interest The Countesse of Pembrokes Arcadia: done, as it was, for her: as it is, by her. Neither shall these pains be the last (if no vnexpected accident cut off her determination) which the cuerlasting loue of her excellent brother, will make her consecrate to his memory.

H. S.



THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA, VVRITTEN BY
SIR PHILIP SIDNEI.

The first Booke.

IT was in the time that the earth begins to put on her new apparell against the approach of her loue, and that the Sun running a most euen course, becomes an indifferent arbiter betweene the night and the day; when the hopelesse shepheard *Strephon* was come to the sands, which lie against the Island of Cithera; where viewing the place with a heauy kind of delight, and sometimes casting his eyes to the Isleward, he called his friendly riual, the pastor *Claius* vnto him, and setting first downe in his darkened countenance a
10 dolefull copie of what he would speake: O my *Claius*, saide he, hither we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are so called vnto by ouer-busie Remembrance, Remembrance, restless Remembrance, which claymes not only this dutie of vs, but for it will haue vs forget our selues. I pray you when we were amid our flocke, and that of other shepheards some were running after their sheepe strayed beyond their
15 bounds, some delighting their eyes with seeing them nibble vpon the short & sweet grasse, some medicining their sicke ewes, some setting a bell for an ensigne of a sheepish squadron, some with more leasure inuenting new games of exercising their bodies and sporting their wits: did Remembrance graunt vs any holiday, either for pastime or deuotion, nay either for necessary foode or naturall rest? but that still it
20 forced our thoughts to worke vpon this place, where we last (alas that the word last should so long last) did graze our eyes vpon her euer flourishing beautie: did it not still crie within vs? Ah you base minded wretches, are your thoughts so deeply be-
mired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for respect of gaine some paultry wooll may yeeld you, to let so much time passe without knowing perfectly her
25 estate, especially in so troublesome a season? to leaue that shore vn saluted, from whence you may see to the Island where she dwelleth? to leaue those steps vnkissed wherein *Vrania* printed the farewell of all beautie? Wel then, Remembrance commaunded, we obeyd, & here we find, that as our remembrance came euer clothed vnto vs in the forme of this place, so this place giues new heate to the feauer of our
30 languishing remembrance. Yonder my *Claius*, *Vrania* lighted, the verie horse (me thought) bewayled to be so disburnd: and as for thee, poore *Claius*, when thou wentst to help her downe, I saw reuerence and desire so deuide thee, that thou didst at one instant both blush and quake, and in stead of bearing her, weart readie to fall

down thy selfe. There she sate, vouchsafing my cloake (then most gorgeous) vnder her: at yonder rising of the ground shee turned her selfe, looking backe toward her wonted abode, and because of her parting, bearing much sorrow in her eyes, the lightfomnesse whereof had yet so naturall a cherefulnesse, as it made euen sorrow seeme to smile; at that turning shee spake to vs all, opening the cherrie of her lips, 5 and Lord how greedily mine eares did feed vpon the sweete words she vttered? And here she laide her hand ouer thine eyes, when shee saw the teares springing in them, as if shee would conceale them from other, and yet her selfe feelee some of thy sorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did shee put her foote into the boate, at that instant, as it were diuiding her heauenly beautie, betweene the Earth and the Sea. 10 But when she was imbarcked, did you not marke how the windes whistled, and the seas daunst for ioy, how the sailes did swell with pride, & all because they had *Vrania*? O *Vrania*, blessed be thou *Vrania*, the sweetest fairnesse and fairest sweetnesse: with that word his voice brake so with sobbing, that he could say no further; and *Claius* thus answered; Alas my *Strephon* (said he) what needes this skore to reckon 15 vp onely our losses? What doubt is there, but that the sight of this place doth call our thoughts to appeare at the court of affection, held by that racking steward, Remembrance? Aswell may sheepe forget to feare when they spie wolues, as we can misse such fancies, when we see any place made happie by her treading. Who can choose that saw her but thinke where she stayed, where she walkt, where she turned, 20 where she spoke? But what is all this? truely no more, but as this place serued vs to thinke of those things, so those things serue as places to call to memorie more excellent matters. No, no, let vs thinke with consideration, and consider with acknowledging, & acknowledge with admiration, & admire with loue, and loue with ioy in the midst of all woes: let vs in such sort thinke, I say, that our poore eyes were so in- 25 riched as to behold, & our lowe hearts so exalted as to loue a maide, who is such, that as the greatest thing the world can shewe, is her beautie, so the least thing that may be praised in her, is her beautie. Certainly as her eye-lids are more pleasant to behold, then two white kiddes climbing vp a faire tree, and browsing on his tendrest branches, and yet are nothing, compared to the day-shining starres contained in 30 them; and as her breath is more sweete then a gentle South-west wind, which comes creeping ouer flowrie fieldes and shadowed waters in the extreame heate of sommer, and yet is nothing, compared to the hony flowing speach that breath doth carrie: no more all that our eyes can see of her (though when they haue seene her, what else they shall euer see is but drie stubble after clouers grasse) is to be matched with 35 the flocke of vnspeakeable vertues, laid vp delightfully in that best builded fold. But in deed as we can better consider the sunnes beautie, by marking how he guildes these waters and mountaines, then by looking vpon his owne face, too glorious for our weake eyes: so it may be our conceits (not able to beare her sun-stayning excellencie) will better way it by her workes vpon some meaner subiect employed. And 40 alas, who can better wnesse that then we, whose experience is grounded vpon feeling? hath not the onely loue of her made vs (being silly ignorant shepheards) raise vp our thoughts aboue the ordinary leuell of the world, so as great clearks doe not disdaine our conference? hath not the desire to seeme worthie in her eyes, made vs when others were sleeping, to sit viewing the course of heauens? when others were running at base, to runne ouer learned writings? when other marke their sheepe, 45 we to marke our selues? hath not she throwne reason vpon our desires, and, as it were giuen eyes vnto *Cupid*? hath in any, but in her, loue-fellowship maintained friendship

friendship between riuals, & beautie taught the beholders chastitie? He was going on with his praises, but *Strephon* bad him stay, and looke: and so they both perceiued a thing which floated drawing nearer and nearer to the banke; but rather by the favourable working of the Sea, then by any self industrie. They doubted a while what it should be; till it was cast vp euen hard before them: at which time they fully saw that it was a man. Whereupon running for pitie sake vnto him, they found his hands (as it should appeare, constanter friends to his life than his memorie) fast griping vpon the edge of a square small coffer, which lay all vnder his breast: els in him selfe no shew of life, so as the boord seemed to be but a beere to carrie him a land to his
 10 Sepulcher. So drew they vp a yong man of so goodly shape, & well pleasing fauour, that one would thinke death had in him a louely countenance; and, that though he were naked, nakednesse was to him an apparell. That sight increased their compassion, and their compassion called vp their care; so that lifting his feete aboue his head, making a great deale of salt water come out of his mouth, they layd him vpon
 15 some of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recover both breath the seruant, and warmth the companion of liuing. At length opening his eyes, he gaue a great groan, (a doleful note but a pleasant dittie) for by that, they found not onely life, but strength of life in him. They therefore continued on their charitable office, vntil (his spirits being well returned,) he (without so much as
 20 thanking them for their paines) gate vp, and looking round about to the vttermost limits of his sight, and crying vpon the name of *Pyrocles*, nor seeing nor hearing cause of comfort, what (said he) and shall *Musidorus* liue after *Pyrocles* destruction? therewithall hee offered wilfully to cast himselfe againe into the sea: a strange sight to the shepheards, to whom it seemed, that before being in apparance dead, had yet
 25 saued his life, and now coming to his life, should be a cause to procure his death; but they ranne vnto him, and pulling him back (then too feeble for them) by force stickled that vnnaturall fray. I pray you (said he) honest men, what such right haue you in me, as not to suffer me to do with my selfe what I list? and what pollicie haue you to bestowe a benefite where it is counted an iniury? They hearing him speake
 30 in Greeke (which was their naturall language) became the more tender hearted towards him; and considering by his calling, and looking, that the losse of some deare friend was great cause of his sorrow; tolde him, they were poore men that were bounde by course of humanitie to preuent so great a mischiefe; and that they wisht him, if opinion of some bodies perishing bred such desperate anguish in him, that
 35 he should be comforted by his own prooffe, who had lately escaped as apparant danger as any might be. No, no (said he) it is not for me to attend so high a blissefulness: but since you take care of me, I pray you find meanes that some Barke may be provided, that wil go out of the hauen, that if it be possible we may find the bodie farre farre too precious a food for fishes: and for the hire (said he) I haue within this casket, of value sufficient to content them. *Claius* presently went to a Fisherman, & ha-
 40 uing agreed with him, & provided some apparell for the naked stranger, he imbar- ked, & the Shepheards with him: and were no sooner gone beyond the mouth of the hauen, but that some way into the sea they might discern (as it were) a staine of the waters colour, & by times some sparkes & smoke mounting thereout. But the yong
 45 man no sooner saw it, but that beating his breast, he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, intreating them to bend their course as neere vnto it as they could: telling, how that smoke was but a small relique of a great fire, which had dri- uen both him & his friend rather to commit themselues to the cold mercie of the

sea, than to abide the hot crueltie of the fire : and that therefore though they both had abandoned the ship, that he was (if any where) in that course to be met withall. They steared therefore as neare thither-ward as they could : but when they came so near as their eies were full masters of the obiekt, they saw a sight full of piteous strange-
 nesse : a ship, or rather the carkas of the ship, or rather some few bones of the carkas, 5
 hulling there, part broken, part burned, part drowned : death hauing vsed more than one dart to that destruction. About it floted great store of very rich things, and many chestes which might promise no lesse. And amidst the precious things were a number of dead bodies, which likewise did not only testifie both elements violence, but that the chiefe violence was growne of humane inhumanity : for their bodies 10
 were full of grisly wounds, and their bloud had (as it were) filled the wrinkles of the seas visage : which it seemed the sea would not wash away, that it might witnesse it is not alwaies his fault, when we condemne his crueltie. In summe, a defeate, where the conquered kept both field and spoile : a shipwrack without storme or ill footing : and a wast of fire in the midst of the water.

But a little way off they saw the mast, whose proude height now lay along ; like a widdow hauing lost her make of whom she held her honour : but vpon the mast they saw a yong man (at least if hee were a man) bearing shew of about 18. yeares of age, who sate (as on horsebacke) hauing nothing vpon him but his shirt, which being wrought with blew silke and gold ; had a kind of resemblance to the sea : on which 20
 the sun (then neare his Westerne home) did shoote some of his beames. His haire (which the young man of Greece vsed to weare very long) was stirred vp and downe with the wind, which seemed to haue a sport to play with it, as the sea had to kisse his feete ; himselfe full of admirable beautie, set foorth by the strangenesse both of his seate and gesture : for, holding his head vp full of vn moued maiestie, he held a sword 25
 aloft with his faire arme, which often he waued about his crowne, as though he wold threaten the world in that extremitie. But the fishermen, when they came so neare him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which ho'd they might draw him, their simplicity bred such amasement, and their amasement such superstition, that (assuredly thinking it was some God begotten betweene *Neptune* & *Venus*, that had 30
 made all this terrible slaughter) as they went vnder saile by him, held vp their hands and made their praiers. Which when *Musidorus* saw, though he were almost as much rauished with ioy, as they with astonishment, he leapt to the Mariner, and tooke the cord out of his hand and (saying, dost thou liue, and art well ? who answered, thou canst tell best, since most of my well being stands in thee,) threwe it out, but al- 35
 readie the shippe was past beyond *Pyrocles* : and therefore *Musidorus* could doe no more but perswade the Mariners to cast about againe, assuring them that he was but a man, although of most deuine excellencies, and promising great rewards for their paine.

And now they were alreadie come vpon the staies ; when one of the sailers descried 40
 a Galley which came with sailes and oares directly in the chafe of them ; and streight perceiued it was a wel knowne Pirate, who hunted not only for goods but for bodies of men, which he emploied either to be his Galley slaues, or to sell at the best market. Which when the Maister vnderstood, he commaunded soorthwith to set on all the canuasse they could, and flie homeward, leauing in that sort poore 45
Pyrocles so neare to be rescued. But what did not *Musidorus* saie ? what did he not offer to perswade them to venture the fight ? But feare standing at the gates of their cares, put backe all perswasions : so that he had nothing wherewith to accompanie

Pyrocles,

Pyrocles, but his eyes; nor to succour him, but his wishes. Therefore praying for him, and casting a long looke that way, he saw the Galley leaue the pursuite of them, and turne to take vp the spoiles of the other wracker: and lastly he might well see them lift vp the young man; and alas (said hee to himselfe) deare *Pyrocles* shall that body of
 5 thine be enchained? shall those victorious hâds of thine be cōmanded to base offices? shall vertue becōe a slaue to those that be slaues to viciousnesse? Alas, better had it bin thou hadst ended nobly thy noble daies: what death is so euil as vnworthy seruitude? But that opinion soone ceased, when he saw the gallie setting vpon another shippe, which held long and strong fight with her: for then he began afresh to feare the life
 10 of his friend, & to wish well to the Pirates whom before he hated, least in their ruine he might perish. But the fishermen made such speede into the hauen, that they absented his eyes from beholding the issue: where being entred, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themselves into the sea: so that being as ful of sorrow for being vnable to do any thing, as voide of counsell how to do any thing,
 15 besides, that sicknesse grew something vpon him, the honest shepheards *Strephon* & *Claius* (who being themselves true friends, did the more perfectly iudge the iustnesse of his sorrow) aduise him, that he should mitigate somewhat of his woe, since he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from assured perswasion of his death, to haue no cause to dispaire of his life: as one that had lamented the death of his
 20 sheepe, should after know they were but straied, would receiue pleasure though readily he knew not where to find them.

Now sir (said they) thus for our selues it is; We are in profession but shepheards, and in this countrie of Laconia little better then straungers, and therefore neither in skill, nor ability of power greatly to stead you. But what we can present vnto you
 25 is this: Arcadia, of which countrie we are, is but a little way hence; and euen vpon the next confines there dwelleth a Gentleman, by name *Kalander*, who vouchsafeth much fauour vnto vs: A man who for his hospitalitie is so much haunted, that no newes stirre, but comes to his eares; for his vpright dealing so beloued of his neighbours, that he hath many euer readie to doe him their vttermost seruice,
 30 and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may soone obtaine the vse of his name and credit, which hath a principall swaie, not onely in his owne Arcadia, but in all these countries of *Peloponnesus*: & (which is worth all) all these things giue him not so much power, as his nature giues him will to benefite: so that it seemes no Musick is so sweet to his eare as deserued thanks. To him we will bring you, & there you
 35 may recouer againe your health, without which you cannot be able to make any diligent search for your friend: and therefore you must labour for it. Besides, we are sure the comfort of curtesie, and ease of wise counsell shall not be wanting.

Musidorus (who besides he was meerly vnacquainted in the countrie, had his wits astonished with sorrow) gaue easie consent to that, from which hee saw no reason to disagree: and therefore (defraying the Mariners with a ring bestowed vpon
 40 them) they tooke their iourney together through *Loconia*; *Claius* and *Strephon* by course carying his chest for him, *Musidorus* only bearing in his countenance euident markes of a sorrowful mind supported with a weake bodie, which they perceiuing, and knowing that the violence of sorrow is not at the first to be striuen withall: (being like a mighty beast, sooner tamed with following, than ouerthrowne by with-
 45 standing) they gaue way vnto it for that day and the next; neuer troubling him, either with asking questions, or finding fault with his melancholie, but rather fitting to his dolor dolorous discourses of their owne and other folks misfortune. Which

speeches, though they had not a liuely entrance to his senses shut vp in sorow, yet like one halfe asleepe he tooke hold of much of the matters spoken vnto him, so as a man may say, ere sorow was aware, they made his thoughts beare away something els beside his own sorow, which wrought so in him, that at length he grew content to marke their speeches, then to maruell at such wit in shepheards, after to like their company, and lastly to vouchsafe conference: so that the third day after, in the time that the morning did strow roses & violets in the heauenly floore against the coming of the Sun, the nightingales (striving one with the other which could in most dainty varietie recount their wrong caused sorow) made them put off their sleep, & rising from vnder a tree (which that night had bin their pavilion) they went on their iorney, which by and by welcomed *Musidorus* eyes (wearied with the wasted soile of Laconia) with delightfull prospectes. There were hilles which garnished their proud heights with stately trees: humble valleis, whose base estate seemed comforted with refreshing of siluer riuers: medowes, enameld with allsortes of ey-pleasing floures: thickets, which being lined with most pleasant shade, were witnessed so too, by the cherefull deposition of many wel-tuned birds: ech pasture stored with sheepe feeding with sober securitie, while the pretie lambes with bleating oratorie craved the dams comfort: here a shepheards boy piping, as though he should neuer be old: there a yong shepherdesse knitting, and withall singing, and it seemed that her voice comforted her hands to worke, and her hands kept time to her voices musick. As for the houses of the country (for many houses came vnder their eye) they were all scattered, no two being one by th' other, & yet not so far off as that it barred mutuall succor: a shew, as it were, of an accompanable solitarines, & of a ciuil wildnes. I pray you (saide *Musidorus*, then first vnsealing his long silent lips) what countreyes be these we passe through, which are so diuers in shewe, the one wanting no store, th' other hauing no store but of want.

The country (answered *Claius*) where you were cast a shore, and now are past through, is Laconia, not so poore by the barrennes of the soyle (though in it selfe not passing fertill) as by a ciuill warre, which being these two yeares within the bowels of that estate, betweene the gentlemen and the peasants (by them named *Helots*) hath in this sorte as it were disfigured the face of nature, and made it so vn-hospitall as now you haue found it: the townes neither of the one side nor the other, willingly opening their gates to strangers, nor strangers willingly entring for feare of being mistaken.

But this countrie (where now you set your foot) is Arcadia: & even hard by is the house of *Kalander* whither we leade you: this country being thus decked with peace, & (the child of peace) good husbandrie. These houses you see so scattered are of men, as we two are, that liue vpon the commoditie of their sheepe: and therefore in the diuision of the Arcadian estate are termed shepheards; a happy people, wanting litle, because they desire not much. What cause then saide *Musidorus*, made you venter to leane this sweet life, and put your selfe in yonder vnpleasant and dangerous realme? Guarded with pouertie (answered *Strephon*) and guided with loue. But now (saide *Claius*) since it hath pleased you to aske any thing of vs whose basenes is such as the very knowledge is darknes: geue vs leaue to know something of you, and of the yong man you so much lament, that at least we may be the better instructed to enforme *Kalander*, and he the better know how to proportion his entertainment. *Musidorus* (according to the agreement betweene *Pyrocles* & him to alter their names) answered, that he called himselfe *Palladius*, and his friend *Daiphantus*; but till I haue him

him againe (said he) I am indeed nothing, and therefore my storie is of nothing, his entertainment (since so good a man he is) cannot be so low as I account my estate: and in summe, the summe of all his curtesie may be to help me by some meanes to seeke my friend.

5 They perceiued he was not willing to open himselfe further, and therefore without further questioning brought him to the house; about which they might see (with fit consideration both of the aire, the prospect, and the nature of the ground) all such necessarie additions to a great house, as might well shew, *Kalander* knew that prouision is the foundation of hospitalitie, & thrift the fewell of magnificence. The house
10 it selfe was built of faire and strong stone, not affecting so much any extraordinarie kind of finenesse, as an honourable representing of a firme statelinesse. The lights, doores and staires, rather directed to the vse of the guest, then to the eye of the Artificer; & yet as the one chieflie heeded, so the other not neglected; each place handsome without curiositie, and homely without lothfomnesse; not so dainty as not to
15 be trode one, nor yet slubbered vp with good fellowship; all more lasting than beautiful, but that the consideration of the exceeding lastingnesse made the eye belecue it was exceeding beautifull. The seruants not so many in number, as cleanly in apparell, and seruiceable in behauiour, testifying euen in their countenances, that their maister tooke aswell care to be serued, as of them that did serue. One of them was
20 forthwith ready to welcome the shepheards, as men, who though they were poore, their maister greatly fauored; and vnderstanding by them, that the young man with them was to be much accounted of, for that they had seen tokens of more then common greatnesse, how soeuer now eclipsed with fortune: he ran to his maister, who came presently forth, and pleasantly welcomming the shepheards, but especially applying him to *Musidorus*, *Strephon* priuately told him all what he knew of him, and
25 particularlie that he found this straunger was loth to be knowne.

No said *Kalander* (speaking aloud) I am no Herald to enquire of mens pedegrees, it sufficeth me if I know their vertues; which (if this young mans face be not a false witnesse) do better apparel his mind, then you haue done his body. While he was thus
30 speaking, there came a boy, in shew like a Marchants prentise, who taking *Strephon* by the sleue, deliuered him a letter, written iointly both to him and *Claius* from *Vrania*: which they no sooner had read, but that with short leaue-taking of *Kalander* (who quickly guessed and smiled at the matter) and once againe (though hastily) recommending the yong man vnto him, they went away, leauing *Musidorus* euen loth
35 to part with them, for the good conuersation he had of them, and obligation he accounted himselfe tied in vnto them: and therefore, they deliuering his chest vnto him, he opened it, and would haue presented them with two verie rich iewels, but they absolutely refused them, telling him, that they were more then enough rewarded in the knowing of him, & without harkening vnto a reply (like men whose harts
40 disdained all desires but one) gat speedily away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that sight *Kalander* soone iudged, that his guest was of no meane calling; & therefore the more respectfully entertaining him, *Musidorus* found his sicknesse (which the sight, the sea, and late trauell had layd vpon him) grow greatlie; so that fearing some sodaine accident, he deliuered the chest to *Kalander*, which
45 was full of most precious stones, gorgeousslie and cunningly set in diuerse maners, desiring him he would keep those trifles, and if he died, he would bestow so much of it as was needfull, to find out and redeeme a young man, naming himselfe *Daphantus*, as then in the hands of Laconia pirats.

But *Kalander* seeing him faint more and more, with carefull speed conueyed him to the most commodious lodging in his house: where being posselt with an extreame burning feuer, he continued some while with no great hope of life: but vouth at length got the victorie of sicknesse, so that in fixe weeks the excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible Embassador of his health, to the great ioy of *Kalander*; who, as in this time he had by certaine friends of his, that dwelt neare the sea in Messenia, set forth a ship and a galley to seeke and succour *Daiphantus*: so at home did he omit nothing which he thought might either profite or gratifie *Palladius*.

For, hauing found in him (besides his bodily gifts beyond the degree of admiration) by daylie discourses, which he delighted himselfe to haue with him, a mind of most excellent composition (a piercing wit quite voyd of ostentation, high erected thoughts seated in a heart of courtesie, an eloquence as sweet in the vttering, as flow to come to the vttering, a behauiour so noble, as gaue a maiestie to aduerlitie: and all in a man whose age could not be aboue one and twentie yeares) the good olde man was euen enamoured with a fatherlie loue towards him, or rather became his seruant by the bonds such vertue laid vpon him; once, he acknowledged himselfe so to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

But *Palladius* hauing gotten his health, & only staying there to be in place, where he might heare answeere of the ships set forth, *Kalander* one afternoone led him abroad to a well arrayed ground he had behind his house, which he thought to shew him before his going, as the place himselfe more then in anie other delighted. The backside of the house was neither field, garden, nor orchard; or rather it was both field, garden, and orchard: for as soone as the descending of the staires had deliuered them downe, they came into a place cunningly set with trees of the most tast-pleasing fruits: but scarcely they had taken that into their consideration, but that they were sodainly stept into a delicate greene, of each side of the greene a thicket, and behind the thickets againe new beds of flowers, which being vnder the trees, the trees were to them a Pauillion, and they to the trees a Mosaicall floore: so that it seemed that Arte therein would needs be delightfull, by counterfeyting his enimie Errour, and making order in confusion.

In the middest of all the place was a faire pond, whose shaking christall was a perfect mirrour to all the other beauties, so that it bare shew of two gardens; one in deede the other in shadowes: and in one of the thickets was a fine fountaine made thus: A naked *Venus* of white marble, wherein the grauer had vsed such cunning, that the natural blew veines of the marble were framed in fit places, to set forth the beautifull veynes of her bodie. At her breast she had her babe *Aeneas*, who seemed (hauing begun to sucke) to leaue that, to looke vpon her faire eyes, which smiled at the babes follie, meane while the breast running. Hard by was a house of pleasure built for a sommer retiring place, whither *Kalander* leading him, he found a square roome full of delightfull pictures, made by the most excellent workman of Greece. There was *Diana* when *Acteon* saw her bathing, in whose cheeks the Painter had set such a colour, as was mixt betweene shame and disdaine; and one of her foolish Nymphs, who weeping, and withall lowring, one might see the workman meant to set forth teares of anger. In another table was *Atalanta*; the posture of whose limmes was so liuely expressed, that if the eyes were the only iudges, as they be the only seers, one wold haue sworn the very picture had run. Besides many mo, as of *Helena*, *Omphale*, *Iole*: but in none of them all beautie seemed to speake so much as in a large table, which

which contained a comely old man, with a Ladie of middle age, but of excellēt beautie, and more excellent would haue bene deemed, but that there stood between them a young maide, whose wonderfulness tooke away all beautie frō her, but that which it might seeme she gaue her backe againe by her verie shadow. And such difference
 5 (being knowne that it did indeed counterfeite a person liuing) was there betweene her and all the other, though Goddeses, that it seemed the skill of the Painter bestowed on the other new beautie, but that the beauty of her bestowed new skill of the Painter. Though he thought inquisitiuenesse an vncomely guest, he could not choose but aske who she was, that bearing shew of one being in deed, could with naturall
 10 gifts go beyond the reach of inuention. *Kalander* answered, that it was made by *Philoclea*, the younger daughter of his Prince, who also with his wife were contained in that Table: the Painter meaning to represent the present condition of the young Ladie, who stood watched by an ouer-curious eye of her parents; and that he would also haue drawne her eldest sister, esteemed her match for beautie, in her shepheardish
 15 attire, but that the rude clowne her gardian would not suffer it; neither durst he aske leaue of the Prince for feare of suspition. *Palladius* perceiued that the matter was wrapt vp in some secrecie, and therefore would for modestie demaund no further: but yet his countenance could not but with dumbe eloquence desire it: Which *Kalander* perceiuing, well, sayd he, my deare guest, I know your mind, and I will satisfie
 20 it; neither will I do it like a niggardly answerer, going no further then the bounds of the question, but I will discouer vnto you, as well that wherein my knowledge is common with others, as that which by extraordinarie means is deliuered vnto me: knowing so much in you (though not long acquainted) that I shall find your cares faithfull treasurers. So then sitting downe in two chaires, and sometimes casting his eye
 25 to the picture, he thus spake.

This countrie Arcadia among all the prouinces of Greece, hath euer bene had in singular reputation: partly for the sweetnesse of the aire, and other naturall benefits, but principally for the well tempered mindes of the pople, who (finding that the shining title of glorie, so much affected by other nations, doth indeed help litle to the
 30 happinesse of life) are the only people, which as by their iustice and prouidence giue neither cause nor hope to their neighbours to annoy them, so are they not stirred with false praise to trouble others quiet, thinking it a small reward for the wasting of their owne liues in rauening, that their posteritie shold long after say, they had done so. Even the Muses seeme to approue their good determination, by choosing this
 35 countrie for their chiefe repairing place, and by bestowing their perfections so largely here, that the very shepheards haue their fancies lifted to so high conceits, as the learned of other nations are content both to borrow their names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth and raigneth this Prince (whose picture you see) by name *Basilus*, a
 40 Prince of sufficient skill to gouerne so quiet a countrie, where the good minds of the former Princes had set downe good lawes, & the well bringing vp of the people doth serue as a most sure bond to hold thē. But to be plaine with you, he excels in nothing so much, as in the zealous loue of his people, wherein he doth not onely passe all his own fore-goers, but as I think all the Princes liuing. Whereof the cause is, that though
 45 he exceed not in the vertues which get admiration; as depth of wisdom, height of courage and largenesse of magnificence, yet is he notable in those which stirre affection, as truth of word, meeknesse, curtesie, mercifulnesse, and liberality.

He being already well stricken in yeares, married a young Princeesse named *Gynecia*,

daughter to the king of Cyprus, of notable beautie, as by her picture you see: a woman of great wit, and in truth of more princely vertues than her husband; of most vnspotted chastitie, but of so working a mind, and so vehement spirits, as a man may say, it was happie she tooke a good course, for otherwise it would haue bene terrible.

Of these two are brought to the world two daughters, so beyond measure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reasonable creatures, that we may thinke they were borne to shew, that nature is no stepmother to that sexe, how much soeuer some men (sharp-witted only in euill speaking) haue sought to disgrace them. The elder is named *Pamela*; by many men not deemed inferiour to her sister: for my part, when I marked the both, me thought there was (if at least such perfections may receiue the word of more) more sweetnesse in *Philoclea*, but more maiesty in *Pamela*: me thought loue plaid in *Philoclea*'s eyes, and threatned in *Pamela*'s: me thought *Philoclea*'s beautie only perswaded, but so perswaded as all hearts must yeeld: *Pamela*'s beautie vsed violence, and such violence as no heart could resist: and it seems that such proportion is betweene their minds: *Philoclea* so bathfull, as though her excellencies had stolne into her before she was aware; so humble, that she will put all pride out of countenance; in summe, such proceeding as will stirre hope, but teach hope good manners. *Pamela* of high thoughts, who auoyds not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to be voyd of pride; her mother's wisdom, greatnesse, nobilitie, but (if I can guesse aright) knit with a more constant temper. Now then, our *Basilus* being so publike happy as to be a Prince, and so happie in that happinesse, as to be a beloued Prince, and so in his priuate blessed as to haue so excellent a wife, and so ouer excellent children, hath of late taken a course, which yet makes him more spoken of than all these blessings. For, hauing made a iourney to Delphos, and safely returned, within short space he brake vp his Court, and retired himselfe, his wife & children into a certain forrest hereby, which he calleth his desert; wherein (besides a house appointed for stables, and lodgings for certaine persons of meane calling, who do all household seruices) he hath builded two fine lodges: in the one of them himselfe remains with his yonger daughter *Philoclea*, which was the cause they three were matched together in this picture, without hauing any other creature liuing in that lodge with him.

Which, though it be straunge, yet not so straunge, as the course he hath taken with the Princesse *Pamela*, whom he hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you accompanied? truly with none other but one *Dametis*, the most arrant doltish clowne, that I thinke euer was without the priuiledge of a bable, with his wife *Miso*, and daughter *Mopsa*, in whom no wit can deuise any thing wherein they may pleasure her, but to exercise her patience, and to serue for a foyle of her perfections. This lowtish clowne is such, that you neuer saw so ilfauoured a visar; his behauiour such, that he is beyond the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparell, euen a I would wish him: *Miso* his wife, so handsome a beldame, that onely her face and her splay-foote haue made her accused for a witch; only one good point she hath, that she obserues *decorum*, hauing a froward mind in a wretched body. Between these two personages (who neuer agreed in any humour, but in disagreeing) is issued forth mistresse *Mopsa*, a fit woman to participate of both their perfections: but because a pleasant fellow of my acquaintance set forth her praises in verse, I will only repeat them, and spare mine owne tongue, since she goes for a woman. The verses are these, which I haue so often caused to be sung, that I haue them without booke:

VVhat

*What length of verse can serue braue Moplas good to show?
 Whose vertues strange, and beauties such, as no man them may know:
 Thus shrewdly burdned them, how can my Muse escape?
 The gods must help, and precious things must serue to shew her shape.
 Like great god Saturne faire, and like faire Venus chaste:
 As smooth as Pan, as Iuno mild, like goddesse Iris faste.
 With Cupid she foresees, and goes god Vulcans pace:
 And for a taste of all these gifts, she steales god Momus grace.
 Her forehead iacinth like, her cheeks of Opall hue,
 Her twinckling eyes bedect with pearle, her lips as Saphir blew:
 Her haire like Crapal stone, her mouth o heavenly wide:
 Her skin like burnisht gold, her bands like siluer wre vntide.
 As for her parts unknowne, which hidden sure are best:
 Happie be they which well beleene, and neuer seeke the rest.*

15 Now truly having made these descriptions vnto you, me thinks you should ima-
 gine that I rather faine some pleasant deuise, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not
 banished from his owne wits) could possiblie make so vnworthie a choise. But trulic
 (deare guest) so it is, that Princes (whose doings haue bene often smoothed with
 20 good successe) thinke nothing so absurd, which they cannot make honourable. The
 beginning of his credit was by the Princes straying out of the way, on time he hun-
 ted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way, and so falling into other
 questions, he found some of his answeres (as a dog sure if he could speake, had wit e-
 nough to describe his kennell) not vsensible, and all vttered with such rudenesse,
 25 which he interpreted plainnesse (though there be great difference betweene them)
 that *Basilus* conceiuing a sodaine delight, tooke him to his Court, with apparant
 shew of his good opinion: where the flattering Courtier had no sooner taken the
 Princes mind, but that there were straight reasons to confirme the Princes doing, &
 shadowes of vertues found for *Dametas*. His silence grew wit, his bluntnesse integri-
 30 tie, his beastlie ignorance vertuous simplicitie: and the Prince (according to the na-
 ture of great persons, in loue with that he had done himselfe) fancied, that his weak-
 nesse with his presence would much bee mended. And so like a creature of his
 owne making, he liked him more and more; and thus hauing first given him the of-
 fice of principall heardman; lastly, since he tooke this strange determination, he hath
 35 in a maner put the life of himselfe and his children into his hands. Which authority
 (like too great a saile for so small a boat) doth so ouer-sway poore *Dametas*, that if be-
 fore he were a good foole in a chāber, he might be allowed it now in a comedy: so as
 I doubt me (I feare me indeed) my master will in the end (with his cost) find, that his
 office is not to make men, but to vse men as men are, no more then a horse will be
 40 taught to hunt, or an asse to mannage. But in sooth I am afraid I haue given your
 eares too great a surfet, with the grosse discourses of that heavy peece of flesh. But
 the zealous grieve I conceiue to see so great an errour in my Lord, hath made me be-
 stow more words, then I confesse so base a subiect deserueth.

Thus much now that I haue told you, is nothing more then in effect anie Arca-
 45 dian knowes. But what moued him to this strange solitarinesse, hath bene imparted
 (as I thinke) but to one person liuing. My selfe can coniecture, and indeed more then
 coniecture by this accident that I will tell you: I haue an only sonne, by name *Cli-
 tophon*, who is now absent, preparing for his owne mariage, which I meane shortly

shalbe here celebrated. This sonne of mine (while the Prince kept his Court) was of his bed chamber; now since the breaking vp thereof, returned home, and shewed me (among other things he had gathered) the copie which hee had taken of a letter: which when the Prince had read, he had laid in a window, presuming no body durst looke in his writings: but my sonne not only tooke a time to reade it, but to copie it. In truth I blamed *Clitophon* for the curiositie, which made him breake his dutie in such a kind, whereby kings secrets are subiect to be reuealed: but since it was done, I was content to take so much profite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I euer since for my good liking, haue caried about me: which before I reade vnto you, I must tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this countrie, named *Philanax*, appointed by the Prince, regent in this time of his retiring, & most worthy so to be: for, there liues no man, whose excellent witte more simplye imbraceth integritie, besides his vsfained loue to his maister, wherein neuer yet any could make question, sauing whether he loued *Basilus* or the Prince better: a rare temper, while most men either seruile-ly yeeld to all appetites, or with an obstinate austeritie looking to that they fancie good, in effect neglect the Princes person. This then being the man, whome of all other (and most worthie) the Prince chiefly loues, it should seeme (for more then the letter I haue not to ghesse by) that the Prince vpon his returne from Delphos, (*Philanax* then lying sick) had written vnto him his determination, rising (as evidently appears) vpon some Oracle he had there receiued: whereunto he wrote this answer.

Philanax his letter to Basilus.

Most redoubted and beloued Prince, if as well it had pleased you at your going to Delphos as now, to haue vsed my humble seruice, both I should in better season, and to better purpose haue spoken: and you (if my speech had preuailed) should haue been at this time, as no way more in danger, so much more in quietnes; I would then haue saide, that wisdome and vertue be the onely destinies appointed to man to follow, whence we ought to seeke all our knowledge, since they be such guides as cannot faile; which, besides their inward comfort, do leade so direct a way of proceeding, as either prosperitie must ensue; or, if the wickednesse of the world should oppresse it, it can neuer be said, that euil happeneth to him, who falles accompanied with vertue: I would then haue said, the heavenly powers to be reuerenced, and not serched into; & their mercies rather by praiers to be sought, then their hidden counsels by curiositie. These kindes of soothsayings (since they haue left vs in our selues sufficient guides) to be nothing but fancie, wherein there must either be vanitie, or infalliblenes, & so, either not to be respected, or not to be preuented. But since it is weakenesse too much to remember what should haue beene done, and that your commaundement stretcheth to know what is to be done, I do (most deare Lord) with humble boldnes say, that the manner of your determination doth in no sort better please me, then the cause of your going. These thirtie yeares you haue so gouerned this Region, that neither your Subiects haue wanted iustice in you, nor you obedience in them; and your neighbours haue found you so hurtlesly strong, that they thought it better to rest in your friendship, then make new trial of your enmitie. If this then haue proceeded out of the good constitution of your state, and out of a wise prouidence, generally to preuent all those things, which might encomber your happines: why should you now seeke new courtes, since your own example comforts you to continue, & that it is to me most certaine

- though it please you not to tell me the verie words of the Oracle) that yet no destiny nor influence whatsoeuer, can bring mans wit to a higher point, than wisdom and goodnesse? Why shold you deprive your self of gouernment, for feare of losing your gouernment, like one that should kill himselfe for feare of death? Nay rather if this
- 5 Oracle be to be accounted of, arme vp your courage the more against it: for who wil sticke to him that abandons himselfe; let your subiects haue you in their eyes; let them see the benefits of your iustice dayly more & more; and so must they needs rather like of present sureties then vncertaine chaunges. Lastly, whether your time call you to liue or die, do both like a Prince. Now for your second resolution; which
- 10 is to suffer no worthy Prince to be a suter to either of your daughters, but while you liue to keepe them both vnmarried, &, as it were, to kill the ioy of posteritie, which in your time you may enioy, moued perchance by a mis-understood Oracle: what shall I say, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead sufficientlie against such fancies? once certaine it is, the God which is God of nature, doth neuer
- 15 teach vnnaturalnesse: and euen the same mind hold I touching your banishing them from companie, least, I know not what strange loues should follow. Certainlie sir, in my Ladies your daughters, nature promisseth nothing but goodnesse, and their education by your fatherly care hath bene hitherto such, as hath bene most fit to restraine all euill; giuing their minds vertuous delights, and not grieuing them
- 20 for want of well ruled libertie. Now to fall to a sodaine straightning them, what can it do but argue suspicion, a thing no more vnpleasant, then vnure, for the preseruing of vertue. Leauwomens minds, the most vntamed that way of any: see whether a cage can please a bird? or whether a dog grow not fiercer with tying? what doth iealousie, but stirre vp the mind to thinke, what it is from which they are restrained?
- 25 for they are treasures or things of great delight, which men vse to hide, for the aptnesse they haue to each mans fancies: and the thoughts once awaked to that, harder sure it is to keepe those thoughts from accomplishment, then had bene before to haue kept the mind (which being the chiefe part, by this means is defiled) from thinking. Lastly, for the recommending so principall a charge of the Princesse
- 30 *Pamela* (whose mind goes beyond the gouerning of manie thousands such) to such a person as *Dametis* is (besides that the thing in it selfe is strange) it comes of a verie euill ground, that ignorance should be the mother of faithfulness; O no; he cannot be good that knowes not why he is good, but stands so farre good as his fortune may keepe him vnassayed: but comming once to that, his rude simplicitie is either
- 35 easily changed, or easily deceiued: and so growes that to be the last excuse of his fault, which seemed to haue bene the first foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath your commandement and my zeale drawne me; which I, like a man in a valley that may discern hills, or like a poore passenger that may spie a rocke, so humbly submit to your gracious consideration, beseeching you againe to stand wholly
- 40 vpon your owne vertue, as the surest way to maintaine you in that you are, and to auoyd any euill which may be imagined.

By the contents of this letter you may perceiue, that the cause of all, hath bene the vanitie which possesseth many, who (making a perpetuall mansion of this poore baiting place of mans life) are desirous to know the certaintie of things to come;

45 wherein there is nothing so certaine as our continuall vncertaintie. But what in particular points the Oracle was, in faith I know not; neither (as you may see by one place of *Philanax* letter) he himselfe distinctly knew. But this experience shewes vs, that *Basilus* iudgement, corrupted with a Princes fortune, hath rather heard then

followed the wise (as I take it) counsell of *Philanax*. For hauing left the sterne of his gouernment, with much amazement to the people, among whom many straunge bruits are receiued for currant, and with some apparance of danger in respect of the valiant *Amphialus* his nephew, & much enuying the ambitious number of the Nobilitie against *Philanax*, to see *Philanax* so aduanced, though (to speake simplie) he deserue more then as many of vs as there be in *Arcadia*: the Prince himselfe hath hidden his head, in such sort as I told you, not sticking plainely to confesse, that he means not (while he breathes) that his daughters shal haue any husband, but keepe them thus solitary with him; where he giues no other body leaue to visite him at any time but a certaine Priest, who being excellent in poetrie, he makes him write out such things as he best likes, he being no lesse delightfull in conuersation, then needfull for deuotion, and about twenty specified shepheards, in whom (some for exercises, and some for Eglogs) he taketh greater recreation.

And now you know as much as my selfe: wherein if I haue held you ouer long, lay hardly the fault vpon my olde age, which in the verie disposition of it is talkatiue: whether it be (said he smiling) that nature loues to exercise that part most, which is least decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowledge being the onlie thing whereof we poore olde men can brag, we cannot make it knowne but by vtterance: or, that mankind by all meanes seeking to eternize himselfe so much the more, as he is neare his end, doth it not onely by the children that come of him, but by speeches and writings recommended to the memorie of hearers & readers. And yet thus much I will say for my selfe, that I haue not laid these matters, either so openly or largely to anie as to your selfe: so much (if I much faile not) do I see in you, which makes me both loue and trust you. Neuer may he be old, answered *Palladius*, that doth not reuerence that age, whose heauinesse, if it waie downe the frayle and fleshlie ballance, it as much lifts vp the noble and spirituall part; and well might you haue alleaged another reason, that their wisdome makes them willing to profite others. And that haue I receiued of you, neuer to be forgotten, but with vngreatfulnesse. But among many strange conceits you told me, which haue shewed effects in your Prince, truly euen the last, that he should conceiue such pleasure in shepheards discourses, would not seeme the least vnto me, sauing that you told me at the first, that this countrie is notable in those wits, and that indeed my selfe hauing bene brought not only to this place, but to my life by *Strephon* and *Claius*, in their conference found wits as might better become such shepheards as *Homer* speaks of, that be gouernours of peoples, then such Senators who hold their Council in a sheep cote. For them two (said *Kalander*) especially *Claius*, they are beyond the rest by so much, as learning commonly doth adde to nature: for, hauing neglected their wealth in respect of their knowledge, they haue not so much impaired the meaner, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithstanding, it is a sport to heare how they impute to loue, which hath indued their thoughts (say they) with such a strength.

But certainly all the people of this countrie from high to lowe, is giuen to those sports of the wit, so as you would wonder to heare how soone euen children will begin to versifie. Once, ordinarie it is amongst the meanest sort, to make songs and dialogues in meeter, either loue whetting their braine, or long peace hauing begun it; example and emulation amending it. Not so much, but the Clowne *Dame-tas* will stumble sometimes vpon some songs that might become a better braine; but no sort of people so excellent in that kind as the pastors; for their liuing standing but

but vpon the looking to their beasts, they haue ease, the Nurse of Poetrie. Neither are our shepheards such, as (I heare) they be in other countries; but they are the verie owners of the sheepe, to which either themselues looke, or their children giue daily attendance. And then truely, it would delight you vnder some tree, or by some
 5 riuers side (when two or three of them meet together) to heare their rurall Muse, how pretilie it will deliuer out, sometimes ioyes, sometimes lamentations, sometimes chalengings one of the other, sometimes vnder hidden formes vttering such matters, as otherwise they durst not deale with. Then haue they most commonlie one, who iudgeth the prise to the best doer, of which they are no lesse glad, then
 10 great Princes are of Triumphs: and his part is to set downe in writing all that is said, saue that it may be, his pen with more leasure doth polish the rudenesse of an vnthought-on song. Now the choise of all (as you may well thinke) either for goodnesse of voice, or pleasantnesse of wit, the Prince hath: among whom also there are two or three strangers, whom inward melancholies hauing made wearie of the
 15 worlds eyes, haue come to spend their liues among the countrie people of *Arcadia*; and their conuersation being well approoued, the Prince vouchsafeth them his presence, and not onely by looking on, but by great curtesie & liberalitie, animates the shepheards the more exquisitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no cause to blame the Prince for sometimes hearing them; the blame-worthinesse is,
 20 that to heare them, he rather goes to solitarinesse, then makes them come to companie. Neither do I accuse my maister for aduancing a countriman, as *Dametas* is, since God forbid, but where worthinesse is (as truely it is among diuerse of that fellowship) any outward lownesse should hinder the highest raising, but that he would needs make election of one, the basenesse of whose mind is such, that it sinks a thou-
 25 sand degrees lower then the basest body could carie the most base fortune: which although it might be answered for the Prince, that it is rather a trust he hath in his simple plainnesse, then any great aduancement, but being chiefe heardman; yet all honest hearts feelee, that the trust of their Lord goes beyond all aduancement. But I am euer too long vpon him, when he crosseth the way of my speach, and by
 30 the shadow of yonder tower, I see it is a fitter time, with our supper to pay the duties we owe to our stomacks, then to breake the aire with my idle discourses: and more wit I might haue learned of *Homer* (whom euen now you mentioned) who neuer entertained either guests or hosts with long speeches, till the mouth of hunger be thoroughly stopped. So withall he rose, leading *Palladius* through the garden
 35 againe to the Parler, where they vsed to suppe; *Palladius* assuring him that he had already bene more fed to his liking, then he could be by the skilfullest trenchermen of *Media*.

But being come to the supping place, one of *Kalanders* seruants rounded in his eare; at which (his colour changing) he retired himselfe into his chamber; commanding his men diligently to wait vpon *Palladius*, and to excuse his absence with
 40 some necessary businesse he had presently to dispatch. Which they accordingly did, for some few dayes forcing theselues to let no change appeare, but though they framed their countenances neuer so cunningly, *Palladius* perceiued there was some ill-pleasing accidēt fallen out. Vherupon, being againe set alone at supper, he called to
 45 the steward, and desired him to tell him the matter of his sudden alteration: who after some trifling excuses, in the end confessed vnto him, that his master had receiued newes, that his sonne before the day of his neare marriage, chaunst to be at a bartaille, which was to be fought betweene the Gentlemen of Lacedæmon and the

Helots: who winning the victorie, he was there made prisoner, going to deliuer a friend of his taken prisoner by the *Helots*; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great ranfome for his life; but that the hate those peafants conceiued againft all Gentlemen was fuch, that euery houre he was to look for nothing, but fome cruell death: which hitherunto had only bene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who feemed to haue a heart of more manly pitie then the reft. Which losse had ftricken the old Gentleman with fuch sorrow, as if abundance of teares did not feeme fufficiently to witneffe it, he was alone retired, tearing his beard and haire, and curfing his old age, that had not made his graue to ftop his eares from fuch aduertifements: but that his faithfull feruants had written in his name to all his friends followers, and tenants (*Philanax* the gouernour refufing to deale in it as a priuate caufe, but yet giuing leaue to feeke their beft redrefle, fo as they wronged not the ftate of Lacedæmon) of whom there were now gathered vpon the frontiers good forces, that he was fure would fpend their liues by any way, to redeeme or reuenge *Clitophon*. Now fir (faid he) this is my maifters nature, though his griefe be fuch, as to liue is a griefe vnto him, and that euen his reason is darkened with sorrow; yet the lawes of hospitalitie (long and holily obserued by him) giue ftill fuch a fway to his proceeding, that he will no way fuffer the ftraunger lodged vnder his roofe, to receiue (as it were) any infection of his anguifh, efpecially you, toward whom I know not whether his loue, or admiration be greater. But *Palladius* could fcarce heare out his tale with patience, fo was his heart torne in peeces with compaffion of the cafe, liking of *Kalanders* noble behauiour, kindneffe for his refpect to himward, and defire to find fome remedie, befides the image of his deareft friend *Daiphantus*, whom he iudged to fuffer either a like or worfe fortune. Therefore rifing from the boord, he defired the fteward to tell him particularly, the ground & euent of this accident, becaufe by knowledge of many circumftances, there might perhaps fome way of help be opened. Wherunto the fteward eafily in this fort condescended.

My Lord (faid he) when our good King *Bafilus*, with better fucceffe then expectation, tooke to wife (euen in his more then decaying yeares) the faire young Princeffe *Gynecia*; there came with her a yong Lord, coufin german to her felfe, named *Argalus*, led hither, partly with the loue and honour of his noble kinfwoman, partly with the humour of youth, which euer thinks that good, whose goodneffe he fees not: & in this Court he receiued fo good increafe of knowledge, that after fome years fpent, he fo manifested a moft vertuous mind in all his actions, that *Arcadia* gloried fuch a plant was transported vnto them, being a Gentleman indeed moft rarely accomplished, excellently learned, but without all vaine glorie: friendly, without factiousneffe; valiant, fo as for my part, I think the earth hath no man that hath done more heroicall acts then he; how foeuer now of late the fame flies of the two Princes of *Theffalia* and *Macedon*, and hath long done of our noble Prince *Amphialus*; who indeed, in our parts is onely accounted likely to match him: but I fay for my part, I thinke no man for valour of mind, and abilitie of body to be preferred, if equalled to *Argalus*; and yet fo valiant as he neuer durft do any body iniurie: in behauiour fome will fay euer fad, furely fober, and fomewhat giuen to musing, but neuer vncurteous; his word euer led by his thought, and followed by his deed; rather liberall then magnificent, though the one wanted not, and the other had euer good choife of the receiuer: in fomme (for I perceiue I fhall eafilie take a great draught of his praifes, whom both I and all this cuntry loue fo well)

fuch

such a man was (and I hope is) *Argalus*, as hardly the nicest eye can find a spot in, if the ouer-vehement constancy of yet spotlesse affection, may not in hard wrested constructions be counted a spot: which in this maner began that worke in him, which hath made both him, and it selfe in him ouer all this countrey famous. My maisters sonne *Clitophon* (whose losse giues the cause to this discourse, & yet giues me cause to begin with *Argalus*, since his losse proceeds from *Argalus*) being a young Gentleman, as of great birth (being our kings sisters sonne) so truly of good nature, and one that can see good and loue it, haunted more the companie of this worthy *Argalus*, then of any other: so as if there were not a friendship (which is so rare, as it is to be
 10 doubted whether it be a thing indeed, or but a word) at least there was such a liking and friendlinesse, as hath brought forth the effects which you shall heare. About two yeares since, it so fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies house, sister to my maister, who had with her her onelie daughter, the faire *Parthenia*; faire indeed (fame I thinke it selfe daring not to call anie fairer, if it be not *Helena* Queene
 15 of *Corinth*, & the two incomparable sisters of *Arcadia*) & that which made her fairenesse much the fairer, was, that it was but a faire Embassadour of a most faire mind, full of wit, and a wit which delighted more to iudge it selfe, then to shew it selfe: her speech being as rare as precious; her silence without fullennesse; her modestie without affectation; her shamefastnesse without ignorance: in summe, one that
 20 to praise well, one must first set downe with himselfe, what it is to be excellent: for so she is.

I thinke you think, that these perfections meeting, could not choose but find one another, and delight in that they found; for likenesse of maners is likely in reason to draw liking with affection: mens actions do not alwaies crosse with reason: to be
 25 short, it did so indeed. They loued, although for a while the fire thereof (hopes wings being cut off) were blowne by the bellowes of dispaire vpon this occasion.

There had bene a good while before, & so continued, a suter to this same Ladie, a great noble man, though of *Laconia*, yet neare neighbour to *Parthenias* mother, named *Demagoras*: a man mighty in riches & power, and proud thereof, stubbornlie
 30 stout, louing no body but himselfe, and for his owne delights sake *Parthenia*: & pursuing vehemētlie his desire, his riches had so guilded ouer al his other imperfections, that the olde Lady (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers mind) had giuen her consent; & vsing a mothers authority vpon her faire daughter, had made her yeeld thereunto, not because she liked her choise, but because her obedient mind had not
 35 yet taken vpon it to make choise; & the day of their assurance drew neare, when my young Lord *Clitophon* brought this noble *Argalus*, perchance principallie to see so rare a sight, as *Parthenia* by all well iudging eyes was iudged.

But though few dayes were before the time of assurance appointed, yet loue that saw he had a great iourney to make in short time, hasted so himselfe, that before
 40 her word could tie her to *Demagoras*, her heart hath vowed her to *Argalus*, with so gratefull a receipt in mutuall affection, that if she desired aboue all things to haue *Argalus*, *Argalus* feared nothing but to misse *Parthenia*. And now *Parthenia* had learned both liking and misliking, louing and loathing, and out of passion began to take the authoritie of iudgement; in so much, that when the time came
 45 that *Demagoras* (full of proud ioy) thought to receiue the gift of her selfe, she with words of resolute refusal (though with teares shewing she was sorie she must refuse) assured her mother, she would first be bedded in her graue, then wedded to *Demagoras*. The chaunge was no more straunge, then vnpleasant to the mother: who

being determinately (least I should say of a great Lady wilfullie) bent to marie her to *Demagoras*, tried all wayes which a wittie and hard-hearted mother could vse, vpon so humble a daughter; in who the only resisting power was loue. But the more she assaulted, the more she taught *Parthenia* to defend; and the more *Parthenia* defended, the more she made her mother obstinate in the assault: who at length finding, that *Argalus* standing betweene them, was it that most eclipsed her affection from shining vpon *Demagoras*, she sought all meanes how to remoue him, so much the more as he manifested himselfe an vnremoueable suter to her daughter: first, by employing him in as many dangerous enterprises, as euer the euill step-mother *Iuno* recommended to the famous *Hercules*: but the more his vertue was tried, the more pure it grew, while all the things she did to ouerthrow him, did set him vp vpon the height of honour; enough to haue moued her heart, especially to a man euerie way so worthie as *Argalus*: but she struggling against all reason, because she would haue her will, and shew her authoritie in matching her with *Demagoras*, the more vertuous *Argalus* was, the more she hated him, thinking herselfe conquered in his conquests, and therefore still imploying him in more & more dangerous attempts: in the meane while, she vsed all extremities possible vpon her faire daughter, to make her giue over her selfe to her direction. But it was hard to iudge, whether he in doing, or she in suffering, shewed greater cōstancy of affection: for, as to *Argalus* the world sooner wanted occasions, then he valour to go through them: so to *Parthenia*, malice sooner ceased, then her vnchanged patience. Lastly, by treasons, *Demagoras* and she would haue made away *Argalus*; but he with prouidence and courage so past over all, that the mother tooke such a spitefull grieve at it, that her heart brake withall, and she died.

But then, *Demagoras* assuring himselfe, that now *Parthenia* was her owne she would neuer be his, and receiuing as much by her owne determinate answer, not more desiring his owne happinesse, then enuying *Argalus*, whome he saw with narrow eyes, euen ready to enioy the perfection of his desires, strengthening his conceit with all the mischieuous counsels which disdained loue, and enuious pride could giue vnto him; the wicked wretch (taking a time that *Argalus* was gone to his countrie, to fetch some of his principall friends to honour the mariage, which *Parthenia* had most ioyfullie consented vnto) the wicked *Demagoras* (I say) desiring to speake with her, with vnmercifull force (her weake armes in vaine resisting) rubd all ouer her face a most horrible poyson: the effect whereof was such, that neuer leaper lookt more vgly then she did: which done, hauing his men and horses ready, departed away in spite of her seruants, as ready to reuenge as they could be, in such an vnexpected mischiefe. But the abhominableness of this fact being come to my *L. Kalander*, he made such means, both by our kings intercession, and his owne, that by the King & Senate of Lacedæmon, *Demagoras* was vpon paine of death banished the countrie: who hating the punishment, where he should haue hated the fault, ioyned himselfe, with all the powers he could make, vnto the *Helots*, lately in rebellion against that state: and they (glad to haue a man of such authoritie among them) made him their General: & vnder him haue committed diuerse the most outrageous villanies, that a base multitude (full of desperate reuenge) can imagine.

But within a while after this pitifull fact cōmitted vpon *Parthenia*, *Argalus* returned (poore Gentleman) hauing her faire image in his hart, & already promising his eyes the vttermost of his felicitie, when they (no body else daring to tell it him) were the first messengers to themselves of their owne misfortune. I meane not to moue passions

passions with telling you the griefe of both, when hee knew her, for at first he did not, nor at first knowledge could possibly haue vertues aide so ready, as not euen weakly to lament the losse of such a iewell, so much the more, as that skilfull men in that art assured it was vnrecoverable: but within a while, truth of loue (which still
 5 held the first face in his memorie) a vertuous constancie, and euen a delight to bee constant, faith giuen, and inward worthinesse shining through the foulest mistes, tooke so full hold of the noble *Argalus*, that not only in such comfort which witty arguments may bestow vpon aduersitie, but euen with the most abundant kindnesse that an eye rauished louer can expresse, he laboured both to driue the extremity of
 10 sorrow from her, and to hasten the celeration of their mariage: whereunto he vn-
 faintly shewed himselfe no lesse cherefully earnest, then if he had neuer bene disin-
 herited of that goodly portion, which nature had so liberally bequeathed vnto her: &
 for that cause deferred his intended reuenge vpon *Demagoras*, because he might con-
 15 tinually be in her presence; shewing more humble seruiceablenesse, and ioy to con-
 tent her, then euer before.

But as he gaue this rare example, not to be hoped for of any other, but of another
Argalus: so of the other side, she tooke as strange a course in affection: for, where she
 desired to enioy him, more then to liue; yet did she ouerthrow both her owne desire
 and his, and in no sort would yeeld to marry him; with a strange encounter of loues
 20 affects, and effects, that he by an affection sprong from excessiue beautie, should
 delight in horrible foulnesse; & she, of a vehement desire to haue him, should kindly
 build a resolution neuer to haue him: for truth is, that so in heart she loued him, as she
 could not find in her heart he should be tied to what was vnworthy of his presence.

Truly Sir, a very good Orator might haue a faire field to vse eloquence in, if he
 25 did but only repeate the lamentable, and truly affectionated speeches, while he con-
 iured her by remembrance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not
 to make him so unhappie, as to thinke he had not only lost her face, but her hart; that
 her face, when it was fairest, had bene but as a marshall, to lodge the loue of her in
 his mind; which now was so well placed, as it needed no further helpe of any outward
 30 harbinger: beseeching her, euen with teares, to know, that his loue was not so super-
 ficiall, as to go no further then the skin; which yet now to him was most faire, since
 it was hers: how could he be so vngratefull, as to loue her the lesse for that which she
 had only receiued for his sake? that he neuer beheld it, but there in he saw the loue-
 lineesse of her loue toward him: protesting vnto her, that he would neuer take ioy of
 35 his life, if he might not enioy her, for whom principally he was glad he had life. But
 (as I heard by one that ouerheard them) she (wringing him by the hand) made no o-
 ther answer but this: my Lord (said she) God knowes I loue you: if I were Princesse
 of the whole world, and had withall, all the blessings that euer the world brought
 forth, I should not make delay, to lay my selfe, and them vnder your feete: or if I had
 40 continued but as I was, though (I must confesse) far vnworthy of you, yet wold I (with
 too great a ioy for my hart now to thinke of) haue accepted your vouchsafing me to
 be yours, and with faith and obedience would haue supplied all other defects. But
 first let me be much more miserable then I am, ere I match *Argalus* to such a *Pyribenia*:
 Liue happy, deare *Argalus*. I giue you full liberty, and I beseech you take it; and I
 45 assure you I shal reioyce (whatsoeuer become of me) to see you so coupled, as may be
 fit, both for your honour & satisfaction. With that she burst out in crying and wee-
 ping, not able longer to containe her selfe from blaming her fortune, and wishing
 her owne death.

But *Argalus* with a most heauie hart still pursuing his desire, the fixt of mind to auoid further intreatie, and to fly all company; which (euen of him) grew vnpleasant vnto her; one night she stole away: but whither, as yet is vnknowne, or indeede what is become of her.

Argalus sought her long, and in many places: at length (dispairing to find her, 5 and the more he despaired, the more enraged) wearie of his life, but first determining to bee reuenged of *Demagoras*, hee went alone disguised into the chiefe towne held by the *Helots*: where comming into his presence, garded about by many of his souldiers, he could delay his furie no longer for a fitter time: but setting vpon him, in despight of a great many that helped him, gaue him diuerse mortall 10 wounds, and him selfe (no question) had bene there presently murthered, but that *Demagoras* himselfe desired hee might be kept alieue; perchaunce with intention to feede his owne eyes with some cruell execution to bee layd vpon him, but death came sooner then he lookt for; yet hauing had leisure to appoint his successor, a yong man, not long before deliuered out of the prison of the King of *Lacedamon*, where 15 he should haue suffered death for hauing slaine the kings Nephew: but him hee named, who at that time was absent, making roades vpon the *Lacedamonians*, but being returned, the rest of the *Helots*, for the great liking they conceiued of that yong man, especially because they had none among themselues to whom the others would yeeld, were content to follow *Demagoras* appointment. And well hath it succeeded with them, he hauing since done things beyond the hope of the yongest heads, of whom I speake the rather, because he hath hitherto preferred *Argalus* alieue, vnder pretence to haue him publiquelie, and with exquisite torments executed, after the ende of these warres, of which, they hope for a soone and prosperous issue. 20

And he hath likewise hitherto kept my young Lord *Clitophon* alieue, who (to redeeme his friend) went with certaine other noble men of *Laconia*, and forces gathered by them, to besiege this young and new successor: but hee issuing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated the *Laconians*, slue many of the noble men, and tooke *Clitophon* prisoner, whom with much a doe he keepeth alieue: the *Helots* being villanously cruel; but he tempereth them so sometimes by following their humor, sometimes by striuing with it, that hitherto hee hath saued both their liues, but in different estates; *Argalus* being kept in a close and hard prison, *Clitophon* at some liberty. And now Sir, though (to say the truth) we can promise our selues litle of their safeties, while they are in the *Helots* hands, I haue deliuered all I vnderstand touching 35 the losse of my Lords sonne, and the cause thereof: which, though it was not necessarie to *Clitophons* case, to be so particularlie told, yet the strangenesse of it, made me thinke it would not be vnpleasant vnto you.

Palladius thanked him greatly for it, being euen passionatly delighted with hearing so straunge an accident, of a knight so famous ouer the world, as *Argalus*, with whom 40 he had himselfe a long desire to meete: so had fame powred a noble emulation in him towards him.

But the (well bethinking himselfe) he called for armour, desiring them to prouide him of horse & guide, and armed all sauing the head, he wet vp to *Kalander*, whom he found lying vpon the ground, hauing euer since banished both sleepe and foode, as 45 enemies to the mourning, which passion perswaded him was reasonable. But *Palladius* rayfed him vp, saying vnto him: No more, no more of this, my Lord *Kalander*; let vs labour to finde, before wee lament the losse: you knowe my selfe misse one,

one, who though he be not my sonne, I would disdain the fauour of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weakenesse of sorrow, make the strength of it languish: take comfort, and good successe will follow. And with those words, comfort seemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and gesture was painted victorie. Once, *Kalanders* spirits were so reuiued withall, that (receiuing some sustenance, and taking a little rest) he armed himselfe, and those few of his seruants he had left vsent, and so himselfe guided *Palladius* to the place vpon the frontiers; where already there were assembled betwene three & four thousand men, all well disposed (for *Kalanders* sake) to abide any perill: but like men disused with a long peace, more determinate to do, then skilfull how to do: lustie bodies, and braue armours; with such courage, as rather grew of despising their enemies, whom they knew not, then of any confidence for any thing which in themselves they knew; but neither cunning vse of their weapons, nor art shewed in their marching, or in camping. Which *Palladius* soone perceiuing, hee desired to vnderstand (as much as could be deliuered vnto him) the estate of the *Helots*.

And he was answered by a man well acquainted with the affaires of *Laconia*, that they were a kind of people, who hauing bene of old, freemen and possessioners, the *Lacedemonians* had conquered them, and laid, not only tribute, but bondage vpon them; which they had long borne; till of late the *Lacedemonians* through greedinesse growing more heauie then they could beare, and through contempt lesse carefull how to make them beare, they had with a generall consent (rather springing by the generalnesse of the cause, then of any artificiall practise) set themselves in armes, and whetting their courage with reuenge, and grounding their resolution vpon dispaire, they had proceeded with vnlooked for successe hauing already taken diuerse Townes and Castels, with the slaughter of many of the gentry; for whom no sex nor age could be accepted for an excuse. And that although at the first they had fought rather with beastly fury, then any souldierly discipline, practise had nowe made them comparable to the best of the *Lacedemonians*, and more of late then euer; by reason, first of *Demagoras* a great Lord, who had made himselfe of their party, and since his death, of another Captaine they had gotten, who had brought vp their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to such a meane of good gouernment, and withall led them so valourously, that (besides the time wherein *Clitophon* was taken) they had the better in some other great conflicts: in such wise, that the estate of *Lacedemon* had sent vnto them, offering peace with most reasonable and honourable conditions. *Palladius* hauing gottē his generall knowledge of the party against whom, as he had already of the party for whom he was to fight, he went to *Kalander*, and told him plainly, that by plaine force, there was small apparance of helping *Clitophon*: but some deuce was to be taken in hand, wherein no lesse discretion then valour was to be vsed.

Whereupon, the counsell of the chiefe men was called, and at last, this way *Palladius* (who by some experience, but especially by reading Histories, was acquainted with stratagemes) inuented, and was by all the rest approoued: that all the men there should dresse themselves like the poorest sorte of the people in *Arcadia*, hauing nobanners, but bloudie shirtes hanged vpon long staues, with some bad bagge-pipes in stead of drumme and fife, their armour they should aswell as might bee, couer, or at least make them looke so rustilie, and ill fauouredly as might well become such wearers; and this the whole number should do, sauing two hundred of the best chosen Gentlemen, for courage and strength,

whereof *Palladius* himselfe would bee one, who should haue their armes chayned, and be put in cartes like prisoners. This being performed according to the agreement, they marched on towards the towne of *Cardamila* where *Clitophon* was Capitaine; and being come two houres before Sunne-set within viewe of the walles, the *Helots* alreadie descrying their number, and beginning to sound the Allarum, they sent a cunning fellow (so much the cunninger as that he could maske it vnder rudenesse) who with such a kind of Rhetorike, as weeded out all flowers of Rhetorike, deliuered vnto the *Helots* assembled together, that they were countrie people of *Arcadia*, no lesse oppressed by their Lords, and no lesse desirous of libertie then they, and therefore had put themselues in the field, and had already (besides a great number slaine) taken nine or ten score Gentlemen prisoners whom they had there well and fast chained. Now because they had no strong retiring place in *Arcadia*, and were not yet of number enough to keepe the field against their Princes forces, they were come to them for succour; knowing that dayly more and more of their qualitie wold flocke vnto them, but that in the meane time, least their Prince should pursue them, or the *Lacedemonian* King & Nobility (for the likenesse of the cause) fall vpon them, they desired that if there were not roome enough for them in the towne, that yet they might encampe vnder the walles, and for surety haue their prisoners (who were such men as were euer able to make their peace) kept within the towne.

The *Helots* made but a short cōsultatiō, being glad that their cōragion had spread it selfe into *Arcadia*, and making account that if the peace did not fall out betweene them and their King, that it was the best way to set fire in all the parts of *Greece*; besides their greedinesse to haue so many Gentlemen in their hands, in whose raunfomes they already meant to haue a share; to which hast of concluding, two things wel helped; the one, that their Capitaine with the wisest of them, was at that time absent about cōfirming or breaking the peace with the state of *Lacedemon*; the second, that ouer many good fortunes began to breede a proude recklesnesse in the: therefore sending to view the Campe, and finding that by their speach they were *Arcadians*, with whom they had had no warre, neuer suspecting a priuate mans credit could haue gathered such a force, and that all other tokens witnessed them to bee of the lowest calling (besides the chaines vpon the Gentlemen) they graunted not onely leaue for the prisoners, but for some others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour vnder the walles. So opened they the gates, and receiued in the carts; which being done, and *Palladius* seeing fit time, hee gaue the signe, and shaking off their chaines (which were made with such arte, that though they seemed most strong and fast, he that ware them might easilie loose them) drewe their swordes hidden in the cartes, and so setting vpon the ward, made them to flye eitheid from the place, or from their bodies, and so giue entrie to all the force of the *Arcadians* before the *Helots* could make anie head to resist them.

But the *Helots* being men hardened against daungers, gathered (as well as they could) together in the market place, and thence would haue giuen a shrewd welcome to the *Arcadians*, but that *Palladius* (blaming those that were slow, harning them that were forward, but especially with his owne example leading them) made such an impressiō into the Squadron of the *Helots*, that at first the great body of them beginning to shake and stagger; at length, euery particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feete. Then *Kalander* cried to go to the prison, where he thought his sonne was, but *Palladius* wisht him (first scouring the streetes) to house all the *Helots*, and make themselues maister of the gates.

But

But ere that could bee accomplished, the *Helots* had gotten new heart, and with diuers sortes of shot from corners of streetes, and house windowes, galled them; which courage was come vnto them by the returne of their Captaine, who thought he brought not many with him (hauing disperst most of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great number running out of the gate, not yet posselt by the
 5 *Arcadians*, he made them turne face, and with banners displayed, his Trumpet giue the lowdest testimonie he could of his returne; which once heard, the rest of the *Helots* which were otherwise scattered, bent thitherward, with a new life of resolution: as if their Captaine had been a roote, out of which (as into branches) their
 10 courage had sprong. Then began the fight to grow most sharpe, & the encounters of more cruell obstinacie. The *Arcadians* fighting to keepe that they had wonne; the *Helots* to recouer what they had lost. The *Arcadians*, as in an vnknowne place, hauing no succour but in their hands; the *Helots*, as in their owne place fighting for their liuings, wiues & children. There was victorie and courage against reuenge &
 15 dispaire: safety of both sides being no otherwise to be gotten, but by destruction.

At length, the left wing of the *Arcadians* began to loose ground; which *Palladius* seeing, he straight thrust him selfe with his choise band against the throng that oppressed them, with such an ouerflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the *Helots* (whose eies soone iudged of that wherewith themselves were gouerned) sawe that
 20 he alone was worth al the rest of the *Arcadians*. Which he so wondred at, that it was hard to say, whether he more liked his doings, or misliked the effects of his doings: but determining that vpon that cast the game lay, and disdaining to fight with any other, sought only to ioyne with him: which minde was no lesse in *Palladius*, hauing easily marked, that he was as the first mouer of all the other hands. And so their
 35 thoughts meeting in one point, they consented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: and so drawing themselves to be the vttermost of the one side, they began a combat, which was so much inferior to the battaile in noise and number, as it was surpassing it in brauerie of fighting, & (as it were) delightful terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did
 30 their hardinesse daiken their wit, nor their wit coole their hardinesse: both valiant, as men despising death; both confident, as vnwonted to be ouercome; yet doubtful by their present feeling, and respectfull by what they had already seene. Their feete stodie, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, and their harts resolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well knowne, and according to the know-
 35 ledge should haue bene sharply visited, but that the answere was as quick as the objection. Yet some lightning; the smart bred rage, and the rage bred smart againe: till both sides beginning to wax faint, and rather desirous to die accompanied, then hopefull to liue victorious, the Captaine of the *Helots* with a blow, whose violence grew of furie, not of strength, or of strength proceeding of furie, strake *Palladius* vpon
 40 the side of the head, that he reeled astonied: and withall the helmet fell off, he remaining bare headed: but other of the *Arcadians* were readie to shield him from any harme might rise of that nakednesse.

But little needed it, for his chiefe enemy in steed of pursuing that aduantage, kneeled down, offering to deliuer the pommel of his sword, in tokē of yelding, with-
 45 al speaking aloud vnto him, that he thought it more liberty to be his prisoner, then any others General. *Palladius* standing vpon himself, & misdoubting some craft, & the *Helots* (that were next their captain) wauering between looking for some stratagem, or fearing tresp; what, said the captain, hath *Palladius* forgotē the voice of *Daiphātus*?

By that watch word *Palladius* knew that it was his onely friend *Pyrocles*, whom he had lost vpon the Sea, and therefore both most full of wonder, so to be met, if they had not bene fuller of ioy then wonder, caused the retrait to be founded, *Daiphantus* by authoritie and *Palladius* by perswasion; to which helped well the little aduantage that was of either side: and that of the *Helots* partie their Captaines behauiour had made as many amazed as sawe or heard of it: and of the *Arcadian* side the good old *Kalander* struiuing more then his old age could archiue, was newly taken prisoner. But in deede the chiefe parter of the fray was the night, which with her black armes pulled their malicious sights one from the other. But he that tooke *Kalander*, meant nothing lesse then to saue him, but onely so long, as the Captaine might learne the enemies secrets; towards whom he led the old Gentleman, when he caused the re-
 treit to be founded: looking for no other deliuerie from that captiuitie, but by the painfull taking away of all paine: when, whom should he see next to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly he had fought that day against the *Arcadians*) but his sonne *Clitophon*? But now the Captaine had caused all the principall *Helots* to be assembled, as well to deliberate what they had to do, as to receiue a message from the *Arcadians*; Among whom *Palladius* vertue (besides the loue *Kalander* bare him) hauing gotten principall authoritie, hee had perswaded them to seeke rather by parley to recouer the Father and the Sonne, then by the sworde: since the goodnes of the Captaine assured him that way to speede, and his value (wherewith he was of old acquainted) made him thinke any other way dangerous. This therefore was done in orderly maner, giuing them to vnderstand, that as they came but to deliuer *Clitophon*, so offering to leaue the footing, they alreadie had in the towne, to goe away without any further hurt, so as they might haue the father and the sonne without raunsome deliuered. Which conditions being heard and conceiued by the *Helots*, *Daiphantus* perswaded them without delay to accept them. For first (said he) since the strife is within our owne home, if you loose, you loose all that in this life can be deare vnto you: if you winne, it will be a bloudie victorie with no profit, but the flattering in our selues that same bad humour of reuenge. Besides, it is like to stirre *Arcadia* vpon vs, which now, by vsing these persons well, may be brought to some amitie. Lastly, but especially, least the king & nobilitie of *Laconia* (with whom now we haue made a perfect peace) should hope by occasion of this quarrel to ioyn the *Arcadians* with them, and so breake off the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In summe, as in all deliberations (waying the profit of the good successe with the harme of the euil successe) you shall finde this way most safe and honorable.

The *Helots* as much moued by his authoritie, as perswaded by his reasons, were content therewith. Whereupon, *Palladius* tooke order that the *Arcadians* should presently march out of the towne, taking with them their prisoners, while the night with mutuall diffidence might keepe them quiet, and ere day came they might be well on of their way, and so auoid those accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular mans quarell might engender. This being on both sides concluded on, *Kalander* and *Clitophon*, who now (with infinite ioy did knowe each other) came to kisse the hands and feete of *Daiphantus*: *Clitophon* telling his father, how *Daiphantus* (not without danger to himselfe) had preserued him from the furious malice of the *Helots*: and euen that day going to conclude the peace (least in his absence he might receiue some hurt) he had taken him in his companie, and geuen him armour, vpon promise he should take the part of the *Helots*; which he had in this fight performed, litle knowing that it was against his father; but (said *Clitophon*)
 here

here is he, who (as a father) hath new begotten me, and (as a God) hath saued me from many deathes, which already layed hold on me: which *Kalander* with teares of ioy acknowledged (besides his owne deliuerance) onely his benefite. But *Daiphantus*, who loued doing well for it selfe, and not for thanks, brake off those ceremonies, desiring to know how *Palladius* (for so he called *Musidorus*) was come into
 5 that companie, and what his present estate was; whereof receiuing a brieue declaration of *Kalander*, he sent him word by *Clitophon*, that he should not as now come vnto him, because he held himselfe not so sure a maister of the *Helots* mindes, that he would aduenture him in their power, who was so well knowne with an vnfriendly acquaintance, but that he desired him to returne with *Kalander*, whither also he with-
 10 in few dayes (hauing dispatched himselfe of the *Helots*) would repaire. *Kalander* would needes kisse his hand againe for that promise, protesting he would esteeme his house more blessed then a temple of the gods, if it had once receiued him. And then desiring pardon for *Argalus*, *Daiphantus* assured them that he would die but he
 15 would bring him (though till then kept in close prison, indeede for his safety, the *Helots* being so animated against him as else he could not haue liued) and so taking their leaue of him, *Kalander*, *Clitophon*, *Palladius* and the rest of the *Arcadians* swearing that they would no further in any sort molest the *Helots*, they straight way marched out of the towne, carying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and by
 20 morning were already within the limits of *Arcadia*.

The *Helots* of the other side shutting their gates, gaue themselves to bury their dead, to cure their wounds, and rest their wearied bodies: till (the next day bestowing the cheerefull vse of the light vpon them) *Daiphantus* making a generall conuocation spake vnto them in this maner. We are first (sayd he) to thanke the Gods, that (fur-
 25 ther then wee had either cause to hope; or reason to imagine) haue deliuered vs out of this gulf of daunger, wherein we were already swallowed. For all being lost, (had they not directed, my returne so iust as they did) it had bene too late to recouer that, which being had, wee could not keepe. And had I not happened to know one of the principall men among them, by which meanes the truce began betweene
 30 vs, you may easily conceiue, what litle reason we haue to thinke, but that either by some supply out of *Arcadia*, or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would haue made fruits of wisdom grow out of this occasion) we should haue had our power turned to ruine, our pride to repentance and sorrow. But now the storme, as it fell, so it ceased: and the error committed, in retaining *Clitophon* more hardly then his
 35 age or quarrel deserued, becomes a sharply learned experience, to vse in other times more moderation.

Now haue I to deliuer vnto you the conclusion betweene the kings with the Nobilitie of *Lacedemon*, and you; which is in all points as your selues desired: as well for that you would haue graunted, as for the assurance of what is graunted. The
 40 Townes and Fortes you presently haue, are still left vnto you, to be kept either with or without garrison, so as you alter not the lawes of the Countrey, and pay such duties as the rest of the *Laconians* do: Your selues are made by publique decree, free men, and so capable both to giue and receiue voice in election of Magistrates. The distinction of names betweene *Helots* and *Lacedemonians* to bee quite taken away,
 45 and all indifferently to enioy both names of priuiledges of *Laconians*. Your children to be brought vp with theirs in the *Spartane* discipline: and so you (framing your selues to bee good members of that estate) to bee hereafter fellowes, and no longer seruants.

Which conditions you see, cary in themselves no more contention then assurance. For this is not a peace which is made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of them. Lastly a forgetfulness decreed of all what is past, they shewing themselves glad to haue so valiant men as you are, ioyned with them, so that you are to take mindes of peace, since the cause of warre is finished; and as you hated them before like oppressours, so now to loue them as brothers; to take care of their estate because it is yours, and to labour by vertuous doing, that the posteritie may not repent your ioyning. But now one Article onely they stood vpon, which in the end I with your commissioners haue agreed vnto, that I should no more tarry here, mistaking perchance my humor, and thinking me as seditious as I am young, or else it is the king *Amiclas* procuring, in respect that it was my ill hap to kill his Nephew *Eurileon*; but how so euer it be; I haue condiscended. But so will not we, cried almost the whole assemblie, counselling one another, rather to try the vttermost euent, then to loose him by whom they had bene victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of most credit, made them throughly see how necessary it was to preferre such an oportunitie before a vaine affection; but yet could not preuaile, till openly he sware, that hee would (if at any time the *Lacedemonians* brake this treatie) come backe againe, and be their Captaine.

So then after a few daies, setting them in perfect order, he tooke his leaue of them, whose eyes bad him farewell with teares, and mouthes with kissing the places where he stept, and after making temples vnto him as to a demi-God: thinking it beyond the degree of humanitie to haue a wit so farre ouergoing his age, and such dreadfull terror proceede from so excellent beautie. But he for his sake obtained free pardon for *Argalus*, whom also (vpon oath neuer to beare armes against the *Helots*) hee deliuered: and taking onely with him certaine principall Jewels of his owne, hee would haue parted alone with *Argalus* (whose countenance well shewed, while *Parthenia* was lost he counted not himselfe deliuered) but that the whole multitude wold needes gard him into *Arcadia*. Where againe leaving them all to lament his departure, hee by enquirie got to the well-knowne house of *Kalander*: There was hee receiued with louing ioye of *Kalander*, with ioyfull loue of *Palladius*, with humble (though dolefull) demeanor of *Argalus* (whom specially both he and *Palladius* regarded) with gratefull seruiceablenes of *Clitophon*, & honourable admiration of all. For being now well viewed to haue no haire on his face, to witnesse him a man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man, and to looke with a certaine almost bashfull kinde of modestie, as if he feared the eyes of men, who was vnmoued with sight of the most horrible countenances of death; and as if nature had mistaken her worke to haue a *Marses* heart in a *Cupids* bodie: All that beheld him (and all that might behold him, did behold him) made their eyes quicke messengers to their minds, that there they had seene the vttermost that in mankind might be seene. The like wonder *Palladius* had before stirred, but that *Daiphantus*, as younger and newer come, had gotten now the aduantage in the moyst and fickle impression of eye-sight. But while all men (sauiug poore *Argalus*) made the ioy of their eyes speake for their hearts towards *Daiphantus*: Fortune (that belike was bid to that banquet, and meant then to play the good fellow) brought a pleasant aduenture among them. It was that as they had newly dined, there came in to *Kalander* a messenger, that brought him word, a yong noble Lady, neare kinswoman to the faire *Helen* Queene of *Corinth*, was come thither

thither, and desired to be lodged in his house. *Calander* (most glad of such an occasion, went out, and all his other worthy guests with him, sauing onely *Argalus*, who remained in his chamber, desirous that this company were once broken vp, that he might goe in his solitarie quest after *Parthenia*. But when they met this Lady; *Kalander* straight thought he saw his neece *Parthenia*, and was about in such familiar sort to haue spoken vnto her: but she in graue and honourable manner giuing him to vnderstand that he was mistaken, he halfe ashamed excused himselfe with the exceeding likenesse was betweene them, though indeede it seemed that this Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion; she sayd, it might very well be, hauiug bene many times taken one for another. But as soone as she was brought into the house, before she would rest her, she desired to speake with *Argalus* publikely, who she heard was in the house. *Argalus* came hastily, and as hastily thought as *Kalander* had done, with sudden changes of ioy into sorrow. But she when she had staied their thoughts with telling them her name and qualitie, in this sort spake vnto him. My Lord *Argalus*, sayd she, being of late left in the Court of Queene *Helen of Corinth*, as chiefe in her absence (the being vpon some occasion gone thence) there came vnto me the Lady *Parthenia*, so disfigured, as I thinke Greece hath nothing so ougly to behold. For my part, it was many daies, before with vehement oathes, and some good proofes, she could make me thinke that she was *Parthenia*. Yet at last finding certainly it was she, and greatly pitying her misfortune, so much the more, as that all men had euer told me (as now you do) of the great likenesse betweene vs, I tooke the best care I could of her: and of her vnderstood the whole tragicall historie of her vnderferued aduenture: and therewithall, of that most noble constancy in you my Lord *Argalus*: which whosoever loues not, shewes himselfe to be a hater of vertue, and vnworthy to liue in the societie of mankind. But no outward cherishing could salue the inward sore of her mind, but a few daies since she died: before her death earnestly desiring, and perswading me, to thinke of no husband but of you; as of the only man in the world worthy to be loued, withall she gaue me this Ring to deliuer you; desiring you, and by the authoritie of loue commanding you, that the affection you bare her, you should turne to me: assuring you, that nothing can please her soule more, then to see you and me matched together. Now my L. though this office be not (perchance) sutable to my estate nor sex, who should rather looke to be desired; yet, an extraordinary desert requires an extraordinary proceeding: and therefore I am come (with faithfull loue built vpon your worthinesse) to offer my selfe, and to beseech you to accept the offer: and if these noble Gentlemen present will say it is great folly, let them withal, say it is great loue. And then she staied, earnestly attending *Argalus* his answer, who first making most hartie sighes do such obsequies as he could to *Parthenia*, thus answered her.

Madame (sayd hee) infinitely am I bound vnto you, for this, no more rare then noble courtesie; but most bound for the goodnesse I perceiue you shewed to the Lady *Parthenia* (with that the teares ranne downe his eyes; but hee followed on) and as much as so vnfortunate a man, fit to bee the spectacle of miserie, can doe you seruice; determine you haue made a purchase of a slaue (while I liue) neuer to sayle you. But this great matter you propose vnto me, wherein I am not so blind as not to see what happinesse it shold be vnto me; Excellent Lady, know, that if my hart were mine to giue, you before all other should haue it; but *Parthenia* it is though dead: there I began, there I ende all matter of affection: I hope I shall nor long tarry after her, with whose beautie if I had onely bene in loue, I should be so with

you, who haue the same beautie: but it was *Parthenias* selfe I loued, and loue; which no likenesse can make one; no commandement dissolue, no foulness defile, nor no death finish. And shall I receiue (saide she) such disgrace, as to be refused? Noble Lady (saide he) let not that hard word be vsed; who know your exceeding worthinesse farre beyond my desert: but it is onely happinesse I refuse, since of the onely happinesse I could and can desire, I am refused.

He had scarce spoken those words, when she ranne to him, and imbracing him, why then *Argalus* (saide she) take thy *Parthenia*; and *Parthenia* it was indeede. But because sorrow forbad him too soone to beleue, she told him the truth, with all circumstances; how being parted alone, meaning to die in some solitary place, as she hapned to make her complaint, the Queene *Helen* of *Corinth* (who likewise felt her part of miseries) being then walking also alone in that lonely place, heard her, and neuer left till she had knowne the whole discourse. Which the noble Queene greatly pitying, she sent her to a Physition of hers the most excellent man in the world, in hope he could helpe her: which in such sort as they saw he had performed, and she taking with her of the Queenes seruants, thought yet to make this triall, whether he would quickly forget his true *Parthenia*, or no. Her speech was confirmed by the *Corinthian* Gentlemen, who before had kept her counsell, and *Argalus* easily perswaded to what more then ten thousand yeares of life he desired: and *Kalander* would needes haue the mariage celebrated in his house, principally the longer to hold his deare guests, towards whom he was now (besides his owne habite of hospitalitie) caried with loue and duty: and therefore omitted no seruice that his wit could inuent, and his power minister.

But no way he saw he could so much pleasure them, as by leauing the two friends alone, who being thrunk aside to the banquetting house where the pictures were; there *Palladius* recounted vnto him, that after they had both abandoned the burning ship (& either of them taken some thing vnder him, the better to support him to the shore) hee knew not how, but either with ouer-labouring in the fight, and sudden cold, or the too much receiuing of salt water, he was past himselfe: but yet holding fast (as the nature of dying men is to do) the chest that was vnder him, he was cast on the lands, where he was taken vp by a couple of shepheards, and by them brought life againe, and kept from drowning himselfe, when hee despaired of his safetie. How after hauing failed to take him into the fisher boate, he had by the shepheards perswasion come to this Gentlemans house; where being dangerously sicke, hee had yeelded to seeke the recouery of health, onely for that hee might the sooner goe seeke the deliuerie of *Pyrocles*: to which purpose *Kalander* by some friends of his in *Messena*, had already set a shippe or two abroad, when this accident of *Clitophons* taking had so blessedly procured their meeting. Then did he set forth vnto him the noble intertainment and carefull cherishing of *Kalander* towards him, and so vpon occasion of the pictures present, deliuered with the franknes of a friends tongue, as neare as he could, word by word what *Kalander* had told him touching the strange story (with all the particularities belonging) of *Arcadia*, which did in many sorts so delight *Pyrocles* to heare; that hee would needes haue much of it againe repeated, and was not contented till *Kalander* himselfe had answered him diuerse questions.

But first at *Musidorus* request, though in briebe maner, his minde much running vpon the strange storie of *Arcadia*, he did declare by what course of aduentures he was come to make vp their mutuall happinesse in meeting. When (cosin saide he)

we had stript our selues, and were both leapt into the Sea, and swome a little toward the shoare, I found by reason of some wounds I had, that I should not be able to get the land, and therefore turned backe againe to the mast of shippe, where you found me, assuring my selfe, that if you came aliue to the shoare, you would
 5 seeke me; if you were lost, as I thought it as good to perish as to liue, so that place as good to perish in as another. There I found my sword among some of the frowds, wishing (I must confesse) if I died, to bee found with that in my hand, and withall wauing it about my head, that saylers by, might haue the better glimpse of me. There you missing mee, I was taken vp by Pyrates, who putting me vnder
 10 boord prisoner, presently set vpon another ship and maintaining a long fight, in the end, put them all to the sword. Amongst whom I might heare them greatly praise one young man, who fought most valiantlie, whom (as loue is carefull, and misfortune subiect to doubtfulnessse) I thought certainly to bee you. And so holding you as dead, from that time till the time I saw you, in truth I sought nothing more
 15 then a noble end, which perchaunce made me more hardie then otherwise I would haue beene. Tryall whereof came within two dayes after: for the Kings of *Lacedemon* hauing set out some Galleys, vnder the charge of one of their Nephewes, to scowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with vs, where our Captaine wanting men, was driuen to arme some of his prisoners, with promise of libertie for well
 20 fighting: among whom I was one, and being boorded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to kill *Euryleon* the Kings Nephew: but in the end they preuailed, and we were all taken prisoners: I not caring much what became of me (onely keeping the name of *Daiphantus*; according to the resolution you know is betweene vs) but being laid in the iayle of *Tenaria*, with speeciall hate to me for the death of *Euryleon*,
 25 the popular sort of that towne conspired with the *Helots*, and so by night opened them the gates; where entring and killing all of the gentle and rich faction, for honestie sake brake open all prisons, and so deliuered me: and I mooued with gratefulnesse, and encouraged with carelesnesse of life so behaued my selfe in some conflicts they had with in few dayes, that they barbarouslie thinking vn sensible wonders of
 30 mee, and with all so much the better trusting mee, as they heard I was hated of the King of *Lacedemon*, their chiefe Captaine being slaine, as you know by the noble *Argalus* (who helped thereunto by his perswasion) hauing borne a great affection vnto mee, and to auoide the daungerous emulation which grew among the chiefe, who should haue the place, and also affected, as rather to haue a straunger then a
 35 competitour, they elected mee (God wot little proude of that dignity;) restoring vnto me such things of mine as being taken first by the Pyrates, and then by the *Lacedemonians*, they had gotten in the sacke of the towne. Now being in it, so good was my successe with many victories, that I made a peace for them to their owne liking the very day that you deliuered *Clitophon*, whom I with much a do had
 40 preserued. And in my peace the King *Amiclas* of *Lacedemon* would needes haue mee banished, and depriued of the dignitie whereunto I was exalted: which (and you may see how much you are bound to mee) for your sake I was content to suffer, a new hope rising in mee, that you were not dead: and so meaning to trauaile ouer the world to seeke you; and now heere (my deare *Musidorus*)
 45 you haue mee. And with that (embracing and kissing each other) they called *Kalander*, of whom *Daiphantus* desired to heare the full storie, which before hee had recounted to *Palladius*, and to see the letter of *Philanax*, which hee read and well marked.

But within some dayes after, the marriage betweene *Argalus* and the faire *Parthenia* being to be celebrated *Daiphantus* and *Palladius* selling some of their Jewels, furnished themselves of very faire apparell, meaning to do honour to their louing host; who as much for their sakes, as for the marriage, set forth each thing in most gorgeous manner. But all the cost bestowed did not so much enrich, nor all the fine deckings so much beautifie, nor all the daintie deuises so much delight, as the fairenesse of *Parthenia*, the pearle of all the maides of *Mantineia*: who as she went to the Temple to be married, her eyes themselves seemed a temple, wherein loue and beautie were married: her lips though they were kept close with modest silence, yet with a pretty kind of naturall swelling, they seemed to inuite the guests that lookt on them, her cheekes blushing, and withall when she was spoken vnto, a little smiling, were like roses, when their leaues are with a little breath stirred: her haire being laied at the full length downe her backe, bare shew as if the vaward fayled, yet that would conquer. *Daiphantus* marking her, *ô Iupiter* (said he speaking to *Palladius*) how happens it, that beautie is onely confined to *Arcadia*? But *Palladius* not greatly attending his speech, some daies were continued in the solemnizing the marriage, with all conceits that might deliuer delight to mens fancies.

But such a chaunge was growne in *Daiphantus*, that (as if cheerefulnesse had bene rediuousnesse, & good entertainment were turnd to discourtesie) he would euer get himselfe alone, though almost when he was in company, he was alone, so little attention he gaue to any that spake vnto him: euen the colour and figure of his face began to receiue some alteration; which he shewed little to heede: but euery morning earely going abroad, either to the garden, or to some woods towards the desert, it seemed his onely comfort was to be without a comforter. But long it could not be hid from *Palladius*, whom true loue made ready to marke, and long knowledge able to marke; and therefore being now growne weary of his abode in *Arcadia*, hauing informed himselfe fully of the strength and riches of the country, of the nature of the people, and maner of their lawes: and seeing the court could not be visited, prohibited to all men, but to certaine shepheardish people, he greatly desired a speedie returne to his owne countrie, after the many mazes of fortune he had troden. But perceiuing this great alteration in his friend, he thought first to breake with him thereof; and then to hasten his returne; whereto he found him but smally inclined: whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and countenances, as if he were disputing with the trees, began in this manner to say vnto him.

A mind well trained and long exercised in vertue (my sweete and worthie cosin) doth not easily chaunge any course it once vndertakes, but vpon well grounded and well waied causes. For being witnesse to it selfe of his owne inward good, it findes nothing without it of so high a price, for which it should be altered. Euen the very countenance and behauiour of such a man doth shew forth Images of the same constancy, by maintaining a right harmonie betwixt it and the inward good, in yeelding it selfe sutable to the vertuous resolution of the mind. This speech I direct to you (noble friend *Pyrocles*) the excellencie of whose mind and well chosen course in vertue, if I do not sufficiently know, hauing seene such rare demonstrations of it, it is my weakenesse, and not your vnworthinesse, but as in deede I know it, and knowing it most dearly loue both it, and him that hath it; so must I needes say, that since our late comming into this countrie, I haue marked in you, I will not say an alteration, but a relenting truely, and a slacking of the maine career, you had so notably begun & almost performed; and that in such sort, as I cannot find sufficient reason in my great loue

loue toward you how to allow it, for (to leaue off other secreter arguments which
 my acquaintance with you makes me easilie find) this in effect to any man may be
 manifest, that whereas you were wont in all places you came, to giue your selfe ve-
 hemently to the knowledge of those things which might better your mind; to seeke
 5 the familiaritie of excellent men in learning and souldierie: and lastly, to put all these
 things in practise both by continuall wise proceeding, and worthie enterprises, as oc-
 casion fell for them; you now leaue all these things vndone: you let your mind fall a-
 sleepe: beside your countenance troubled (which surely comes not of vertue) for ver-
 tue like the cleare heauē is without clouds) & lastly you subiect your selfe to solitari-
 10 nes, the flie enemy, that doth most separate a man from well doing. *Pyrocles* mind was
 al this while so fixed vpon another deuotion, that he no more attentiuely marked his
 friends discourse, then the child that hath leaue to play, marks the last part of his les-
 son; or the diligēt Pilot in a dangerous tēpest doth attēd the vnskilfull words of a pas-
 senger: yet the very sound hauing imprinted the generall points of his speech in his
 15 hart, pierced with any mislike of so deerely an esteemed friēd, & desirous by degrees
 to bring him to a gentler consideration of him, with a shamefast looke (witnessing
 he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) answered him to this purpose.
 Excellent *Musidorus*, in the praise you gaue me in the beginning of your speech, I
 easily acknowledge the force of your good will vnto me, for neither could you haue
 20 thought so well of me, if extremitie of loue had not made your iudgement partiall,
 nor you could haue loued me so intirely, if you had not bene apt to make so great
 (though vnderferued) iudgements of me; and euen so must I say to those imperfecti-
 ons, to which though I haue euer through weaknes bene subiect, yet you by the day-
 ly mending of your mind haue of late bin able to looke into them, which before you
 25 could not discerne; so that the change you speake of, falles not out by my impairing,
 but by your bettering. And yet vnder the leaue of your better iudgement, I must
 needes say thus much my deare cosin, that I find not my selfe wholie to be condem-
 ned, because I do not with continuall vehemency folow those knowledges, which you
 call the bettering of my mind; for both the mind it selfe must (like other things) som-
 30 times be vnbenent, or else it wil be either weakned, or broken: And these knowledges,
 as they are of good vse, so are they not all the minde may stretch it selfe vnto: who
 knowes whether I feede not my minde with higher thoughts? Truely, as I know not
 all the particularities, so yet I see the bounds of all these knowledges: but the work-
 ings of the mind I find much more infinite, then can be led vnto by the eie, or imagi-
 35 ned by any, that distract their thoughts without themselves.

And in such contemplation, or as I thinke more excellent, I enioy my solitari-
 nesse; & my solitarines perchance, is the nurse of these cōtemplations. Eagles we see
 flie alone; & they are but sheepe, which alwayes heard together; condemne not ther-
 fore my mind sometimes to enioy it selfe; nor blame not the taking of such times as
 40 serue most fit for it. And alas, deare *Musidorus*, if I bee sadde, who knowes better
 then you the iust causes I haue of sadnesse? And here *Pyrocles* suddenly stopped,
 like a man vnsatisfied in himselfe, though his wit might well haue serued to haue
 satisfied another. And so looking with a countenance, as though hee desired hee
 should know his mind without hearing him speake, and yet desirous to speake,
 45 to breath out some part of his inward euill, sending againe new bloud to his face, he
 continued his speech in this manner. And Lord (deare cosin, said he) doth not
 the pleasantnesse of this place carry in it selfe sufficient reward for any time lost in it?
 Doyou not see how all things conspire together to make this countrie a heauenly

dwelling? Do you not see the grasse, how in colour they excell the Emeralds, every one striving to passe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of an equall height? And see you not the rest of these beautifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit to know, & his life to expresse? Do not these stately trees seeme to maintaine their flourishing old age with the only happinesse of their seat, being clothed with a continual spring, because no beautie here should ever fade? Doth not the aire breath health, which the birds (delightful both to eare and eye) do dayly solemnize with the sweete consent of their voices? Is not every *Eccho* thereof a perfect Musicke? & these fresh & delightfull brookes how slowly they slide away, as loth to leaue the company of so many things vnited in perfection? & with how sweete a murmure they lament their forced departure? Certainly, certainly, cosin, it must needs be that some Goddesse inhabiteth this Region, who is the soule of this soyle: for neither is anie lesse then a Goddesse, worthie to be shrined in such a heape of pleasures: nor anie lesse then a Goddesse could haue made it so perfect a plotte of the celestiall dwellings. And so ended with a deepe sigh, rewfully casting his eye vpon *Musidorus* as more desirous of pitie then pleading. But *Musidorus* had all this while held his looke fixed vpon *Pyrocles* countenance; and with no lesse louing attention marked how his words proceeded from him: but in both these he perceiued such strange diuersities, that they rather increased new doubts, then gaue him ground to settle anie iudgement: for besides his eyes sometimes euen great with teares, the oft changing of his colour, with a kind of shaking vnstayednesse ouer all his body, he might see in his countenance some great determination mixed with feare; and might perceiue in him store of thoughts, rather stirred then digested; his words interrupted continually with sighes (which serued as a burthen to each sentence) and the tenor of his speech (though of his wonted phrase) not knit together to one constant end, but rather dissolued in it selfe, as the vehemency of the inward passion preuailed: which made *Musidorus* frame his aunswere nearest to that humor, which should soonest put out the secret. For hauing in the beginning of *Pyrocles* speech which defended his solitarines, framed in his mind a replie against it, in the praise of honourable action, in shewing that such a kind of contemplation is but a glorious title to idlenesse; that in action a man did not onely better himselfe but benefit others; that the gods would not haue deliuered a soule into the body, which hath armes and legges, only instruments of doing, but that it were intended the mind should imploy them, and that the mind should best know his owne good or euill by practise, which knowledge was the onely way to increase the one, and correct the other: besides many other argumentes, which the plentifulnesse of the matter yeilded to the sharpenesse of his wit. When hee found *Pyrocles* leaue that, and fall into such an affected praising of the place, hee left it likewise, and ioyned with him therein: because he found him in that humor vtter more store of passion; and euen thus kindly embracing him, he said: Your words are such (noble cosin) so sweetly and strongly handled in the praise of solitarinesse, as they would make me likewise yeeld my selfe vp into it, but that the same words make me know, it is more pleasant to enioy the companie of him that can speake such words, then by such words to be perswaded to follow solitarinesse. And euen so do I giue you leaue (sweete *Pyrocles* euer to defend solitarinesse, so long as to defend it, you euer keepe companie. But I maruell at the excessiue praises you giue to this country; in truth it is not vnpleasant: but yet if you would returne into *Macedon*, you should either see many heauens, or find this no more then earthly. And euen *Tempe* in my *Theſſalia* (where you and

I to my great happinesse were brought vp together) is nothing inferiour vnto it. But I thinke you will make mee see, that the vigor of your wit can shew it selfe in any subiect: or else you feede sometimes your solitarinesse with the conceits of the Poets, whose liberall pennes can as easily trauaile ouer mountaines, as molehills: and so like well disposed men, set vp every thing to the highest note; especially, when they put such words in the mouthes of one of these fantastical mind-infected people, that children & Musicians call Louers. This word, Louer, did no lesse pierce poore *Pyrocles*, then the right tune of musicke toucheth him that is sicke of the *Tarantula*. There was not one part of his body, that did not feelee a sudden motion, while his hart with panting, seemed to daunce to the sonnd of that word, yet after some pause (lifting vp his eyes a little from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of *Musidorus*) armed with the very countenance of the poore prisoner at the barre, whose answer is nothing but guiltie: with much ado he brought forth this question. And alas, sayd he, deare cosin, what if I be not so much the Poet (the freedom of whose pen can exercise it selfe in any thing) as euen that miserable subiect of his cunning, whereof you speake? Now the eternall Gods forbid (*Mainely* cryed out *Musidorus*) that euer my care should be poysoned with so euill newes of you. O let me neuer know that any base affection should get any Lordship in your thoughts. But as he was speaking more, *Kalander* came, and brake off their discourse, with inuiting them to the hunting of a goodly stagge, which being harboured in a wood thereby, he hoped would make them good sport, and driue away some part of *Daiphantus* melancholy. They condescended, and so going to their lodgings, furnished themselues as liked them, *Daiphantus* writing a few words which he left sealed in a letter against their returne.

Then went they together abroad, the good *Kalander* entertaining them with pleasant discoursing, how well he loued the sport of hunting, when he was a yong man, how much in the comparison thereof he disdained all chamber delights, that the Sunne (how great a iourney soeuer he had to make) could neuer preuent him with earlinesse, nor the Moone (with her sober countenance) dissuade him from watching till midnight for the deares feeding. O, sayd he, you will neuer liue to my age, without you keepe your selues in breath with exercise, and in heart with ioyfulness: too much thinking doth consume the spirits, and oft it falles out, that while one thinks too much of his doing, he leaues to doe the effect of his thinking. Then spared he not to remember, how much *Arcadia* was chaunged since his youth: actiuitie and good fellowship being nothing in the price it was then held in, but according to the nature of the old growing world, still worse and worse. Then would he tell them stories of such gallants as he had knowne: and so with pleasant company beguiled the times fast, and shortned the wayes length, till they came to the side of the wood, where the hounds were in couples staying their comming, but with a whining accent crauing libertie: many of them in colour and markes resembling, that it shewed they were of one kind. The huntsmen handsomely attired in their greene liveries, as though they were children of Summer, with staues in their hands to beate the guiltlesse earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with hornes about their neckes, to sound an alarum vpon a fillie fugitiue. The hounds were straight vncoupled, and ere long the Stagge thought it better to trust to the nimblenesse of his feete, then to the slender fortification of his lodging: but euen his feete, betraied him; for howsoeuer they went, they themselues vttered themselues to the sent of their enemies; who one taking it of another,

and sometimes beleeuing the windes aduertisements, sometimes the view of (their faithfull counsellors) the huntsmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was already begun. Their crie being composed of so well sorted mouthes, that any man would perceiue therein some kind of proportion, but the skilfull woodmen did find a musicke. Then delight and varietie of opinion 5 drew the horsemen sundrie wayes; yet cheering their houndes with voyce and horne, kept still (as it were) together. The wood seemed to conspire with them against his owne citizens, dispersing their noise through all his quarters, and euen the Nymph *Eccho* left to bewaile the losse of *Narcissus*, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end so hotly pursued, that (leaving his flight hee was driuen to 10 make courage of dispaire; and so turning his head, made the hounds (with change of speech) to testifie that he was at a bay: as if from hot pursuite of their enemy, they were suddenly come to a parley.

But *Kalander* (by his skill of coasting the countrey) was among the first that came in to the besieged *Dere*; whom when some of the younger fort would haue killed with their swordes, he would not suffer: but with a Crosse-bow sent a death to 15 the poore beast, who with teares shewed the vnkindnesse he tooke of mans crueltie.

But by the time that the whole company was assembled, and that the Stagge had bestowed him selfe liberally among them that had killed him, *Daiphantus* was mist, for whom *Palladius* carefully enquiring, no newes could bee giuen him, but by 20 one that sayd, he thought hee was returned home; for that hee markt him, in the chiefe of the hunting, take a by way, which might leade to *Kalander's* house. That answer for the time satisfying, and they hauing perfourmed all duties, as well for the Stagges funerall, as the hounds triumph, they returned: some talking of the fatnesse of the Deares body; some of the fairenesse of his head; some of the hounds cunning; 25 some of their speedes; and some of their cry: till comming home (about the time that the candles begin to inherit the Sunnes office) they found *Daiphantus* was not to be found. Whereat *Palladius* greatly maruelling, and a day or two passing, while neither search nor inquirie could helpe him to knowledge, at last he lighted vpon the letter, which *Pyrocles* had written before hee went a hunting, and left in his study among other of his writings. The letter was directed to *Palladius* himselfe, and contained these words. 30

My onely friend, violence of loue leades me into such a course, whereof your knowledge may much more vexe you, then helpe me. Therefore pardon my concealing it from you, since, if I wrong you, it is in the respect I beare you. Returne into 35 *Thesalia*, I pray you, as full of good fortune, as I am of desire: and if I liue, I will in short time follow you; if I die, loue my memory.

This was all, and this *Palladius* read twise or thrise ouer. Ah (said he) *Pyrocles*, what meanes this alteration? what haue I deserued of thee, to be thus banished of thy counsels? Heretofore I haue accused the sea, cōdēned the Pyrats, & hated my euil fortune, 40 that deprived me of thee; but now thy self is the sea, which drownes my comfort, thy self is the Pirat that robs thy selfe frō me: thy own wil becomes my euil fortune. Thē turned he his thoughts to all formes of ghessees that might light vpon the purpose and course of *Pyrocles*: for he was not so sure by his words, that it was loue, as he was doubtful where the loue was. One time he thought, some beautie in *Laconia* had lay- 45 ed hold of his eies; another time he feared, that it might be *Parthenias* excellency, which had brokē the bands of al former resolutiō; but the more he thought, the more he knew not what to thinke, armies of obiectiōs rising against any accepted opinion.

Then

Then as carefull he was what to do himselfe: at length determined, neuer to leaue seeking him, till his search should be either by meeting accomplished, or by death ended. Therefore (for all the vnkindnesse bearing tender respect, that his friends secret determination should be kept from any suspition in others) he went to *Kalander*, and told him, that he had receiued a message from his friend, by which he vnderstood he was gone backe againe into *Laconia*, about some matters greatly importing the poore men, whose protection he had vnderaken, and that it was in any sort fit for him, to follow him, but in such priuate wise, as not to be knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid him farewell: arming himselfe in a blacke armour, as either a badge, or prognostication of his mind: and taking onely with him good store of money, and a few choise iewels, leauing the greatest number of them, and most of his apparell with *Kalander*: which he did partly to giue the more cause to *Kalander* to expect their returne, and so to be the lesse curiously inquisitiue after them: and partly to leaue those honourable thanks vnto him, for his charge and kindnesse, which hee knew hee would no other way receiue. The good olde man hauing neither reason to dissuade, nor hope to perswade, receiued the things, with minde of a keeper, not of an owner; but before he went, desired he might haue the happinesse, fully to know what they were: which he sayd, he had euer till then delayed, fearing to be any way importune: but now he could not be so much an enemy to his desires as any longer to imprison them in silence; *Palladius* told him, that the matter was not so secret, but that so worthie a friend deserued the knowledge, and should haue it as soone as he might speake with his friend: without whose consent (because their promise bound him otherwise) he could not reueale it: but bad him hold for most assured, that if they liued but a while, he should find, that they which bare the names of *Daiphantus* and *Palladius*, would giue him and his cause to thinke his noble courtesie well imployed. *Kalander* would presse him no further, but desiring that hee might haue leaue to goe, or at least to send his sonne and seruants with him, *Palladius* brake off all ceremonies, by telling him; his case stood so, that his greatest fauour should be in making least a do of his parting. Wherewith *Kalander* knowing it to be more cumber then curtesie, to striue, abstained from further vrging him, but not from hartie mourning the losse of so sweete a conuersation.

Onely *Clitophon* by vehement importunitie obtained to goe with him, to come againe to *Daiphantus*, whom hee named and accounted his Lord. And in such priuate guise departed *Palladius*, though hauing a companion to talke withall, yet talking much more with vnkindnesse. And first they went to *Mantineae*; whereof because *Parthenia* was, he suspected there might be some cause of his abode. But finding there no newes of him, hee went to *Tegae*, *Ripa*, *Enispa*, *Stimphalus*, and *Pheneus*, famous for the poisonous *Stygian* water, and through al the rest of *Arcadia*, making their eyes, their eares, and their tongues serue almost for nothing, but that enquirie. But they could know nothing but that in none of those places he was knowne. And so went they, making one place succede to another, in like vncertainty to their search, many times encountring strange aduentures, worthy to be registred in the roules of fame; but this may not be omitted. As they past in a pleasant valley (of either side of which high hills lifted vp their beetle-browes, as if they would ouer looke the pleasantnesse of their vnder prospect) they were by the daintinesse of the place, & the wearinesse of themselves, inuited to light from their horses; and pulling off their bits, that they might somthing refresh their mouthes vpon the grasse (which plentifully grew, brought vp vnder the care of those well shading

trees) they themselves layed them downe hard by the murmuring musicke of cer-
 taine waters, which spouted out of the side of the hils, and in the bottome of the val-
 lie made of many springs a pretie brooke, like a common-wealth of many families:
 but when they had a while harkened to the perswasion of sleepe, they rose, and
 walkt onward in that shadie place, till *Clitophon* espied a peece of armour, and not far
 off another peece: and so the sight of one peece teaching him to looke for more, he
 at length found all, with head-peece and shield, by the deuice whereof, which was
 he straight knew it to be the armour of his cosin, the
 noble *Amphialus*. Wherupō (fearing some inconuenience hapned vnto him) he told
 both his doubt and cause of doubt to *Palladius*, who (considering thereof) 10
 thought best to make no longer stay, but to follow on: least perchance some vio-
 lence were offered to so worthie a Knight, whom the fame of the world seemed to set
 in ballance with any Knight liuing. Yet with a sudden conceipt, hauing long borne
 great honour to the name of *Amphialus*, *Palladius* thought best to take that armour,
 thinking thereby to learne by them that should know that armour, some newes 15
 of *Amphialus*, and yet not hinder him in the search of *Daiphantus* too. So he by
 the helpe of *Clitophon* quickly put on that armour, whereof there was no one peece
 wanting, though hacked in some places, bewraying some fight not long since passed.
 It was something too great, but yet serued wel inough. And so getting on their hor-
 ses, they trauelled but a little way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley 20
 into a faire field, they met with a coach drawne with foure milke-white horses fur-
 nished all in blacke, with a blacke a More boy vpon euery horse, they all apparelled
 in white, the coach it selfe very richly furnished in blacke and white. But before they
 could come so neare as to discern what was within, there came running vpon
 them aboute a dosen horsemen, who cried to them to yeelde themselves prisoners, 25
 or else they should die. But *Palladius* not accustomed to graunt ouer the pos-
 session of himselfe vpon so vniust titles, with sworde drawne, gaue them so rude
 an aunswere, that diuerse of them neuer had breath to reply againe: for being well
 backt by *Clitophon*, and hauing an excellent horse vnder him, when he was ouerprest
 by some, he auoided them, & ere th'other thought of it, punished in him his fellowes 30
 faults: and so either with cunning or with force, or rather with a cunning force,
 left none of them either liuing, or able to make his life serue to others hurt. Which
 being done, he approched the coach, assuring the blacke boies they should haue no
 hurt, who were else ready to haue run away, and looking into the coach, he found
 in the one end a Lady of great beautie, & such a beautie, as shewed forth the beames 35
 both of wisdom and good nature, but all as much darkned, as might be, with sor-
 row. In the other, two Ladies (who by their demeanure shewed well, they were
 but her seruants) holding before them a picture; in which was a goodly Gentleman
 (whom he knew not) painted, hauing in their faces a certaine waiting sorrow, their
 eies being infected with their mistres weeping. But, the chiefe Lady hauing not so 40
 much as once heard the noise of this cōfli& (so had sorrow closed vp all the entries of
 her mind, & loue tied her senses to that beloued picture (now the shadow of him fal-
 ling vpon the picture made her cast vp her eie, & seeing the armour which too well
 she knew, thinking him to be *Amphialus* the Lord of her desires (bloud cōming more
 freely into her cheekes, as though it would be bold, & yet there growing new againe 45
 pale for feare) with a pitiful look (like one vniustly condemned:) My Lord *Amphialus*
 sayd she, you haue inough punished me: it is time for crueltie to leaue you, and euill
 fortune me; If not I pray you (and to graunt, my praier fitter time nor place you can
 haue

haue) accomplish the one euen now, & finish the other. With that, sorow impatient to be slowly vttered in her often staying speeches, poured it selfe so fast in teares, that *Palladius* could not hold her longer in error, but pulling off his helmet, Madam (said he) I perceiue you mistake me: I am a stranger in these parts, set vpon (without any cause giue by me) by some of your seruants, whom because I haue in my iust defence euill entreated, I came to make my excuse to you, whom seeing such as I do, I finde greater cause, why I should craue pardon of you. When she saw his face, & heard his speech, she looked out of the coach, & seeing her men, some slaine, some lying vnder their dead horses, & struiing to get from vnder them, without making more account of the matter, Truly (said she) they are wel serued that durst lift vp their armes against that armour. But Sir Knight (said she) I pray you tell me, how come you by this armour? for if it be by the death of him that owed it, then haue I more to say vnto you. *Palladius* assured her it was not so; telling her the true manner how he found it. It is like enough (said she) for that agrees with the manner he hath lately vsed. But I beseech you Sir (said she) since your prowesse hath bereft me of my company: let it yet so farre heale the wounds it selfe hath giuen, as to gard me to the next towne. How great so euer my businesse be sayre Lady (said he) it shall willingly yeeld to so noble a cause: But first euen by the fauour you beare to the Lord of this noble armour, I coniure you to tell mee the storie of your fortune herein, lest hereafter when the image of so excellēt a Ladie in so strange a plight come before mine eyes, I condemne my selfe of want of consideration in not hauing demanded thus much. Neither aske I it without protestation, that wherein my sword and faith may auaille you, they shall bind themselues to your seruice. Your coniuration, faire Knight (said she) is too strong for my poore spirite to disobey, and that shall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being but by one vnrelieueable) to graunt your will herein: and to say the truth, a strange nicenesse were it in me to reframe that from the eares of a person representing so much worthinesse, which I am glad euen to rockes & woods to vtter. Know you then that my name is *Helen*, Queene by birth: and hitherto possession of the faire citie & territorie of *Corinth*. I can say no more of my selfe, but beloued of my people: and may iustly say, beloued, since they are content to beare with my absence, & folly. But I being left by my fathers death and accepted by my people, in the highest degree, that countrie could receiue; as soone, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickly swarmed full of suters; some perchance louing my state, others my person, but once I know all of them, howsoeuer my possessions were in their hearts, my beautie (such as it is) was in their mouthes; many strangers of princely & noble blood, and all of mine own countrie, to whom either birth or vertue gaue courage to auowe so high a desire.

Among the rest, or rather before the rest, was the Lord *Philoxenus*, sonne & heire to the vertuous noble man *Timotheus*: which *Timotheus* was a man both in power, riches, parentage, and (which passed all these) goodnes, and (which followed all these) loue of the people, beyond any of the great men of my countie. Now this sonne of his, I must say truly, not vnworthie of such a father, bending himselfe by all meanes of seruiceablenes to mee, and setting forth of himselfe to win my fauour, wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I lesse misliked him then any of the rest: which in some proportion my countenance deliuered vnto him. Though I must protest it was a verie false embassadour, if it deliuered at all any affection, whereof my heart was vtterly void, I as then esteeming my selfe borne to rule, and thinking foule scorne willingly to submit my selfe to be ruled.

But whiles *Philoxenus* in good sort pursued my fauour, and perchance nourished himselfe with ouer much hope, because he found I did in some sort acknowledge his vlew, one time among the rest he brought with him a deare friend of his. With that she looked vpon the picture before her, & straight sighed, & straight teares followed, as if the Idole of dutie ought to be honoured with such oblations, and then her speach staied the tale, hauing brought her to that looke, but that looke hauing quite put her out of her tale. But *Palladius* greatly pitying so sweete a sorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already knowne & honoured, besought for her promise sake, to put silence so long vnto her moning, till she had recounted the rest of this story. Why said she, this is the picture of *Amphialus*: what need I say more to you? what eare is so barbarous but hath heard of *Amphialus*? who followes deeds of armes, but euery where findes monumētts of *Amphialus*? who is curteous, noble, liberal, but he that hath the example before his eyes of *Amphialus*? where are al heroical parts, but in *Amphialus*? O *Amphialus* I would thou were not so excellent, or I would I thought thee not so excellent, and yet would I not that I would so: with that she wept againe, till he againe soliciting the conclusion of her story: Then must you (said she) know the story of *Amphialus*: for his will is my life, his life my history: and in deed in what can I better emploie my lips then in speaking of *Amphialus*?

This Knight then whose figure you see, but whose mind can be painted by nothing, but by their true shape of vertue, is brothers sonne to *Basilus* King of *Arcadia*, and in his childhood esteemed his heire: till *Basilus* in his old yeares marrying a yong and a faire Ladie, had of her those two daughters, so famous for their perfection in beautie: which put by their yong cosin from that expectation.

Whereupon his mother (a woman of a haughtie heart, being daughter to the King of *Argos*, either disdaining, or fearing, that her sonne should liue vnder the power of *Basilus*, sent him to that Lord *Timotheus* (betweene whom and her dead husband there had passed straight bands of mutuall hospitalitie, to be brought vp in companie with his sonne *Philoxenus*).

A happie resolution for *Amphialus*, whose excellent nature was by this meanes trained on with as good education, as any Princes sonne in the world could haue, which otherwise it is thought his mother (farre vnworthie of such a sonne) would not haue giuen him. The good *Timotheus* no lesse louing him then his own sonne, well they grew in yeares; and shortly occasions fell aptly to trie *Amphialus*, and all occasions were but steppes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was so hard, but his valour ouercame: which yet still he so guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts spoken of but he for his manhood, yet, as though therein he excelled him selfe, he was commonly called the curteous *Amphialus*. An endlesse thing it were for me to tell, how manie aduentures (terrible to be spoken of) he atchieued: what monsters, what Giants, what conquests of countries, sometimes vsing policie, sometimes force, but alwaies vertue well followed, and but followed by *Philoxenus*: betweene whom, and him, so fast a friendship by education was knit, that at last *Philoxenus* hauing no greater matter to imploy his friendship in, then to winne me, therein desired, & had his vttermoost furtherance: to that purpose brought he him to my court, where truely I may iustly witnesse with him, that what his wit could conceiue (and his wit can conceiue as farre as the limits of reason stretch) was all directed to the setting forward the suite of his friend *Philoxenus*: mine eares could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthinesse of *Philoxenus*, and of the

the great happinesse it would be vnto me to haue such a husband ; with manie arguments, which God knowes, I cannot well remember because I did not much beleeue. For why shold I vse many circumstances to come to that where already I am, & euer while I liue must continue ? in fewe words, while he pleaded for another, he
 5 wanne me for himselfe: if at least (with that she sighed) he would account it a winning, for his fame had so framed the way to my mind, that his presence so full of beautie, sweetnes, & noble conuersation, had entred there before he vouchsafed to call for the keyes. O Lord, how did my soule hang at his lippes while he spake! O when he in feeling maner would describe the loue of his friend, how wel (thought I)
 10 doth loue betweene those lippes: when he would with daintiest eloquence stirre pittie in me toward *Philoxenus*, why sure (said I to my selfe) *Helen*, be not afraid, this heart cannot want pittie: and when he would extoll the deeds of *Philoxenus*, who in deede had but waited of him therein, alas (thought I) good *Philoxenus* how euil doth it become thy name to be subscribed to his letter ? what should I saie ? nay, what
 15 should I not saie (noble Knight) who am not ashamed, nay am delighted, thus to expresse mine owne passions?

Dayes past, his eagernes for his friend neuer decreased, my affection to him euer increased. At length, in way of ordinarie curtesie, I obtained of him (who suspected no such matter) this his picture, the only *Amphialus*, I feare that I shall euer enioy:
 20 and growen bolder, or madder, or bolde with madnesse, I discovered my affection vnto him. But, Lord, I shall neuer forget, how anger and curtesie, at one instant appeared in his eyes, when he heard that motion: how with his blush he taught me shame. In summe, he left nothing vnassayed, which might disgrace himself, to grace his friend; in sweet termes making me receiue a most resolute refusall of himselfe.
 25 But when he found that his presence did far more perswade for himselfe, then his speech could do for his friend, he left my court: hoping that forgetfulness (which commonly waits vpon absence) would make roome for his friend: to whom he would not vtter thus much (I thinke) for a kinde feare not to grieue him, or perchance (though he cares litle for me) of a certaine honourable gratefulnesse, not yet to dis-
 30 couer so much of my secrets: but as it should seeme, meant to trauel into farre countries, vntill his friends affection either ceased, or preuailed. But within a while, *Philoxenus* came to see how onward the fruits were of his friends labour, when (as in trueth I cared not much how he took it) he found me sitting, beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countenance, but I am sure with a most affectionate mind. I straight found ielousie & disdain toke hold of him: and yet the forward paine of mine own heart made me so delight to punish him, whom I esteemed
 35 the chiefest let in my way; that when he with humble gesture, & vehement speeches sued for my fauor; I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if he would speake for *Amphialus*, as well as *Amphialus* had done for him: he neuer answered me,
 40 but pale & quaking, went straight away; and straight my heart misgaue me some euil successe: and yet though I had authoritie enough to haue stayed him (as in these fatal things it falles out, that the high-working powers make second causes vniwittingly accessarie to their determinations) I did no further but sent a foot-man of mine (whose faithfulness to me I well knew) from place to place to follow him, & bring me
 45 word of his proceedings: which (alas) haue brought forth that which I feare I must euer rewe.

For he had trauailed scarce a daies iorney out of my countrey, but that (not farre from this place) he ouer-tooke *Amphialus*, who (by succouring a distressed Lady)

had bene here stayed: and by and by called him to fight with him, protesting that one of them two should die: you may easily iudge how strange it was to *Amphialus*, whose hart could accuse it self of no fault, but too much affectiō toward him, which he (refusing to fight with him) would faine haue made *Philoxenus* vnderstand, but (as my seruant since told me) the more *Amphialus* went back, the more he followed, calling him Traytor, & coward, yet neuer telling the cause of this strange alteratiō. Ah *Philoxenus* (said *Amphialus*) I know I am no Traytor, & thou well knowest I am no coward: but I pray thee content thy selfe with this much, & let this satisfie thee, that I loue thee, since I beare thus much of thee, but he leauing words drew his sword & gaue *Amphialus* a great blow or two, which but for the goodnes of his armor would haue slaine him: and yet so far did *Amphialus* containe himselfe, stepping aside, and saying to him: Well *Philoxenus*, & thus much villany am I content to put vp, not any longer for thy sake (whom I haue no cause to loue, since thou dost iniurie me, & wilt not tell me the cause) but for thy vertuous fathers sake, to whom I am so much bound. I pray thee go away, & conquer thine owne passions, & thou shalt make me soone yeeld to be thy seruant. But he would not attend his words, but still strake so fiercely at *Amphialus*, that in the end (nature preuailing aboue determination) he was faine to defend himselfe, & withall so to offend him, that by an vn lucky blow the pore *Philoxenus* fel dead at his feet; hauing had time only to speak some words, whereby *Amphialus* knew it was for my sake: which whē *Amphialus* saw, he forthwith gaue such tokens of true-felt sorrow; that as my seruant said, no imagination could cōceiue greater wo. But that by and by, an unhappie occasion made *Amphialus* passe himselfe in sorrow: for *Philoxenus* was but newly dead, when there comes to the same place, the aged & vertuous *Timotheus*, who (hauing heard of his sonnes sodaine and passionate manner of parting from my Court) had followed him as speedily as he could; but alas not so speedily, but that he found him dead before he could ouertake him. Though my heart be nothing but a stage for Tragedies; yet I must confesse, it is euen vn able to beare the miserable representation thereof: knowing *Amphialus* & *Timotheus* as I haue done. Alas what sorrow, what amasement, what shame was in *Amphialus*, when he saw his deere foster father, find him the killer of his onely sonne? In my heart I know, he wished mountaines had laine vpon him, to keep him from that meeting. As for *Timotheus*, sorrow of his sonne & (I think principally) vnkindnesse of *Amphialus* so deuoured his vitall spirites, that able to say no more but *Amphialus*; *Amphialus*, haue I? he sanke to the earth, and presently died.

But not my tongue, though daily vsed to complaints; no nor if my heart (which is nothing but sorrow) were turned to tongues, durst it vnder-take to shew the vn-speakablenes of his griefe. But (because this serues to make you know my fortune) he threw away his armour, euen this which you haue now vpon you, which at the first sight I vainly hoped, he had put on againe; and then (as ashamed of the light) he ranne into thickest of the woods, lamenting, and euen crying out so pitifully, that my seruant, (though of a fortune not vsed to much tenderesse) could not refraine weeping when he told it me. He once ouertooke him, but *Amphialus* drawing his sword, which was the onely part of his armes (God knowes to what purpose) he carried about him, threatned to kill him if he followed him, and withall bad him deliuer this bitter message, that he wel inough found, I was the cause of all this mischief: and that if I were a man, he would go ouer the world to kill me: but bad me assure my selfe, that of all creatures in the world, he most hated me. Ah fir knight (whose cares I think by this time are tired with the rugged wayes of these misfor-

misfortunes) now weigh my case, if at least you know what loue is. For this cause haue I left my countrey, putting in hazard how my people will in time deale by me, aduenturing what perils or dishonors might ensue, onely to follow him, who proclaimeth hate against me, & to bring my neck vnto him, if that may redeeme my
 5 trespasse and assuage his furie. And now sir (said she) you haue your request, I pray you take paines to guide me to the next towne, that there I may gather such of my company againe, as your valor hath left me. *Palladius* willingly cōdiscended: but ere they began to go, there came *Clitophon*, who hauing bene something hurt by one of them, had pursued him a good way: at length ouertaking him, and ready to kil him,
 10 vnderstood they were seruants to the faire Queene *Helen*, and that the cause of this enterprise was for nothing, but to make *Amphialus* prisoner, whom they knew their mistresse sought for she concealed her sorrow, nor cause of her sorrow frō no body.

But *Clitophon* (verie fory for this accident) came back to comfort the Queene, helping such as were hurt, in the best sort that he could, and framing friendly construction
 15 of this rashly vnder-taken enmitie, whē in comes another (til that time vnseen) all armed, with his beuer downe, who first looking round about vpon the company, as soone as he spied *Palladius*, he drew his sword, & making no other prologue, let flie at him. But *Palladius* (forie for so much harme as had alreadie happened) fought rather to retire, and ward, thinking he might be some one that belonged to the faire
 20 Queene, whose case in his heart he pitied. Which *Clitophon* seeing, stept betweene them, asking the new come knight the cause of his quarell; who answered him, that he would kill that theefe, who had stolen away his maisters armour, if he did not restore it. With that *Palladius* lookt vpon him, and saw that he of the other side had
Palladius own armour vpon him: truely (said *Palladius*) if I haue stolen this armour,
 25 you did not buy that: but you shall not fight with me vpon such a quarell, you shall haue this armour willingly, which I did onely put on to do honor to the owner. But *Clitophon* straight knew by his words and voice, that it was *Ismenus*, the faithfull and diligent Page of *Amphialus*: and therefore telling him that he was *Clitophon*, and willing him to acknowledge his error to the other, who deserued all honor, the
 30 yong Gentleman pulled off his head-peece, and (lighting) went to kisse *Palladius* hands; desiring him to pardon his follie, caused by extreame grieffe, which easilie might bring forth anger. Sweete Gentleman (said *Palladius*) you shall onely make me this amends, that you shall carie this your Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from an vnknown knight (who admires his worthinesse) that he cannot cast
 35 a greater mist ouer his glorie, then by being vnkind to so excellent a Princeesse as this Queene is. *Ismenus* promised he would as soone as he durst find his maister: and with that went to do his duetie to the Queene, whom in all these encounters astonishment made hardie; but as soone as shee saw *Ismenus* (looking to her picture) *Ismenus* (said shee) here is my Lord, where is yours? or come you to bring me some
 40 sentence of death from him? if it be so, welcome be it. I pray you speake; and speake quickly. Alas Madame, said *Ismenus*, I haue lost my Lord, (with that teares came vnto his eyes) for as soone as the unhappie combat was concluded with the death both of father and sonne, my maister casting off his armor, went his way: forbidding me vpon paine of death to follow him. Yet diuers daies I followed his steppes;
 45 till lastly I found him, hauing newly met with an excellent Spaniell, belonging to his dead companion *Philoxenus*. The dog straight fawned on my maister for old knowledge: but neuer was there thing more pitifull then to heare my maister blame the dog for louing his maisters murtherer, renewing a fresh his complaints,

with the dumbe counseller, as if they might comfort one another in their miseries. But my Lord hauing spied me, rose vp in such rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he said only, if I would not displease him I should not come neere him til he sent for me: too hard a commaundement for me to disobey: I yeelded, leauing him onely waited on by his dog, and as I thinke seeking out the most solitary 5 places, that this or any other countrie can graunt him: and I returning where I had left his armour, found another in steede thereof, and (disdaining I must confesse that any should beare the armour of the best Knight liuing) armed my selfe therein to play the foole as euen now I did. Faire *Ismenus* (said the Queene) a fitter messenger could hardly be to vnfold my Tragedie: I see the end, I see my end. 10

With that (sobbing) she desired to be conducted to the next towne, where *Palladius* left her to be waited on by *Clitophon*, at *Palladius* earnest entreatie, who desired alone to take that melancholy course of seeking his friend: and therefore changing armours againe with *Ismenus* (who went withal to a castle belonging to his maister) he continued his quest for his friend *Daiphantus*. 15

So directed he his course to *Laconia*, as well among the *Helots*, as *Spartans*. There indeede he found his fame flourishing, his monuments engraued in Marble; & yet more durably in mens memories; but the vniuersall lamenting his absented presence, assured him of his present absence. Thence into the *Elean* prouince, to see whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in such concourse 20 blesse his eyes with so desired an encounter: but that huge and sportfull assemblie grew to him a tedious lonelinessse, esteeming no bodie found, since *Daiphantus* was lost. Afterward he passed through *Achaia* and *Sicronia*, to the *Corinthians*, proude of their two Seas, to leame whether by the streight of that *Isthmus*, it were possible to know of his passage. But finding euery place more dumbe then other to his de- 25 maunds, and remembring that it was late-taken loue, which had wrought this new course, he returned againe (after two moneths trauaile in vaine) to make a fresh search in *Arcadia*; so much the more, as then first he bethought him selfe of the picture of *Philoclea* (which resembling her he had once loued) might perhaps awake againe that sleeping passion. And hauing already past ouer the greatest part of *Arca-* 30 *dia*, one day comming vnder the side of the pleasant mountaine *Manalus*, his horse (nothing guiltie of his inquisitiuenesse) with flat-tyring taught him, that discrete stayes make speedie iourneis. And therefore lighting down, & vnbridling his horse, he him selfe went to repose him selfe in a litle wood he saw there by. Where lying vnder the protection of a shadie tree, with intention to make forgetting sleepe com- 35 fort a sorrowfull memorie, he saw a sight which perswaded, and obtained of his eies, that they would abide yet awhile open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who because she walked with her side toward him, he could not perfectly see her face; but so much he might see of her, that was a suretie for the rest, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceiue the hanging of her haire in fairest quantitie, in lockes 40 some curled, and some as it were forgotten, with such a carelesse care, & an art so hiding art, that she seemed she would lay them for a pattern, whether nature simply, or nature helped by cunning, be the more excellent: the rest whereof was drawne into a coronet of gold richly set with pearle, and so ioyned all ouer with gold wiers and couered with feathers of diuers colours, that it was not vnlike to an helmet, such 45 a glittering shewe it bare, & so brauely it was held vp from the head. Vpon her body she ware a doublet of Skie colour sattin, couered with plates of gold, and as it were nailed with precious stones, that in it she might seem armed; the neather part of her garment

garment was full of stufte, and cut after such a fashion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might sometimes discern the small of her legge, which with the foote was dressed in a short paire of crimson veluet buskins, in some places open (as the ancient maner was) to shew the fairnesse of the skin.

5 Over all this she ware a certaine mantell, made in such maner, that coming vnder her right arme, and couering most of that side, it had no fastening on the left side, but onely vpon the top of the shoulder, where the two ends met, and were closed together with a verie rich iewell: the deuise whereof as he after saw was this: a *Hercules* made in litle forme, but set with a distaffe in his hand as he once was by *Omphales* commandement with a word in Greeke, but thus to be interpreted, *Neuer more valiant*. On the same side, on her thigh she ware a sword, which as it witnessed her to be an *Amazon*, or one following that profession, so it seemed but a needlesse weapō, since her other forces were without withstanding. But this Ladie walked outright till he might see her enter into a fine close arbour: it was of trees whose branches so louinglie enterlaced one the other, that it could resist the strōgest violence of eye-sight; but she went into it by a doore she opened; which moued him as warilie as he could to follow her, and by and by he might heare her sing this song, with a voice no lesse beautifull to his eares, then her goodlineffe was full of harmony to his eyes.

20 *Transformd in shew, but more transformd in mind,
I cease to strue with double conquest foilde:
For (wo is me) my powers all I find
VVithoutward force, and inward treason spoilde.*

25 *For from without came to mine eyes the blow,
VVhere to mine inward thoughts did faintly yeeld:
Both these conspir'd poore Reasons ouerthrow;
False in my selfe, thus haue I lost the field.*

30 *Thus are my eyes still captiue to one sight,
Thus all my thoughts are slaues to one thought still:
Thus Reason to his seruants yeelds his right,
Thus is my power transformed to your vwill:
VVhat maruell then I take a womans hue,
35 Since what I see, thinke, know, is all but you?*

The dittie gaue him some suspition, but the voice gaue him almost assurance, who the singer was. And therefore boldly thrusting open the doore, and entring into the arbour, he perceiued indeed that it was *Pyrocles* thus disguised, wherewith not
40 receiuing so much ioy to haue found him, as grieve so to haue found him, amazedlie looking vpon him (as *Apollo* is painted when he saw *Daphne* sodainly turned into a Laurell) he was not able to bring forth a word. So that *Pyrocles* (who had as much shame, as *Musidorus* had sorow) rising to him, would haue formed a substantiall excuse; but his insinuation being of blushing, and his diuision of sighes, his whole
45 oration stood vpon a short narration, what was the causer of this Metamorphosis. But by that time *Musidorus* had gathered his spirits together, and yet casting a gaste-full countenance vpon him (as if he would coniure some strange spirits) he thus spake vnto him.

And is it possible, that this is *Pyrocles*, the onlie young Prince in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education to the true exercise of vertue? or is it indeed some *Amazon* that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this sort to vex me for likelier sure I would haue thought it, that any outward face might haue bin disguised, then that the face of so excellent a mind could haue bin thus blemished. 5
O sweet *Pyrocles*, separate your selfe a little (if it be possible) from your selfe, and let your owne mind looke vpon your owne proceedings, so shall my words be needlesse, and you best instructed. See with your selfe, how fit it will be for you in this your tender youth, borne so great a Prince, and of so rare, not only expectation but prooffe, desired of your old father, and wanted of your natieue countrie, now so neare 10
your home, to diuert your thoughts frō the way of goodnesse, to loose, nay to abuse your time. Lastlie, to ouerthrow all the excellent things you haue done, which haue filled the world with your fame; as if you should drowne your ship in the long desired hauen, or like an ill player, should marre the last act of his Tragedie. Remember (for I know you know it) that if we will be men, the reasonable part of our soule 15
is to haue absolute commandement; against which if any sensuall weaknesse arise, we are to yeeld all our sound forces to the ouerthrowing of so vnnatural a rebellion, wherein how can we want courage, since we are to deale against so weake an aduersarie, that in it selfe is nothing but weaknesse? Nay, we are to resolute, that if reason direct it, we must do it; and if we must do it, we will do it; for to say I cannot, is childish, and I will not, womanish. And see how extreameely euery way you endaun- 20
der your mind; for to take this womanish habite (without you frame your behavior accordingly) is whollie vaine: your behauiour can neuer come kindly from you, but as the mind is proportioned vnto it. So that you must resolute, if you will play your part to any purpose, whatsoeuer peuissh imperfections are in that sexe, to soften your hart to receiue the, the very first down-step to all wickednes, for do not deceiue your 25
selfe, my deare cosin, there is no man sodainly either excellently good, or extreameely euill, but growes either as he holds himselfe vp in vertue, or lets himselfe slide to viciousnesse. And let vs see, what power is the authour of all these troubles; forsooth loue, loue, a passion, and the basest and fruitlessest of all passions: feare breedeth wit, 30
anger is the cradle of courage; ioy openeth and enableth the heart: sorrow, as it closeth, so it draweth it inward to looke to the correcting of it selfe; and so all of them generallie haue power towards some good by the direction of Reason. But this bastard Loue (for indeed the name of Loue is most vnworthily applied to so hatefull a humour) as it is engendred betwixt lust and idlenesse, as the matter it works vpon 35
is nothing but a certain base weaknes, which some gentle fooles call a gentle heart; as his adioined companions be vnquietnesse, longings, fond comforts, faint discomforts, hopes, ielousies, vngrounded rages, causlesse yeeldings; so is the highest end it aspires vnto, a litle pleasure with much paine before, and great repentance after. But that end how endlesse it runnes to infinite euils, were fit enough for the matter 40
we speak of, but not for your eares, in whom indeed there is so much true disposition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthy effects in your selfe is to be seene, that (besides your breaking lawes of hospitalitie with *Kalander*, and of friendship with me) it vtterly subuerbs the course of nature, in making reason giue place to sence, & man to woman. And trulie I thinke hereupon it first gat the name of Loue: for indeed 45
the true loue hath that excellēt nature in it, that it doth transforme the verie essence of the louer into the thing loued; vniting, and as it were incorporating it with a secret and inward working. And herein do these kind of loues imitate the excellent;
for

for as the loue of heauen makes one heavenly, the loue of vertue, vertuous, so doth the loue of the world make one become worldly, and this effeminate loue of a woman, doth so womanize a man, that (if he yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an *Amazon*, but a launder, a distaffe spinner, or whatsoeuer other vile occupation their idle heads can imagine and their weake hands performe. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but louing words) if either you remember what you are, what you haue bene, or what you must be: if you consider what it is that moued you, or by what kind of creature you are moued, you shall finde the cause so small, the effect so dangerous, your selfe so vnworthie to run into the one, or to be driuen by the other, that I doubt not I shall quicklie haue occasion rather to praise you for hauing conquered it, then to giue you further counsell, how to do it. But in *Pyrocles* this speech wrought no more, but that hee, who before he was espied, was afraid; after, being perceiued, was ashamed, now being hardly rubd vpon, left both feare and shame, and was moued to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to *Musidorus* striuing with it, he thus, partly to satisfie him, but principally to loose the reines to his owne motions, made him answere. Cosin, whatsoeuer good disposition nature hath bestowed vpon me, or howsoeuer that disposition hath bene by bringing vp confirmed, this must I confesse, that I am not yet come to that degree of wisdom, to thinke light of the sexe, of whom I haue my life; since if I be any thing (which your friendship rather finds, thē I acknowledge) I was to come to it, borne of a woman, & nursed of a woman. And certainly (for this point of your speech doth nearest touch me) it is strange to see the vnmanlike crueltie of mankind; who not content with their tyrannous ambition, to haue brought the others vertuous patience vnder them (like childish maisters) thinke their maisterhood nothing, without doing iniurie to them, who (if we will argue by reason) are framed of nature with the same parts of the minde for the exercise of vertue, as we are. And for example, euen this estate of *Amazons*, (which I now for my greatest honour do seeke to counterfeit) doth well witnesse, that if generally the sweetnesse of their disposition did not make them see the vainnesse of these things, which we account glorious, they neither want valour of mind, nor yet doth their fairnesse take away their force. And truely we men, and praisers of men should remember, that if we haue such excellencies, it is reason to thinke them excellent creatures, of whom we are, since a Kite neuer brought forth a good flying Hawke. But to tell you true, as I thinke it superfluous to vse any words of such a subiect, which is so praised in it selfe as it needs no praises, so withall I feare least my conceit (not able to reach vnto them) bring forth words, which for their vnworthinesse may be a disgrace to them I so inwardly honour. Let this suffice, that they are capable of vertue, and vertue (you your selues say) is to be loued, and I too trulie, but this I willingly confesse, that it likes me much better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am bound to seeke it in an ill fauored creature, like a pearle in a dunghill. As for my fault of being an vnciuill guest to *Kalander*, if you could feele what an inward guest my selfe am hoste vnto, ye would thinke it verie excusable, in that I rather performe the duties of an host, then the ceremonies of a guest. And for my breaking the lawes of friendship with you (which I would rather die, then effectually do) truely, I could finde in my heart to aske you pardon for it, but that your now handling of me giues me reason to confirme my former dealing. And here *Pyrocles* stayed, as to breath himselfe, hauing bene transported with a litle vehemencie, because it seemed him *Musidorus* had ouer-bitterly glaunced against the reputation

of womankind: but then quieting his countenance (aswel as out of an vnquiet mind it might be) he thus proceeded on: And poore Loue (said he) deare cofin, is litle beholding vnto you, since you are not contented to spoile it of the honour of the highest power of the mind, which notable men haue attributed vnto it, but ye deiection it below all other passions, in truth somewhat strangely; since, if loue receiue any disgrace, it is by the company of these passions you preferre before it. For those kinds of bitter obiections (as, that lust, idlenesse, and a weake heart, should be, as it were, the matter and forme of loue) rather touch me, deare *Musidorus*, then loue: but I am good witnesse of mine owne imperfections, and therefore will not defend my selfe: but herein I must say, you deale contrarie to your selfe: for if I be so weake, then can you not with reason stir me vp as ye did, by remembrance of mine owne vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, then must ye confesse, that loue hath his working in a vertuous heart; and so no doubt hath it, whatsoeuer I be: for, if we loue vertue, in whom shall we loue it but in a vertuous creature? without your meaning be, I should loue this word *Vertue*, where I see it written in a booke. Those troublesome effects you say it breeds, be not the faults of loue, but of him that loues, as an vnable vessell to beare such a liquor; like euill eyes, not able to looke on the Sun; or like a weake braine soonest ouerthrowne with the best wine. Euen that heavenly loue you speake of, is accompanied in some hearts with hopes, griefes, longings, and dispaire. And in that heavenly loue, since there are two parts, the one the loue it self, th'other the excellencie of the thing loued; I, not able at the first leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workeman) make ready the chiefe instrument, & first part of that great worke, which is loue it selfe; which when I haue awhile practised in this sort, then you shall see me turne it to greater matters. And thus gently you may (if it please you) thinke of me. Neither doubt ye, because I weare a womans apparell, I will be the more womanish, since I assure you (for all my apparell) there is nothing I desire more, then fullie to proue my selfe a man in this enterprise. Much might be said in my defence, much more for loue, and most of all for that diuine creature, which hath ioyned me and loue together. But these disputations are fitter for quiet schooles then my troubled braines, which are bent rather in deeds to performe, then in words to defend the noble desire that possesseth me. O Lord (said *Musidorus*) how sharp-witted you are to hurt your selfe? No (answered he) but it is the hurt you speake of, which makes me so sharp-witted. Euen so said *Musidorus* as euerie base occupation makes one sharpe in that practise, and foolish in all the rest. Nay rather (answered *Pyrocles*) as each excellent thing once well learned, serues for a measure of all other knowledges. And is that become (said *Musidorus*) a measure for other things, which neuer receiued measure in it selfe? It is counted without measure (answered *Pyrocles*) because the workings of it are without measure, but otherwise, in nature it hath measure, since it hath an end allotted vnto it. The beginning being so excellent, I would gladly know the end. Enioying, answered *Pyrocles*, with a deep sigh. O (said *Musidorus*) now set ye forth the basenesse of it; since if it end in enioying, it shewes all the rest was nothing. Ye mistake me (answered *Pyrocles*) I spake of the end to which it is directed; which end ends not, no sooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine disenchaunt you (said *Musidorus*.) My heart is too farre possessed (said *Pyrocles*.) But the head giues you direction. And the heart giues me life, answered *Pyrocles*.

But *Musidorus* was so grieved to see his welbeloued friend obstinate (as hee thought) to his owne destruction, that it forced him with more then accustomed vehemence

vehemencie to speake these words; Well, well, (said he) you list to abuse your selfe; it was a verie white and red vertue, which you could picke out of a painterly glosse of a visage. Confesse the truth, and ye shall finde the vtmost was but beautie; a thing, which though it be in as great excellency in your selfe as may be in any, yet I am sure
 5 you make no further reckening of it, the of an outward fading benefit Nature bestowed vpon you. And yet such is your want of a true grounded vertue, which must be like it selfe in all points, that what you wisely account a trifle in your selfe, you fondly become a slaue vnto in another. For my part I now protest, I haue left nothing vn-
 10 said, which my wit could make me know, or my most entire friendship to you requires of me; I do now beseech you euen for the loue betwixt vs (if this other loue haue left any in you towards me) and for the remembrance of your old carefull father (if you can remember him that forget your selfe,) lastly for *Pyrocles* owne sake (who is now vpon the point of falling or rising) to purge your selfe of this vile infection, otherwise giue me leaue to leaue off this name of friendship, as an idle title
 15 of a thing which cannot be, where vertue is abolished. The length of these speeches before had not so much cloyed *Pyrocles*, though he were verie impatient of long deliberations, as this last farewell of him he loued as his own life, did wound his soule. For thinking himselfe afflicted, he was the apter to conceiue vnkindnesse deeply: in so much, that shaking his head, & deliuering some shew of teares, he thus vttered
 20 his griefes. Alas (said he) Prince *Musidorus*, how cruellie you deale with me; if you seeke the victorie, take it, and if ye list the triumph; haue you all the reason of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections; yet such as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be perswaded by the Swan to cast off all his blacke feathers. But truly you deale with me like a Physition, that seeing his Patient in a pestilent fe-
 25 uer, should chide him in steed of ministring helpe, and bid him be sicke no more; or rather like such a friend, that visiting his friend condemned to perpetuall prison, & loden with grievous fetters, should wil him to shake off his fetters, or he wold leaue him. I am sicke, and sicke to the death; I am prisoner, neither is there any redresse, but by her to whom I am a slaue. Now if you list, leaue him that loues you in the
 30 highest degree: But remember euer to carie this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greatest extremitie.

And herewith the deepe wound of his loue being rubbed afresh with this new vnkindnesse, began as it were to bleed again, in such sort that he was vnable to beare it any longer, but gushing out abundance of teares, & crossing his armes ouer his
 35 wofull heart, he sunke downe to the ground: which sodaine trance went so to the heart of *Musidorus*, that falling downe by him, and kissing the weeping eyes of his friend, he besought him not to make account of his speech; which if it had bin ouer-vehement, yet was it to be borne withall, because it came out of a loue much more vehement; that he had not thought fancie could haue receiued so deepe a wound:
 40 but now finding in him the force of it, he would no further contrarie it, but employ all his seruice to medicine it, in such sort as the nature of it required. But euen this kindnesse made *Pyrocles* the more melt in the former vnkindnesse, which his manlike teares well shewed, with a silent looke vpon *Musidorus*, as who should say, And is it possible that *Musidorus* should threaten to leaue me? And this strooke
 45 *Musidorus* minde and senses so dumbe too, that for grieve being not able to say anie thing, they rested with their eyes placed one vpon another, in such sort, as might well paint out the true passion of vnkindnesse to be neuer aright, but betwixt them that most dearly loue.

And thus remained they a time; till at length *Musidorus* embracing him, said, and will you thus shake off your friend? It is you that shake me off (said *Pyrocles*) being for my vnperfectnesse vnworthy of your friendship. But this (said *Musidorus*) shewes you more vnperfect, to be cruell to him, that submits himselfe vnto you; but since you are vnperfect (said he smiling) it is reason you be gouerned by vs wise and perfect men. And that authoritie will I begin to take vpon me, with three absolute commandements: the first, that you increale not your euill with further griefes: the second, that you loue her with all the powers of your mind: and the last commandement shall be, you command me to do what seruice I can towards the attaining of your desires. *Pyrocles* heart was not so oppressed with the two mighty passions of 10 loue and vnkindnesse, but that it yeelded to some mirth at this commandement of *Musidorus*, that he should loue: so that something clearing his face from his former shewes of griefe: Well (said he) deare cosin, I see by the well choosing of your commandements, that you are farre fitter to be a Prince than a Counseller, and therefore I am resolu'd to imploy all my endeouour to obey you, with this condition, that the 15 commandements ye command me to lay vpon you, shall onely be, that you continue to loue me, & looke vpon my imperfections with more affection then iudgement. Loue you? (said he) alas, how can my heart be separated from the true embracing of it, without it burst, by being too full of it? But (said he) let vs leaue off these flowers of new begun friendship; and now I pray you againe tell me, but tell it me fully, omitting no circumstance, the storie of your affections, both beginning, and proceeding; assuring your selfe, that there is nothing so great, which I will feare to do for you, nor nothing so small, which I will disdain to do for you. Let me therefore receive a cleare vnderstanding, which many times we misse, while those things we account small, as a speech, or a looke are omitted, like as a whole sentence may faile of 25 his congruities by wanting one particle. Therefore betweene friends all must be laid open, nothing being superfluous nor tedious. You shal be obeyed (said *Pyrocles*) and here are we in as fit a place for it as may be; for this arbor no body offers to come into but my selfe, I vsing it as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that respect is borne vnto it; yet if by chaunce any should come, say that you are a seruant 30 sent from the Queene of the *Amazons* to seeke me, & then let me alone for the rest. So fate they downe, and *Pyrocles* thus said.

Cosin (said he) then began the fatall ouerthrow of all my liberty, when walking among the pictures in *Kalander's* house, you your selfe deliuered vnto me what you had vnderstood of *Philoclea*, who much resembling (though I must say) much surpassing 35 the Lady *Zelmane*, whom so well I loued: there were mine eyes infected, and at your mouth did I drinke my poyson. Yet alas, so sweet was it vnto me, that I could not be contented, till *Kalander* had made it more and more strong with his declaration. Which the more I questioned, the more pitie I conceiued of her vnworthie fortune: and when with pitie once my heart was made tender, according to the aptnesse of the humour, it receiued quickly a cruell impression of that wonderfull passion, which to be defined is impossible, because no words reach to the strange nature of it; they only know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called loue. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at first know my disease, thinking it only such a wonted kind of desire to see rare sights; and my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a gentle nature. But euen 45 this arguing with my selfe came of further thoughts, and the more I argued, the more my thoughts encreased. Desirous I was to see the place where she remained, as though the Architecture of the lodges would haue bene much for my learning; but

but more desirous to see her selfe, to be iudge, forsooth, of the Painters cunning For
 thus at the first did I flatter my selfe, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but
 when within short time I came to the degree of vncertaine wilhes, and that those
 wilhes grew to vnquiet longings, when I could fixe my thoughts vpon nothing, but
 5 that within litle varying they should end with *Philoclea*: when each thing I saw, seemed
 to figure out some part of my passions; whē euen *Parthenias* faire face became a
 lecture to me of *Philocleas* imagined beautie; when I heard no word spoken, but that
 me thought it caried the sound of *Philocleas* name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to
 the burthen, finding my selfe prisoner, before I had leasure to arme my selfe: and
 10 that I might well, like the spaniell, gnaw vpon the chaine that ties him, but I should
 sooner marre my teeth, then procure libertie: yet I take to witnesse the eternall
 spring of vertue, that I had neuer read, heard, nor scene any thing; I had neuer anie
 taste of Philosophie, nor inward feeling in my selfe, which for a while I did not call to
 my succour. But (alas) what resistance was there, when ere long my very reason was,
 15 (you will say corrupted) I must confesse, conquered; and that me thought euen reason
 did assure me, that all eyes did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour
 such beautie? Nothing in truth could hold any plea with it, but the reuerent
 friendship I beare vnto you. For as it went against my heart to breake any way from
 you, so did I feare more than any assault to breake it to you: finding (as it is indeed)
 20 that to a heart fully resolute, counsell is tedious, but reprehension is lothsome: and
 that there is nothing more terrible to a guiltie heart, then the eye of a respected
 friend. This made me determine with my selfe (thinking it a lesse fault in friendship
 to do a thing without your knowledge, then against your will) to take this secret
 course: which conceit was most builded vp in me, the last day of my parting and
 25 speaking with you, when vpon your speech with me, and my but naming loue (when
 else perchaunce I would haue gone further) I saw your voyce and countenance so
 chaunge, as it assured me, my reuealing it should but purchase your grieve with
 my cumber: and therefore (deare *Musidorus*) euen ran away from thy well knowne
 chiding: for hauing written a letter, which I know not whether you found or no, and
 30 taken my chiefe iewels with me, while you were in the midst of your sport, I got
 a time (as I thinke) vnmarked by any, to steale away, I cared not whither, so I might
 escape you, and so came I to *Ithonia* in the prouince of *Messenia*; where lying secret,
 I put this in practise, which before I had deuised. For remembring by *Philanax* his
 letter & *Kalanders* speech, how obstinately *Basilus* was determined not to marie his
 35 daughters, and therefore fearing least any publike dealing should rather increase her
 captiuitie, then further my loue; Loue (the refiner of inuention) had put in my head
 thus to disguise my self, that vnder that maske I might (if it were possible) get accessse,
 and what accessse could bring forth, commit to fortune and industrie, determining
 to beare the countenance of an *Amazon*. Therefore in the closest maner I could,
 40 naming my selfe *Zelmane*, for that deare Ladies sake, to whose memory I am so
 much bound, I caused this apparell to be made, and bringing it neare the Lodges,
 which are hard at hand, by night, thus dressed my selfe, resting till occasion might
 make me to be found by them whom I sought: which the next morning hapned as
 wel as my own plot could haue laid it. For after I had run ouer the whole petigree of
 45 my thoughts, I gaue my selfe to sing a litle, which, as you know, I euer delighted in, so
 now especiallie, whether it be the nature of this clime to stirre vp Poeticall fancies,
 or rather as I thinke, of loue, whose scope being pleasure, will not so much as vtter
 his griefes, but in some forme of pleasure.

But I had song verie litle, when (as I thinke, displeased with my bad musicke) comes master *Dametas* with a hedging bill in his hand, chafing and swearing by the pantable of *Pallas*, and such other othes as his rusticall brauerie could imagine; and when he saw me, I assure you, my beautie was no more beholding to him then my harmony; for leaning his hands vpon his bill, and his chin vpon his hands, with the voyce of one that playeth *Hercules* in a play, but neuer had his fancy in his head, the first word he spake to me, was, Am not I *Dametas*? why, am not I *Dametas*? he needed not name himself, for *Kalanders* description had set such a note vpon him, as made him verie notable vnto me; and therefore the height of my thoughts would not descend so much as to make him any answere, but continued on my inward discourses: which he (perchaunce witnesse of his owne vnworthinesse, and therefore the apter to thinke himselfe contemned) tooke in so hainous maner, that standing vpon his tiptoes, and staring, as if he would haue had a mote pulled out of his eye, Why (said he) thou woman, or boy, or both, whatsoeuer thou be, I tell thee here is no place for thee, get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Princes pleasure, I tell thee it is *Dametas* pleasure. I could not choose, but smile at him, seeing him looke so like an ape that had newly taken a purgation; yet taking my selfe with the maner, spake these words to my selfe: O spirit (said I) of mine, how canst thou receiue any mirth in the midst of thine agonies, and thou mirth, how darest thou enter into a minde so growne of late thy professed enemy? Thy spirit (said *Dametas*) doest thou thinke me a spirit? I tell thee I am *Basilus* officer, and haue charge of him and his daughters. O only pearle (said I sobbing) that so vile an oyster should keepe thee? By the combe-case of *Diana* (sware *Dametas*) this woman is mad: oysters and pearles? doest thou thinke I will buy oysters? I tell thee once againe get thee packing, and with that lifted vp his bill to hit me with the blunt end of it: but indeed that put me quite out of my lesson, so that I forgot all *Zelmanes* ship, and drawing out my sword, the baseness of the villaine yet made me stay my hand, & he (who, as *Kalander* told me, from his child-hood euer feared the blade of a sword) ran backe, backward (with his hands aboue his head) at least twentie paces, gaping and staring, with the verie grace (I thinke) of the clownes, that by *Latomas* prayers were turned into Frogs. At length staying, finding himselfe without the compasse of blowes, he fell to a fresh scolding, in such manerlie maner, as might wel shew he had passed through the discipline of a *Tauerne*. But seeing me walke vp and downe, without marking what he said, he went his way (as I perceiued after) to *Basilus*: for within a while he came vnto me, bearing indeed shewes in his countenance of an honest and well minded Gentleman, and with as much curtesie as *Dametas* with rudenesse saluting me, Faire Lady (sayd he) it is nothing strange, that such a solitarie place as this should receiue solitarie persons; but much do I maruel, how such a beautie as yours is, should be suffered to be thus alone. I (that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a graue maiestie vpon him, as if I found in my selfe cause to be reuerenced: They are neuer alone (sayd I) that are accompanied with noble thoughts. But those thoughts (replied *Basilus*) cannot in this your loneliness neither warrant you from suspition in others, nor defend you from melancholie in your selfe. I then shewing a mislike that he pressed me so farre, I seeke no better warrant said I, then my owne conscience, nor no greater pleasure, then mine owne contentation. Yet vertue seekes to satisfie others, saide *Basilus*. Those that be good, said I, and they will be satisfied as long as they see no euill. Yet will the best in this cotintrie, said *Basilus*, suspect so excellent beautie being so weakely garded. Then

Then are the best but starke naught, (answered I) for open suspecting others, comes
 of secret condemning themselves: but in my countrie (whose manners I am in all places
 to maintaine and reuerence) the generall goodnesse (which is nourished in our
 hearts) makes euerie one thinke the strength of vertue in another, whereof they find
 5 the assured foundation in themselves. Excellent Ladie, said he, you praise so great-
 lie (and yet so wisely) your countrie, that I must needs desire to know what the nest
 is, out of which such birds do flie. You must first deserue it (said I) before you may
 obtaine it. And by what means (said *Basilus*) shall I deserue to know your estate? By
 letting me first know yours (answered I:) To obey you (said he) I will do it, although
 10 it were so much more reason yours should be knowne first, as you do deserue in all
 points to be preferd. Know you (faire Lady) that my name is *Basilus*, vnworthily
 Lord of this country: the rest, either fame hath already brought to your eares, or (if it
 please you to make this place happie by your presence) at more leasure you shall vn-
 derstand of me. I that from the beginning assured my selfe it was he, but would not
 15 seeme I did so, to keepe my grauitie the better, making a peece of reuerence vnto
 him; Mighty Prince (said I) let my not knowing you serue for the excuse of my bold-
 nesse, and the litle reuerence I do you, impute it to the maner of my countrie,
 which is the inuincible land of the *Amazons*: my selfe neece to *Senicia*, Queene
 thereof, lineally descended of the famous *Penthesilea*, slaine by the bloudie hand of
 20 *Pyrrhus*: I hauing in this my youth determined to make the world see the *Amazons*
 excellencies, as well in priuate, as in publike vertue, haue passed some dangerous ad-
 uentures in diuerse countries, till the vnmercifull sea depriued me of my company;
 so that shipwracke casting me not farre hence, vncertaine wandring brought me to
 this place. But *Basilus* (whonow began to taste of that, which since he hath swallo-
 25 wed vp, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my abode, then any gree-
 dy hoste would vse to well paying passengers. I thought nothing could shoot righter
 at the marke of my desires; yet had I learned already so much, that it was against my
 womanhood to be forward in my owne wishes. And therefore he (to proue whether
 intercessions in fitter mouthes might better preuaile) commaunded *Dametas* to
 30 bring forthwith his wife & daughters thither, three Ladies, although of diuerse, yet
 of excellent beautie.

His wife in graue Matronlike attire, with countenance and gesture futable, and
 of such fairenesse (being in the strength of her age) as if her daughters had not
 bene by, might with iust price haue purchased admiration; but they being there,
 35 it was enough that the most daintie eye would thinke her a worthie mother of such
 children. The faire *Pamela*, whose noble heart I find doth greatly disdain, that
 the trust of her vertue is reposed in such a louts hands as *Dametas*, had yet, to shew
 an obedience, taken on shepheardish apparell, which was but of russet cloath, cut
 after their fashion: with a straight bodie, open breasted, the neather part full of
 40 pleights, with long and wide sleeues: but belecue me she did apparell her apparel,
 and with the preciousnesse of her body made it most sumptuous. Her haire at the ful
 length, wound about with gold lace, onely by the comparison to shew how farre her
 haire doth excell in colour: betwixt her breasts (which sweetly rose vp like two faire
 Mountainers in the pleasant vale of *Tempe*) there hong a verie rich Diamond set but
 45 in a blacke horne, the word I haue since read is this: *Yet still my selfe*. And thus
 particularlie haue I described them, because you may know that mine eyes are not
 so partiall, but that I marked them too. But when the ornament of the earth, the
 modell of heauen, the triumph of nature, the life of beautie, the Queene of Loue,

young *Philoclea* appeared in her Nymph-like apparell, so neare nakednesse, as one might well discern part of her perfections; and yet so apparelled, as did shew she kept best store of her beautie to her selfe: her haire (alas too poore a word, why should I not rather call them her beams) drawne vp into a net, able to haue caught *Jupiter* when he was in the forme of an eagle; her body (ô sweet bodie) couered with a light Taffeta garment, so cut, as the wrought smocke came through it in many places, enough to haue made your restrained imagination haue thought what was vnder it: with the cast of her blacke eyes, blacke indeed, whether nature so made them, that we might be the more able to behold & beare their wonderfull shining, or that she (goddesse-like) would worke this miracle with her selfe, in giuing blacknesse the price aboue all beautie. Then (I say) indeed me thought the Lillies grew pale for enuie, the Roses me thought blushed to see sweeter roses in her cheekes, & the apples, me thought, fel downe from the trees, to do homage to the apples of her breast; then the clouds gaue place, that the heauens might more freely smile vpon her, at the least the clouds of my thoughts quite vanished: and my sight (then more cleare and forcible then euer) was so fixed there, that (I imagine) I stood like a well wrought Image, with some life in shew, but none in practise. And so had I bene like enough to haue stayed long time, but that *Gynecia* stepping betweene my sight and the onelie *Philoclea*, the chaunge of object made me recouer my senses; so that I could with reasonable good maner receiue the salutation of her, and of the Princesse *Pamela*, doing them yet no further reuerence then one Princesse vseth to another. But when I came to the neuer-enough praised *Philoclea*, I could not but fall downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand, and kissing it (I must confesse) with more then womanly arden cies, Diuine Lady (said I) let not the world, nor these great Princesses maruell, to see me (contrarie to my maner) do this especiall honour vnto you, since all both men and women, do owe this to the perfection of your beautie. But she blushing (like a faire morning in May) at this my singularitie, and causing me to rise, Noble Ladie (said she) it is no maruell to see your iudgement much mistaken in my beautie, since you begin with so great an errour, as to do more honour vnto me then to them, to whom I my selfe owe all seruice. Rather (answered I with a bowed downe countenance) that shewes the power of your beautie, which forced me to do such an errour, if it were an errour. You are so well acquainted (said she sweetly, most sweetly smiling) with your owne beautie, that it makes you easily fall into the discourse of beautie. Beauty in me? (said I truly sighing) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which your blessed presence hath imparted vnto them.

But then (as I thinke *Basilus* willing her so to do, Well, said she, I must needs confesse I haue heard that it is a great happinesse to be praised of them that are most praise worthie: and well I find that you are an inuincible *Amazon*, since you will ouercome, though in a wrong matter. But if my beautie be any thing, then let it obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaine some while in this companie, to ease your owne trauell, and our solitarinesse. First let me die (said I) before anie word spoken by such a mouth should come in vaine. And thus with some other words of entertaining, was my staying concluded, and I led among them to the Lodge; trulie a place for pleasantnesse, not vnfit to flatter solitarinesse, for it being set vpon such an vn sensible rising of the ground, as you are come to a pretie height before almost you perceiue that you ascend, it giues the eye Lordship ouer a good large circuit, which according to the nature of the countrie, being diuersified betweene hilles and dales, woods and plaines, one place more cleare, another more darke-

darkeſome, it ſeemes a pleaſant picture of nature, with louely lightſomneſſe and artificiall ſhadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow ſtone, built in the forme of a ſtarre, hauing ronnd about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the garden, ridings cut out, each anſwering the angles of the Lodge, at the end of one of them is the other ſinaller Lodge, but of like faſhion; where the gracious *Pamela* liueth: ſo that the Lodge ſeemeth not vnlike a faire Comet, whoſe taile ſtretcheth it ſelf to a ſtarre of leſſe greatneſſe.

So *Gynecia* her ſelfe bringing me to my lodging, anon after I was inuited and brought downe to ſup with them in the garden, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inuentions: where, in a banketting houſe among certaine pleaſant trees, whoſe heads ſeemed curled with the wrappings about of vine-branches. The table was ſet neere to an excellent water-worke; for by the caſting of the water in moſt cunning maner, it makes (with the ſhining of the ſunne vpon it) a perfect rain-bow, not more pleaſant to the eye then to the mind, ſo ſenſibly to ſee the prooffe of the heauenly *iris*. There were birds alſo made ſo finely, that they did not only deceiue the ſight with their figure, but the hearing with their ſongs, which the waterie instruments did make their gorge deliuer. The table at which we ſate was round, which being faſt to the floore whereon we ſate, and that deuided from the reſt of the buildings (with turning a vice, which *Baſilius* at firſt did to make me ſport) the table, and we about the table did all turne round, by meanes of water which ran vnder, and caried it about as a mill. But alas, what pleaſure did it to me, to make diuerſe times the full circle round about, ſince *Philoctea* (being alſo ſet) was caried ſtill in equall diſtance from me, and that only my eyes did ouertake her: which when the table was ſtayed, and we began to feed, dranke much more eagerly of her beautie, then my mouth did of any other liquor. And ſo was my common ſence deceiued (being chieflie bent to her) that as I dranke the wine, and withall ſtole a looke on her, me ſeemed I taſted her deliciouſneſſe. But alas, the one thirſt was much more inflamed then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themſelues open to receiue all the darts ſhe did throw, ſometimes cloſe vp with admiration, as if with a contrary fancie, they wold preferue the riches of that ſight they had gotten, or caſt my lids as curtaines ouer the image of beautie, her preſence had painted in them. True it is, that my Reaſon (now growne a ſeruant to paſſion) did yet often tell his maiſter, that he ſhould more moderately uſe his delight. But he, that of a rebel was become a Prince, diſdained almoſt to allow him the place of a Counſeller: ſo that my ſences delights being too ſtrong for any other reſolution, I did euen looſe the reines vnto them: hoping, that (going for a woman) my lookes would paſſe, either vnmarked, or vnſuſpected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well playd my firſt act, aſſuring my ſelfe, that vnder that diſguiſement, I ſhould find oportunitie to reueale my ſelfe to the owner of my heart. But who wold thinke it poſſible (though I feele it true) that in almoſt eight weekes ſpace I haue liued here (hauing no more companie but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a woman, and watchfull, as being a loue) yet could neuer find oportunitie to haue one minutes leaſure of priuate conference: the cauſe whereof is as ſtrange, as the effects are to me miſerable. And (alas) this it is.

At the firſt ſight that *Baſilius* had of me (I thinke *Cupid* hauing headed his arrowes with my miſfortune) he was ſtricken (taking me to be ſuch as I profeſſe) with great affection towards me, which ſince is growne to ſuch a doting loue, that till I was faine to get this place, ſometimes to retire vnto freely) I was euen choked with his

tediousnesse. You neuer sawe fourescore yeares daunce vp and downe more liuely in a young louer: now, as fine in his apparell, as if he would make me in loue with a cloake: and verse for verse with the sharpest-witted Louer in *Arcadia*. Do you not thinke that this is a sallet of wormewood, while mine eyes feed vpon the *Ambrosia* of *Philoclea*s beautie. But this is not all; no, this is not the worst; for he (good man) 5 were easie enough to be dealt with: but, as I thinke, Loue and mischiefe hauing made a wager, which should haue most power in me, haue set *Gynecia* also on such a fire towards me, as will neuer (I feare) be quenched but with my destruction. For she (being a woman of excellent wit, and of strong working thoughts) whether she suspected me by my ouer-vehement shewes of affection to *Philoclea* (which loue forced me 10 vnwisely to vtter, while hope of my maske foolishly encouraged me) or that she hath taken some other marke of me, that I am not a woman: or what diuell it is hath reuealed it vnto her, I know not; but so it is, that all her countenances, words, and gestures, are euen miserable portraictures of a desperate affection. Vherby a man may learne, that these auoydings of companie, do but make the passions more violent, 15 when they meete with fit subiects. Truly it were a notable dumbe shew of *Cupids* kingdome, to see my eyes (languishing with ouer-vehement longing) direct themselves to *Philoclea*; & *Basilus* as busie about me as a Bee, and indeed as cumbersome; making such vehement suits to me, who neither could if I would, nor would if I could, help him: while the terrible wit of *Gynecia*, caried with the beere of violent 20 loue, runnes through vs all. And so ialous is she of my loue to her daughter, that I could neuer yet begin to open my mouth to the vneuitable *Philoclea*, but that her vnwished presence gaue my tale a conclusion, before it had a beginning. And surely if I be not deceiued, I see such shewes of liking, & (if I be acquainted with passions) of almost a passionate liking in the heauenly *Philoclea*, towards me, that I may hope 25 her eares would not abhorre my discourse. And for good *Basilus*, he thought it best to haue lodged vs together, but that the eternall hatefulnessse of my destinie made *Gynecias* ialousie stop that, and all other my blessings. Yet must I confesse, that one way her loue doth me pleasure; for since it was my foolish fortune, or vnfortunate follie, to be knowne by her, that keeps her from bewraying me to *Basilus*. 30 And thus (my *Musidorus*) you haue my tragedie played vnto you by my selfe, which I pray the gods may not indeed prooue a tragedie. And therewith he ended, making a full point of a heartie sigh.

Musidorus recommended to his best discourse, all which *Pyrocles* had told him. But therein he found such intricatenesse, that he could see no way to leade him out of 35 the maze; yet perceiuing his affectiō so grounded, that struiuing against it, did rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friendship in question then giue place to anie friendlie counsell. Well (said he) deare cosin, since it hath pleased the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humour of loue, yet happie it is, that your loue is imployed vpon so rare a woman: for certainly, a noble cause doth 40 ease much a grievous case. But as it stands now, nothing vexeth me, as that I cannot see wherein I can be seruiceable vnto you. I desire no greater seruice of you (answered *Pyrocles*) then that you remaine secretly in this country, and sometimes come to this place, either late in the night or earlie in the morning, where you shall haue my key to enter, because as my fortune either amends or impaires, I may declare it 45 vnto you, and haue your counsell and furtherance: and hereby I wil of purpose leade her, that is the praise, and yet the staine of all womankind, that you may haue so good a view, as to allow my iudgement: and as I can get the most conuenient time,

time, I will come vnto you; for though by reason of yonder wood you cannot see the Lodge, it is harde at hande. But now (said she) it is time for me to leaue you, and towards euening we will walke out of purpose hitherward, therefore keepe your selfe close in that time. But *Musidorus* bethinking him selfe that his horse might happen to bewray them, thought it best to returne for that day to a village not farre off, and dispatching his horse in some sort, the next day early to come a foot thither, and so to keepe that course afterward, which *Pyrocles* very well liked of. Now farewell deere cousin (said he) from me, no more *Pyrocles*, nor *Darphantus* now, but *Zelmane*: *Zelmane* is my name, *Zelmane* is my title, *Zelmane* is the onely hope of my aduancement. And with that word going out, and seeing that the coast was cleare, *Zelmane* dismissed *Musidorus*, who departed as full of care to help his friend, as before he was to dissuade him.

Zelmane returned to the lodge, where (inflamed by *Philoclea*, watched by *Gynecia*, and tired by *Basilus*) she was like a horse, desirous to runne, and miserably spurred, but so short rained, as he cannot stirre forward: *Zelmane* sought occasion to speake with *Philoclea*; *Basilus* with *Zelmane*; & *Gynecia* hindered them all. If *Philoclea* hapned to sigh (and sigh she did often) as if that sigh were to be wayted on, *Zelmane* sighed also; whereto *Basilus* and *Gynecia* soone made vp foure parts of sorrow. Their affection increased their conuersation; and their conuersation increased their affection. The respect borne bred due ceremonies; but the affection shined so through them, that the ceremonies seemed not ceremonious. *Zelmanes* eyes were (like children before sweet meate) eager, but fearefull of their ill-pleasing gouernors. Time in one instant, seeming both short, and long vnto them: short, in the pleasingnesse of such presence: long, in the stay of their desires.

But *Zelmane* failed not to intice them all many times abroad, because she was desirous her friend *Musidorus* (neere whom of purpose she led them) might haue full sight of them. Sometimes angling to a litle riuer neere hand, which for the moisture it bestowed vpon rootes of some flourishing trees, was rewarded with their shadow. There would they sit down, and pretie wagers be made betweene *Pamela* and *Philoclea*, which could sooneft beguile silly fishes, while *Zelmane* protested, that the fit pray for them was hearts of Princes. She also had an angle in her hand; but the taker was so taken, that she had forgotten taking. *Basilus* in the meane time would be the cooke himselfe of what was so caught, and *Gynecia* sit still, but with no still pensiuenesse. Now she brought them to see a seeled Doue, who the blinder she was, the higher she straued. Another time a Kite, which hauing a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and so let flie, caused all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the world is deceiued) thinking her prosperous, when in deede she was wounded, made the poore Kite finde, that opinion of riches may well be dangerous.

But these recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant shew; for one euening, as *Basilus* returned from hauing forced his thoughts to please themselves in such small conquests, there came a shepheard, who brought him word, that a Gentleman desired leaue to do a message from his Lord vnto him. *Basilus* granted; whereupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutifull ceremonies obserued, in his maisters name tolde him, that he was sent from *Phalantus* of *Corinth*, to craue licence, that as he had done in many other courts, so he might in his presence desie all *Arcadian* Knights in the behalfe of his mistresse beantie, who would besides, her selfe in person be present, to giue euident prooffe what his launce should affirme. The conditions of his challenge were, that the defendant should bring his mistresse

picture, which being set by the image of *Artesia* (so was the mistresse of *Phalantus* named) who in fixe courses should haue better of the other, in the iudgement of *Basilus*, with him both the honors and the pictures should remaine. *Basilus* (though he had retired himselfe into that solitarie dwelling, with intention to auoid, rather then to accept any matters of drawing companie; yet because he would entertaine 5 *Zelmaie*, (that she might not thinke the time so gainfull to him, losse to her) graunted him to pitch his tent for three daies, not farre from the lodge, and to proclaime his challenge, that what *Arcadian Knight* (for none els but vpon his perill was licensed to come) would defend what he honored against *Phalantus*, should haue the like freedome of acesse and returne.

This obtained and published, *Zelmaie* being desirous to learne what this *Thalantus* was, hauing neuer knowne him further then by report of his good iusting, in so much as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, *Basilus* told her that he had had occasion by one verie inward with him, to know in part the discourse of his life, which was, that he was bastard-brother to the faire *Helen Queen of Corinth*, 15 and deereley esteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorable courteous, and wronglesly valiant, considerately pleasant in conuersation, and an excellent courtier without vnfaithfulnesse; who finding his sisters vnperswadeable melancholy, through the loue of *Amphialus* had for a time left her court, and gone into *Laconia*: where in the warre against the *Helots*, he had gotten the reputation of 20 one, that both durst and knew. But as it was rather choise then nature, that led him to matters of armes, so as soone as the spur of honor ceased, he willingly rested in peaceable delights, being beloued in all companies for his louely qualities, and (as a man may terme it) winning cherefulness, whereby to the Prince and Court of *Laconia*, none was more agreeable then *Phalantus*: and he not giuen greatly to struggle 25 with his own disposition, followed the gentle currant of it, hauing a fortune sufficient to content, and he content with a sufficient fortune. But in that court he saw, & was acquainted with this *Artesia*, whose beautie he now defends, became her seruuant, said himselfe, and perchaunce thought himselfe her louer. But certainly, said *Basilus*, many times it falles out, that these yong companions make themselves be- 30 lieue they loue at the first liking of a likely beautie; louing, because they will loue for want of other businesse, not because they feele in deed that diuine power, which makes the heart find a reason in passion: and so (God knowes) as inconstantly leaue vpon the next chaunce that beautie castes before them. So therefore taking loue vpon him like a fashion, he courted this Ladie *Artesia*, who was as fit to paie him 35 his owne monie as might be. For she thinketh she did wrong to her beautie if she were not proud of it, called her disdain of him chastitie, and placed her honour in litle setting by his honouring her: determining neuer to marrie, but him, whom she thought worthie of her: and that was one, in whom all worthinesse were harboured. And to this conceipt not only nature had bent her, but the bringing vp she 40 receiued at my sister in law *Cecropia*, had confirmed her: who hauing in her widowhood taken this yong *Artesia* into her charge; because her father had bene a deare friend of her dead husbands, had taught her to thinke that there is no wisdom but in including both heauen and earth in ones selfe: and that loue, curtesie, gratefulnesse, friendship, and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in ones 45 selfe: And so good a disciple she found of her, that liking the fruits of her own planting, she was content (if so her sonne could haue liked of it) to haue wished her in marriage to my Nephew *Amphialus*. But I thinke that desire hath lost some of his heat,

heat, since she hath knowne, that such a Queene as *Helen* is, doth offer so great a price as a Kingdome, to buy his fauour; for if I be not deceiued in my good sister *Cecropia*, she thinks no face so beautifull, as that which lookes vnder a Crowne. But *Artesia* in deede liked well of my Nephew *Amphialus*; for I can neuer deeme that
 5 loue, which in haughtie hearts proceeds of a desire onely to please, and as it were, peacock themselves; but yet she hath shewed vehemencie of desire that way, I think, because all her desires be vehement, in so much that she hath both placed her only brother (a fine youth called *Ismenus*) to be his squire, and her selfe is content to wait vpon my sister, till she may see the vtermost what she may worke in *Amphialus*: who
 10 being of a melancholie (though I must say truly curteous and noble) mind, seemes to loue nothing lesse then Loue: and of late hauing through some aduenture, or inward discontentment, withdrawne himselfe from any bodies knowledge, where he is: *Artesia* the easier condescended to go to the court of *Laconia*, whither she was sent for by the Kings wife, to whome she is somewhat allied.

15 And there after the war of the *Helots*, this Knight *Phalantus*, (at least for tongue-delight) made him selfe her seruant, and she so little caring, as not to shewe milke thereof, was content onely to be noted to haue a notable seruant. For truly one in my court neerely acquainted with him, within these few dayes made me a pleasant description of their loue, while he with cheerefull lookes would speake sorowful
 20 words, vsing the phrase of his affection in so high a stile, that *Mercurie* would not haue wooed *Venus* with more magnificent Eloquence: but els neither in behauiour, nor action, accusing in himselfe any great trouble in mind, whether he sped or no. And she on the other side, well finding how litle it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a foolish wittinesse, to speake more
 25 then one thinks.

For she made earnest benefite of his iest, forcing him in respect of his profession, to do her such seruices, as were both cumbersome and costly vnto him, while he still thought he went beyond her, because his heart did not commit the idolatrie. So that lastly, she (I thinke) hauing in mind to make the fame of her beautie an oratour
 30 for her to *Amphialus*, (perswading her selfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it doth in some that haue delightfull meat before them, & haue no stomach to it, before other folks praise it) she tooke the aduantage one day vpon *Phalantus* vnconscionable praisings of her, & certaine cast-away vowes, how much he would do for her sake, to arrest his word as soone as it was out of his mouth, & by the vertue thereof
 35 to charge him to go with her through all the courts of *Greece*, and with the challenge now made, to giue her beautie the principallitie ouer all other. *Phalantus* was entrapped, & saw round about him, but could not get out. Exceedingly perplexed he was (as he confest to him that told me the tale) not for doubt he had of himselfe, (for in deede he had litle cause, being accounted, with his Launce especially) where-
 40 upon the challenge is to be tryed) as perfect as any that *Greece* knoweth; but because he feared to offend his sister *Helen*, and withall (as he said) he could not so much beleue his loue, but that he must think in his heart (whatsoeuer his mouth affirmed) that both she, my daughters, & the faire *Parthenia* (wife to a most noble Gentleman my wiues neere kinsman) might far better put in their claime for that prerogatiue.
 45 But his promise had bound him prentice, and therefore it was now better with willingnesse to purchase thanks, then with a discontented doing to haue the paine, and not the reward; and therefore went on, as his faith, rather then loue, did lead him. And now hath he alreadie passed the courts of *Laconia*, *Eliu*, *Argos* & *Corinth*: &

(as many times it happēs) that a good pleader makes a bad cause to preuaile; so hath his Launce brought captiues to the triumph of *Artesia* beautie, such, as though *Artesia* be among the fairest, yet in that companie were to haue the preheminance: for in those courts many knights (that had bene in other farre countries) defended such as they had seen, and liked in their trauaile: but their defence had bene such; as they had forfeited the pictures of their Ladies, to giue a forced false testimonie to *Artesia* excellencie. And now lastly is he come hither where he hath leaue to trie his fortune. But I assure you, if I thought it not in due and true consideration an in-
 iurious seruice and churlish curtesie, to put the danger of so noble a title in the deci-
 ding of such a dangerlesse combat, I would make yong maister *Phalantus* know, that
 your eyes can sharpen a blunt Launce, and that age, which my gray haire (only got-
 ten by the louing care of others) make seeme more then it is, hath not diminished in
 me the power to protect an vndeniable veritie. With that he buſtled vp himſelfe, as
 though his heart would faine haue walked abroad. *Zelma* with an inward ſmyling
 gaue him outward thanks, deſiring him to reſerue his force for worthier cauſes. So
 paſſing their time according to their woont, they waited for the coming of *Pha-
 lantus*, who the next morning hauing already cauſed his tents to be pitched, neere
 to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had vpon the tree made a ſhield to be hanged vp,
 which the defendant ſhould ſtrike, that would call him to the maintaining his chal-
 lenge. The *Impreſa* in the ſhield; was a heauen full of ſtarres, with a ſpeech ſigni-
 fying, that it was *the beautie which gaue it the praiſe*.

Himſelfe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnation veluet, en-
 riched with purl and pearle, wherein *Artesia* ſate, drawne by foure winged horſes
 with artificiall flaming mouths, and fiery wings, as if ſhe had newly borrowed them
 of *Phæbus*. Before her marched, two after two, certaine footmen pleaſantly attired,
 who betweene them held one picture after another of them, that by *Phalantus* well
 running had loſt the prize in the race of beauty, and at euery pace they ſtayed, tur-
 ning the pictures to each ſide, ſo leaſurely, that with perfect iudgement they might
 be diſcerned. The firſt that came in (following the order of the time wherein they
 had bene wonne) was the picture of *Andromana*, Queene of *Iberia*; whom a *Laconian*
 Knight hauing ſometime (and with ſpeciall fauour) ſerued, (though ſome yeares
 ſince returned home) with more gratefullneſſe then good fortune defended. But
 therein *Fortune* had borrowed wit; for in deede ſhe was not comparable to *Artesia*;
 not becauſe ſhe was a good deale elder (for time had not yet bene able to impoue-
 riſh her ſtore thereof) but an exceeding red haire with ſmall eyes, did (like ill com-
 panions) diſgrace the other aſſembly of moſt commendable beauties.

Next after her was borne the counterfait of the princeſſe of *Elis*, a Ladie that
 taught the beholders no other point of beautie, but this, that as lyking is not al-
 waies the child of beautie, ſo whatſoeuer liketh is beautifull; for in that viſage there
 was neither maieltie, grace, fauour, nor faireneſſe; yet ſhe wanted not a ſeruant
 that would haue made her fairer then the faire *Artesia*. But he wrote her praiſes
 with his helmet in the duſt, and left her picture to be as true a witneſſe of his ouer-
 throw, as his running was of her beautie.

After her was the goodly *Artaxia*, great Q of *Armenia*, a Lady vpon whom na-
 ture beſtowed, and well placed her moſt delightfull colours; and withall, had pro-
 portioned her without any fault, quickly to be diſcovered by the ſenſes, yet altoge-
 ther ſeemed not to make vp that harmony, that *Cupid* delights in, the reaſon whereof
 might ſeeme a mannish countenance, which ouerthrew that louely ſweeteneſſe, the
 nobleſt

noblest power of womankind, farre fitter to preuaile by parley then by battell.

Of a farre contrary consideration was the representation of her that next followed, which was *Erona* Queene of *Licia*, who though of so browne a haire, as no man should haue iniured it to haue called it black, and that in the mixture of her cheeks the white did so much ouercome the redde (though what was, was very pure) that it came neare to palenesse, and that her face was a thought longer then the exact *Symmetrians* perhaps would allow; yet loue plaid his part so well in euerie parte, that it caught hold of the iudgement, before it could iudge, making it first loue, and after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine delicacie, which in yeelding conquered; and with a pitifull looke made one finde cause to craue helpe himselfe.

After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royall birth: the former was named *Baccha*, who though very faire, & of a fatnes rather to allure, then to mislike, yet her breasts ouer-familiarly laid open, with a made countenance about her mouth, between simpring and smyling, her head bowed somewhat downe, seemed to languish with ouer-much idlenesse, and with an inuiting looke cast vpward; dissuaded with too much perswading, while hope might seem to ouer-run desire.

The other (whose name was written *Leucippe*) was of a fine daintinesse of beauty, her face carying in it a sober simplicitie; like one that could do much good, & meant no hurt, her eyes hauing in them such a cheerefulnesse, as nature seemed to smile in them: though her mouth and cheekes obeyed to that pretie demurenesse which the more one markte, the more one would iudge the poore soule apt to beleue; and therefore the more pitie to deceiue her.

Next came the Queene of *Laconia*, one that seemed borne in the confines of beauties kingdome: for all her lineaments were neither perfect possessioners thereof, nor absolute strangers thereto: but she was a Queene, and therefore beautifull.

But she that followed, conquered in deed with being conquered; and might wel haue made all the beholders wait vpon her triumph, while her selfe were led captiue. It was the excellently-faire Queene *Helen*, whose Iacynth haire curled by nature, but intercurled by art (like a fine brooke through golde sands) had a rope of faire pearle, which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it were play at fast and loose, each with other, mutually giuing & receiuing richnesse. In her face so much beauty & fauour expressed, as if *Helen* had not bene knowne, some would rather haue iudged it the painters exercise, to shew what he could do, then the conterfaiting of any liuing patterne: for no fault the most fault-finding wit could haue found, if it were not, that to the rest of the body the face was somewhat too little: but that little was such a sparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of loue: for euery thing was full of a choice finenesse, that if it wanted any thing in maiestie, it supplied it with increase in pleasure; and if at the first it strake not admiration, it rauished with delight. And no indifferent soule there was, which if it could resist from subiecting it self to make it his princeesse, that would not long to haue such a playfellow. As for her attire, it was costly & curious, though the looke (fixt with more sadnesse then it seemed nature had bestowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as she vsed those ornaments, not for her selfe, but to preuaile with another, so she feared that all would not serue. Of a farre differing (though esteemed equal) beautie, was the faire *Parthenia*, who next waited on *Artessias* triumph, though farre better she might haue sit in the throne. For in her euery thing was goodly, & stately; yet so, that it might seeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to the humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might seeme full of her own beautie: a large, and exceedingly faire

forehead, with all the rest of her face and body, cast in the mould of Noblenesse, was yet so attired, as might shew, the mistres thought it either not to deserue, or not to neede any exquisite decking, hauing no adorning but cleanlinesse; and so farre from all art, that it was full of carelesnesse: vnlesse that carelesnesse it selfe (in spight of it selfe) grew artificiall. But *Basilus* could not abstaine from praising *Parthenia*, as the perfect picture of a womanly vertue, and wiuely faithfulness: telling withall *Zel-* 5
mane, how he had vnderstood, that when in the court of *Laconia*, her picture (maintained by a certaine *Sycionian* Knight) was lost, through want rather of valour, then iustice: her husband (the famous *Argalus*) would in a chafe haue gone & redeemed it with a new triall. But she (more sporting then sorowing for her vnderferued cham- 10
pion) told her husband, she desired to be beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that she would rather marre her face as euill as euer it was, then that it should be a cause to make *Argalus* put on armour. Then would *Basilus* haue tolde *Zelmane* that which she already knew, of the rare triall of that coupled affection: but the next picture made their mouthes giue place to their eyes. 15

It was of a young maid, which late pulling out a thorne out of a Lambes foote, with her looke so attentiu vpon it, as if that little foote could haue bene the circle of her thoughts, her apparell so poore, as it had nothing but the inside to adorne it; a sheephooke lying by her, with a bottle vpon it. But with all that pouertie, beaury plaid the prince, and cammanded as many harts as the greatest Queene there did. 20
Her beautie and her estate made her quicklie to be knowne to be the faire shepheardesse *Vrania*, whom a rich knight called *Lacemon*, farre in loue with her, had vnluckily defended.

The last of all in place, because last in the time of her being captiue, was *Zelma-*
ne, daughter to the King *Plexirtus*: who at the first sight seemed to haue some re- 25
sembling of *Philoclea*, but with more marking (comparing it to the present *Philoclea*, who indeed had no paragon but her sister) they might see, it was but such a likenesse as an vnperfect glasse doth giue; answerable enough in some features and colours, but erring in others. But *Zelmane* sighing, turning to *Basilus*, Alas sir (said she) here be some pictures which might better become the tombes of their Mistresses, then 30
the triumph of *Artesia*. It is true sweetest Lady (said *Basilus*) some of them be dead, and some other captiue: But that hath happened so late, as it may be the Knights that defended their beauty, knew not so much: without we will say (as in some harts I know it would fall out) that death it selfe could not blot out the image which loue hath engrauen in them. But diuers besides these (said *Basilus*) hath *Phalantus* 35
wonne, but he leaues the rest, carying onely such, who either for greatnes of estate, or of beauty, may iustly glorifie the glory of *Artesias* triumph.

Thus talked *Basilus* with *Zelmane*, glad to make any matter subiect to speake of with his mistresse, while *Phalantus* in this pompous maner, brought *Artesia* with her gentlewomen into one Tent, by which he had another: where they both wayted 40
who would first strike vpon the shield, while *Basilus* the Iudge appointed sticklers and trumpets, to whom the other should obey. But none that day appeared, nor the next, til alreadie it had consumed halfe his allowance of light; but then there came in a knight, protesting himselfe as contrarie to him in mind, as he was in apparell. For *Phalantus* was all in white, hauing in his bases, and caparison imbroidered a wa- 45
uing water: at each side whereof he had nettings cast ouer, in which were diuers fishes naturally made, and so pretily, that as the horse stirred, the fishes seemed to strue, and leape in the net.

But

But the other knight by name *Nestor*, by birth an *Arcadian*, & in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdesse, was all in black, with fire burning both vpon his armour and horse. His *impresa* in his shield, was a fire made of Iuniper, with this word, *More easie, and more sweete*. But this hote knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third
 5 course he receiued of *Phalantus*, leauing his picture to keepe companie with the other of the same stampe; he going away remedilessly chafing at his rebuke. The next was *Polycetes*, greatly esteemed in *Arcadia*, for deedes he had done in armes: and much spoken of for the honourable loue he had long borne to *Gynecia*; which *Basilus* himselfe was content, not onely to suffer, but to be delighted with; he carried
 10 it in so honourable and open plainnesse, setting to his loue no other marke, then to do her faithfull seruice. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from ouerthrow, and her from becomming as then the last of *Artesias* victories: a thing *Gynecias* vertues would little haue recked at another time, nor then, if *Zelmane* had not seene it. But her champion went away asmuch discomforted, as discomforted. Then *Telamon* for *Polexena* and *Eurilion* for *Elpine*, and *Leon* for *Zoana*; all braue Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going downe, lifted vp the ballance of his praise for actiuitie, and hers for fairenesse.

Vpon whose losse as the beholders were talking, there comes into the place where they ranne, a shepherd stripling (for his height made him more then a boy,
 20 and his face would not allow him a man) brown of complexion (whether by nature or by the Sunnes familiaritie) but verie louely withall; for the rest so perfectly proportioned, that Nature shewed, shee doth not like men, who slubber vp matters of meane account. And well might his proportion be iudged; for he had nothing vpon him but a paire of sloppes, and vpon his bodie a Gote-skinne, which he cast ouer
 25 his shoulder, doing all things with so pretie a grace, that it seemed ignorance could not make him do a misse, because he had a hart to do well, holding in his right hand a long staffe, and so comming with a looke full of amiable fiercenesse, as in whom choller could not take away the sweetnesse, he came towards the king, and making a reuerence (which in him was comely because it was kindly.) My liege Lord (said
 30 he) I pray you heare a few words; for my heart will breake if I say not my minde to you. I see here the picture of *Vrania*, which (I cannot tell how, nor why) these men when they fall downe, they say, is not so faire as yonder gay woman. But pray God, I may neuer see my old mother aliue, if I think she be any more match to *Vrania*, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or then the Dog that keepes our flock at home, is
 35 like your white Greyhound, that pulled downe the Stagge last day.

And therefore I pray you let me be drest as they be, and my hart giues me, I shall tumble him on the earth: for in deede he might aswel say, that a Couflip is as white as a Lillie: or els I care not, let him come with his great staffe, and I with this in my hand, and you shall see what I can do to him. *Basilus* saw it was the fine shepherd
 40 *Lalus*, whom once he had afore him in Pastorall sportes, and had greatly delighted in his wit full of pretie simplicitie, and therefore laughing at his earnestnesse, he bad him be content, since he saw the pictures of so great Queenes, were faine to follow their champions fortune. But *Lalus* (euen weeping ripe) went among the rest, longing to see some bodie that would reuenge *Vranias* wrong; and praying
 45 hartily for euery bodie that ran against *Phalantus*, then beginning to feeble pouerty, that he could not set him selfe to that triall. But by and by, euen when the Sunne (like a noble hart) began to shew his greatest countenance in his lowest estate, there came in a Knight, called *Phebilus*, a Gentleman of that countrey, for whom hatefull

fortune had borrowed the dart of loue, to make him miserable by the sight of *Philoclea*. For he had euē frō her infancie loued her, & was strikē by her before she was able to know what quier of arrowes her eyes caried; but he loued & dispaired; & the more he dispaired, the more he loued. He saw his own vnworthinesse, and therby made her excellencie haue more terrible aspect vpon him: he was so secret therein, as not daring 5 to be open, that to no creature he euer spake of it, but his hart made such silent complaints within it selfe, that while al his senses were attentive thereto, cunning iudges might perceiue his mind: so that he was known to loue though he denied, or rather was the better known, because he denied it. His armour and his attire was for a Sea colour, his *Impresa*, the fish called *Sepia*, which being in the net, castes a blacke inke 10 about it selfe, that in the darkenesse thereof it may scape: his word was, *Not so. Philoclea* picture with almost an idolatrous magnificence was borne in by him. But straight iealousie was a harbinger for disdaine in *Zelmanes* heart, when she saw any (but her selfe) should bee auowed a champion for *Philoclea*: in somuch that shee wist his shame, till she saw him shamed: for at the second course hee was stricken 15 quite frō out of the saddle, so full of grieve, and rage withall, that he wold faine with the sword haue reuenged it: but that being contrary to the order set downe, *Basilus* wold not suffer; so that wishing himself in the bottome of the earth, he went his way, leauing *Zelma* no lesse angry with his losse, then shee would haue bene with his victory. For if she thought before a riuals praise would haue angred her, her Ladies 20 disgrace did make her much more forget what she then thought, while that passion raigned so much the more, as she saw a pretty blush in *Philocleas* cheekes bewray a modest discontentment. But the night commanded truce for those sports, and *Phalantus* (though intreated) would not leaue *Artesia*, who in no case would come into the house, hauing (as it were) suckt of *Cecropias* breath a mortall milke against 25 *Basilus*.

But the night measured by the short ell of sleepe, was soone past ouer, and the next morning had giuen the watchfull stars leaue to take their rest, when a trumpet summoned *Basilus* to play his Iudges part: which he did, taking his wife and daughters with him; *Zelma* hauing lockt her dore, so as they would not trouble 30 her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the field, ready to proue *Helen* of *Corinth* had receiued great iniury, both by the erring iudgement of the challenger, and the vnlucky weakenesse of her former defender. The new Knight was quickly knowne to be *Clitophon* (*Kalanders* sonne of *Basilus* his sister) by his armour, which all guilt, was so well handled, that it shewed like a glittering sand and 35 grauell, enterlaced with siluer riuers: his deuise hee had put in the picture of *Helen* which hee defended: It was the *Ermion* with a speach that signified, *Rather dead then spotted*. But in that armour since hee had parted from *Helen* (who would no longer his company, finding him to enter into tearmes of affection) hee had performed so honourable actions (still seeking for his two friends by the names of 40 *Palladius* and *Daiphantus*) that though his face were couered, his being was discovered, which yet *Basilus* (which had brought him vp in his court) would not seeme to do; but glad to see triall of him, of whom he had heard very well, he commanded the trumpets to sound; to which the two braue Knights obeying, they performed their courses, breaking their six staues, with so good, both skill in the hitting, and grace in the maner, that it bred some difficulty in the iudgement. But *Basilus* in the end gaue sentence against *Clitophon*, because *Phalantus* had broken more 45 staues vpon the head, and that once *Clitophon* had receiued such a blow, that he had

lost

lost the raines of his horse, with his head well nie touching the croper of the horse. But *Clitophon* was so angrie with the iudgement (wherein he thought he had receiued wrong) that he omitted his duetie to his Prince, and vncke; and sodainly went his way still in the quest of them, whom as then he had left by seeking: and so yeelded the field to the next commer.

Who comming in about two houres after, was no lesse marked then all the rest before, because he had nothing worth the marking. For he had neither picture, nor deuice, his armor of as old a fashion (besides the rustie poorenesse,) that it might better seeme a monument of his grandfathers courage: about his middle he had in
 10 steede of bascs, a long cloak of silke, which as vnhandfomely, as it needes must, became the wearer: so that all that lookt on, measured his length on the earth already, since he had to meete one who had bene victorious of so many gallants. But he went on towards the shield, and with a sober grace strake it; but as he let his sword fall vpon it, another Knight, all in blacke came rustling in, who strake the shield al-
 15 most as soone as he, & so strongly, that he brake the shield in two: the ill appointed Knight (for so the beholders called him) angrie with that, (as he accounted) insolēt iniurie to himselfe, hit him such a sound blow, that they that looked on said, it well became a rude arme. The other answered him againe in the same case, so that Launces were put to silence, the swords were so busie.

20 But *Phalantus* angrie of this defacing his shield, came vpon the black Knight, and with the pommell of his sword set fire to his eyes, which presently was reuenged, not onely by the Black, but the ill apparelled Knight, who disdained another should enter into his quarrell, so as, who euer saw a matachin daunce to imitate fighting, this was a fight that did imitate the matachin: for they being but three that fought,
 25 euery one had two aduersaries, striking him, who strooke the third, and reuenging perhaps that of him, which he had receiued of the other. But *Basilus* rising himself came to part them, the sticklers authoritie scarcely able to perswade cholerike hearers; and part them he did.

But before he could determine, comes in a fourth, halting on foote, who complained to *Basilus*, demanding iustice on the blacke Knight, for hauing by force taken away the picture of *Pamela* from him, which in little forme he ware in a Tablet, and couered with silke had fastened it to his Helmet, purposing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with *Artesias* length, not doubting but even in that
 30 little quantitie, the excellencie of that would shine thorow the weakenesse of the other: as the smallest starre doth thorow the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had met with this black Knight, who had (as he said) robbed him of it. The iniurie seemed grieuous, but when it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the halting Knight meeting the other, asking the cause of his going thitherward, and finding it was to defend *Pamelas* diuine beautie against *Artesias*, with a prowd
 40 iollitie commaunded him to leaue that quarrell onely for him, who was onely worthie to enter into it. But the blacke Knight obeying no such cōmaundements, they fell to such a bickering, that he gat a halting, and lost his picture. This vnderstood by *Basilus*, he told him he was now fitter to looke to his own bodie, then an others picture: and so (vncomforted therein) sent him away to learne of *Æsculapius*, that
 45 he was not fit for *Venus*. But then the question arising, who should be the former against *Phalantus*, of the blacke, or the ill apparelled Knight, (who now had gotten the reputation of some sturdie lout, he had so well defended himselfe;) of the one side, was, alleaged the hauing a picture, which the other wanted: of the other side,

the first striking the shield; but the conclusion was, that the ill apparelled Knight should haue the precedence, if he deliuered the figure of his mistresse to *Phalantus*; who asking him for it, Certainly (said he) her liueliest picture, (if you could see it, is in my hart, and the best comparison I could make of her, is of the Sunne and of all the other heauenly beauties. But because perhaps all eyes cannot taste the diuinitie 5 of her beautie, & would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it be not clouded by some maner thing; know ye then, that I defed that same Ladie, whose image *Phobilus* so feebly lost yesternight, and in steede of another (if you ouercome mee) you shall haue me your slaue to carrie that image in your mistresse triumph. *Phalantus* easily agreed to the bargaine, which alreadie he made his owne. 10

But when it came to the trial, the ill apparelled Knight choosung out the greatest stauies in all the store, at the first course gaue his head such a remembrance, that he lost almost his remembrance, he himselfe receiuing the incounter of *Phalantus* without any extraordinarie motion. And at the second gaue him such a counterbuffe, that because *Phalantus* was so perfit a horseman, as not to be driuen from the saddle, the saddle with broken girthes was driuen from the horse: *Phalantus* remaining 15 angrie and amazed, because now being come almost to the last of his promised enterprife, that disgrace befell him, which he had neuer before knowne.

But the victorie being by the Iudges giuen, and the trumpets witnessed to the ill apparelled Knight; *Phalantus* disgrace was ingriued in lieu of comfort of *Artesia*, who telling him she neuer lookt for other, bad him seeke some other mistresse. 20 He excusing himselfe, and turning ouer the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (said she) that you haue lost me.

Nay truely Madam (said *Phalantus*) it shall not be so: for I think the losse of such a Mistresse will proue a great gaine: and so concluded; to the sport of *Basilus*, to see 25 young folkes loue, that came in maskt with so great pomp, go out with so little constancie. But *Phalantus* first professing great seruice to *Basilus* for his curteous intermitting his solitarie course for his sake, would yet conduct *Artesia* to the castle of *Cecropia*, whither she desired to go: vowing in himselfe, that neither hart, nor mouth-loue, should euer any more intangle him: and with that resolutiō he left the 30 company. Whence all being dismissed (among whom the black Knight went away repining at his luck, that had kept him frō winning the honor, as he knew he should haue done, to the picture of *Pamela*) the ill apparelled Knight (who was only desired to stay, because *Basilus* meant to shew him to *Zelmane*) puld off his Helmet, & then was known himself to be *Zelmane*: who that morning (as she told) while the others 35 were busie, had stolne out to the Princes stable, which was a mile off frō the Lodge, had gotten a horse (they knowing it was *Basilus* pleasure she should be obeyed) and borrowing that homely armour for want of a better, had come vpon the spur to redeeme *Philocleas* picture, which she said, she could not beare, (being one of that little wilderness-company) should be in captiuitie, if the cunning she had learned in 40 her countrie of the noble *Amazons*, could withstand it: and vnder that pretext faine she would haue giuen a secret passport to her affection. But this act painted at one instant rednesse in *Philocleas* face, & palenesse in *Gynecias*, but brought forth no other countenances but of admiration, no speeches but of cōmendations: all these few (besides loue) thinking they honoured themselues, in honouring so accompli- 45 shed a person as *Zelmane*: whom daily they sought with some or other sports to delight, for which purpose *Basilus* had in a house not farre off, seruaunts, who though they came not vncalled, yet at call were readie.

And

And so many daies were spent, and many waies vsed, while *Zelmane* was like one that stood in a tree waiting a good occasion to shoot, & *Gynesia* a blancher, which kept the dearest deere from her. But the day being come, on which according to an appointed course, the shepheards were to assemble, and make their pastorall sports
 5 afore *Basilus*: *Zelmane* (fearing, lest many eyes, and comming diuers waies, might hap to spy *Musidorus*) went out to warne him thereof.

But before she could come to the Arbour, she sawe walking from her ward, a man in shepherdish apparell, who being in the sight of the Lodge, it might seeme he was allowed there. A long cloke he had on, but that cast vnder his right arme, wherein
 10 he held a sheephooke, so finely wrought, that it gaue a brauerie to pouertie; and his rayments, though they were meane, yet receiued they handsomnesse by the grace of the wearer; though he himselfe went but a kinde of languishing pace, with his eyes sometimes cast vp to heauen, as though his fancies straued to mount higher; sometimes throwne downe to the ground, as if the earth could not beare the burthen of
 15 his sorrowes; at length, with a lamentable tune, he song these fewe verses.

*Come shepheards weedes, become your maisters minde:
 Teeld outward shew, what inward change he tryes:
 Nor be abasht, since such a guest you finde,
 20 Whose strongest hope in your weake comfort lyes.*

*Come shepheards weedes, attend my wofull cryes:
 Disuse your selues from sweete Menalcas voice:
 For other be those tunes which sorrow tryes,
 25 From those cleere notes which freely may reioyce.
 Then powre out plaint, and in one word say this:
 Helpelesse his plaint, who spoiles himselfe of blisse.*

And hauing ended, he strake himselfe on the breast, saying, O miserable wretch,
 30 whither do thy destenies guide thee? The voice made *Zelmane* hasten her pace to ouertake him: which hauing done, she plainly perceiued that it was her deare friend *Musidorus*, whereat maruelling not a litle, she demaunded of him, whether the Goddesse of those woods had such a power to transforme euery bodie, or whether, as in all enterprises else he had done, he meant thus to match her in this new alteration. Alas, (said *Musidorus*) what shall I say, who am loth to say, & yet faine would
 35 haue said? I find in deede, that all is but lip-wisdome, which wants experience. I now (woe is me) do try what loue can do. O *Zelmane*, who will resist it, must either haue no wit, or put out his eyes: can any man resist his creation? certainly by loue we are made, and to loue we are made. Beasts onely cannot discerne beautie, and let
 40 them be in the roll of Beasts that do not honor it. The perfect friendship *Zelmane* bare him, and the great pitie she (by good triall) had of such cases, could not keepe her from smiling at him, remembring how vehemently he had cryed out against the folly of louers. And therefore a litle to punish him, Why how now deare cousin (said she) you that were last day so high in the pulpit against louers, are you now be-
 45 come so meane an auditor? Remember that loue is a passion; and that a worthie mans reason must euer haue the masterhood. I recant, I recant (cried *Musidorus*) and with- all falling downe prostrate, O thou celestiall, or infernall spirit of Loue, or what o- ther heauenly or hellish title thou list to haue (for effects of both I finde in my selfe)

have cōpassion of me, & let thy glory be as great in pardoning the that be submitted to thee, as in conquering those that were rebellious. No, no, said *Zelmae*, I see you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my mishaps, & do but cōterfeit thus, to make me see the deformity of my passiōs: but take heede, that this iest do not one day turne to earnest. Now I beseech thee (said *Musidorus* taking her fast by the hand) eue 5 for the truth of our friendship, of which (if I be not altogether an vnhappy man) thou hast some remembrance, and by those secret flames which (I know) haue likewise nearely touched thee, make no iest of that, which hath so earnestly pierced me thorough, nor let that be light to thee, which is to me so burdenous, that I am not able to beare it. *Musidorus* both in words and behauiour, did so liuely deliuer out his 10 inward griefe, that *Zelmae* found indeede, he was throughly wounded: but there rose a new iealousie in her mind, lest it might be with *Philoclea*, by whom, as *Zelmae* thought, in right all harts and eyes should be inherited. And therefore desirous to be cleered of that doubt, *Musidorus* shortly (as in hast and full of passionate perplexednesse) thus recounted his case vnto her. 15

The day (sayd he) I parted from you, I being in mind to returne to a towne, from whence I came hither, my horse being before tired, would scarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle (I saw a good way off) guided me to a young shepherds house, by name *Menalcas*, who seeing me to be a straying stranger, with the right honest hospitality which seemes to be harbored in the *Arcadian* 20 breasts, & though not with curious costlinesse, yet with cleanly sufficiency, entertained me: and hauing by talk with him, found the maner of the country, something more in particular, then I had by *Kalanders* report, I agreed to sojourne with him in secret, which he faithfully promised to obserue. And so hitherto your arbour diuerse times repaired: and here by your meanes had the sight (ō that it had neuer bin so, nay, 25 ō that it might euer be so) of the Goddesse, who in a definite compasse can set forth infinite beautie. All this while *Zelmae* was racked with iealousie. But he went on, for (said he) I lying close, and in truth thinking of you, and saying thus to my selfe, ō sweete *Pyrocles*, how art thou bewitched? where is thy vertue? where is the vse of thy reason? how much am I inferior to thee in the state of the mind? And yet know I, that 30 all the heauens cannot bring me to such thraldome. Scarcely, thinke I, had I spokē this word, when the Ladies came forth; at which sight, I thinke the very words returned backe againe to strike my soule: at least, an vnmeasurable sting I felt in my selfe, that I had spoken such words. At which sight (said *Zelmae*, not able to beare him any longer. O (said *Musidorus*) I know your suspition; No, no, banish al such feare, it was, it is, 35 and must be *Pamela*: Then all is safe (said *Zelmae*) proceede, deare *Musidorus*. I will not (said he) impute it to my late solitary life (which yet is prone to affections) nor to the much thinking of you (though that cald the cōsideratiō of loue into my mind, which before I euer neglected) nor to the exaltation of *Venus*, nor reuenge of *Cupid*; but euen to her, who is the Planet, nay, the Goddesse, against which, the only shield 40 must be my Sepulcher. When I first saw her, I was presently stricken, and I (like a foolish child, that when any thing hits him, will strike himselfe againe vpon it) would needes looke againe, as though I would perswade mine eyes, that they were deceived. But alas, well haue I found, that Loue to a yeelding hart is a king: but to a resisting, is a tyrant. The more with arguments I shaked the stake, which he had plāted in 45 the ground of my hart, the deeper still it sanke into it. But what meane I to speake of the causes of my loue, which is as impossible to describe, as to measure the backside of heauen? Let this word suffice, I loue.

And

And that you may know I do so, it was I that came in blacke armour to defend her picture, where I was both preuented, and beaten by you. And so, I that waited here to do you seruice, haue now my selfe most neede of succor. But whereupon got you your selfe this apparell, said *Zelmane*? I had forgotten to tell you (said *Musidorus*) though that were one principall matter of my speech; so much am I now maister of my owne mind. But thus it happened: being returned to *Menalcas* house, full of tormenting desire, after a while fainting vnder the waight, my courage stird vp my wit to seeke for some reliefe, before I yeelded to perishe. At last this came into my head, that very euening, that I had to no purpose last vsed my horse and armour.

10 I told *Menalcas*, that I was a *Thessalian* Gentleman, who by mischaunce hauing killed a great fauorite of the Prince of that cuntry, was pursued so cruelly, that in no place, but either by fauour, or corruption, they would obtaine my destruction; and that therefore I was determined (till the fury of my persecutors might be asswaged) to disguise my selfe among the shepheards of *Arcadia*, and (if it were possible) to be

15 one of them that were allowed the Princes presence; because if the woorst should fall, that I were discouered, yet hauing gotten the acquaintance of the Prince, it might happen to moue his hart to protect me. *Menalcas* (being of an honest disposition) pitied my case, which my face through my inward torment made credible; and so (I giuing him largely for it) let me haue this rayment, instructing

20 me in all the particularities, touching himselfe, or my selfe, which I desired to know: yet not trusting so much to his constancie, as that I would lay my life, and life of my life, vpon it, I hired him to go into *Thessalia* to a friend of mine, and to deliuer him a letter from me; coniuring him to bring me as speedy an answer as he could, because it imported me greatly to know, whether certaine of my friends

25 did yet possesse any fauour, whose intercessions I might vse for my restitution. He willingly tooke my letter, which being well sealed, indeede contained other matter. For I wrote to my trustie seruant *Calodoulus* (whom you know) that assoone as he had deliuered the letter, he should keepe him prisoner in his house, not suffering him to haue conference with any body, till he knew my further pleasure: in

30 all other respects that he should vse him as my brother. And thus is *Menalcas* gone, and I heere a poore shepheard; more proude of this estate, then of any kingdome: so manifest it is, that the highest point outward things can bring one vnto, is the contentment of the mind: with which, no estate; without which, all estates be miserable. Now haue I chosen this day, because (as *Menalcas* told me) the other shep-

35 heards are called to make their sports, and hope that you will with your credite, find meanes to get me allowed among them. You neede not doubt (answered *Zelmane*) but that I wil bee your good mistresse: marrie the best way of dealing must be by *Dametas*, who since his blunt braine hath perceiued some fauour the Prince doth beare vnto me (as without doubt the most seruile flatterie is lodged most easilie in the grossest capacity, for their ordinary conceipt draweth a yeelding to their greater, and then haue they not wit to discerne the right degrees of dutie) is

40 much more seruiceable vnto me, then I can find anie cause to wish him. And therefore dispaire not to winne him: for euery present occasion will catch his senses, and his senses are maisters of his sillie mind; onely reuerence him, and reward him, and with that bridle and saddle you shall well ride him. O heaven and earth

45 (said *Musidorus*) to what a passe are our mindes brought, that from the right line of vertue, are wryed to these crooked shifts? But o Loue, it is thou that doost it: thou changest name vpon name; thou disguisest our bodies, and disfigurest our minds.

But indeed thou hast reason, for though the wayes be foule, the iourneys end is most faire and honourable.

No more sweet *Musidorus* (said *Zelmane*) of these philosophies, for here comes the verie person of *Dametas*. And so he did indeed, with a sword by his side, a forrest bill on his necke, and a chopping-knife vnder his girdle: in which well prouided fort he had euer gone since the feare *Zelmane* had put him in. But he no sooner saw her, but with head and armes he laid his reuerence afore her, enough to haue made any man forweare all curtesie. And then in *Basilus* name he did inuite her to walke downe to the place, where that day they were to haue the pastorals.

But when he spied *Musidorus* to be none of the shepheards allowed in that place, 10 he would faine haue periwaded himselfe to vtter some anger, but that he durst not; yet muttering & chāping, as though his cud troubled him, he gaue occasion to *Musidorus* to come neare him, and seine this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the shepheard *Menalcas*, by name *Dorus*, sent by his father in his tender age to *Athens*, there to learne some cunning more then ordinarie, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother *Menalcas* (lately gone thither to fetch him home) was also deceased: where (vpō his death) he had charged him to seeke the seruice of *Dametas*, and to be wholly & euer guided by him, as one in whose iudgement & integritie the Prince had singular confidence. For token whereof, he gaue to *Dametas* a good summe of gold in ready coine, which 20 *Menalcas* had bequeathed vnto him, vpon condition he should receiue this poore *Dorus* into his seruice, that his mind and maners might grow the better by his dayly example. *Dametas*, that of all maners of stile could best conceiue of golden eloquēce, being withall tickled by *Musidorus* praises, had his braine so turned, that he became flauē to that, which he that sued to be his seruant offered to giue him: yet for countenance sake, he seemed verie squeamish, in respect of the charge he had of the Princeesse *Pamela*. But such was the secret operation of the gold, helped with the perswasion of the Amazon *Zelmane* (who said it was pitie so handsome a young man should be any where else then with so good a maister) that in the end he agreed (if that day he behaued himselfe so to the liking of *Basilus*, as he might be contented) that then 30 he would receiue him into his seruice.

And thus went they to the Lodge, where they found *Gynecia* and her daughters ready to go to the field, to delight themselues there a while, vntill the shepheards comming: whither also taking *Zelmane* with them, as they went, *Dametas* told them of *Dorus*, and desired he might be accepted there that day in stead of his brother 35 *Menalcas*. As for *Basilus*, he stayed behind to bring the shepheards, with whom he meant to conferre, to breed the better *Zelmanes* liking (which he onely regarded) while the other beautifull band came to the faire field, appointed for the shepheardish pastimes. It was indeed a place of delight; for through the middest of it there ran a sweet brooke, which did both hold the eye open with her azure streams, & yet 40 seeke to close the eye with the purling noise it made vpon the pibble stones it ran ouer: the field it selfe being serin some places with roses, & in all the rest constantlie preferuing a flourishing Greene: the roses added such a ruddy shew vnto it, as though the field were bashfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to inclose a Theatre) grew such sort of trees, as either excellencie of fruit, stateliness of growth, 45 contiuaall greenness, or poeticall fancies, haue made at any time famous. In most part of which there had bene framed by art such pleasant arbors, that (one answering another) they became a gallerie aloft from tree to tree almost round about, which

which below gaue a perfect shadow, a pleasant refuge then from the cholericke looke of *Phæbus*.

In this place while *Gynecia* walked hard by them, carying many vnquiet contentions about her, the Ladies sate them downe, inquiring diuerse questions of the
 5 shepheard *Dorus*; who (keeping his eye still vpon *Pamela*,) answered with such a trembling voice, and abashed countenance, and oftentimes so far from the matter, that it was some sport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him so discountenanced with vnwonted presence. But *Zelmane* that saw in him the glasse of her owne miserie, taking the hand of *Philoclea*, and with burning
 10 kisses setting it close to her lips (as if it should stand there like a hand in the margine of a booke, to note some saying worthy to be marked) began to speake these words. O Loue, since thou art so changeable in mens estates, how art thou so constant in their torments? when sodenlie there came out of a wood a monstrous Lyon, with a she Beare not farre from him, of litle lesse fiercenesse, which (as they ghest) ha-
 15 uing bene hunted in Forrests farre off, were by chaunce comethither, where before such beasts had neuer bene seene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themselves, altered something the countenances of the two Louers, but so, as any man might perceiue, was rather an assembling of powers, then dismayednesse of courage. *Philoclea* no sooner espied the Lyon, but that obeying the commandement of feare, she
 20 leapt vp, and ran to the Lodge-ward, as fast as her delicate legges could carie her, while *Dorus* drew *Pamela* behind a tree, where she stood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hauke is euen ready to seaze. But the Lyon (seeing *Philoclea* run away) bent his race to her-ward, and was readie to seaze himselfe on the praie, when *Zelmane* (to whom daunger then was a cause of dreadlesnesse, all the composition
 25 of her elements being nothing but fierie) with swiftnesse of desire crost him, and with force of affection strake him such a blow vpon his chine, that she opened all his bodie: wherewith the valiant beast turning vpon her with open iawes, she gaue him such a thrust through his breast, that all the Lyon could do, was with his paw to teare off the mantle & sleeue of *Zelmane*, with a litle scratch, rather then a wound;
 30 his death-blow hauing taken away the effect of his force: but therewithall hee fell downe, and gaue *Zelmane* leasure to take off his head, to carie it for a present to her Ladie *Philoclea*: who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her) kept on her course, like *Arethusa* when she ran from *Alpheus*; her light apparell being caried vp with the wind, that much of those beauties, she wold at another time haue willingly hidden, was presented to the sight of the twise wounded *Zelmane*. Which
 35 made *Zelmane* not follow her ouer hastilie, least she should too soon deprive herselfe of that pleasure: but carying the Lyons head in her hand, did not fullie ouertake her, till they came to the presence of *Basilus*. Neither were they long there, but that *Gynecia* came thither also; who had bene in such a traunce of musing, that
 40 *Zelmane* was fighting with the Lyon, before she knew of anie Lyons comming: but then affection resisting, and the soone ending of the fight preuenting all extremitie of feare, she marked *Zelmanes* fighting: and when the Lyons head was off, as *Zelmane* ran after *Philoclea*, so she could not find in her heart but run after *Zelmane*: so that it was a new sight, Fortune had prepared to those woods, to see these great
 45 personages thus run one after the other: each caried forward with an inward violence: *Philoclea* with such feare, that she thought she was still in the Lyons mouth: *Zelmane* with an eager and impatient delight; *Gynecia* with wings of loue, flying she neither knew, nor cared to know whither. But now, being all come before *Basilus*,

amazed with this sight, and feare hauing such possession in the faire *Philoclea*, that her blood durst not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of palenesse from her most pure whitenesse, *Zelmane* kneeled downe, and presenting the Lyons head vnto her: Onlie Ladie (said she) here see you the punishmēt of that vnnaturall beast, which contrarie to his own kind, would haue wronged Princes blood, guided with
 5 such traiterous eyes, as durst rebell against your beautie. Happie am I, & my beautie both (answered the sweete *Philoclea* then blushing, for Feare had bequeathed his roome to his kinsman Bashfulnesse) that you excellent *Amazon*, were there to teach him good maners. And euen thanks to that beautie (answered *Zelmane*) which can giue an edge to the bluntest swords. There *Philoclea* told her father how it had hap-
 10 ned: but as she had turned her eyes in her tale to *Zelmane*, she perceiued some blood vpon *Zelmanes* shoulder, so that starting with the louely grace of pitie, she shewed it to her father and mother: who, as the nurse sometimes with over-much kissing may forget to giue the babe sucke, so had they with too much delighting, in beholding and praising *Zelmane*, left off to marke whether she needed succour. But then
 15 they ran both vnto her, like a father and mother to an onlie child, and (though *Zelmane* assured them it was nothing) would needs see it; *Gynecia* hauing skill in Chirurgerie, an arte in those dayes much esteemed, because it serued to vertuous courage, which euen Ladies would (euer with the contempt of cowards) seeme to cherish. But looking vpon it (which gaue more inward bleeding wounds to *Zelmane*,
 20 for she might sometimes feele *Philocleas* touch, whiles she helped her mother) she found it was indeed of no importance: yet applied she a precious baulme vnto it, of power to heale a greater grieve.

But euen then, and not before, they remembred *Pamela*, and therefore *Zelmane* (thinking of her friend *Dorus*) was running backe to be satisfied, when they might
 25 all see *Pamela* comming betweene *Dorus* and *Dametas*, hauing in her hand the paw of a Beare, which the shepheard *Dorus* had newly presented vnto her, desiring her to accept it, as of such a beast, which though she deserued death for her presumption, yet was her wit to be esteemed, since she could make so sweet a choice. *Dametas* for his part came piping and dauncing, the meriest man in a parish: but when he came
 30 so neare as he might be heard of *Basilus*, he would needs breake through his eares with this ioyfull song of their good successe:

Now thanked be the great God Pan,
 which thus preserues my loued life:
 Thanked be I that keepe a man,
 who ended hath this bloudie strife:
 For if my man must praises haue,
 what then must I that keepe the knaue?

35

For as the Moone the eye doth please,
 with gentle beames not hurting sight:
 Tet hath sir Sunne the greatest praise,
 because from him doth come her light:
 So if my man must praises haue,
 what then must I that keepe the knaue?

40

45

Being all now come together, and all desirous to know each others aduentures, *Pamelas* noble heart would needs gratefullie make knowne the valiant meane of her
 safetie

safety, which (directing her speech to her mother) she did in this maner. As soon, said
 she, as ye were all run away, & that I hoped to be in safety, there came out of the same
 woods a horrible fowle Beare, which (fearing belike to deale, while the Lion was pre-
 sent, as soone as he was gone) came furiously towards the place where I was, & this
 5 yong shepheard left alone by me; I truly (not guilty of any wisdom, which since they
 lay to my charge, because they say, it is the best refuge against that beast, but euen
 pure feare bringing forth that effect of wisdom) fell downe flat on my face, needing
 not counterfeite being dead, for indeed I was little better. But this yong shepheard
 with a wonderful courage, hauing no other weapō but that knife you see standing be-
 10 fore the place where I lay, so behaued himself, that the first sight I had (when I thought
 my selfe already neare *Charons* ferrie) was the shepheard shewing me his bloudie
 knife in token of victorie. I pray you (said *Zelmane*, speaking to *Dorus*, whose valour
 she was carefull to haue manifested) in what sort, so it weaponed, could you atchieue
 this enterprize? Noble Lady, said *Dorus*, the maner of these beasts fighting with anie
 15 man, is to stand vp vpon their hinder feet; and so this did, and being ready to giue
 me a shrewd embracemēt, I think the God *Pan* (euer carefull of the chief blessings
 of *Arcadia*) guided my hand so iust to the heart of the beast, that neither she could
 once touch me, nor (which is the only matter in this worthie remembrance) breed
 anie danger to the Princesse. For my part, I am rather (with all subiected humble-
 20 nesse) to thanke her excellencies, since the dutie thereunto gaue me heart to saue
 my selfe, then to receiue thanks for a deed, which was her only inspiring. And this
Dorus spake, keeping affection as much as he could backe from comming into his
 eyes and gestures. But *Zelmane* (that had the same character in her heart) could ea-
 sily decipher it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in speech, desired to vnder-
 25 stand the conclusion of the matter; and how the honest *Dametas* was escaped. Nay
 said *Pamela*, none shall take that office from my selfe, being so much bound to him
 as I am, for my education. And with that word, scorn borrowing the countenance
 of mirth, somewhat she smiled, and thus spake on: When (said she) *Dorus* made me
 assuredly perceiue, that all cause of feare was passed (the truth is) I was ashamed to
 30 find my selfe alone with this shepheard; and therefore looking about me, if I could
 see any body; at length we both perceiued the gentle *Dametas*, lying with his head
 and breast as far as he could thrust himselfe into a bush, drawing vp his legs as close
 vnto him as he could: for, like a man of a verie kind nature, soone to take pitie of
 himselfe, he was full resoluēd not to see his owne death. And when this shepheard
 35 pushed him, bidding him to be of good cheare; it was a great while ere wee could
 perswade him, that *Dorus* was not the beare: so that he was faine to pull him out by
 the heeles, and shew him the beast, as dead as he could wish it: which you may be-
 leeuē me, was a verie ioyfull sight vnto him. But then he forgate all curtesie, for he
 fell vpon the beast, giuing it manie a manfull wound: swearing by much, it was not
 40 well such beasts should be suffered in a common wealth. And then my gouernour,
 as full of ioy, as before of feare came dauncing and singing before as euen now you
 saw him. Well wel (said *Basilus*) I haue not chosen *Dametas* for his fighting, nor for
 his discourfing, but for his plainnesse & honesty, & therein I know he wil not deceiue
 me. But then he told *Pamela* (not so much because she should know it, as because
 45 he would tel it) the wonderful act *Zelmane* had perfourmed, which *Gynecia* likewise
 spake off both in such extremitie of praising, as was easie to be seene, the cōstructiō
 of their speech might best be made by the Grammer rules of affection. *Basilus* told
 with what a gallant grace shee ranne with the Lyons head in her hand, like another

Pallas with the spoiles of *Gorgon*. *Gynecia* sware, shee sawe the very face of the young *Hercules* killing the *Nemean* Lion, and all with a gratefull assent confirmed the same praises: only poore *Dorus* (though of equall desert, yet not proceeding of equall estate) should haue bin left forgotten, had not *Zelmane* againe with great admiration begun to speake of him; asking, whether it were the fashion or no, in *Arcadia*, that 5 shepheards should performe such valorous enterprises.

This *Basilus* (hauing the quicke sence of a loue) tooke, as though his Mistresse had giuen him a secret reprehension, that he had not shewed more gratefulnessse to *Dorus*; and therefore (as nimble as he could) enquired of his estate, adding promise of great rewards: among the rest, offering to him, if he would exercise his courage in souldierie, hee would commit some charge vnto him vnder his Lieutenant *Philanax*. But *Dorus* (whose ambition climed by another staire) hauing first answered touching his estate, that he was brother to the shepherd *Menalcas*; who among other, was wont to resort to the Princes presence, and excused his going to souldierie, by the vnaptnesse he found in himselfe that way; he told *Basilus*, that his brother in his last testament had willed him to serue *Dametas*; and therefore (for due obedience therunto) he wold thinke his seruice greatly rewarded, if he might obtaine by that meane to liue in the sight of his Prince, and yet practise his owne chosen vocation. *Basilus* (liking well his goodly shape and handsome maner) charged *Dametas* to receiue him like a sonne into his house; saying, that his valour, and *Dametas* 20 truth would be good bulwarkes against such mischiefes, as (he sticke not to say) were threatned to his daughter *Pamela*.

Dametas, no whit out of countenance with all that had bene said (because he had no worse to fall into then his owne) accepted *Dorus*; and withall telling *Basilus*, that some of the shepheards were come; demanded in what place he would see their sports: who first, curious to know whether it were not more requisite for *Zelmanes* hurt to rest, then sit vp at those pastimes; and shee (that felt no wound but one) earnestly desired to haue the Pastorals. *Basilus* commanded it should be at the gate of the Lodge: where the throne of the Prince being (according to the ancient maner) he made *Zelmane* sit betweene him and his wife therein, who thought her selfe betweene drowning and burning; and the two young Ladies of either side the throne, and so prepared their eyes and eares to be delighted by the shepheards. 30

But before all of them were assembled to begin their sports, there came a fellow who being out of breath (or seeming so to be for haste) with humble hastinesse told *Basilus*, that his Mistresse, the Ladie *Cecropia*, had sent him to excuse the mischance of her beasts raunging in that dangerous sort, being happened by the tollie of the keeper; who thinking himselfe able to rule them, had caried them abroad, & so was deceiued: whom yet (if *Basilus* wold punish for it) she was readie to deliuer. *Basilus* made no other answere, but that his Mistresse if she had any more such beasts, should cause them to be killed: & then he told his wife and *Zelmane* of it, because they should 40 not feare those woods, as though they harboured such beasts, where the like had neuer bene seene. But *Gynecia* tooke a further conceit of it, mistrusting greatlie *Cecropia*, because she had heard much of the diuellish wickednesse of her heart, and that particularlie she did her best to bring vp her sonne *Amphialus* (being brothers son to *Basilus*) to aspire to the Crowne, as next heire male after *Basilus*, and therefore saw 45 no reason, but that she might coniecture, it proceeded rather of some mischieuous practise, then of misfortune. Yet did she only vtter her doubt to her daughters, thinking, since the worst was past, she wold attend a further occasion, least ouer much

hast

haſt might ſeeme to proceede of the ordinarie miſlike betweene ſiſters in law, onlie they maruelled that *Baſilius* looked no further into it, who (good man) thought ſo much of his late conceiued common wealth, that all other matters were but digreſſions vnto him. But the ſhepheards were readie, and with well handling them- ſelues, called their ſenſes to attend their paſtimes.

The firſt Eclogues.

Baſilius, becauſe *Zelmane* ſo would haue it, vſed the artificiall day of torches, to
 10 lighten the ſports their inuentions could miniſter: and becauſe many of the ſhepheards were but newly come, he did in a gentle manner chaſtiſe their negligence, with making them (for that night) the torch-bearers; and the others, he willed with all fredome of ſpeech and behauiour to keepe their accuſtomed method: which while they prepared to do, *Dametas*, who much diſdained (ſince his late au-
 15 thoritie) all his old companions, brought his ſeruant *Dorus* in good acquaintance and allowance of them, and himſelfe ſtood like a director ouer them, with nodding, gaping, winking, or ſtamping, ſhewing how hee did like or miſlike thoſe things he did not vnderſtand. The firſt ſports the ſhepheards ſhewed, were ful of ſuch leaps and gambols, as being accorded to the pipe (which they bare in their mouthes, euen
 20 as they daunced) made a right picture of their chiefe God *Pan*, and his cōpanions the *Satyres*. Then would they caſt away their pipes; & holding hand in hand, daunce as it were in a braule, by the onely cadence of their voyces, which they would vſe in ſinging ſome ſhort coplets, whereto the one half beginning, the other halfe ſhould anſwere as the one halfe, ſaying:

25

VVe loue, and haue our loues rewarded.

The others would anſwere.

VVe loue, and are no whit regarded.

The firſt againe.

30

We find moſt ſweet affections ſnare.

With like tune it ſhould be as in a quire ſent backe againe.

That ſweet, but ſowre deſpaire full care.

A third time likewise thus:

Who can deſpaire, whom hope doth beare?

35

The anſwere.

And who can hope that fees deſpaire?

Then all ioyning their voyces, and dauncing a faſter meaſure, they would conclude with ſome ſuch words:

As without breath no pipe doth moue,

40

No muſicke kindly without loue.

Hauiug thus varied both their ſongs and daunces into diuerſe ſorts of inuentions; their laſt ſport was, one of them to prouoke another to a more large expreſſing of his paſſions: which *Thyſis* (accounted one of the beſt fingers amongſt
 45 them) hauiug marked in *Dorus* dauncing, no leſſe good grace and handſome behauiour, then extreame tokens of a troubled mind; began firſt with his pipe, and then with his voice, thus to challenge *Dorus*, and was by him anſwered in the vnder-written ſort.

Thyrsis and Dorus.

Thyrsis. Come Dorus, come, let songs thy sorrowes signifie,
 And if for want of use thy mind ashamed is,
 That verie shame with lones high title dignifie.
 No stile is held for base, where loue well named is:
 Each eare sucks up the words a true-loue scattereth,
 And plaine speech oft, than quaint phrase better framed is.

5

Dorus. Nightingales seldome sing, the Pie still chattereth,
 The wood cries most, before it thoroughly kindled be,
 Deadlie wounds inward bleed, each sleight sore mattereth.
 Hardlie they heard, which by good hunters singled be:
 Shallow brooks murmur most, deepe silent slide away,
 Nor true-loue lones, his lones with others mingled be.

10

Thyrsis. If thou wilt not be seene, thy face go hide away,
 Be none of vs, or els maintaine our fashion:
 Who frownes at others feasts, doth better bide away.
 But if thou hast a loue, in that lones passion,
 I challenge thee by shew of her perfection,
 Which of vs two deserueth most compassion.

20

Dorus. Thy challenge great, but greater my protection:
 Sing then, and see (for now thou hast inflamed me)
 Thy health too meane a match for my infection.
 No though the heauens for high attempts haue blamed me,
 Yet high is my attempt. O Muse historicke
 Her praise, whose praise to learne your skill hath framed me.

25

Thyrsis. Muse hold your peace: but thou my God Pan glorifie
 My Kalas gifts, who with all good gifts filled.
 Thy pipe, ô Pan, shall help, though I sing sorilie:
 A heape of sweetes she is, where nothing spilled is;
 Who though she be no Bee, yet full of honey is:
 A lillie field, with plough of Rose which tilled is.
 Mild as a Lambe, more daintie then a Comie is:
 Her eyes my eye-sight is, her conuersation
 More glad to me, then to a miser money is.
 What coy account she makes of estimation?
 How nice to touch? how all her speeches peised be?
 A Nymph thus turn'd, but mended in translation.

35

40

Dorus. Such Kala is: but ah my fancies raised be
 In one, whose name to name were high presumption,
 Since vertues all, to make her title pleased be
 O happie Gods, which by inward assumption

45

Enjoy

Enjoy her soule, in bodies faire possession,
 And keepe it ioynd, fearing your seats consumption.
 How oft with raine of teares skies make confession,
 Their dwellers rapt wth sight of her perfection,
 5 From heau'nly throne to her heau'n vse digression?
 Of best things then wth what w^{or}ld shall yeeld confession
 To liken her? decke yours wish your comparison:
 She is her selfe of best things the collection.

10 Thyrsis. How oft my dolefull Sire cride to me, tarie sonne,
 when first he spied my loue? how oft he said to me,
 Thou art no souldier fit for Cupids garrison?
 My sonne, keepe this, that my long toyle hath layd to me:
 Loue well thine owne: me thinks w^{ool}ls whiteneesse passeth all:
 15 I neuer found long loue such wealth hath paid to me.
 This wⁱⁿd he spent: but when my Kala glasseth all
 My sight in her faire limmes, I then assure my selfe,
 Not rotten sheepe, but high crownes she surpasseth all.
 Can I be poore, that her gold haire procure my selfe?
 20 want I white w^{ool}l, whose eyes her white skin garnished?
 Till I get her, shall I to keepe inure my selfe?

Dorus. How oft, when Reason saw, Loue of her harnised
 with armour of my heart he cried, o vanitie
 25 To set a pearle in Steele someanelie varnished?
 Looke to thy selfe, reach not beyond humanitie.
 Her mind, beames, state, farre from thy weake wings banished:
 And loue w^hich louer hurts is inhumanitie:
 Thus Reason said: but she came, Reason vanished;
 30 Her eyes so maistering me, that such obiection
 Seem'd but to spoile the food of thoughts long famished,
 Her peerlesse height my mind to high erection
 Drawes vp; and if hope failing end lifes pleasure,
 Of fairer death how can I make election?

35 Thyrsis. Once my well waiting eyes espied my treasure,
 With sleeues turn'd vp, loose haire, and breast enlarged,
 Her fathers corne (moning her faire limmes) measure.
 O cried I, of so meane worke be discharged:
 40 Measure my case how by thy beauties filling
 With seed of woes my heart brim full is charged.
 Thy father bids thee saue, and chides for spilling.
 Saue then my soule, spill not my thoughts well heaped,
 No lonely praise was euer got by killing.
 45 These bold words she did beare, this fruit I reaped,
 That she whose looke alone might make me blessed,
 Did smile on me, and then away she leaped.

Dorus. *Once, O sweet once, I saw with dread oppressed
Her whom I dread: so that with prostrate lying
Her length the earth in Lones chiefe clothing dressed.
I saw that riches fall, and fell a crying;
Let not dead earth enioy so deare a couer,
But decke therewith my soule for your sake dying:
Lay all your feare vpon your fearfull Louer:
Shine eyes on me that both our lines be guarded;
So I your sight, you shall your selues recover.
I cried, and was with open rayes rewarded:
But straight they fled, summonsd by cruell honour,
Honour, the cause desert is not regarded.*

Thyrsis. *This Maide, thus made for ioyes, ô Pan bemone her,
That without loue she spends her yeares of loue:
So faire a field: would well become an owner.
And if enchauntment can a hard heart moue,
Teach me what circle may acquaint her sprite,
Affections charmes in my behalfe to proue.
The circle is my (round about her) sight,
The power I will inuoke dwels in her eyes:
My charme should be she haunt me day and night.*

Dorus. *Farre other case, ô Muse, my sorow tries,
Bent to such one in whom my selfe must say,
Nothing can mend one point that in her lies.
What circle then in so rare force beares sway?
Whose sprite all sprites can foile, raise, damne or saue:
No charme holds her, but well possesse she may,
Possesse she doth, and makes my soule her slaue,
My eyes the bands, my thoughts the fatall knot.
No thrall like them that inward bondage haue.*

Thyrsis. *Kala at length conclude my lingring lot:
Disdaine me not, although I be not faire.
Who is an heire of manie hundreth sheepe,
Doth beauties keepe which neuer sunne can burne,
Nor stormes do turne: fairnesse serues oft to wealth.
Yet all my health I place in your good will.
Which if you will (ô do) bestow on me,
Such as you see, such still you shall me find,
Constant and kind, my sheepe your food shall breed,
Their wooll your weed, I will you musike yeeld
In flowry field, and as the day begins
With twentie ginnes we will the small birds take,
And pastimes make, as nature things hath made.
But when in shade we meet of Mirtle bowes,
Then loue allowes our pleasures to enrich,*

The thought of which doth passe all worldly pelfe.
 Dorus. *Ladie your selfe whom neither name I dare,*
And titles are but spots to such a worth,
Heare plaints come forth from dungeon of my mind.
 5 *The noblest kind reiects not others woes.*
I haue no shewes of wealth: my wealth is you,
My beauties heve your beams, my health your deeds;
My mind for weeds your vertues liuerie weares.
 10 *My food is teares, my tunes waymenting yeeld:*
Dispaire my field; the flowers spirits warres:
My day new cares; my ginnes my dayly sight,
In which do light small birds of thoughts orethrowne:
My pastimes none: time passeth on my fall.
 15 *Nature made all but me, of dolours made:*
I find no shade, but where my sunne doth burne.
No place to turne; without, within it fries:
Nor helpe by life or death, who lining dies.

Thyrsis *But if my Kala thus my sute denies,*
 20 *Which so much reason beares:*
Let Crowes picke out mine eyes, which too much saw.
If she still hate loues law,
My earthy mould doth melt in watrie teares.

25 Dorus. *My earthy mould doth melt in watrie teares,*
And they againe resolute
To aire of sighes, sighes to the hearts fire turne,
Which doth to ashes burne.
Thus doth my life within it selfe dissolue.

30 Thyrsis *Thus doth my life within it selfe dissolue,*
That I grow like the beast,
which beares the bit a weaker force doth guide,
Yet patient must abide.
 35 *Such weight it hath, which once is full possesse.*

Dorus. *Such weight it hath which once is full possesse,*
That I become a vision,
which hath in others head his only being,
 40 *And liues in fancie seeing.*
O wretched state of man in selfe diuision!

Thyrsis *O wretched state of man in selfe diuision!*
O well thou sayest! a feeling declaration
 45 *Thy tongue hath made, of Cupids deepe incision.*
But now hoarse voyce, doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their lones condition.
Of singing thou hast got the reputation.

Dorus. *Of singing thou hast got the reputation,
Good Thyrsis mine, I yeeld to thy abilitie;
My heart doth seeke another estimation.
But ah my Muse, I would thou hadst facilitie
To worke my goddesse so by thy inuention,
On me to cast those eyes where shine Nobilitie.
Seene and unknowne; heard, but without attention.*

Dorus did so well in answering *Thyrsis*, that euerie one desired to heare him sing somthing alone. Seeing therfore a Lute lying vnder the Princeesse *Pamela*s feet, glad to haue such an errand to approach her, he came, but came with a dismayed grace, all his blood stirred betwixt feare and desire: & playing vpon it with such sweetnesse, as euerie bodie wondred to see such skill in a shepheard, he sang vnto it with a forow-
wing voice these Elegiacke verses:

Dorus. *-- Fortune, Nature, Loue, long haue contended about me,
VVhich should most miseries cast on a worme that I am.
-- Fortune thus gan say; miserie and misfortune is all one,
And of misfortune, fortune hath onely the gift.
-- VVith strong foes on land, on sea with contrarie tempests,
Still do I crosse this wretch, what so he taketh in hand.
-- Tush, tush, said Nature, this is all but a trifle, a mans selfe
Giues haps or mishaps, eu'n as he ordereth his heart.
-- But so his humour I frame, in a mould of chollier adusted,
That the delights of life shall be to him dolorous.
-- Loue smiled, and thus said; want ioyn'd to desire is unhappie:
But if he nought do desire, what can Heraclitus aile?
-- None but I workes by desire: by desire haue I kindled in his soule
Infernall agonies vnto a beantie diuine:
-- VVhere thou poore Nature left'st all thy due glorie, to Fortune
Her vertue is soueraigne, Fortune a vassall of hers.
-- Nature abasht went backe: Fortune blushes: yet she replide thus:
And eu'n in that loue shall I reserve him a spise.
-- Thus, thus, alas! wofull by Nature, unhappie by Fortune,
But most wretched I am, now Loue awakes my desire.*

Dorus when he had sung this, hauing had all the while a free beholding of the faire *Pamela* (who could well haue spared such honor, & defended the assault he gaue vnto her face with bringing a faire staine of shamesfastnesse vnto it) let fall his armes, & remained so fastened in his thoughts, as if *Pamela* had grafted him there to grow in continuall imagination. But *Zelma*ne espying it, and fearing he should too much forget himselfe, she came to him, and tooke out of his hand the Lute, and laying fast hold of *Philocleas* face with her eyes, she sung these Saphiques, speaking as it were to her owne hope.

*If mine eyes can speake to do heartie errand,
Or mine eyes language she do hap to iudge of,
So that eyes message be of her receiued,
Hope we do liue yet.*

But

But if eyes faile then, when I most do need them,
Or if eyes language be not vnto her knowne,
So that eyes message do returne reiected,

Hope we do both dye.

5 Yet dying, and dead, do we sing her honour;
So become our tombes monuments of her praise;
So becomes our losse the triumph of her gaine;

Hers be the glory.

10 If the spheares senselesse do yet hold a musique,
If the Swannes sweet voice be not heard, but at death,
If the mute timber when it hath the life lost,

Teldeth a Lutes tune:

Are then humane mindes priuilegd so meanly,
As that hatefull death can abridge them of powre
15 with the vowe of truth to record to all worlds

That we be her spoiles?

Thus not ending, ends the due praise of her praise:
Fleshy vaile consumes; but a soule hath his life,
20 Which is held in loue; loue it is, that hath ioyned

Life to this our soule.

But if eyes can speake to do hartie errand,
Or mine eyes language she doth hap to iudge of,
So that eyes message be of her receiued,

Hope we do liue yet.

25 Great was the pleasure of *Basilus*, and greater would haue bene *Gynacias*, but
that shee found too well it was intended to her daughter. As for *Philoclea* shee was
sweetly rauished withall. When *Dorus* desiring in a secret maner to speake of their
cases, as perchaunce the parties intended might take some light of it, making low
30 reuerence to *Zelmane*, began this prouoking song in hexamiter verse vnto her.
Whereunto shee soone finding whither his words were directed (in like tune and
verse) answered as followeth:

Dorus.

Zelmane.

35

Dorus. Lady reserved by the hauns to do pastors company honor,
Ioyning your sweet voice to the rurall muse of a deserte,
Here you fully do finde this strange operation of loue,
How to the woods loue runnes as well as rydes to the Pallace,
40 Neither he beares reuerence to a Prince nor pittie to begger,
But (like a point in midst of a circle) is still of a neer nesse,
All to a lesson he draw's, neither hills nor caues can auoide him.

45

Zelmane. VVorthy shepheard by my song to my selfe all fauor is hapned,
That to the sacred Muse my annoyes somewhat be reuealed,
Sacred Muse, vwho in one contaynes vwhat nine do in all them.
But o happy be you, vvhich safe from fyre reflection
Of Phoebus violence in shade of sweet Cyparissus,

Or pleasant mirtell, may teach th' unfortunate Eccho
 In these woods to resound the renowned name of a goddesse.
 Happy be you that may to the saint your onely Idea,
 (Although simply attyrd) your manly affection utter.
 Happy be those mishapps which iustly proportion holding,
 5 Gine right sound to the eares, and enter aright to the iudgement;
 But wretched be the soules, which vaild in a contrary subiect:
 How much more we do loue, so the lesse our loues be beleened.
 VVhat skill salueth a sore of a vvrong infirmitie iudged?
 VVhat can iustice auaille, to a man that tells not his owne case?
 10 You though feares do abash, in you still possible hopes be:
 Nature against vve do seeme to rebell, seeme fooles in a vaine sute.
 But so unheard, condemn'd, kept thence vve do seeke to abide in,
 Selfe-lost in wandring, banished that place vve do come from,
 VVhat meane is there alas, vve can hope our losse to recouer?
 15 VVhat place is there left, vve may hope our vvoes to recomfort?
 Vnto the heauins? our vvings be too short: earth thinks vs a burden.
 Afire vve do still vvith sighes encrease: to the fire? we do want none.
 And yet his outward heate our teares would quench, but an inward
 Fire no liquor can coole: Neptunes realme would not auaille vs.
 20 Happy shepheard, with thanks to the Gods, still thinke to be thankfull,
 That to thy aduancement their vvisedomes haue thee abased.

Dorus. Vnto the Gods vvith a thankfull heart all thanks I do render,
 That to my aduancement their vvisedomes haue me abased.
 25 But yet, alas! O but yet alas! our haps be but hard haps,
 VVhich must frame contempt to the fittest purchase of honour.
 VVell may a Pastor plaine, but alas his plaints be not esteem'd:
 Silly shepheards poore pype, vvhen his harsh sound testifies anguish,
 Into the faire looker on, pastime, not passion, enters.
 30 And to the vvoods or brookes, vvho do make such dreery recitall?
 VVhat be the pangs they beare, and vvence those pangs be deriued,
 Pleas'd to receiue that name by rebounding answere of Eccho,
 May hope thereby to ease their inward horrible anguish,
 35 VVhentrees daunce to the pype, and swift streames stay by the musicke,
 Or vvhen an Eccho begins vnmo'd to sing them a loue song;
 Say then, vvhat vantage do vve get by the trade of a Pastor?
 (Since no estates be so base, but loue vouchsafeth his arrow,
 Since no refuge doth serue from wounds we do carry about vs,
 40 Since outward pleasures be but halting helps to decayd soules)
 Saue that dayly we may discerne vvhat fire vve do burne in.
 Farre more happy be you, vvhoose greatnesse gets a free accesse,
 VVhoose faire bodily gifts are fram'd most lonely to each eye.
 Vertue you haue, of vertue you haue left proose to the whole world.
 45 And vertue is gratefull, vvith beautie and richnesse adorned:
 Neither doubt you amhit, time will your passion utter.
 Hardly remains fier hid, where skill is bent to the hiding,
 But in a minde that would his flames should not be repressed,

Nature

*Nature worketh enough with a small help for the renewing.
Giue therefore to the Muse great praise, in whose verie likeness
You do approach to the fruit your onely desires be to gather.*

5 *Zelmane. First shall fertill grounds not yeeld increase of a good seed:
First the rivers shall cease to repay their fludds to the Ocean:
First may a trustie Greyhound transforme himselfe to a Tigre:
First shall vertue be vice, and beautie be counted a blemish,
Ere that I leaue with song of praise her praise to solemnize,
10 Her praise, whence to the world all praise hath his only beginning:
But yet well I do finde each man most wise in his owne case.
None can speake of a wound with skill, if he haue not a wound felt.
Great to thee my state seemes, thy state is blest by my iudgement:
And yet neither of vs great or blest deemeth his own selfe.
15 For yet (weigh this alas!) great is not great to the greater.
What iudge you eoth a hillocke shew by the loftie Olympus?
Such my minute greatnes, doth seeme comparde to the greatest.
When Cedars to the ground fall downe by the weight of an emmot,
Or when a rich rubies iust price be the worth of a walnut,
20 Or to the Sunne for wonders seeme small sparkes of a candle:
Then by my high Cedar, rich Ruby, and only shining Sunne,
Vertue, riches, beauties of mine shall great be reputed.
Oh no, no, worthie shepheard, worth can neuer enter a title,
Where proofes iustly do teach, thus matcht, such worth to be nought worth,
25 Let not a puppet abuse thy sprite, Kings Crownes do not help them
From the cruell headache, nor shooes of gold do the gowt heale:
And precious couches full oft are shak't with a feauer.
If then a bodily euill in a bodily gloze be not hidden,
Shall such morning dewes be an ease to the heat of a lones fire?*

30 *Dorus. O glittering miseries of man, if this be the fortune
Of those fortune lulls? so small rest rests in a kingdome?
What maruaile tho a Prince transforme himselfe to a Pastor?
Come from marble bowres manie times the gay harbor of anguish,
35 Vnto a silly caban, though weake, yet stronger against woes.
Now by thy words I begin, most famous Ladie to gather
Comfort into my soule I do finde, I do find what a blessing
Is chaunced to my life, that from such muddie abundance
Of carking agonies (to states which still be adherent)
40 Destinie keepes me aloofe, for if all this state to thy vertue
Ioyn'd, by thy beautie adorn'd be no meanes these greefes to abolish:
If neither by that help, thou canst clime vp to thy fancie,
Nor yet fancie so drest do receiue more plausible hearing:
Then do I thinke indeed, that better it is to be priuate
In sorrowes toments, then tied to the pomps of a pallace,
45 Nurse inward maladies, which haue not scope to be breath'd out:
But perforce digest all bitter ioyces of horror
In silence, from a mans owne selfe with company robbed.*

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

Better yet do I liue that though by my thoughts I be plunged
 Into my liues bondage, yet may disburden a passion
 (Opprest with ruinouse conceits) by the helpe of an outcrye:
 Not limited to a whispering note, the Lament of a Courtier.
 But sometimes to the woods, sometimes to the heau'n do decyphire
 With bold clamor vnheard, vnmarkt, what I seeke what I suffer:
 And when I meete these trees, in the earths faire, liuery clothed,
 Ease I do feele (such ease as falls to one wholly diseased)
 For that I finde in them parte of my state represented.
 Lawrell shew's what I seeke, by the Mirre is show'd how I seeke it,
 Oliue paints me the peace that I must aspire to by the conquest:
 Mirtel makes my request, my request is crown'd with a willowe?
 Cyprus promiset h help, but a help where comes no recomfort:
 Sweete Iuniper, saith this, though I burne, yet I burne in a sweet fire.
 Ewe doth make me thinke what kind of bow the boy holdeth
 Which shootes strongly without any noyse, and deadly without smart.
 Firre trees great and greene, fixt on a hye hill but a barreine,
 Lyke to my noble thoughts, still new, well plac'd to me frutelesse.
 Figge that yeeldes most pleasant fruite, his shadow is hurtfull.
 Thus be her giftes most sweete, thus more danger to be neere her,
 Now in a palme when I marke, how he doth rise vnder a burden,
 And may I not (say I then) get vp though griefs be so weightie?
 Pine is a mast to a shippe, so my shippe shall hope for a mast serue,
 Pine is hye, hope is as hye, sharp leau'd, sharp yet be my hopes buades.
 Elme embraste by a vine, embracing fancy reuiuereth:
 Popler changeth his hew from a rising sunne to a setting:
 Thus to my sunne do I yeeld, such lookes her beames do asorde me
 Olde aged oke cutt downe, of newe worke serues to the building:
 So my desires by my feare cutt downe, be the frames of her honor.
 Ashe makes speares which shields do resist, her force no repulse takes.
 Palmes do reioyce to be ioynd by the match of a male to a female,
 And shall sensue things be so sencelesse as to resist sense?
 Thus be my thoughts disperst, thus thinking nurseth a thinking,
 Thus both trees and each thing else, be the booke of a fancy.
 But to the Cedar Queene of woods, when I lift my beteward eyes.
 Then do I shape to my selfe that forme which raig'n's so within me,
 And think there she do dwell & heare what plaints I do utter:
 When that noble toppe doth nodd, I beleene she salutes me;
 When by the winde it maketh a noyse, I do thinke she doth answer.
 Then kneling to the ground, oft thus do I speake to that Image:
 Onely Iuell, O only Iuell, which only deseruest,
 That mens hart's bethy seate, and endlesse fame be thy seruant,
 O descend for a while, from this great height to behold me.
 But nought els do behold (else is nought worth the beholding)
 Saue what a worke, by thy selfe is wrought: & since I am altred
 Thus by thy worke, disdaine not that which is by thy selfe done.
 In meane caues oft treasure abides, to an hostrie a king comes.
 And so behind foule clouds full of faire starres do lie hidden.

Hardie

5 *Zelmae. Hardy shepheard, such as thy merits, such may be her insight
 Justly to graunt thee reward, such enuie I beare to thy fortune.
 But to my selfe what wish can I make for a salve to my sorrowes,
 Whom both nature seems to debarre from meanes to be helped,
 And if a meane were found, fortune th' whole course of it hinders.
 This plagu'd how can I frame to my sore any hope of amendment?
 Whence may I shew to my minde any light of possible escape?
 Bound and bound by so noble hands, as loth to be vnbound,
 10 Iaylor I am to my selfe, prison & prisoner to mine own selfe.
 Yet be my hopes thus plast, here fixt liues all my recomfort,
 That that deare Dyamond, where wisdome holdeth a sure seate,
 Whose force had such force so to transforme, nay to reforme me,
 Will at length perceine these flames by her beames to be kindled,
 And wilt pittie the wound festred so strangely within me.
 15 O be it so, graunt such an euent, o Gods that euent giue.
 And for a sure sacrifice I do daily oblation offer
 Of mine owne hart, where thoughts be the temple, sight is an aultar.
 But ceasse worthe shepheard, now ceasse we to wearie the hearers
 With monefull melodies, for enough our griefes be reuealed,
 20 If by the parties meant our meanings rightly be marked,
 And sorrows do require some respite vnto the sences.*

What exclaiming praises *Basilus* gaue to this Eclogue any man may ghesse, that
 knowes loue is better then a paire of spectacles to make euery thing seeme greater
 25 which is seene through it: and then is neuer tongue tied where fit commendation
 (whereof womankind is so likerous) is offered vnto it. But before any other came
 in to supplie the place, *Zelmae* hauing heard some of the shepheards by chaunce
 name *Strephon* and *Klains*, supposing thereby they had bene present, was desirous
 both to heare them for the fame of their friendly loue, and to know them, for their
 30 kindnesse towards her best loued friend. Much grieued was *Basilus*, that any desire
 of his mistresse should be vnsatisfied, and therefore to represent them vnto her (as
 well as in their absence it might be) he commaunded one *Lamon*, who had at large
 set down their country pastimes & first loue to *Vrania*, to sing the whole discourse,
 which he did in this manner.

35 *A* Shepheards tale no height of stile desires,
 To raise in words what in effect is lowe:
 A plaining song plaine-singing voice requires,
 For warbling notes from inward chearing flow.
 40 I then, whose burd'ned breast but thus aspires
 Of shepheards two the seely cause to show,
 Need not the stately Muses help innoke
 For creeping rimes, which oftensighings choke.
 But you, o you, that thinke not teares too deare,
 To spend for harms, although they touch you not:
 45 And deigne to deeme your neighbors mischiese neare,
 Although they be of meaner parents got:
 You I inuite with easie eares to heare

THE COUNTESSSE OF PEMBROKES

The poore-clad truth of lones wrong-ordred lot.
 VVho may be glad, be glad you be not such:
 VVho share in woe, vveygh others haue as much.
 There was (o seldome blessed word of vvas!)
 A paire of friends, or rather one cald two,
 Traind in the life which no short-bitten grasse
 In shine or storme must set the clowted shoe:
 He, that the other in some yeares did passe,
 And in those gifts that yeares distribute doe,
 VVas Klaius cald, (ah Klaius, wofull wight!)
 The later borne, yet too soone Strephon hight.
 Epeirus high, was honest Klaius nest,
 To Strephon Aeoles land first breathing lent:
 Put East & VVest were ioin'd by frendships best.
 As Strephons eare & heart to Klaius bent:
 So Klaius soule did in his Strephon rest.
 Still both their flocks flocking togither went,
 As if they would of owners humour be,
 And eke their pipes did vvell, as frends agree.
 Klaius for skil of herbs & shepheards art,
 Among the vviseft was accounted vvise;
 Yet not so vvise, as of unstained hart:
 Strephon vvas yong, yet markt vvith humble eies
 How elder rul'd their flocks, & cur'd their smart,
 So that the graue did not his words despise.
 Both free of minde, both did clear-dealing loue,
 And both had skill in verse their voice to moue.
 Their chearfull minds, till pois'ned was their cheare,
 The honest sports of earthy lodging proue;
 Now for a clod-like Hare in form they peere,
 Now bolt & cudgill Squirrels leape do moue.
 Now the ambitious Larke vvith mirror cleare
 They catch, vvhile he (foole!) to himself makes loue:
 And now at keeles they trie a harmles chaunce,
 And now their curue they teach to fetch & daunce.
 VVhen merrie May first earlie calls the morne,
 VVith merrie maids a Maying they do go:
 Then do they pull from sharp & niggard thorne
 The plenteous sweets (can sweets so sharply grow?)
 Then some greene gownes are by the lasses worne
 In chastest plaies, till home they walke arowe,
 VVhile daunce about the May-pole is begun,
 VVhen, if neede were, they could at quintain run:
 VVhile thus they ran a low, but leaueld race,
 VVhile thus they liu'd, this was indeede a life)
 VVith nature pleas'd, content with present case,
 Free of proud feares, braue begg'ry, smiling strife,
 Of clime-fall Court, the enuy-hatching place:

VVhile

While those restless desires in great men rise
 To visite so low folkes did much disdain,
 This while, though poore, they in themselves did raigne.

One day (ô day, that shin'd to make them darke!)

While they did vvard sun beames with shadie bay,

And Klaius taking for his yongling carke,

(Lest greedie eies to them might challenge lay)

Busy with oker did their shoulders marke,

(His marke a Piller vvas deuoid of stay,

As bragging that free of all passions mone,

Vvell might he others beare, but leane to none.)

Strephon with leaue twigs of Laurell tree

A garland made on temples for to weare,

For he then chosen vvas the dignitie

Of village Lord that whitsonside to beare:

And full, poore foole, of boyish brauerie,

Vvith triumphs shewes vwould shew he nought did feare.

But fore-accounting oft makes builders misse,

They found, they felt, they had no lease of blisse.

For ere that either had his purpose done,

Behold (beholding well it doth deserue)

They saw a maid vwho thitherward did runne,

To catch her sparrow vwhich from her did swerne,

As shee a black-silke capon him begunne

To sett for foile of his milke-white to serue.

She chirping ran, he peeping flew away,

Till hard by them both he & shee did stay.

well for to see they kept themselves vnscene,

And saw this fairest maid of fairer minde,

By fortune meane, in Nature borne a Queene,

How vwell apaid shee was her bird to finde:

How tenderly her tender hands betweene

In iuory cage shee did the micher binde:

How rosie moist ned lips about his beake

Mouing, shee seem'd at once to kisse, & speake.

Chastned but thus & thus his lesson taught

The happie wretch shee put into her breast,

Vvwhich to their eies the bowles of Venus brought,

For they seem'd made euen of skie-mettall best,

And that the bias of her blond vvas vvrought.

Betwixt them two the peeper tooke his nest,

Vvhere snugging vwell he vwell appear'd content,

So to haue done amisse so to be shent.

This done, but done with captiue-killing grace,

Each motion seeming shott from beauties bow,

With length laid downe shee decks the lonely place.

Proud grew the grasse that vnder her did growe,

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

The trees spred out their armes to shade hir face,
 But she on elbow lean'd with sigh's did show
 No grasse, no trees, nor yet her sparrow might
 To long perplexed mind breed long delights.
 She troubled was (alas that it mought be!)
 With tedious brawlings of her parents deare,
 Who would hane her in will & word agree
 Toward Antaxius their neighbor neare.
 A heardman rich of much account was he,
 In whome no euill did raigne, nor good appeare.
 In some such one she lik'd not his desire,
 Faine would be free, but dreadeth parents ire.
 Kindly, sweet soule, she did unkindnesse take
 That bagged baggage of a misers mudd,
 Should price of her, as in a market, make.
 But golde can guild a rotten piece of wood,
 To yeeld she found her noble heart did ake:
 To striue she fear'd how it with vertue stood.
 This doubting clouds ore-casting heau'nly braine,
 At length in rowes of Kisse-checks teares they raine.
 Cupid the wagg, that lately conquer'd had
 Wise Counsellours, stout Captaines, puissant Kings,
 And t'ide them fast to leade his triumph bad,
 Glutted with them now plaies with meane'st things.
 So oft in feasts with costly changes clad
 To crammed mawes a spratt new Stomake brings.
 So Lords with sport of Staggs & Hearon full
 Sometimes we see small birds from nests do pull.
 So now for pray these shepheards two he tooke,
 Whose mettall stiff he knew he could not bend
 With hear-say pictures, or a window looke,
 With one good dawnce, or letter finely pend,
 That were in Court a well proportion'd hooke,
 Where piercing witts do quickly apprehend,
 Their fences rude plaine obiects only moue,
 And so must see great cause before they loue.
 Therefore Loue arm'd in her now takes the field,
 Making her beames his brauery & might:
 Her hands which pierc'd the soules seaw'n-double shield,
 Were now his darts leaning his wonted fight.
 Braue crest to him her scorn-gold haire did yeeld,
 His compleat harness was her purest white.
 But fearing lest all white might seeme too good.
 In cheeks & lipps the Tyran threatens bloud,
 Besides this force, within her eies he kept
 A fire, to burne the prisoners he gaines,
 Whose boiling hart encreased as she wept:

For

For eu'n in forge cold water fire maintaines.
 Thus proud & fierce vnto the hearts he slept
 Of them poore soules: & cutting Reasons raines,
 Made them his owne before they had it wist.

But if they had, could shephookes this resist?
 Klaius streight felt, & groned at the blowe,
 And cal'd now wounded, purpose to his aide:
 Strephon, fond boy, delighted did not knowe,
 That it was Loue that shin'd in shining maid:
 But lickrours, Poison'd, faine to her would goe,
 If him new-learned manners had not staid.

For then Vrania homeward did arise,
 Leauing in paine their wel fed hungry eyes.
 She went, they staid; or rightly for to say,
 She staid in them, they went in thought with hyr:
 Klaius in deepe would faine haue puld away
 This mote from out his eye, this inward burre,
 And now proud Rebell gan for to gainsay
 The lesſon which but late he learn'd too furre:
 Meaning with absence to refresh the thought
 To which her presence such a feauer brought.

Strephon did leap with ioy & iolitic,
 Thinking it iust more therein to delight,
 Then in good Dog, faire field, or shading tree.
 So haue I seene trim bookes in veluet dight
 With golden leaues, and painted baberie
 Of seely boies please vnacquainted sight:

But when the roe began to play his part,
 Faine would, but could not fly from golden smart.

He quickly learn'd Vrania was her name,
 And straight for failing, graud it in his heart:
 He knew her haunt, and haunted in the same,
 And taught his sheepe her sheepe in food to thwart.
 Which soone as it did batefull question frame,

He might on knees confesse his faultie part,
 And yeeld himselfe vnto her punishment,
 While nought but game, the selfe-hurt wanton ment.

Nay euen vnto her home he oft would go,
 Where bold and hurtlesse many play he tries,
 Her parents liking well it should be so,
 For simple goodnesse shined in his eyes.

There did he make her laugh in spite of woe,
 So as good thoughts of him in all arise,
 While into none doubt of his loue did sinke,
 For not himselfe to be in loue did thinke.

But glad Desire, his late embosom'd guest,
 Yet but a babe, with milke of Sight he nurst:

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Desire the more he suckt, more sought the brest,
 Like droppe folke still drinke to be a thirst.
 Till one faire eaw'n an hour ere Sun did rest,
 VVho then in Lions caue did enter first,
 By neighbors praîd she went abroad therby.
 At Barly brake her sweet swift foot to trie.
 Neuer the earth on his round shoulders bare
 A maid train'd vp from high or low degree,
 That in her doings better could compare
 Mirth vvith respect, few words vvith curtesie,
 A carelesse comlineffe vvith comely care.
 Self-gard vvith mildnesse, Sport vvith Maiesie:
 VVhich made her yeeld to deck this shepheards band,
 And still, belecue me, Strephon was at hand.
 A field they go, vvhere manie lookers be,
 And thou seek-sorow Klaius them among:
 In deed thou said'st it vv as thy friend to see
 Strephon, vv whose absence seem'd vnto thee long,
 VVhile most vvith her he lesse did keepe vvith thee.
 No, no, it vv as in spite of wisdomes song
 VVhich absence vvish't: loue plaîd a victors part:
 The heau'n-loue lodestone drew thy iron hart.
 Then couples three be streight allotted there,
 They of both ends the middle two do slie,
 The two that in mid place, Hell called vv ere,
 Must strue with waiting foot, and watching eye
 To catch of them, and them to hell to beare,
 That they, as well as they, Hell may supplie:
 Like some which seeke to salue their blotted name
 VVith others blott, till all do tast of shame.
 There may you see, soone as the middle two
 Do coupled towards eit her couple make,
 They false and fearfull do their hands vndoe,
 Brother his brother, friend doth friend forsake,
 Heeding himselfe, cares not how fellow do,
 But of a stranger mutuell help doth take:
 As periur'd cowards in aduersitie
 VVith sight of feare from friends to fremb'd do flie.
 These sports shepheards deuiz'd such faults to show.
 Geron, though old yet gamesome, kept one end
 VVith Cosma, for vv whose loue Pas past in woe.
 Faire Nous vvith Pas the lott to hell did send:
 Pas thought it hell, while he was Cosma fro.
 At other end Vran did Strephon lend
 Her happy-making hand, of vv home one looke
 From Nous and Cosma all their beautie tooke.
 The play began: Pas durst not Cosma chace,

But

But did intend next bout with her to meete,
 So he with Nous to Geron turn'd their race,
 With whom to ioyne fast ran Vrania sweet?
 But light-legd Pas had got the middle space.
 Geron strau'd hard, but aged were his feet,
 And therefore finding force now faint to be,
 He thought gray haire's afforded subtiltie.
 And so when Pas handreached him to take,
 The fox on knees and elbowes tumbled downe;
 Pas could not stay, but ouer him did rake,
 And crown'd the earth with his first touching crowne:
 His heels grow'n proud did seeme at heau'n to shake.
 But Nous that slipt from Pas, did catch the clowne.

So laughing all, yet Pas to ease some dell
 Geron with Vran were condemn'd to hell.
 Cosma this while to Strephon safely came,
 And all to second barly-brake are bent:
 The two in hell did toward Cosma frame,
 Who should to Pas, but they would her preuent.
 Pas mad with fall, and madder with the shame,
 Most mad with beames which he thought Cosma sent,
 With such mad haste he did to Cosma goe,

That to her breast he gaue a noysome blowe.
 She quick, and proud, and who did Pas despise,
 Up with her fist, and tooke him on the face,
 Another time, quoth she, become more wise.
 Thus Pas did kisse her hand with little grace,
 And each way luckles, yet in humble guise
 Did hold her fast for feare of more disgrace,
 While Strephon might with preatie Nous haue met,
 But all this while another course he set.

For as Vrania after Cosma ran,
 He rauished with sight how gracefullie
 She mou'd her lims, and drew the aged man,
 Left Nous to coast the loned beautie nie:
 Nous cri'd, and chas'd, but he no other can.
 Till Vran seeing Pas to Cosma flie,
 And Strephon single, turned after him.
 Strephon so chas'd did seeme in milke to swimme.

He ran, but ran with eye ore shoulder cast,
 More marking her, then how himseife did goe,
 Like Numid Lions by the hunters chas'd,
 Though they do flie, yet backwardly do glowe
 With proud aspect, disdainning greater hast.
 What rage in them, that loue in him did show.

But God giues them instinct the man to shun,
 And he by law of Barly-brake must run.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

But as his heate with running did augment,
 Much more his sight encreast his hote desire:
 So is in her the best of Nature spent,
 The aire her sweet race mon'd doth blow the fire.
 Her feet be pursuants from Cupid sent,
 With whose fine stepps all loves and ioyes conspire.
 The hidden beauties seem'd in wait to lye,
 To downe proud hearts that would not willing dye.
 Thus, fast he fled from her he follow'd sore,
 Still shunning Nous to lengthen pleasing race,
 Till that he spied old Geron could no more,
 Then did he slacke his loue-enstru'd pace.
 So that Vrau, whose arme old Geron bore,
 Laid hold on him with most lay-holding grace.
 So caught him seem'd he caught of ioyes the bell,
 And thought it heau'n so to be drawn to hell.
 To hell he goes, and Nous with him must dwell.
 Nous sware it was no right; for his default
 Who would be caught, that she should go to hell:
 But so she must. And now the third assaults
 Of Barly-brake among the six befell.
 Pas Cosima matcht yet angrie with his fault,
 The other end Geron with Vran gard.
 I thinke you thinke Strephon bent thitherward,
 Nous counsell'd Strephon Geron to pursue,
 For he was old, and easly would be caught:
 But he drew her as loue his fancie drew,
 And so to take the gemme Vrania sought.
 While Geron old came safe to Cosima true,
 Though him to meete at all she stur'd nought.
 For Pas, whether it were for feare, or loue,
 Mou'd not him selfe, nor suffred her to moue.
 So they three did together idly stay,
 While deare Vran, whose course was Pas to meet,
 (He staying thus) was faine abroad to stray
 With larger round, to shun the following feet.
 Strephon, whose eyes on her back-parts did play,
 With loue drawne on, so fast with pace vnmeet
 Drew dainty Nous, that she not able so
 To runne, brake from his hands, and let him goe.
 He single thus, hop'd soone with her to be,
 Who nothing earthly, but of fire and aire,
 Though with soft leggs, did runne as fast as he.
 He thrise reacht, thrise deceiv'd, when her to bear
 He hopes, with daintie turns she doth him flee.
 So on the down's we see, neere Wilton faire,
 A hast ned Hare from greedy Grayhound goe,

And

And past all hope his chaps to frustrate so.
But this strange race more strange conceits did yeeld:

Who victor seem'd, was to his ruine brought:

Who seem'd orethronne was mistresse of the field:

She fled, and tooke; he followed, and was caught.

So haue I heard to pierce pursuing shield,

By Parents train'd the Tartars wilde are taught,
With shafts shot out from their back-turned bow.

But ah! her darts did farre more deeplie go.

As Venus bird the white, swift, louely Dove,

(O happie Dove that art compar'd to her!)

Doth on her wings her utmost swiftnesse proue,

Finding the gripe of Falcon fierce not surre:

So did Vran: the narre, the swifter moue,

(Yet beautie still as fast as she did sturre)

Till with long race deare she was breathlesse brought,

And then the Phoenix feared to be caught.

Among the rest that there did take delight

To see the sports of double-shining day,

And did the tribute of their wondring sight

To Natures heire, the faire Vrania pay,

I told you Klaius was the haplesse wight,

Who earnest found what they accounted play.

He did not there do homage of his eyes,

But on his eyes his heart did sacrifice.

With gazing lookes, short sighes, vnsetled feet

He stood, but turn'd, as Girolol, to Sun:

His fancies still did her in halfe way meet,

His soule did flie as she was scene to run.

In summe, proud Boreas neuer ruled Fleet

(Who Neptunes web on daungers distaffe spun)

With greater power, then she did make them wend

Each way, as she that ages praise, did bend.

Till spying well she welnigh wearie was,

And surelie taught by his loue-open eye,

His eye, that eu'n did marke her troden grasse,

That she would faine the catch of Strephon flie,

Giuing his reason passport for to passe

Whither it would, so it would let him die,

He that before shund her, to shun such harmes,

Now runnes, and takes her in his clipping armes.

For with pretence from Strephon her to guard,

He met her full, but full of warefulnesse,

With inbow'd bosome well for her prepar'd,

When Strephon cursing his owne backwardnesse,

Came to her backe, and so with double ward

Imprison her, who both them did possesse

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*As heart-bound slaues : and happie then embrace
 Vertues prooffe, fortunes victor, beauties place.
 Her race did not her beauties beames augment,
 For they were euer in the best degree,
 But yet a setting forth it some way lent,
 As Rubies lustre when they rubbed be.
 The daintie dew on face and bodie went
 As on sweet flowers, when mornings drops vve see.
 Her breath then short, seem'd loth from home to passe,
 Which more it mou'd, the more it sweeter was.
 Happie, ô hapie! if they so might bide,
 To see her eyes, with how true humblenesse,
 They looked downe to triumph ouer pride:
 With how sweet sawes she blam'd their sawcinesse.
 To feele the panting heart, which through her side
 Did beat their hands, which durst so neare to presse,
 To see, to feele, to heare, to taste, to know
 More then, besides her, all the earth could show.
 But neuer did Medeas golden weed
 On Creons child his poyson sooner throw,
 Then those delights through all their sinewes breed,
 A creeping serpent like of mortall vvoe.
 Till she brake from their armes (although indeed
 Going from them, from them she could not go)
 And fare-welling the flocke, did homeward vvend,
 And so that euen the barlie brake did end.
 It ended, but the others vvoe began,
 Began at least to be conceiu'd as vvoe.
 For then wise Klaius found no absence can
 Helpe him, vwho can no more her sight forgo.
 He found mans vertue is but part of man,
 And part must follow vwhere vwhole man doth go.
 He found that Reasons selfe now reasons found
 To fasten knots, which fancie first had bound.
 So doth he yeeld, so takes he on his yoke,
 Not knowing vwho did draw vwith him therein;
 Strephon, poore youth, because he saw no smoke,
 Did not conceiue vwhat fire he had vwithin:
 But after this to greater rage it broke,
 Till of his life it did full conquest win,
 First killing mirth, then banishing all rest,
 Filling his eyes vwith teares, vwith sighes his breast.
 Then sports grew paines, all talking tedious:
 On thoughts he feeds, his looks their figure chaunge,
 The day seemes long, but night is odious,
 No sleeps, but dreames, no dreames, but visions straunge,
 Till finding still his euill encreasing thus,*

One

One day he wish his flocke abroad did raunge:
 And comming where he hop'd to be alone,
 Thus on a hillocke set, he made his mone.

Alas! what weights are these that lode my heart!
 I am as dull as winter-sterned sheep,
 Tir'd as a iade in ouerladen cart,
 Yet thoughts do flie, though I can scarcely crepe.
 All visions seeme, at euerie bush I start:
 Drowisie am I, and yet can rarelie sleepe.

Sure I bewitched am, it is euen that,
 Late neare a crosse I met an ugly Cat.
 For, but by charmes, how fall these things on me,
 That from those eyes where heau'nly apples bene,
 Those eyes, which nothing like themselues can see,
 Off faire Vrania, fairer then a greene,
 Proudly bedect in Aprils linerie,

A shot unheard gaue me a wound vnscene?
 He was inuisible that hurt me so,
 And none innisible, but spirits, can goe.
 When I see her, my sinewes shake for feare,
 And yet, deare soule, I know she hurteth none:
 Amid my flocke with woe my voice I teare,
 And, but bewitch'd, who to his flocke would mone?
 Her chery lips, milke hands, and golden haire
 I still do see, though I be still alone.

Now make me thinke that there is not a fiend,
 Who hid in Angels shape my life would end.
 The sports wherein I wonted to do well,
 Come she, and sweet the aire with open breast,
 Then so I faile, when most I would do well,
 That at me so amaz'd my fellowes iest:
 Sometimes to her nexes of my selfe to tell
 I go about, but then is all my best

Wry vords, and stam'ring, or else doltish dombe,
 Say then, can this but of enchantment come?
 Nay each thing is bewicht to know my case:
 The Nightingales for woe their songs refraine:
 In riuer as I look'd, my pining face,
 As pin'd a face as mine I saw againe.

The curteous mountaines grieu'd at my disgrace
 Their snowie haire teare off in melting paine.
 And now the dropping trees do weepe for me,
 And now faire euening's blush my shame to see.

But you my pipe, whilome my chiefe delight,
 Till straunge delight, delight to nothing ware,
 And you my flocke, care of my carefull sight,
 While I was I, and so had cause to care,

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*And thou my dogge, whose truth and valiant might
Made wolues (not inward wolues) my Ewes to spare:*

*Go you not from your maister in his woe,
Let it suffice that he himselfe forgoe.*

*For though like waxe this magicke makes me waste,
Or like a Lambe, whose damme away is fet,
(Stolne from her young by theeues vnchoosing-haste)*

*He treble beas for help, but none can get:
Though thus, and worse, though now I am at last,
Of all the games that here ere now I met,*

*Do you remember still you once were mine,
Till mine eyes had their curse from blessed eyne.*

*Be you with me while I vnheard do crie,
While I do score my losses on the wind,
While I in heart my will write ere I die.*

*In which by will, my will and wits I bind,
Still to be hers, about her ay to flie.*

As this same sprite about my fancies blind

*Doth dailie haunt: but so, that mine become
As much more louing, as lesse cumbersome.*

Alas! a cloud hath ouercast mine eyes:

And yet I see her shine amid the cloud.

Alas! of ghosts I heare the gastlie cries:

Yet there, me secmes, I heare her singing loud.

This song she sings in most commanding wise:

Come shepheards boy, let now thy heart be bow'd,

To make it selfe to my least looke a slaue:

Leaue sleepe, leaue all, I will no piccing haue.

I will, I will, alas, alas, I will:

Wilt thou haue more? more haue, if more I be.

Away rag'd drammes, care I what murraine kill?

Out shreaking pipe, made of some witch'd tree:

Go bawling curre thy hungrie maw go fill

On you foule flocke belonging not to me.

With that his dog he henc'd, his flocke he curst,

With that (yet kissed first) his pipe he burst.

This said, this done, he rose, euen tir'd with rest,

With heart as carefull, as with carelesse grace,

With shrinking legges, but with a swelling breast,

With eyes which threatned they would drowne his face,

Fearing the worst, not knowing what were best,

And giuing to his sight a wandring race,

He saw behind a bush where Klaius sate:

His well knowne friend, but yet his vnknowne mate,

Klaius the vretch, who latelie yeelden was

To beare the bonds which time nor wit could breake,

(With blushing soule at sight of iudgements glasse,

while

While guiltie thoughts accus'd his reason vveake)
 This morne alone to lonely vvalke did passe,
 Within himselfe of her deare selfe to speake,
 Till Strephons plaining voice him nearer drew,
 5 Where by his vvords his self-like case he knew.
 For hearing him so oft vvith vvords of woe
 Vrania name, whose force he knew so vvell,
 He quicklie knew vvhat vvitchcraft gaue the blow,
 10 Which made his Strephon thinke himselfe in hell.
 Which vvhen he did in perfect image show
 To his owne vvith thought vpon thought did swell,
 Breeding huge stormes vvithin his inward part,
 Which thus breath'd out with earthquake of his heart.

- 15 As *Lamon* would haue proceeded, *Basilus* knowing, by the wasting of the torches, that the night also was farre wasted, and withall remembring *Zelmanes* hurt, asked her, whether she thought it not better to reserue the complaint of *Klains* till another day. Which she, perceiuing the song had alreadie worne out much time, and not knowing when *Lamon* would end, being euen now stepping over to a new
 20 matter, though much delighted with what was spoken, willinglie agreed vnto. And so of all sides they went to recommend themselues to the elder brother of death.

The end of the first Booke.





THE SECOND BOOKE OF THE COUNTESSSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

(:.)

IN these pastorall pastimes a great number of dayes were
sent to follow their flying predecessours, while the cup of
poyson (which was deeplie tasted of this noble companie)
had left no sinew of theirs without mortallie searching into
it; yet neuer manifesting his venomous worke, till once, that
the night (parting away angric, that she could distill no
more sleepe into the eyes of Louers) had no sooner giuen
place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the
Sunne bestowed his beames vpon the toppes of the mountaines, but that the
wofull *Gynecia* (to whom rest was no ease) had left her lothed lodging, and got-
ten her selfe into the solitarie places those deserts were full of, going vp and
downe with such vnquiet motions, as a griued and hopelesse minde is wont
to bring forth. There appeared vnto the eyes of her iudgement the euils shee
was like to runne into, with vglie infamie waiting vpon them: she felt the ter-
rours of her owne conscience: she was guiltie of a long exercised vertue, which
made this vice the fuller of deformitie. The vttermost of the good she could
aspire vnto, was a mortall wound to her vexed spirits: and lastlie, no small part
of her euils was, that she was wise to see her euils. In so much, that hauing a great
while throwne her countenance ghastlie about her (as if she had called all the po-
wers of the world to be witnesse of her wretched estate) at length casting vp her
waterie eyes to heauen; O Sunne (saide she) whose vnspotted light directs the steps
of mortall mankind, art thou not ashamed to impart the clearenesse of thy pre-
sence to such a dust-creeping worme as I am? O you heauens (which continuallie
keepe the course allotted vnto you) can none of your influences preuaile so much
vpon the miserable *Gynecia*, as to make her preferue a course so long imbraced by
her? O deserts, deserts, how fit a guest am I for you, since my heart can people
you with wild rauinous beasts, which in you are wanting? O Vertue, where doest
thou hide thy selfe? What hideous thing is this which doth eclipse thee? Or is it
true that thou wert neuer but a vaine name, and no essentiall thing, which hast
thus left thy professed seruant, when she had most need of thy louely presence? O
imperfect proportion of reason, which can too much foresee, and too litle preuent!
Alas, alas (saide she) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one excuse
for

for all my faultinesse. But wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all succour, and my euill deseruing doth exceed my euill fortune. For nothing else did my husband take this strange resolution to liue so solitarilie: for nothing else haue the winds deliuered this straunge guest to my countrie: for nothing else haue the destinies reserued my life to this time, but that onelie I (most wretched I) should become a plague to my selfe, and a shame to womankind. Yet if my desire (how vniust soeuer it be) might take effect, though a thousand deaths followed it, and euery death were followed with a thousand shames; yet should not my sepulcher receiue me without some contentment. But alas, though sure I am, that *Zelmae* is such as can answer my loue; yet as sure I am, that this disguising must needs come for some fore-taken conceit: and then, wretched *Gynecia*, where canst thou find any small ground plot for hope to dwel vpon? No, no, it is *Philoclea* his hart is set vpon; it is my daughter I haue borne to supplant me: but if it be so, the life I haue giuen thee (vngratefull *Philoclea*) I will sooner with these hands bereaue thee of, then my birth shall glorie she hath bereaued me of my desires: In shame there is no comfort, but to be beyond all bounds of shame.

Having spoken thus, she began to make a piteous warre with her faire haire, whē she might heare (not farre from her) an extreameley dolefull voyce, but so suppressed with a kind of whispering note, that she could not cōceiue the words distinctly. But (as a lamentable tune is the sweetest musicke to a wofull mind) she drew thither neare away, in hope to find some companion of her miserie: and as she paced on, she was stopped with a number of trees, so thicke placed together, that she was afraid she should (with rushing through) stop the speech of the lamentable partie, which she was so desirous to vnderstand: and therefore setting her downe as sotleie as she could (for she was now in distance to heare) she might first perceiue a Lute excellently well plaid vpon, and then the same dolefull voyce accompanying it with these verses.

IN vaine, mine eyes, you labour to amend
 With flowing teares your fault of hastie sight:
 Since to my heart her shape you did so send,
 That her I see, though you did lose your light.

In vaine, my heart, now you with sight are burn'd,
 With sighes you seeke to coole your hot desire:
 Since sighes (into mine inward furnace turn'd)
 For bellowes serue to kindle more the fire.

Reason, in vaine (now you haue lost my heart)
 My head you seeke, as to your strongest fort:
 Since there mine eyes haue plaid so false a part,
 That to your strength your foes haue sure resort.
 Then since in vaine I find were all my strife,
 To this straunge death I vainele yeeld my life.

The ending of the song serued but for a beginning of new plaints, as if the mind (oppressed with too heauie a burthen of cares) was faine to discharge it selfe of all sides, and as it were, paint out the hideousnesse of the paine in al sorts of colours. For the woful person (as if the lute had euil ioyned with the voyce) threw it to the ground

with such like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiu'd, to thinke that in my miseries thou couldst ease my woes, as in my carelesse times thou was wont to please my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my ioyfull mind then receiue euerie thing to a ioyfull cōsideration, thē my carefull mind now makes each thing tast like the bitter iuyce of care. The euil is inward, 5 my Lute, the euill is inward; which all thou doest, doth serue but to make me think more freely of. And alas, what is thē thy harmony, but the sweet meats of sorow? the discord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth ill agree to the concord of thy strings; therefore be not ashamed to leaue thy maister, since he is not afraid to forsake himselfe.

And thus much spoke (in steed of a conclusion) was closed vp with so heartie a 10 groning, that *Gynecia* could not refraine to shew her self, thinking such griefs could serue fitly for nothing but her owne fortune. But as she came into the litle Arbour of this sorowfull musicke, her eyes met with the eyes of *Zelmane*, which was the partie that thus had indited her selfe of miserie: so that either of them remained confused with a sodain astonishment. *Zelmane* fearing, least she had heard some part of 15 those cōplaints, which she had risen vp that morning early of purpose, to breath out in secret to her self. But *Gynecia* a great while stood stil, with a kind of dul amasemēt, looking stedfastlie vpon her: at length returning to some vse of her self, she began to aske *Zelmane*, what cause caried her so earlie abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to *Zelmane*, had opened some great flood-gate of sorow (wherof her heart 20 could not abide the violent issue) she sank to the ground, with her hands ouer her face, crying vehemently, *Zelmane* help me, o *Zelmane* haue pitie on me. *Zelmane* ran to her, maruelling what sodain sicknesse had thus possessed her: & beginning to aske her the cause of her paine, and offering her seruice to be employed by her: *Gynecia* opening her eyes wildly vpon her, pricked with the flames of loue, and the tormentes 25 of her owne conscience; O *Zelmane*, *Zelmane*, said she, doest thou offer me physick, which art my only poyson? or wilt thou do me seruice, which hast already brought me into eternall slauerie? *Zelmane* then knowing wel at what marke she shot, yet loth to enter into it: Most excellent Lady (said she) you were best retire your selfe into your lodging, that you the better may passe this sodaine fit. Retire my selfe? (sayd 30 *Gynecia*) If I had retyred my selfe into my selfe, when thou to me (vnfortunate guest) camest to draw me from my selfe, blessed had I bene, and no need had I had of this counsell. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for succour, whom I accuse of all my hurt; & make thee iudge of my cause, who art the only author of my mischief. *Zelmane* the more astonished, the more she vnderstood her; Madam (said she) wher- 35 of do you accuse me, that I will not cleare my selfe? Or wherein may I steed you, that you may not command me? Alas, answered *Gynecia*, what shall I say more? Take pitie of me, o *Zelmane*, but not as *Zelmane*, and disguise not with me in words, as I know thou doest in apparell.

Zelmane was much troubled with that word, finding herselfe brought to this 40 straight. But as she was thinking what to answer her; they might see old *Basilins* passe hard by them, without euer seeing them: complaining likewise of loue very freshly; and ending his complaint with this song, Loue hauing renewed both his inuention, and voyce.

*Let not old age disgrace my high desire,
O beauenly soule, in humaine shape conteind:
Old wood inflam'd, doth yeeld the bruest fire,
VWhen yonger doth in smoke his vertue spend.*

*Ne let vvwhite haire, which on my face do grow,
Seeme to your eyes of a disgracefull hue:
Since vvwhitenesse doth present the sweetest show,
Which makes all eyes do homage vnto you.*

*Old age is wise, and full of constant truth;
Old age well stayed, from ranging humour liues:
Old age hath knowne vvwhat euer was in youth:
Old age overcome, the greater honour giues.
And to old age since you your selfe aspire,
Let not old age disgrace my high desire.*

Which being done, he looked verie curiouse vpon himselfe, somtimes fetching a litle skip, as if he had said his strength had not yet forsaken him. But *Zelmane* hauing in this time gotten some leasure to thinke for an answer; looking vpon *Gynecia*, as if she thought she did her some wrong: Madam (said she) I am not acquainted with those words of disguising, neither is it the profession of an *Amazon*, neither are you a partie with whom it is to be vsed: if my seruice may please you, imploy it, so long as you do me no wrong in misjudging of me. Alas *Zelmane* (said *Gynecia*) I perceiue you know full litle how piercing the eyes are of a true louer: there is no one beame of those thoughts you haue planted in me, but is able to discerne a greater cloud then you do go in. Seeke not to conceale your selfe further from me, nor force not the passion of loue into violent extremities. Now was *Zelmane* brought to an exigent, when the king turning his eyes that way through the trees, perceiued his wife and mistresse together, so that framing the most louely countenance he could, he came straight way towards them; and at the first word (thanking his wife for hauing entertained *Zelmane*) desired her she would now returne into the Lodge, because he had certaine matters of estate to impart to the Lady *Zelmane*. The Queene (being nothing troubled with ieaousie in that point) obeyed the kings commandement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as she would seeke all louing means to winne *Zelmane*, so she would stirre vp terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her intent. And so went she from them to the Lodge-ward, with such a battell in her thoughts, and so deadly an ouerthrow giuen to her best resolutions, that euen her body (where the field was fought) was oppressed withall: making a languishing sicknesse wait vpon the triumph of passion; which the more it preuailed in her, the more it made her ieaousie watchfull, both ouer her daughter, and *Zelmane*, hauing euer one of them entrusted to her owne eyes.

But as soone as *Basilus* was rid of his wiues presence, falling downe on his knees, O Ladie (said he) which hast onely had the power to stirre vp againe those flames which had so long laine dead in me; see in me the power of your beautie, which can make old age come to aske counsell of youth; and a Prince vnconquered to become a slaue to a stranger: and when you see that power of yours, loue that at least in me, since it is yours, although of me you see nothing to be loued. Worthie Prince (answered *Zelmane*, taking him vp from his kneeling) both your maner, and your speech are so straunge vnto me, as I know not how to answere it better then with silence. If silence please you (said the king) it shall neuer displease me, since my heart is whollie pledged to obey you: otherwise, if you would vouchsafe mine eares such happinesse as to heare you, they shall conuey your words to such a mind, which is

with such like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiu'd, to thinke that in my miseries thou couldst ease my woes, as in my carelesse times thou was wont to please my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my ioyfull mind then receiue euerie thing to a ioyfull cōsideration, the my carefull mind now makes each thing tast like the bitter iuyce of care. The euil is inward, 5 my Lute, the euil is inward; which all thou doest, doth serue but to make me think more freely of. And alas, what is the thy harmony, but the sweet meats of sorow: the discord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth ill agree to the concord of thy strings; therefore be not aghamed to leaue thy maister, since he is not afraid to forsake himselfe.

And thus much spoke (in steed of a conclusion) was closed vp with so heartie a 10 groning, that *Gynecia* could not refraine to shew her self, thinking such griefs could serue fitly for nothing but her owne fortune. But as she came into the litle Arbour of this sorowfull musicke, her eyes met with the eyes of *Zelmane*, which was the partie that thus had indited her selfe of miserie: so that either of them remained confused with a sodain astonishment. *Zelmane* fearing, least she had heard some part of 15 those cōplaints, which she had risen vp that morning early of purpose, to breath out in secret to her self. But *Gynecia* a great while stood stil, with a kind of dul amasemēt, looking stedfastlie vpon her: at length returning to some vse of her self, she began to aske *Zelmane*, what cause caried her so earlie abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to *Zelmane*, had opened some great floud-gate of sorow (wherof her heart 20 could not abide the violent issue) she sank to the ground, with her hands ouer her face, crying vehemently, *Zelmane* help me, o *Zelmane* haue pitie on me. *Zelmane* ran to her, maruelling what sodain sicknesse had thus possessed her: & beginning to aske her the cause of her paine, and offering her seruice to be employed by her: *Gynecia* opening her eyes wildly vpon her, pricked with the flames of loue, and the tormentes 25 of her owne conscience; O *Zelmane*, *Zelmane*, said she, doest thou offer me physick, which art my only poyson? or wilt thou do me seruice, which hast already brought me into eternall slauerie? *Zelmane* then knowing wel at what marke she shot, yet loth to enter into it: Most excellent Lady (said she) you were best retire your selfe into your lodging, that you the better may passe this sodaine fit. Retire my selfe? (sayd 30 *Gynecia*) If I had retyred my selfe into my selfe, when thou to me (vnfortunate guest) camest to draw me from my selfe, blessed had I bene, and no need had I had of this counsell. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for succour, whom I accuse of all my hurt; & make thee iudge of my cause, who art the only author of my mischief. *Zelmane* the more astonished, the more she vnderstood her; Madam (said she) wher- 35 of do you accuse me, that I will not cleare my selfe? Or wherein may I steed you, that you may not command me? Alas, answered *Gynecia*, what shall I say more? Take pitie of me, o *Zelmane*, but not as *Zelmane*, and disguise not with me in words, as I know thou doest in apparell.

Zelmane was much troubled with that word, finding herselfe brought to this 40 straight. But as she was thinking what to answer her; they might see old *Basilus* passe hard by them, without euer seeing them: complaining likewise of loue very freshly; and ending his complaint with this song, Loue hauing renewed both his inuention, and voyce.

L *Es not old age disgrace my high desire,*
O beauenly soule, in humaine shape conceid:
Old wood inflam'd, doth yeeld the bruest fire,
When younger doth in smoke his vertue spend.

*Ne let vvHITE haire, which on my face do grow,
Seeme to your eyes of a disgracefull hue:
Since vvhiteneffe doth present the sweetest show,
Which makes all eyes do homage vnto you.*

*Old age is wise, and full of constant truth;
Old age well stayed, from ranging humour lines:
Old age hath knowne vvhat euer was in youth:
Old age overcome, the greater honour giues.
And to old age since you your selfe aspire,
Let not old age disgrace my high desire.*

Which being done, he looked verie curiouse vpon himselfe, sometimes fetching a litle skip, as if he had said his strength had not yet forsaken him. But *Zelmane* hauing in this time gotten some leasure to thinke for an answer; looking vpon *Gynecia*, as if she thought she did her some wrong: Madam (said she) I am not acquainted with those words of disguising, neither is it the profession of an *Amazon*, neither are you a partie with whom it is to be vsed: if my seruice may please you, imploy it, so long as you do me no wrong in misjudging of me. Alas *Zelmane* (said *Gynecia*) I perceiue you know full litle how piercing the eyes are of a true louer: there is no one beame of those thoughts you haue planted in me, but is able to discerne a greater cloud then you do go in. Seeke not to conceale your selfe further from me, nor force not the passion of loue into violent extremities. Now was *Zelmane* brought to an exigent, when the king turning his eyes that way through the trees, perceiued his wife and mistresse together, so that framing the most louely countenance he could, he came straight way towards them; and at the first word (thanking his wife for hauing entertained *Zelmane*) desired her she would now returne into the Lodge, because he had certaine matters of estate to impart to the Lady *Zelmane*. The Queene (being nothing troubled with ieaousie in that point) obeyed the kings commandement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as she would seeke all louing means to winne *Zelmane*, so she would stirre vp terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her intent. And so went she from them to the Lodge-ward, with such a battell in her thoughts, and so deadly an ouerthrow giuen to her best resolutions, that euen her body (where the field was fought) was oppressed withall: making a languishing sicknesse wait vpon the triumph of passion; which the more it preuailed in her, the more it made her ieaousie watchfull, both ouer her daughter, and *Zelmane*, hauing euer one of them entrusted to her owne eyes.

But as soone as *Basilus* was rid of his wiues presence, falling downe on his knees, O Ladie (said he) which hast onely had the power to stirre vp againe those flames which had so long laine dead in me; see in me the power of your beautie, which can make old age come to aske counsell of youth; and a Prince vnconquered to become a slaue to a stranger: and when you see that power of yours, loue that at least in me, since it is yours, although of me you see nothing to be loued. Worthie Prince (answered *Zelmane*, taking him vp from his kneeling) both your maner, and your speech are so straunge vnto me, as I know not how to answer it better then with silence. If silence please you (said the king) it shall neuer displease me, since my heart is whollie pledged to obey you: otherwise, if you would vouchsafe mine eares such happinesse as to heare you, they shall conuey your words to such a mind, which is

with the humblest degree of reuerence to receiue them. I disdaine not to speake to you (mightie Prince said *Zelmane*) but I disdaine to speake to anie matter which may bring my honour into question: and therewith with a braue counterfeited scorne she departed from the king; leauing him not so sorie for his short answere, as proud in himselfe that he had broken the matter. And thus did the king (feeding his mind with those thoughts) passe great time in writing verses, and making more of himselfe, then he was wont to do: that with a litle helpe, he would haue growne into a pretie kind of dotage.

But *Zelmane* being rid of this louing, but litle-loued companie, Alas (said she) poore *Pyrocles*, was there euer one, but I, that had receiued wrong, and could blame no bodie? that hauing more then I desire, am still in want of that I would? Trulie Loue, I must needs say thus much on thy behalfe; thou hast imployed my loue there, where all loue is deserued; and for recompence hast sent me more loue then euer I desired. But what wilt thou do *Pyrocles*? which way canst thou find to rid thee of thy intricate troubles? To her whom I would be knowne to, I liue in darkness: and to her am reuealed, from whom I would be most secret. What shift shall I find against the diligent loue of *Basilus*? what shield against the violent passions of *Gynecia*? And if that bee done, yet how am I the nearer to quench the fire that consumes me? Well, well, sweet *Philoclea*, my whole confidence must be builded in thy diuine spirit, which cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I haue receiued by you.

But as sicke folkes when they are alone, thinke companie would relieue them, and yet hauing companie do find it noisome; changing willingly outward obiects, when indeed the euill is inward: so poore *Zelmane* was no more wearie of *Basilus*, then she was of her selfe, when *Basilus* was gone: and euer the more, the more she turned her eyes to become her owne iudges. Tired wherewith, she longed to meet her friend *Dorus*; that vpon the shoulders of friendship she might lay the burthen of sorrow, and therefore went toward the other lodge; where among certaine Beeches she found *Dorus*, apparelled in flanen, with a Goats skin cast vpon him, and a garland of Laurell mixt with Cypres leaues on his head, waiting on his maister *Dametas*, who at that time was teaching him how with his sheephooke to catch a waton Lambe, and how with the same to cast a litle clod at anie one that strayed out of companie. And while *Dorus* was practising, one might see *Dametas* holding his hand vnder his girdle behind him, nodding from the waste vpwards, and swearing he neuer knew man go more aukewardlie to worke: and that they might talke of booke-learning what they would; but for his part, hee neuer saw more vnfeatie fellows then great clearks were.

But *Zelmanes* comming saued *Dorus* from further chiding. And so she beginning to speake with him of the number of his maisters sheep, and which prouince of *Arcadia* bare the finest wooll, drewe him on to follow her in such countrie discourses, til (being out of *Dametas* hearing) with such vehemencie of passiō, as though her heart would clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, she declared vnto him, vpon what briers the roses of her affections grew: how time still seemed to forget her, bestowing no one houre of cōfort vpon her; she remaining stil in one plight of ill fortune, sauing so much worse, as continuance of euill doth in it selfe increase euill. Alas my *Dorus* (said she) thou seest how long and languishingly the weeks are past ouer since our last talking. And yet I am the same, miserable I, that I was: onlie strōger in longing, & weaker in hoping. The fell she to so pitifull a declaratiō of the insup-

insupportablenesse of her desires, that *Dorus* eares (not able to shew what wounds that discourse gaue vnto them) procured his eyes with tears to giue testimony, how much they suffered for her suffering: till passion (a most cumbersome guest to it selfe made *Zelmane* (the sooner to shake it off) earnestlie intreat *Dorus* that he also (with like freedome of discourse) would bestow a Mappe of his litle world vpon her, that she might see, whether it were troubled with such vnhabitable climes of cold despaires, and hot rages as hers was. And so walking vnder a few palme trees, (which being louing in their owne nature, seemed to giue their shadow the willinglier, because they held discourse of loue.) *Dorus* thus entred to the description of his fortune: Alas, said he, deare cousin, that it hath pleased the high powers to throwe vs to such an estate, as the onlie entercourse of our true friendship, must bee a bartring of miseries: for my part, I must confesse indeed, that from a huge darknesse of sorowes, I am crept (I cannot say to a lightsomnesse, but) to a certaine dawning, or rather peeping out of some possibilitie of comfort: but wo is me, so farre from the marke of my desires, that I rather think it such a light, as comes through a small hole to a dungeō, that the miserable caitife may the better remember the light, of which he is deprived; or like a scholler, who is only come to that degree of knowledge, to find himselfe vtterlie ignorant: but thus stands it with me: After that by your means I was exalted to serue in yonder blessed lodge, for a while I had in the forname of my agonies, this refreshing; that (because of the seruice I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleased the Princessse (in whom indeed statelinesse shines through curtesie) to let fall some gracious looke vpon me: sometimes to see my exercises, sometimes to heare my songs. For my part, my heart would not suffer me to omit anie occasion, whereby I might make the incomparable *Pamela*, see how much extraordinarie deuotion I bare to her seruice: and withall straued to appeare more worthie in her sight; that small desert ioyned to so great affection, might preuaile something in the wisest Ladie. But too well (alas) I found, that a shepheards seruice was but considered of, as from a shepherd, and the acceptation limited to no further proportion, then of a good seruant. And when my countenance had once giuen notice that there lay affectiō vnder it, I saw straight, Maiestie (sitting in the throne of Beautie) draw forth such a sword of iust disdain, that I remained as a man thunder-stricken, not daring, no not able to behold that power. Now to make my estate knowne, seemed againe impossible, by reason of the suspitiousnesse of *Dametis*, *Miso*, & my young mistresse *Mopsa*: for *Dametis* (according to the constitution of a dull head) thinks no better way to shew himselfe wise, then by suspecting euerie thing in his way: which suspicion *Miso* (for the hoggish shrewdnesse of her braine) and *Mopsa* (for a verie vnelike enuie she hath stumbled vpon against the Princessses vnspokeable beautie) were verie glad to execute: so that I (finding my seruice by this means lightlie regarded, my affection despised, and my selfe vnknowne) remained no fuller of desire, then voyd of counsell how to come to my desire; which (alas) if these trees could speake, they might well witnesse: for, many times haue I stood here, bewailing my selfe vnto them: manie times haue I, leaning to yonder Palme, admired the blessednesse of it, that it could beare loue without sence of paine: manie times, when my maisters cattell came hither to chew their cud in this fresh place, I might see the young Bull testifie his loue: but how? with proud looks and ioyfulnessse. O wretched mankind (said I then to my selfe) in whom wit (which should be the gouernour of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his blessednesse: these beasts like childrē to nature, inherit her blessings quietly, we, like bastards, are laid abroad

euen as foundlings to be trained vp by griefe and sorrow. Their minds grudge not
 at their bodies comfort, nor their fences are letted from enioying their objects: wee
 haue the impediments of honour, and the torments of conscience. Truly in such
 cogitations haue I sometimes so long stood, that me thought my feet began to
 grow into the ground, with such a darknesse and heauinesse of mind, that I might
 easilie haue bene perswaded to haue resigned ouer my verie essence. But loue (which
 one time layeth burthens, another time giueth wings) when I was at the lowest of
 my downward thoughts, pulled vp my heart to remēber, that nothing is atchieued
 before it be throughlie attempted, and that lying still doth neuer go forward; and
 that therfore it was time, now or neuer, to sharpe my inuention, to pierce through
 the hardnesse of this enterprise; neuer ceasing to assemble al my conceits, one after
 another, how to manifest both my mind & estate, till at last I lighted & resolved on
 this way, which yet perchaunce you wil thinke was a way rather to hide it. I began
 to counterfeit the extreamest loue towards *Mopsa* that might be; & as for the loue,
 so liuelie it was indeed within me, (although to another subiect) that litle I needed
 to counterfeit anie notable demonstrations of it; and so making a contrarietie the
 place of my memorie, in her foulness I beheld *Pamelas* fairenesse, still looking on
Mopsa, but thinking on *Pamela*; as if I saw my Sun shine in a pudled water: I cried
 out of nothing but *Mopsa*; to *Mopsa* my attendance was directed; to *Mopsa* the best
 fruits I could gather were brought; to *Mopsa* it seemed stil that mine eye conueyed
 my tongue: so that *Mopsa* was my saying; *Mopsa* was my singing; *Mopsa* (that is
 onlie futable in laying a foule complexion vpon a filthy fauour, setting forth both
 in sluttishnesse) she was the lode-starre of my life; she the blessing of mine eyes, she
 the ouerthrowe of my desires, and yet the recompence of my ouerthrow; she the
 sweetnesse of my heart, euen sweetning the death, which her sweetnesse drew vpon
 me. In summe, whatsoeuer I thought of *Pamela*, that I said of *Mopsa*; whereby as I
 gate my maisters good wil, who before spited me, fearing least I shold win the Prin-
 cesse fauour from him, so did the same make the Princessse the better content to al-
 low me her presence: whether indeed it were, that a certaine sparke of noble indig-
 nation did rise in her, not to suffer such a baggage not to winne away any thing of
 hers, how meanly soeuer she reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being
 so passionate, and shooting so quite contrarie frō the marks of *Mopsas* worthinesse,
 she perceiued well enough whither they were directed; and therefore being so
 masked, she was contented as a sport of wit to attend them: whereupon one day de-
 termining to find some means to tell (as of a third person) the tale of mine owne
 loue and estate, finding *Mopsa* (like a Cuckoe by a Nightingale) alone with *Pa-*
mela, I came in vnto them, and with a face (I am sure) full of clowdie fancies, tooke
 a harpe and sung this song.

Since so mine eyes are subiect to your sight,
That in your sight they fixed haue my braine:
Since so my heart is filled with that light,
That onlie light doth all my life maintaine.

40

Since in sweet you all goods so richlie raigne,
That where you are no wished good can want:
Since so your liuing image liues in me,
That in my selfe your selfe true loue doth plant:

45

How

*How can you him vnworthie then decree,
In whose chiefe part your worthes implanted be?*

The song being ended, which I had often broken off in the midst with grievous sighes, which ouertooke euery verse I sang, I let fall my harpe from mee; and casting mine eye sometime vpon *Mopsa*, but setting my sight principally vpon *Pamela*, And is it the onely fortune most beautifull *Mopsa* (said I) of wretched *Dorus*, that fortune must be the measure of his mind? Am I onely he, that because I am in miserie, more miserie must be laid vpon me? must that which should be cause of
 10 compassion, become an argument of crueltie against me? Alas excellent *Mopsa*, consider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meaneest subiect, & the heauenly Sunne disdaines not to giue light to the smallest worme. O *Mopsa*, *Mopsa*, if my hart could be as manifest to you, as it is vncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts should well counteruaile the lownesse of my qualitie. Who
 15 hath not heard of the greatnesse of your estate? who seeth not, that your estate is much excelled with that sweet vniting of all beauties, which remaineth and dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that all these are but ornaments of that diuine sparke within you, which being descended from heauen, could not els-where picke out so sweete a mansion? But if you will know what is the band that ought to knit
 20 all these excellencies together, it is a kind mercifulnesse to such a one, as is in his soule deuoted to those perfections. *Mopsa* (who alreadie had had a certaine smackring towards me) stood all this while with her hand sometimes before her face, but most commonly with a certaine speciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in steede of smiling: but all the words I could get of her, was,
 25 wrying her waste, and thrusting out her chinne, In faith you iest with me: you are a merrie man in deede. But the euer-pleasing *Pamela* (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if she did not help *Mopsa* to her part) was content to vrge a little further of me. Master *Dorus* (said the faire *Pamela*) me thinks you blame your fortune verie wrongfully, since the fault is not in Fortune, but in you, that cannot
 30 frame your selfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require *Mopsa* to so great a disparagement as to her Fathers seruant; since she is not worthie to be loued, that hath not some feeling of her owne worthines. I staied a good while after her words, in hope she would haue continued her speech (so great a delight I received in hearing her) but seeing her say no further, (with a quaking all ouer my bodie) I
 35 thus answered her: Ladie, most worthie of all dutie, how falles it out that you in who all vertue thines, will take the patronage of fortune, the only rebellious handmaid against vertue? Especially, since before your eyes, you haue a pittifull spectacle of her wickednesse, a forlorne creature, which must remaine not such as I am, but such as she makes me, since she must be the ballance of worthinesse or disparagement.
 40 Yet alas, if the condemned man (euen at his death) haue leaue to speake, let my mortall wound purchase thus much consideration; since the perfections are such in the partie I loue, as the feeling of them cannot come into any vnnoble hart; shall that hart, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, shall that hart I saie, lifted vp to such a height, be counted base? O let
 45 not an excellent spirit do it selfe such wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loued; there can be any vnworthinesse, since the weakest mist is not easilier driuen away by the Sunne, then that is chased away with so high thoughts. I will not denie (answered the gracious *Pamela*) but that the loue you beare to *Mopsa*,

euen as foundlings to be trained vp by griefe and sorrow. Their minds grudge not
 at their bodies comfort, nor their senses are letted from enioying their objects: wee
 haue the impediments of honour, and the torments of conscience. Truly in such
 cogitations haue I sometimes so long stood, that me thought my feet began to
 grow into the ground, with such a darknesse and heauinesse of mind, that I might
 easilie haue bene perswaded to haue resigned ouer my verie essence. But loue (which
 one time layeth burthens, another time giueth wings) when I was at the lowest of
 my downward thoughts, pulled vp my heart to remeber, that nothing is archieued
 before it be throughlie attempted, and that lying still doth neuer go forward; and
 that therfore it was time, now or neuer, to sharpe my inuention, to pierce through
 the hardnesse of this enterprise; neuer ceasing to assemble al my conceits, one after
 another, how to manifest both my mind & estate, till at last I lighted & resolued on
 this way, which yet perchaunce you wil thinke was a way rather to hide it. I began
 to counterfeit the extreamest loue towards *Mopsa* that might be; & as for the loue,
 so liuelie it was indeed within me, (although to another subiect) that litle I needed
 to counterfeit anie notable demonstrations of it; and so making a contrarietie the
 place of my memorie, in her foulennesse I beheld *Pamelas* fairenesse, still looking on
Mopsa, but thinking on *Pamela*; as if I saw my Sun shine in a pudled water: I cried
 out of nothing but *Mopsa*; to *Mopsa* my attendance was directed; to *Mopsa* the best
 fruits I could gather werebrought; to *Mopsa* it seemed stil that mine eye conueyed
 my tongue: so that *Mopsa* was my saying; *Mopsa* was my singing; *Mopsa* (that is
 onlie futable in laying a foule complexion vpon a filthy fauour, setting forth both
 in sluttishnesse) she was the lode-starre of my life; she the blessing of mine eyes, she
 the ouerthrowe of my desires, and yet the recompence of my ouerthrow; she the
 sweetnesse of my heart, euen sweetning the death, which her sweetnesse drew vpon
 me. In summe, whatsoeuer I thought of *Pamela*, that I said of *Mopsa*; whereby as I
 gate my maisters good wil, who before spited me, fearing least I should win the Prin-
 cesse fauour from him, so did the same make the Princeesse the better content to al-
 low me her prefence: whether indeed it were, that a certaine sparke of noble indig-
 nation did rise in her, not to suffer such a baggage not to winne away any thing of
 hers, how meanly soeuer she reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being
 so passionate, and shooting so quite contrarie fro the marks of *Mopsas* worthinesse,
 she perceiued well enough whither they were directed; and therefore being so
 masked, she was contented as a sport of wit to attend them: whereupon one day de-
 termining to find some means to tell (as of a third person) the tale of mine owne
 loue and estate, finding *Mopsa* (like a Cuckoe by a Nightingale) alone with *Pa-
 melas*, I came in vnto them, and with a face (I am sure) full of clowdie fancies, tooke
 a harpe and sung this song.

Since so mine eyes are subiect to your sight,
That in your sight they fixed haue my braine:
Since so my heart is filled with that light,
That onlie light doth all my life maintaine.

40

Since in sweet you all goods so richlie raigne,
That where you are no wished good can want:
Since so your lining image liues in me,
That in my selfe your selfe true loue doth plant:

45

How

*How can you him vnworthie then decree,
In vvhose chiefe part your worthes implanted be?*

The song being ended, which I had often broken off in the midst with grievous sighes, which overtook every verse I sang, I let fall my harpe from mee; and casting mine eye sometime vpon *Mopsa*, but setting my sight principally vpon *Pamela*, And is it the onely fortune most beautifull *Mopsa* (said I) of wretched *Dorus*, that fortune must be the measure of his mind? Am I onely he, that because I am in miserie, more miserie must be laid vpon me? must that which should be cause of
 10 compassion, become an argument of crueltie against me? Alas excellent *Mopsa*, consider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meanest subiect, & the heauenly Sunne disdaines not to giue light to the smallest worme. O *Mopsa*, *Mopsa*, if my hart could be as manifest to you, as it is vncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts should well counteruaile the lownesse of my qualitie. Who
 15 hath not heard of the greatnesse of your estate? who seeth not, that your estate is much excelled with that sweet vnitng of all beauties, which remaineth and dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that all these are but ornaments of that diuine sparke within you, which being descended from heauen, could not els-where picke out so sweete a mansion? But if you will know what is the band that ought to knit
 20 all these excellencies together, it is a kind mercifulnesse to such a one, as is in his soule deuoted to those perfections. *Mopsa* (who alreadie had had a certaine smackring towards me) stood all this while with her hand sometimes before her face, but most commonly with a certaine speciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in steede of smiling: but all the words I could get of her, was,
 25 wrying her waste, and thrusting out her chinne, In faith you iest with me: you are a merrie man in deede. But the euer-pleasing *Pamela* (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if she did not help *Mopsa* to her part) was content to vrge a little further of me. Master *Dorus* (said the faire *Pamela*) me thinks you blame your fortune verie wrongfully, since the fault is not in Fortune, but in you, that cannot
 30 frame your selfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require *Mopsa* to so great a disparagement as to her Fathers seruauant; since she is not worthie to be loued, that hath not some feeling of her owne worthines. I staid a good while after her words, in hope she would haue continued her speech (so great a delight I receiued in hearing her) but seeing her say no further, (with a quaking all ouer my bodie) I
 35 thus answered her: Ladie, most worthie of all dutie, how fallies it out that you in who all vertue shines, will take the patronage of fortune, the only rebellious handmaid against vertue? Especially, since before your eyes, you haue a pittifull spectacle of her wickednesse, a forlorne creature, which must remaine not such as I am, but such as she makes me, since she must be the ballance of worthinesse or disparagement.
 40 Yet alas, if the condemned man (euen at his death) haue leaue to speake, let my mortall wound purchase thus much consideration; since the perfections are such in the partie I loue, as the feeling of them cannot come into any vnnoble hart; shall that hart, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, shall that hart I saie, lifted vp to such a height, be counted base? O let
 45 not an excellent spirit do it selfe such wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loued; there can be any vnworthinesse, since the weakest mist is not easilier driuen away by the Sunne, then that is chafed away with so high thoughts. I will not denie (answered the gracious *Pamela*) but that the loue you beare to *Mopsa*,

hath brought you to the consideration of her vertues, and that consideration may haue made you the more vertuous, and so the more worthie: But euen that then (you must confesse) you haue receiued of her, and so are rather gratefully to thank her, then to presse any further, till you bring something of your owne, whereby to claime it. And truly *Dorus*, I must in *Mopsaes* behalfe say thus much to you, that 5 if her beauties haue so ouertaken you, it becomes a true Loue to haue your heart more set vpon her good then your owne, and to beare a tenderer respect to her honour, then your satisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madame (said *Mopsa*, throwing a great number of sheeps eyes vpon me) you haue euen touched mine owne minde to the quicke, forsooth. I (finding that the pollicie that I had vsed, had at least 10 wife produced thus much happinesse vnto me, as that I might euen in my Ladies presence, discouer the sore which had deeply festered within me, and that shee could better conceiue my reasons applied to *Mopsa*, then she would haue vouchsafed them, whilest her selfe was a partie) thought good to pursue on my good beginning, vsing this fit occasion of *Pamelas* wit, and *Mopsaes* ignorance. Therefore 15 with an humble piercing eye, looking vpon *Pamela*, as if I had rather bene condemned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my selfe to *Mopsa*, but keeping mine eye where it was: Faire *Mopsa* (said I) well do I find by the wise knitting together of your answere, that any disputation I can vse is almost too weake, as I vnworthy. I find my loue shalbe proued no loue, without I leaue to loue, 20 being too vnfit a vessell in whom so high thoughts should be engraued. Yet since the Loue I beare you, hath so ioyned it self to the best part of my life, as the one can not depart, but that the other will follow, before I seeke to obey you in making my last passage, let me know which is my vnworthinesse, either of mind, estate, or both? *Mopsa* was about to say, in neither; for her heart I thinke tumbled with ouermuch 25 kindnesse, when *Pamela* with a more fauourable countenance then before (finding how apt I was to fall into despaire) told me, I might therein haue answered my selfe; for besides that it was graunted me, that the inward feeling of *Mopsaes* perfections had greatly beautified my minde, there was none could denie, but that my minde and bodie deserued great allowance. But *Dorus* (said she) you must be 30 so farre maister of your loue, as to consider, that since the iudgement of the world stands vpon matter of fortune, and that the sexe of womankind of all other is most bound to haue regardfull eye to mens iudgements, it is not for vs to play the Philosophers, in seeking out your hidden vertues: since that, which in a wise Prince would be counted wisdom, in vs will be taken for a light-grounded affection: so is not 35 one thing, one, done by diuers persons. There is no man in a burning feuer fees so great contentment in cold water greedily receiued (which as soone as the drinke ceaseth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my soule refreshed with her sweetly pronounced words; and newly, and more violently againe enflamed, as soone as she had closed vp her delightfull speech, with no lesse well graced silence. But remem- 40 bring in my selfe, that aswell the Souldier dieth which standeth still, as he that gives the brauest onset: and seeing that to the making vp of my fortune, there wanted nothing so much as the making knowne of mine estate, with a face well witnessing how deeply my soule was possessed, and with the most submissiue behaiour, that a thrall'd heart could expresse, euen as my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, 45 at length spake to this purpose: Alas, most worthie Princeesse (said I) and do not then your owne sweet words sufficiently testifie, that there was neuer man could haue a iuster action against filthie fortune, then I, since all other things being granted

granted me, her blindness is my only let? O heavenly God, I would either she had such eyes as were able to discern my deserts, or I were blind not to see the dayly cause of my misfortune. But yet (said I) most honoured Ladie, if my miserable speeches haue not alreadie cloied you, and that the verie presence of such a wretch become not hatefull in your eyes: let me reply thus much further against my mortall sentence, by telling you a storie, which happened in this same countrie long since (for woes make the shortest time seeme long) whereby you shall see that my estate is not so contemptible, but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like vpon him, and by that onely hath aspired to enioy a mightie Princeesse. *Pamela* graciously
 10 hearkened, and I told my tale in this sort.

In the countrie of *Theffalia*, (alas, why name I that accursed countrie, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies? but name it I must) in *Theffalia* I say there was (wel may I say, there was) a Prince (no, no Prince, whome bondage wholly possessed; but yet accounted a Prince, and) named *Musidorus*. O *Musidorus*,
 15 *Musidorus*; but to what serue exclamations, where there are no eares to receiue the sound? This *Musidorus* being yet in the tendrest age, his worthy father paid to nature (with a violent death) her last duties, leauing his child to the faith of his friends, and the prooue of time: death gaue him not such pangs as the foresightfull care he had of his silly successour. And yet if in his foresight he could haue seene so much,
 20 happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which barred him from the knowledge of his sonnes miseries, which his knowledge could neither haue preuented, nor releued. The young *Musidorus* (being thus, as for the first pledge of the destinies good will, depriued of his principall stay) was yet for some yeares after (as if the starres would breath themselues for a greater mischiefe) lulled vp in as much
 25 good luck, as the heedful loue of his doleful mother, and the flourishing estate of his countrie could breed vnto him.

But when the time now came, that misery seemed to be ripe for him, because he had age to knowe misery, I thinke there was a conspiracy in all heavenly and earthly things, to frame fit occasions to leade him vnto it. His people (to whō all for-
 30 rain matters in foretime were odious) began to wish in their beloued Prince, experience by trauaile: his deare mother whose eyes were held open, onely with the ioy of looking vpon him) did now dispense with the comfort of her widowhead life, desiring the same her subiects did, for the increase of her sonnes worthinesse.

And hereto did *Musidorus* owne vertue (see how vertue can bee a minister to
 35 mischiefe) sufficiently prouoke him: for indeed thus much I must say for him, although the likenesse of our mishaps makes me presume to patterne my selfe vnto him, that well-doing was at that time his scope, from which no faint pleasure could with-hold him. But the present occasion which did knit all this together, was his vnclē the king of *Macedon*; who hauing lately before gotten such victo-
 40 ries, as were beyond expectation, did at this time send both for the Prince his sonne (brought vp together, to auoid the warres, with *Musidorus*) and for *Musidorus* himself, that his ioy might be the more full, hauing such partakers of it. But alas, to what a sea of miseries my plaintfull tounge doth lead me; & thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I said, I stayed my speech, til *Pamela* shewing by countenance
 45 that such was her pleasure, I thus continued it: These two yong Princes to satisfie the king, tooke their way by sea, towards *Thrace*, whither they would needs go with a Nauie to succor him: he being at that time before *Bizantium* with a mighty Army besieging it; where at that time his court was. But when the conspired heauens had

gotten this Subiect of their wrath vpō so fit a place as the sea was, they streight began to breath out in boistrous winds some part of their malice against him; so that with the losse of al his Nauie, he only with the Prince his cosin, were cast a land, far off frō the place whither their desires would haue guided them. O cruel winds in your vncōsiderate rages, why either began you this furie, or why did you not end 5 it in his end? But your crueltie was such, as you would spare his life for many deathfull torments. To tell you what pitifull mishaps fell to the yong Prince of *Macedon* his cosin, I should too much fill your eares with strange horrors; neither will I staie vpon those laborosome aduentures, nor lothsom misaduentures, to which, & through which his fortune & courage conducted him; My speech hastneth it self to come to 10 the ful point of *Musidorus* infortunes. For as we find the most pestilent diseases do gather into themselues all the infirmities with which the body before was annoyed; so did his last miserie embrace in the extremitie of it selfe all his former mischiefes.

Arcadia, *Arcadia* was the place prepared to be the stage of his endlesse ouerthrow. *Arcadia* was, (alas wel might I say it is) the charmed circle, where all his spi- 15 rits for euer should be enchanted. For here (& no where els) did his infected eyes make his mind know, what power heauēly beautie hath to throw it down to hellish agonies. Here, here did he see the *Arcadian* Kings eldest daughter, in whō he forthwith placed so all his hopes of ioy, & ioyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himself nothing, but a maze of longing, & a dungeon of sorrow. But alas, what can saying 20 make them beleue, whom seeing cannot perswade? Those paines must be felt before they can be vnderstood; no outward vtterance can command a concept. Such was as then the state of the king, as it was no time by direct meanes to seeke her. And such was the state of his captiued will, as he could delay no time of seeking her.

In this intrangled cause, he clothed himselfe in a shepherds weede, that vnder 25 the basenesse of that forme, he might at last haue free accesse to feed his eyes with that which should at length eat vp his heart. In which doing, thus much without doubt he hath manifested, that this estate is not alwaies to be reiected, since vnder that vaile there may be hidden things to be esteemed. And if he might with taking on a shepherds looke cast vp his eyes to the fairest Princeesse Nature in that time 30 created; the like, nay the same desire of mine need no more to be disdained, or held for disgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe dimme, my yong beginnes to falter, and my hart to want force to helpe, either with the feeling remembrance I haue, in what heape of miseries the caitife Prince lay at this time buried. Pardon therefore most excellēt Princeesse, if I cut off the course of my dolorous tale, since if I be vnder- 35 stood, I haue said enough for the defence of my basenesse; and for that which after might befall to that patterne of ill fortune, (the matters are too monstrous for my capacitie) his hatefull destinies must best declare their owne workmanship.

Thus hauing deliuered my tale in this perplexed manner; to the end the Princeesse might iudge that he meant himselfe, who spake so feelingly; her aunswere 40 was both strange, and in some respect comfortable. For would you thinke it? shee hath heard heretofore of vs both, by meanes of the valiant Prince *Plangus*, and particularly of our casting away: which shee (following mine owne stile) thus delicately brought forth: You haue told (said she) *Dorus*, a pretie tale; but you are much deceived in the latter end of it. For the Prince *Musidorus* with his cosin *Pyrocles* did 45 both perish vpon the coast of *Laconia*; as a noble gentleman called *Plangus* (who was well acquainted with the historie) did assure my father. O how that speach of hers did powre ioyes in my hart: O blessed name (thought I) of mine, since thou hast

hast bene in that tounge, and passed through those lips, though I can neuer hope to approach them. As for *Pyrocles* (said I) I will not denie it, but that he is perished: (which I said, least sooner suspicion might arise of your being here, then your selfe would haue it) and yet affirmed no lye vnto her, since I onely said, I would not deny it. But for *Musidorus* (said I) I perceiue indeed you haue either heard or read the story of that vnhappy Prince; for this was the verie obiection, which that peerelesse Princeesse did make vnto him, when he sought to appeare such as he was before her wisdom: and thus as I haue read it faire written in the certaintie of my knowledge he might answere her, that indeed the ship wherein he came, by a treason was perished, and therefore that *Plangus* might easily be deceiued: but that he himselfe was cast vpon the coast of *Laconia*, where hee was taken vp by a couple of shepheards, who liued in those dayes famous; for that both louing one faire maide, they yet remained constant friends; one of whose songs not long since was song before you by the shepheard *Lamon*, and brought by them to a noble-mans house, neere *Manti-*
nea, whose sonne had a little before his marriage, bene taken prisoner, and by the helpe of this Prince, *Musidorus* (though naming himselfe by another name) was deliuered. Now these circumlocutions I did vse, because of the one side I knew the Princeesse would know well the parties I meant; and of the other, if I should haue named *Strephon*, *Claius*, *Kalander* and *Clitophon*, perhappes it would haue rubd some
 20 coniecture into the heanie head of Mistresse *Mopsa*.

And therefore (said I) most diuine Lady, he iustly was thus to argue against such suspitions, that the Prince might easily by those parties be satisfied, that vpon that wrack such a one was taken vp, and therefore that *Plangus* might wel erre, whoknew not of anies taking vp: againe that hee that was so preferued brought good to-
 35 kens to be one of the two, chiefe of that wracked companie: which two since *Plangus* knew to be *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles*, hee must needs bee one of them, although (as I saide) vpon a foretaken vow, he was otherwise at that time called. Besides, the Princeesse must needs iudge, that no lesse then a Prince durst vndertake such an enterprise, which (though he might get the fauour of the Princeesse) he could neuer
 30 defend with lesse then a Princes power, against the force of *Arcadia*. Lastly, (said he) for a certaine demonstration, he presumed to shew vnto the Princeesse a marke he had on his face, as I might (said I) shew this of my neck to the rare *Mopsa*: and withall, shewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde spot bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that shce may ascertaine her selfe,
 35 that I am *Menalcas* brother. And so did he, beseeching her to send some one she might trust, into *Theffalia*, secretly to bee aduertised, whether the age, the complexion, & particularly that notable signe, did not fully agree with their Prince *Musidorus*. Doyou not know further (saide she, with a setled countenance, not accusing any kind of inward motion) of that storie. Alas no, (said I) for euen here the Historiogra-
 40 pher stopped, saying, The rest belonged to Astrologie. And therewith, thinking her silent imaginations began to worke vpon somewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Musick is to do) and withall, to shew what kinde of shepheard I was, I tooke vp my Harpe, and sang these few verses:

45

Mr sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serue:
 Their pasture is faire hilles of fruitlesse loue:
 On barren sweetes they feed, and feeding sterue:
 I waile their lott, but will not other proue.

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

My sheepehooke is wanne hope, which all vpholds :

My weedes, Desire, cut out in endlesse folds.

What wooll my sheepe shall beare, whiles thus they line,

In you it is, you must the iudgement giue.

And then, partly to bring *Mopsa* againe to the matter (lest she should too much take heed to our discourtes) but principally, if it were possible, to gather some comfort out of her answeres, I kneeled downe to the Princeesse, and humbly besought her to moue *Mopsa* in my behalf, that she would vnarme her noble hart of that stee-ly resistance against the sweet blowes of Loue: that since all her parts were decked 10 with some particular ornament; her face with beautie, her head with wisdom, her eyes with maiestie, her countenance with gracefulness, her lips with louelinesse, her tongue with victorie; that shee would make her hart the throne of pittie, being the most excellent rayment of the most excellent part.

Pamela without shew either of fauour or disdain, either of heeding or neglecting what I had said, turned her speech to *Mopsa*, and with such a voice and action, as might shew shee spake of a matter which little did concerne her, Take heed to your selfe (said shee) *Mopsa*, for your shepheard can speake well: but truly, if he doo fully proue himselfe such as he saith, I mean, the honest shepheard *Menalchas* his brother and heire, I know no reason why you should thinke scorn of him. *Mopsa* 20 though (in my conscience) shee were euen then farre spent towards me, yet shee answered her, that for all my quaint speeches, shee would keepe her honestie close inough: And that as for the way of matrimony, shee would step neuer a foote further, till my Master her father had spoken the whole word himselfe, no shee would not. But euer and anon turning her muzzell toward me, shee threwe such a 25 prospect vpon me, as might well haue giuen a surfet to any weake louers stomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that driuels speeches among my noble thoughts? but because shee was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geue you a full knowledge, and to leaue nothing (that I can remember) vnrepeated.

Now the Princeesse being about to withdraw her selfe from vs, I tooke a Jewell 30 made in the figure of a Crab-fish, which, because it lookes one way and goes another, I thought it did fitly patterne out my looking to *Mopsa*, but bending to *Pamela*: The word about it was, *By force, not choice*; and still kneeling, besought the Princeesse that shee would vouchsafe to giue it *Mopsa*, and with the blessednes of her hand to make acceptable vnto her that toy which I had found, following of late an 35 acquaintaunce of mine at the plowe. For (said I) as the earth was turned vp, the plow-share lighted vpon a great stone: wee puld that vp, and so found both that and some other prety things, which we had deuided betwixt vs.

Mopsa was benumbed with ioy when the Princeesse gaue it her: but in the Princeesse I could find no apprehension of what I either said or did, but with a calme 40 carelesnesse letting each thing slide, iustly as we doo by their speeches (who neither in matter nor person doo any way belong vnto vs) which kinde of cold temper, mixt with that lightning of her naturall maiestie, is of all others most terrible vnto me: for yet if I found shee contemned mee, I would desperately labour both in fortune and vertue to ouercome it; if shee only misdoubted me, I were in heauen; for 45 quickly I would bring sufficient assurance: lastly, if shee hated me, yet I should know what passion to deale with; and either with infinitenesse of desert I would take away the fewell from that fire; or if nothing would serue, then I would giue her

her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruell quietnesse, neither retiring to mislike nor proceeding to fauour; gracious, but gracious still after one maner; all her curtesies hauing this engraue in them, that what is done, is for vertues sake, not for the parties (euer keeping her course like the Sun, who neither for our prayes, nor curses, will spur or stop his horses.) This (I say) heauenlineesse of hers (for howsoeuer my misery is I cannot but so entitle it) is so impossible to reach vnto, that I almost begin to submit my selfe to the tyranny of dispaire, not knowing any way of perswasion, where wisdom seems to be vn sensible. I haue appeared to her eyes, like my selfe, by a deuice I vsed with my maister, perswading him that we two might put on certaine rich apparell I had provided, and so practise something on horsebacke before *Pamela*, telling him, it was apparell I had gotten for playing well the part of a king in a Tragedy at *Athens*: my horse indeede was it I had left at *Menalcas* house, & *Dametas* got one by friendship out of the Princes stable. But howsoeuer I shew, I am no base body, all I do is but to beate a rocke and get some.

But as *Dorus* was about to tell further, *Dametas* (who came whistling, and counting vpon his fingers, how many loades of hay his seuentene fat oxen eate vp in a yeare) desired *Zelmane* from the king that she wold come into the lodge, where they stayed for her. Alas (sayd *Dorus*, taking his leaue) the sum is this, that you may well finde you haue beaten your sorrow against such a wall, which with the force of rebound may well make your sorrow stronger. But *Zelmane* turning her speech to *Dametas*, I shall grow (sayd she) skilfull in countrey matters, if I haue often conference with your seruant. In sooth (answered *Dametas* with a gracelesse scorne) the Lad may proue well euough, if hee ouer soone thinke not too well of himselfe, and will beare away that hee heareth of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the other lodge, to make *Zelmane* find shee might haue spent her time better with him, he began with a wilde Methode to runne ouer all the art of husbandrie: especially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a field: while poore *Zelmane* yeelded her eares to those tedious strokes, not warding them so much as with any one answer, till they came to *Basilus*, and *Gynecia*, who attended for her in a coach to cary her abroad to see some sportes prepared for her. *Basilus*, and *Gynecia* sitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with her left side to *Philoclea*. *Zelmane* was moued in her mind, to haue kissed their feete for the fauour of so blessed a seate: for the narrownesse of the coach made them ioine from the foote to the shoulders very close together; the truer touch whereof though it were barred by their enuious apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes, though but in an iuorie box, will through the box send forth his imbracing vertue to a beloued needle; so this imparadised neighbourhood made *Zelmaes* soule cleaue vnto her, both thorow the iuory case of her body, and the apparell which did ouer-cloude it. All the bloud of *Zelmaes* body stirring in her, as wine will do when suger is hastily put into it, seeking to sucke the sweetenesse of the beloued guest; her heart, like a lion new imprisoned, seeing him that restraines his liberty, before the grate; not panting, but struiuing violently (if it had beene possible) to haue leapt into the lappe of *Philoclea*. But *Dametas*, euen then proceeding from being maister of a carte, to bee doctor of a coach, not a little proude in himselfe, that his whippe at that time guided the rule of *Arcadia*, draue the coach (the couer whereof was made with such ioynts, that as they might (to auoide the weather) pull it vp close when they listed, so when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as discovered and open sighted as on horsebacke) till vpon the side of the Forrest they had

both greyhounds, spaniels, and hounds: where of the first might seeme the Lords; the second the Gentlemen, and the last the yeomen of dogges; a cast of Merlins there was besides, which flying of a gallant height ouer certaine bushes, would beate the birds (that rose) downe vnto the bushes, as Falcons will doe wild-foule ouer a riuer. But the sport which for that day *Basilus* would principallie shew to *Zelmane*, was the mountie at a Hearne, which getting vp on his wagling wings with paine, till he was come to some height (as though the aire next to the earth were not fit for his great body to flie thorough) was now growne to diminish the sight of himselfe, and to giue example to great persons, that the higher they be, the lesse they should shew: when a Ierfaulcon was cast off after her, who streight spying where the pray was, fixing her eye with desire, and guiding her wing by her eye, vsed no more strength then industry. For as a good builder to a high tower will not make his stayre vp right, but winding almost the full compasse about, that the steepe nesse bee the more vsensible: so she, seeing the trowing of her pursued chase, went circling, and compassing about, rising so with the lesse sence of rising; and yet finding that way scanty serue the greedinesse of her hast, as an ambitious bodie will go far out of the direct way, to win to a point of height which hee desires; so would she (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, and flie quite out another way, but all was to returne in a higher pitch; which once gotten, she would either beate with cruell assaults the Heron, who now was driuen to the best defence of force, since flight would not serue; or else clasping with him, come downe together, to bee parted by the ouer-partiall beholders.

Dinerse of which flights *Basilus* shewing to *Zelmane*, thus was the richesse of the time spent, and the day decaased before it was thought of, till night like a degenerating successour made his departure the better remembred. And therefore (so constrained) they willed *Dametas* to driue homeward, who (halfe sleeping, halfe musing about the mending of a wine presse) guided the horses so ill, that the wheele coming ouer a great stub of a tree, it ouerturned the coach. Which though it fell violently vpon the side where *Zelmane* and *Gynecia* late, yet for *Zelmanes* part, she would haue bin glad of the fall, which made her beare the sweete burthen of *Philoclea*, but that she feared she might receiue some hurt. But indeede neither she did, nor any of the rest, by reason they kept their armes and legs within the coach, sauing *Gynecia*, who with the onely bruze of the fall, had her shoulder put out of ioynt; which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it was set well againe, yet with much paine was she brought to the lodge; and paine (fetching his ordinary companion, a feuer with him) draue her to entertaine them both in her bed.

But neither was the feuer of such impatient heate, as the inward plague-sore of her affection, nor the paine halfe so noysome, as the icalousie she conceived of her daughter *Philoclea*, least this time of her sicknesse might giue apt occasion to *Zelmane*, whom she misdoubted. Therefore she called *Philoclea* to her, and though it were late in the night, commanded her in her eare to go to the other lodge, & send *Miso* to her, with whom she would speake, and she lie with her sister *Pamela*. The meane while *Gynecia* kept *Zelmane* with her, because she would be sure, she should be out of the lodge, before she licenced *Zelmane*. *Philoclea* not skild in any thing better the obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then full (not thinking scorne to be a torch-bearer to such beauty) guided her steppes, whose motions beare a mind which bare in it selfe farre more stirring motions. And alas (sweete *Philoclea*) how hath my pennetill now forgot thy passions, since to thy memory principally all this long

long matter is intended? pardon the slackenesse to come to those woes, which hauing caused in others, thou didst feelee in thy selfe.

The sweete minded *Philoclea* was in their degree of well doing, to whom the not knowing of euill serueth for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an vnspotted simplicity, then many, who rather cunningly seeke to know what goodnesse is, then willingly take into themselues the following of it. But as that sweete and simple breath of heauenly goodnesse, is the easier to be altered, because it hath not passed through the worldly wickednesse, nor feelingly found the euill, that euill caries with it; so now the Lady *Philoclea* (whose eyes and senses had receiued nothing, but according as the naturall course of each thing required; whose tender youth had obediently, liued vnder her parents behests, without framing out of her owne will the fore-choosing of any thing) when now shee came to appoint, wherein her iudgement was to be practised, in knowing faultines by his first tokens, she was like a yong Faune, who comming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it bee a thing or no to bee eschewed; whereof at this time she began to get a costly experience. For after that *Zelmane* had a while liued in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble straunger had bred a kind of heedfull attention; her comming to that lonely place (where she had no body but her parents) a willingnes of conuersation; her wit & behauiour, a liking and silent admiration; at length the excellency of her naturall gifts, ioyned with the extreame shewes she made of most deuout honouring *Philoclea* (carying thus in one person, the only two bands of good will, louelinesse and louingnesse) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a most friendly affection; which when it had gotten so full possession of the keyes of her mind, that it would receiue no message from her senses, without that affection were the interpreter; then streight grew an exceeding delight still to be with her, with an vnmeasurable liking of all that *Zelmane* did: matters being so turned in her, that where at first liking her manners did breede good-will, now good-will became the chiefe cause of liking her manners: so that within a while *Zelmane* was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized because it was *Zelmaes*. Then followed that most naturall effect of conforming ones selfe to that, which she did like, and not onely wishing to be her selfe such an other in all things, but to ground an imitation vpon so much an esteemed authoritie: so that the next degree was to marke all *Zelmaes* doings, speeches, and fashions, and to take them into her selfe, as a patterne of worthie proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not onely by the comminalltie of Passions, but agreed vnto by her most noble Thoughts, and that by Reason it selfe (not yet experienced in the issues of such matters) had granted his royall assent; then Friendship (a diligent officer) tooke care to see the statute thoroughly obserued. Then grew on that not onely she did imitate the sobernesse of her countenance, the gracefulness of her speech, but euen their particular gestures: so that as *Zelmane* did often eye her, she would often eye *Zelmane*; and as *Zelmaes* eyes would deliuer a submissiue, but vehement desire in their looke, she, though as yet she had not the desire in her, yet should her eyes answer in like piercing kindnesse of a looke. *Zelmane* as much as *Gynecias* ieaousie would suffer, desired to bee neare *Philoclea*; *Philoclea*, as much as *Gynecias* ieaousie would suffer, desired to be neare *Zelmane*. If *Zelmane* tooke her hand, and softly strained it, she also (thinking the knots of friendship ought to be mutuall) would (with a sweete fastnesse) shew she was loth to part from it. And if *Zelmane* sighed, she would sigh also; when *Zelmane* was sad, she deemed it wisdom,

and therefore she would be sad too, *Zelmanes* languishing countenance with crost armes, and sometimes cast-vp eyes, she thought to haue an excellent grace: and therefore she also willingly put on the same countenance: till at the last (poore soule, ere she were aware) she accepted not onely the badge, but the seruice; not only the signe, but the passion signified. For whether it were, that her wit in continuance did find, that *Zelmanes* friendship was full of impatient desire, hauing more then ordinary limits; and therefore she was content to second *Zelma*, though her selfe knew not the limits; or that in truth, true loue (well considered) hath an infectiue power; at last she fell in acquaintance with loues harbinger, wishing: First she would wish, that they two might liue all their liues together, like two of *Diaphas* Nymphes. But that wish, she thought not sufficient, because she knew, there would be more Nymphes besides them, who also would haue their part in *Zelma*. Then would she wish, that she were her sister, that such a naturall band might make her more speciall to her. But against that, she considered, that though being her sister, if she happened to be married, she should be robbed of her. Then growne bolder, she would wish either her selfe, or *Zelma* a man, that there might succede a blessed mariage betwixt them. But when that wish had once displaid his ensigne in her minde, then followed whole squadrons of longings, that so it might be, with a maine battell of mislikings, and repinings against their creation, that so it was not. Then dreames by night began to bring more vnto her, then she durst wish by day, where out making did make her know her selfe the better by the image of those fancies. But as some diseases when they are easie to be cured, they are hard to bee knowne, but when they grow easie to be knowne, they are almost impossible to bee cured: so the sweete *Philoclea*, while she might preuent it, she did not feele it, now she felt it, when it was past preuenting; like a riuer, no rampiers being built against it, till already it haue ouerflowed. For now indeed loue puld off his maske, and shewed his face vnto her, and told her plainly, that she was his prisoner. Then needed she no more paint her face with passions; for passions shone thorough her face; then her rosie colour was often encreased with extraordinary blushing: and so another time, perfect whitenesse descended to a degree of palenesse; now hot, then cold, desiring she knewe not what, nor how; if she knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the smart was brought to thinke of the disease, and her owne prooffe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error giues so strong assault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent) so greatly fortified her desires, to see, that her mother had the like desires. And the more iealous her mother was, the more she thought the Jewell precious, which was with so many lockes garded. But that preuailing so farre, as to keepe the two louers from priuate conference, then began she to feele the sweetnesse of a louers solitarinesse, when freely with words and gestures, as if *Zelma* were present, she might giue passage to her thoughts, and so as it were, vter out some smoke of those flames, wherewith else she was not onely burned, but smothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commandement, with dolefull gestures and vncertaine paces, she did willingly accept the times offer, to be a while alone: so that going a little aside into the wood; where many times before she had delighted to walke, her eyes were saluted with a tuft of trees, so close set together, as with the shade the Moone gaue through it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of deuotion to looke vpon it. But true thoughts of loue banished all vaine fancie of superstition. Full well she did both remember and like the places;

for there had she often with their shade beguiled *Phæbus* of looking vpon her: There had she enioyed her selfe often, while she was mistresse of her selfe, and had no other thoughts, but such as might arise out of quiet senses.

But the principall cause that invited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble stone, that should seeme had beene dedicated in ancient time to the *Siluan* gods: which she finding there a few dayes before *Zelmanes* comming, had written these words vpon it, as a testimonie of her mind, against the suspicion her captiuitie made her thinke she liued in. The writing was this.

10 *Y*ou liuing powers enclos'd in stately shrine
Of growing trees: you rurall Gods that wield
Your scepters here, if to your eares diuine.
A voice may come, which troubled soule doth yeeld:
15 This vow receiue, this vow ô Gods maintaine,
My virgin life no spotted thought shall staine.

20 Thou purest stone; whose purenesse doth present
My purest mind; whose temper hard doth show
My tempred hart; by thee my promise sent
Vnto my selfe let after-liuers know.
No fancy mine, nor others wrong suspect
25 Make me, ô vertuous shame, thy lawes neglect.

30 O Chastity, the Chiefe of heauenly lights,
Which makst vs most immortal shape to weare,
Hold thou my hart, establish thou my sprights:
To onely thee my constant course I beare.
Till sposelesse soule vnto thy bosome flie.
Such life to leade, such death I vow to die.

35 But now that her memory serued as an accuser of her change, and that her owne hand-writing was there, to beare testimony against her fall; she went in among those few trees, so closed in the tops together, as they might seeme a litle chappell: and there might she by the helpe of the Moone-light perceiue the goodly stone, which serued as an altar in that woodie deuotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was already foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as she perceiued, Alas (sayd she) faire marble, which neuer receiuedst sport but by my writing, well do these blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not dissemble then, although she haue changed since. Enioy, enioy
40 the glory of thy nature, which can so constantly beare the markes of my inconstancie. And herewith hiding her eies with her soft hand, there came into her head certaine verses, which if she had had present commoditie, she would haue adioyned as a retraction to the other. They were to this effect.

45 *M*y words, in hope to blaze a stedfast mind,
This marble chose, as of like temper knowne:
But loe, my words defaste, my fancies blind,
Blots to the stone, shames to my selfe I find:

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*And witnesse am, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand with constant marble stone.*

*My words full weake, the marble full of might;
My words in store, the marble all alone;
My words blacke inke, the marble kindly white;
My words vnscene, the marble still in sight,
May witnesse beare, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand, with constant marble stone.*

5

10

But seeing she could not see meanes to ioyne as then this recantation to the former vowe (laying all her faire length vnder one of the trees) for a while she did nothing but turne vp and downe, as if she had hoped to turne away the fancie that maistred her, and hid her face, as if she could haue hidden her selfe from her owne fancies. At length with a whispring note to her selfe; O me vnfortunate wretch 15 (sayd she) what poysonous heates bee these, which thus torment me? How hath the sight of this strange guest inuaded my soule? Alas, what entrance found this desire, or what strength had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud passing betweene her sight and the Moone, O *Diana* (sayd she) I would either the cloud that now hides the light of my vertue, would as easily passe away, as you will quickly ouer- 20 come this let; or else that you were foreuer thus darkened, to serue for an excuse of my outrageous folly. Then looking to the starres, which had perfittly as then beautified the cleare skie: My parents (sayd she) haue told me, that in these faire heauenly bodies, there are great hidden deities, which haue their working in the ebbing and flowing of our estates. If it be so, then (ô you stars) iudge rightly of me, 25 and if I haue with wicked intent made my selfe a pray to fancie, or if by any idle lusts I framed my heart fit for such an impression, then let this plague daily encrease in me, till my name be made odious to womankind. But if extreame and vnresistable violence haue oppressed me, who will euer do any of you sacrifice (ô you stars) if you do not succour me, No, no, you will not helpe me. No, no, you cannot helpe 30 me: Sinne must be the mother, and shame the daughter of my affection. And yet are these but childish obiections (simple *Philoclea*) it is the impossibilitie that doth torment me: for, vnlawfull desires are punished after the effect of enioying; but vnpossible desires are punished in the desire it selfe. O then, ô tenne times vnhappy that I am, since where in all other hope kindleth loue; in me despaire should be 35 the bellows of my affection: and of all despaire the most miserable, which is drawne from impossibility. The most couetous man longs not to get riches out of a ground which neuer can beare any thing; Why? because it is impossible. The most ambitious wight vexeth not his wits to clime into heauen; Why? because it is impossible. Alas then, ô Loue, why dost thou in thy beautifull sampler set such a 40 worke for my desire to take out, which is as much impossible? And yet alas, why do I thus condemne my fortune, before I heare what she can say for her selfe? What do I, sillie wench, know what Loue hath prepared for mee? Do I not see my mother, as well, at least as furiously as my selfe, loue *Zelma*? And shold I be wiser then my mother? Either she sees a possibility in that which I thinke impossible, or else 45 impossible louses neede not misbecome me. And doe I not see *Zelma* (who doth not thinke a thought which is not first wayed by wisdom and vertue) doth not she vouchsafe to loue me with like ardour? I see it, her eyes depose it to be true;

What

What then? and if she can loue poore me, shall I thinke scorne to loue such a woman as *Zelma*? Away then all vaine examinations of why and how. Thou lovest me, excellent *Zelma*, and I loue thee: and with that, embracing the very ground whereon she lay, she sayd to her selfe (for euen to her selfe she was ashamed to speake it out in words) O my *Zelma*, gouerne and direct me: for I am wholly giuen ouer vnto thee.

In this depth of mazes, and diuerse sorts of discourses, would she rauingly haue remained, but that *Dametas* and *Miso* (who were round about to seeke her, vnderstanding she was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; *Dametas* saying, that he would not deale in other bodies matters; but for his part, he did not like, that maides should once stirre out of their fathers houses, but if it were to milke a cow, or saue a chicken from a kites foot, or some such other matter of importance. And *Miso* swearing that if it were her daughter *Mopsa*, she would giue her a lesson for walking so late, that should make her keepe within doores for one fortnight. But their iangling made *Philoclea* rise, and pretending as though she had done it but to sport with them, went with the (after she had willed *Miso* to waite vpon her mother) to the lodge; where (being now accustomed by her parents discipline, as well as her sister, to serue herselfe) she went alone vp to *Pamelas* chamber: where meaning to delight her eyes, and ioy her thoughts with the sweete conuersation of her beloued sister, she found her (though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow sleepe most willingly into mortall creatures) sitting in a chaire, lying backward, with her head almost ouer the backe of it, and looking vpon a waxe-candle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her handkerchiefe, which had lately drunke vp the teares of her eyes, leauing in steede of them, crimsen circles, like redde flakes in the element, when the weather is hottest. Which *Philoclea* finding (for her eyes had learned to know the badges of sorrow) she earnestlie intreated to know the cause thereof, that either she might comfort, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But *Pamela*, rather seeming forie that she had perceiued so much, then willing to open any further, O my *Pamela* (sayd *Philoclea*) who are to me a sister in nature, a mother in counsell, a Princeesse by the law of our countrey, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the dearest, a friend by my choice and your fauour, what meanes this banishing me from your counsels? Doe you loue your sorrow so well, as to grudge me part of it? Or doe you thinke I shall not loue a sad *Pamela*, so well as a ioyfull? or be my eares vnworthie, or my tongue suspected? What is it (my sister) that you should conceale from your sister, yea and seruant *Philoclea*? These words wanne no further of *Pamela*, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impouerished their clothes to enrich their bed, which for that night might well scorne the shrine of *Venus*: and there cherishing one another with deare, though chaste embracements; with sweete, though cold kisses; it might seeme that loue was come to play him there without darte; or that weary of his owne fires, he was there to refresh himselfe between their sweete-breathing lippes. But *Philoclea* earnestly againe intreated *Pamela* to open her grieffe; who (drawing the curtaine, that the candle might not complaine of her blushing) was ready to speake: but the breath almost formed into words, was againe stopt by her, and turned into sighes. But at last, I pray you (sayd shee) sweete *Philoclea*, let vs talke of some other thing: and tell me whether you did euer see any thing so amended as our Pastorall sports bee, since that *Dorus* came hither? O loue, how farre thou seest with blind eyes? *Philoclea* had straight found her,

and therefore to draw out more, Indeede (sayd she) I haue often wondred to my selfe how such excellencies could be in so meane a person; but be like fortune was afraide to lay her treasures, where they should be stained with so many perfections: onely I maruaile how he can frame himselfe to hide so rare gifts vnder such a blocke as *Dametas*. Ah (sayd *Pamela*) if you knew the cause: but no more doe I neither; 5 and to say the trueth: but Lord, how are we false to talke of this fellow? and yet indeede if you were sometimes with me to marke him, while *Dametas* reades his rusticke lecture vnto him (how to feede his beastes before noone, where to shade them in the extreame heate, how to make the manger handsome for his oxen, when to vse the goade, and when the voice: giuing him rules of a heardman, though hee 10 pretend to make him a shepherd) to see all the while with what a grace (which seemes to set a crowne vpon his base estate) he can descend to those poore matters, certainly you would: but to what serues this? no doubt we were better sleepe then talke of these idle matters. Ah my *Pamela* (sayd *Philoclea*) I haue caught you, the constancy of your wit was not wont to bring forth such disioynted speeches: you 15 loue, dissemble no further. It is true (sayd *Pamela*) now you haue it; and with lesse adoe should, if my hart could haue thought those words sutable for my mouth. But indeed (my *Philoclea*) take heede: for I thinke vertue it selfe is no armour of prooffe against affection. Therefore learne by my example. Alas thought *Philoclea* to her selfe, your sheares come too late to clip the birds wings that already is flowne 20 away. But then *Pamela* being once set in the streame of her loue, went away amaine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawne her liking towards him; but yet euer waying his meannesse, and so held continually in due limits; till seeking many meanes to speake with her, and euer kept from it (as well because she shund it, seeing and disdainning his mind, as because of her iealous iaylours) he had 25 at length vsed the finest pollicie that might be in counterfainting loue to *Mopsa*, and saying to *Mopsa* whatsoeuer hee would haue her know: and in how passionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third person, making poore *Mopsa* beleue, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, because you shall know my teares come not, neither of repentance nor misery, who thinke you, is 30 my *Dorus* fallen out to be? euen the Prince *Musidorus*, famous ouer all *Asia*, for his heroicall enterprises, of whom you remember how much good the straunger *Plangus* told my father; he not being drowned (as *Plangus* thought) though his cosin *Pyrocles* indeede perished. Ah my sister, if you had heard his words, or seene his gestures, when he made me know what, and to whom his loue was, you would haue 35 matched in your selfe (those two rarely matched together) pitie and delight. Tell me deare sister (for the Gods are my witnesses I desire to do vertuously) can I without the detestable stain of vngratefulnesse abstaine from louing him, who (farre exceeding the beautifullnesse of his shape with the beautifullnesse of his mind, and the greatnesse of his estate with the greatnesse of his actes) is content so to abase 40 himselfe, as to become *Dametas* seruant for my sake? you will say, but how know I him to be *Musidorus*, since the hand maid of wisdom is slow of beliefe? That consideration did not want in me: for the nature of desire it selfe is no easier to receiue beliefe, then it is hard to ground beliefe. For as desire is glad to embrace the first shew of comfort, so is desire desirous of perfect assurance: and that haue I had of 45 him, not onely by necessary arguments to any of common sense, but by sufficient demonstrations. Lastly he would haue me send to *Theffalia*: but truly I am not as now in mind to do my honourable loue so much wrong, as so farre to suspect him:

yet

yet poore soule knowes he no other, but that I do both suspect, neglect, yea and detest him. For euery day he finds one way or other to set forth himselfe vnto me, but all are rewarded with like coldnesse of acceptation.

A few dayes since, he and *Dametas* had furnished themselues very richly to run at the ring before me. O how mad a sight it was to see *Dametas*, like rich Tislew furd with lambe-skins? But o how well it did with *Dorus*, to see with what a grace hee presented himselfe before me on horsebacke, making maiestie wait vpon humbleness? how at the first, standing still with his eyes bent vpon me, as though his motions were chained to my looke, he so staid till I caused *Mopsa* bid him do something vpon his horse: which no sooner sayd, but (with a kinde rather of quicke gesture, then shew of violence) you might see him come towards me, beating the ground in so due time, as no dancer can obserue better measure. If you remember the ship we saw once, when the sea went hie vpon the coast of *Argos*; so went the beast. But he (as if Centaurlike he had bene one peece with the horse) was no more moued then one is with the going of his owne leggs: and in effect so did he command him, as his owne limmes: for though he had both spurres and wand, they seemed rather markes of soueraignty, then instruments of punishment; his hand and legge (with most pleasing grace) commanding without threatning, and rather remembring the chastising, at least if sometimes he did, it was so stolne, as neither our eyes could discern it, nor the horse with any change did complaine of it: he euer going so iust with the horse, either forth right, or turning, that it seemed as he borrowed the horses body, so he lent the horse his mind: in the turning one might perceiue the bridle-hand something gently stirre, but indeede so gently, as it did rather distill vertue, then vse violence. Him selfe (which mee thinkes is strange) shewing at one instant both steadinesse and nimblenesse; some times making him turne close to the ground, like a cat, when scratchingly she wheelles about after a mouse: sometimes with a little more rising before, now like a Rauens leaping from ridge to ridge, then like one of *Dametas* kiddes bound ouer the hillockes: and all so done, as neither the lusty kinde shewed any roughnesse, nor the easier any idlenesse: but still like a well obeyed maister, whose becke is enough for a discipline, euer concluding each thing hee did with his face to me-wards, as if thence came not onely the beginning, but ending of his motions. The sport was to see *Dametas*, how he was tost from the saddle to the mane of the horse, and thence to the ground, giuing his gay apparell almost as foule an outside, as it had an inside. But as before hee had euer sayd, he wanted but horse and apparell to be as braue a courtier as the best, so now bruised with prooffe, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wisdom, to put himselfe vnder the tuition of a beast; so as *Dorus* was faine alone to take the Ring. Wherein truely at least my womanish eyes could not discern, but that raking his staffe from his thigh, the descending it a little downe, the getting of it vp into the rest, the letting of the pointe fall, and taking the Ring was but all one motion, at least (if they were diuerse motions) they did so stealingly slippe one into another, as the latter parte was euer in hand, before the eye could discern the former was ended. Indeede *Dametas* found fault that he shewed no more strength in shaking of his staffe: but to my conceite the fine cleannesse of bearing it was exceeding delightfull.

But how delightfull soeuer it was, my delight might well be in my soule, but it neuer went to looke out of the window to doe him any comfort. But how much more I found reason to like him, the more I set all the strength of mind to suppress

it, or at least to conceale it. Indeepe I must confesse, that as some Phisitions haue told me, that when one is cold outwardly, he is not inwardly; so truly the cold ashes layd vpon my fire, did not take the nature of fire from it. Full often hath my breast swollen with keeping my sighes imprisoned; full often haue the teares I draue backe from mine eyes, turned backe to drowne my hart. But alas what did that helpe poore *Dorus*; whose eyes (being his diligent intelligencers) could carry vnto him no other newes, but discomfortable. I thinke no day past, but by some one inuention he wold appeare vnto me to testifie his loue. One time he daunced the Marachine daunce in armour (ô with what a gracefull dexterity!) I thinke to make me see, that he had bin brought vp in such exercises: an other time he perswaded his maister (to make my time seeme shorter) in maner of a Dialogue, to play *Priamus* while he playd *Paris*. Thinke (sweete *Philoclea*) what a *Priamus* we had: but truly, my *Paris* was a *Paris*, and more then a *Paris*: who while in a sauage apparell, with naked necke, armes, & legs, he made loue to *Oenone*, you might well see by his chaunged countenance, and true teares, that he felt the part he playd. Tell me (sweete *Philoclea*) did you euer see such a shepheard? tell mee, did you euer heare of such a Prince? And then tell me, if a small or vnworthy assault haue conquered mee. Truly I would hate my life, if I thought vanity led me. But since my parents deale so cruelly with mee, it is time for me to trust something to my owne iudgement. Yet hitherto haue my lookes beene as I told you, which continuing after many of these his fruitlesse trials, haue wrought such change in him, as I tell you true (with that word she layd her hand vpon her quaking side) I do not a little feare him. See what a letter this is (then drew she the curtaine, and tooke the letter from vnder the pillow) which to day (with an afflicted humblenesse) he deliuered me, pretending before *Mopsa*, that I should reade it vnto her, to mollifie (forsooth) her iron stomacke; with that she read the letter containing thus much.

Most blessed paper, which shalt kisse that hand, where to all blessednes is in nature a seruant, do not yet disdain to cary with thee the wofull words of a miser now despairing: neither be afraide to appeare before her, bearing the base title of the sencer. For no sooner shall that diuine hand touch thee, but that thy basenesse shall bee turned to most high preferment. Therefore mourne boldly my inke; for while she looks vpon you, your blackenesse will shine: cry out boldly my lamentation; for while she reade you, your cries will be musicke. Say then (ô happie messenger of a most unhappy message) that the too soone borne, and too late dying creature, which dares not speake, no not looke, no not scarcely thinke (as from his miserable selfe, vnto her heavenly highnesse) onely presumes to desire thee (in the time that her eyes and voyce do exalt thee) to say, and in this manner to say, not from him, ô no, that were not fitte, but of him, thus much vnto her sacred iudgement: O you, the onely honour to women, to men the onely admiration, you that being armed by loue, desie him that armed you, in this high estate wherein you haue placed mee, yet let me remember him to whom I am bound for bringing me to your presence; and let me remember him, who (since he is yours, how meane so euer he be) it is reason you haue an account of him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languishing steppes runnes fast to his graue, and will you suffer a temple (how poorely built soeuer, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be rased? But he dieth: it is most true, he dieth; and he in whom you liue, to obey you, dieth. Whereof though he plaine, he doth not complaine: for it is a harme, but no wrong, which he

he hath receiued. He dies, because in wofull language all his senses tell him, that such is your pleasure: for since you will not that he liue, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth of the most ruined *Dorus*, but his end? End then, euill destinied *Dorus*, end; and end thou wofull letter, end; for it sufficeth her wisdom to know, that her heavenly will shall be accomplished.

O my *Philoclea*, is he a person to write these words? and are these words lightly to be regarded? But if you had seene, when with trembling hand he had deliuered it, how he went away, as if he had beene but the coffin that carried himselfe to his sepulcher. Two times (I must confesse) I was about to take curtesie into mine eyes; but both times the former resolution stopt the entrie of it: so that he departed without obtaining any further kindnesse. But he was no sooner out of the dore, but that I looked to the dore kindly; and truly the feare of him euer since hath put me into such perplexity, as now you found me. Ah my *Pamela* (sayd *Philoclea*) leaue sorrow. The riuer of your teares will soone loose his fountaine; it is in your hand as well to stitch vp his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And so (though with selfe-griued mind) she comforted her sister, till sleepe came to bath himselfe in *Pamelas* faire weeping eyes.

Which when *Philoclea* found, wringing her hands, O me (sayd she) indeede the onely subiect of the destinies displeasure, whose greatest fortunatenesse is more vnfortunate, then my sisters greatest vnfortunatenesse. Alas she weepes because shee would be no sooner happy; I weepe, because I can neuer be happie; her teares flow from pittie; mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet do I not enuy thee, deare *Pamela*, I do not enuy thee, onely I could wish that being thy sister in nature, I were not so farre off a kin in fortune.

But the darkenesse of sorrow ouer-shadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themselves vnder the wings of sleepe, till the next morning had almost lost his name, before the two sweete sleeping sisters awaked from dreames, which flattered them with more comfort, then their waking could, or would consent vnto. For then they were called vp by *Miso*, who hauing bene with *Gynecia*, had receiued commandement to be continually with her daughters, and particularly not to let *Zelmane*, and *Philoclea* haue any priuate conference, but that she should be present to heare what passed. *Miso* hauing now her authority increased, but came with skowling eyes to deliuer a slauering good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a shame for them to marre their complexions, yea and conditions too, with long lying a bed: and that, when she was of their age, she throwed, she would haue made a hand-kerchiefe by that time a day. The two sweete Princes with a smiling silence answered her entertainment, and obeying her direction, couered their dainty beauties with the glad clothes. But as soone as *Pamela* was ready (and sooner she was then her sister) the agony of *Dorus* giuing a fit to her selfe, which the words of his letter (liuely imprinted in her mind) still remembered her of, she called to *Mopsa*, and willed her to fetch *Dorus* to speake with her: because (she sayd) she would take further iudgement of him, before she would moue *Damet* as to graunt her in mariage vnto him, *Mopsa* (as glad as of sweet-meate to goe of such an arrant) quickly returned with *Dorus* to *Pamela*, who entended both by speaking with him to giue some comfort to his passionate heart, and withall to heare some part of his life past; which although fame had already deliuered vnto her, yet she desired in more particular certainties to haue it from so beloued an historian. Yet the sweetnesse of vertues disposition, ialous, euen ouer

it selfe, suffered her not to enter abruptlie into questions of *Musidorus* (whom shee was halfe ashamed she did loue so well, and more then halfe fory she could loue no better) but thought best first to make her talke arise of *Pyrocles*, and his vertuous father: which thus she did.

Dorus (sayd she) you told me the last day, that *Plangus* was deceiued in that he affirmed the Prince *Musidorus* was drowned: but withall, you confessed his cosin *Pyrocles* perished; of whom certainly in that age there was a great losse, since (as I haue heard) he was a young Prince, of whom all men expected as much, as mans power could bring forth, and yet vertue promised for him, their expectation should not bee deceiued. Most excellent Lady (sayd *Dorus*) no expectation in others, nor hope in 10 himselfe could aspire to a higher marke, then to be thought worthy to be praised by your iudgement, and made worthy to be praised by your mouth. But most sure it is, that as his fame could by no meanes get so sweet & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, so could not you (leauing your selfe aside) finde in the world a fitter subiect of commendation; as noble, as a long succession of royall ancestors, famous, and fa- 15 mous for victories could make him: of shape most louely, and yet of mind more louely; valiant, curteous, wise, what should I say more? sweete *Pyrocles*, excellent *Pyrocles*, what can my words but wrong thy perfections, which I wold to God in some small measure thou hadst bequeathed to him that euer must haue thy vertues in admiration; that masked at least in them, I might haue found some more gracious ac- 20 ceptation? with that he imprisoned his looke for a while vpon *Mopsa*, who thereupon fell into a very wide smiling. Truly (sayd *Pamela*) *Dorus* I like well your mind, that can raise it selfe out of so base a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating so excellent a Prince, as *Pyrocles* was. Who shootes at the midday Sunne, though he be sure he shall neuer hit the marke; yet as sure he is, he shall shoote higher, then 25 who aimes but at a bush. But I pray you *Dorus* (sayd she) tell me (since I perceiue you are well acquainted with that story) what Prince was that *Euarchus* father to *Pyrocles* of whom so much fame goes, for his rightly royall vertues, or by what waies hee got that opinion. And then to descend to the causes of his sending first away from him, and then to him for that excellent sonne of his, with the discourse of his life and 30 losse: and therein you may (if you list) say something of that same *Musidorus* his cosin, because, they going together, the story of *Pyrocles* (which I only desire) may be the better vnderstood.

Incomparable Lady (sayd he) your commandement doth not only giue me the will, but the power to obey you, such influence hath your excellency. And first, for 35 that famous king *Euarchus*, he was (at this time you speake of) king of *Macedon*, a kingdom, which in elder time had such a soueraintie ouer all the prouinces of *Greece*, that euen the particular kings therein did acknowledge (with more or lesse degrees of homage) some kind of fealty thereunto: as among the rest, euen this now most noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of *Arcadia*. But he, when he came to his 40 crown, finding by his latter ancestors either negligence, or misfortune, that in some ages many of those dueties had beene intermitted, would neuer stirre vp old titles (how apparant soeuer) whereby the publike peace (with the losse of many not guiltie soules) should be broken; but contenting himselfe to guide that shippe, wherein the heauens had placed him, shewed no lesse magnanimity in daungerlesse despi- 45 sing, then others in daungerous affecting the multiplying of kingdomes: for the earth hath since borne enow bleeding witness, that it was no want of true courage. Who as he was most wise to see what was best, and most iust in the perfourming what

what he saw, & temperate in abstaining from any thing any way contrarie : so think I, no thought can imagine a greater heart to see and contemne danger, where danger would offer to make anie wrongfull threatning vpon him. A Prince, that indeed especially measured his greatnesse by his goodnesse: & if for any thing he loved greatnesse, it was, because therein he might exercise his goodnesse. A Prince of a goodly aspect, and the more goodly by a graue maiestie, wherewith his minde did decke his outward graces; strong of bodie, and so much the stronger, as he by a well disciplined exercise taught it both to do & suffer. Of age so as he was about fifty yeares when his Nephew *Musidorus* tooke on such shepheardish apparell for the loue of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

This King left Orphan both of father & mother, (whose father and grandfather likewise had died yong) he found his estate, when he came to the age (which allowed his authoritie) so disioynted euen in the noblest & strongest lims of gouernment, that the name of a King was growne euen odious to the people, his authoritie hauing bin abused by those great Lords, and litle kings: who in those betweene times of raigning (by vniust fauouring those that were partially theirs, and oppressing them that would defend their libertie against them had brought in (by a more felt then seen maner of proceeding) the worst kind of *Oligarchie*; that is, when men are gouerned in deede by a few, and yet are not taught to know what those fewe be, to whom they should obey.

For they hauing the power of kings, but not the nature of kings, vsed the authoritie as men do their farmes, of which they see within a yeare they shal go out: making the Kings sword strike whom they hated, the Kings purse reward whome they loued: and (which is worst of all) making the Royall countenance serue to vndermine the royal soueraintie. For the Subiects could taste no sweeter fruits of hauing a king, then grieuous taxations to serue vaine purposes; Lawes made rather to finde faultes, then to preuent faults: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priuiledged place of vnbridled licentiousnesse, then as the abiding of him, who as a father, should giue a fatherly example vnto his people. Hence grew a verie dissolution of all estates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition neuer satisfied) grew factious among themselues: and the vnderlings, glad in deede to be vnderlings to them they hated least, to preserue them from such they hated most. Men of vertue suppressed, least their shining should discouer the others filthinesse; and at length vertue it selfe almost forgotten, when it had no hopefull end wherunto to be directed; old men long nussed in corruption, scorning them that would seeke reformation; yong men verie fault-finding, but verie faultlesse: and so to newfanglednesse both of manners, apparell, and each thing els, by the custome of selfe-guiltie euill, glad to change though oft for a worse; marchandise abused, and so townes decayed for want of iust and naturall libertie; offices, euen of iudging foules, solde; publike defences neglected; and in summe, (lest too long I trouble you) all awrie, & (which wried it to the most wrie course of all) witte abused, rather to faine reason why it should be amisse, then how it should be amended.

In this, and a much worse plight then it is fit to trouble your excellent eares withall, did the king *Euarchus* find his estate, when he tooke vpon him the regiment: which by reason of the long streame of abuse, he was forced to establish by some euen extreme seueritie, not so much for the verie faults themselues, (which he rather sought to preuent then to punish) as for the faultie ones, who strong, euen in their faults, scorned his youth, and could not learne to digest, that the man which

they so long had vsed to maske their owne appetites, should now be the reducer of them into order. But so soone as some fewe (but in deede notable) examples, had thundered a duetie into the subiects hearts, he soone shewed, no basenesse of suspicion, nor the basest basenesse of enuy, could any whit rule such a Ruler. But then shined foorth in deede all loue among them, when an awfull feare, ingendred by iustice, did make that loue most lonely: his first and principall care being to appeare vnto his people, such as he would haue them be, and to be such as he appeared; making his life the example of his lawes, and his lawes as it were, his axioms arising out of his deedes. So that within small time, he wanne a singular loue in his people, and engrafted singular confidence. For how could they choose but loue him, whom they found so truly to loue them? He euen in reason disdaining, that they that haue charge of beastes, should loue their charge, and care for them; and that he that was to gouerne the most excellent creature, should not loue so noble a charge. And therefore, where most Princes (seduced by flatterie to build vpon false grounds of gouernment) make themselues (as it were) another thing from the people; and so count it gaine what they get from them: and (as if it were two counter-ballances, that their estate goes hieft when the people goes lowest) by a fallacie of argument thinking themselues most Kings, when the subiect is most basely subiected: He contrariwise, vertuously and wisely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof himselfe was the head; euen so cared for them, as he would for his owne limmes: neuer restraining their libertie, without it stretched to licentiousnesse, nor pulling from them their goods, which they found were not employed to the purchase of a greater good: but in all his actions shewing a delight in their welfare, brought that to passe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their loue he had all. In summe (peerelesse Princeesse) I might as easily set down the whole Arte of gouernement, as to laie before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in such sort he flourished in the sweete comfort of doing much good, when by an occasion of leauing his countrey, he was forced to bring foorth his vertue of magnanimitie, as before he had done of iustice.

He had onely one sister, a Ladie (lest I should too easilie fall to partiall praises of her) of whom it may be iustly said, that she was no vnfit branch to the noble stocke whereof she was come. Her he had giuen in mariage to *Dorilaus* Prince of *Thessalia*, not so much to make a friendship, as to confirme the friendship betweene their posteritie, which betweene them, by the likenesse of vertue, had beene long before made: for certainly, *Dorilaus*, could need no amplifiers mouth for the highest point of praise. Who hath not heard (said *Pamela*) of the valiant, wise, and iust *Dorilaus*, whose vnripe death doth yet (so many yeares since) draw teares from vertuous eyes? And in deede, my father is wont to speake of nothing with greater admiration, then of the notable friendship (a rare thing in Princes, more rare betweene Princes (that so holily was obserued to the last of those two excellent men. But (said she) go on I pray you. *Dorilaus* (said he) hauing married his sister, had his marriage in short time blest (for so are folke wont to saie, how unhappie soeuer the children after grow) with a sonne, whom they named *Musidorus*: of whome I must needs first speake before I come to *Pyrocles*; because as he was borne first, so vpon his occasion grewe (as I may saie accidentally) the others birth. For scarcely was *Musidorus* made partaker of this oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of Southsayers, who affirmed strange & incredible things should be performed by that child; whether the heauens at that time listd to play with ignorant mankind, or that flatterie

be so presumptuous, as euen at times to borrow the face of Diuinitie. But certainly,
 so did the boldnesse of their affirmation accompanie the greatnesse of what they
 did affirme (euen descending to particularities, what kingdoms he should overcome)
 that the king of *Phrygia* (who ouer-superstitiously thought himselfe touched in the
 matter) sought by force to destroy the infant, to preuent his after-expectations: be-
 cause a skilful man (hauing compared his natiuity with the child) so told him. Foo-
 lish man, either vainly fearing what was not to be feared, or not considering that if it
 were a worke of the superiour powers, the heauens at length are neuer children.
 But so he did, and by the aid of the Kings of *Lydia* and *Crete* (ioining together their
 armies) inuaded *Thessalia*, and brought *Dorilaus* to some behind-hand of fortune,
 when his faithfull friend and brother *Euarchus* came so mightily to his succour, that
 with some enterchanging changes of fortune, they begat of a iust war, the best
 child, peace. In which time *Euarchus* made a crosse mariage also with *Dorilaus* his si-
 ster, and shortly left her with child of the famous *Pyrocles*, driuen to returne to the
 defence of his owne countrie, which in his absence (helped with some of the ill
 contented nobilitie) the mighty King of *Thrace*, and his brother, King of *Pannonia*,
 had inuaded. The successe of those warres was too notable to be vnknowne to your
 cares, to which it seemes all worthie fame hath glorie to come vnto. But there was
Dorilaus (valiantly requiting his friends helpe) in a great battaile deprived of life,
 his obsequies being no more solemnized by the teares of his partakers, then the
 bloud of his enemies; with so piercing a sorrow to the constant heart of *Euarchus*,
 that the newes of his sonnes birth could lighten his countenance with no shew of
 comfort, although all the comfort that might be in a child, truth it self in him forth-
 with deliuered. For what fortune onely southsayers foretold of *Musidorus*, that all
 men might see prognosticated in *Pyrocles*, both Heauens & Earth giuing tokens of
 the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The senate house of the planets was at
 no time so set, for the decreeing of perfection in a man, as at that time all folkes skil-
 full therein did acknowledge: only loue was threatned, & promised to him, & so to
 his cousin, as both the tempest & hauen of their best yeares. But as death may haue
 preuented *Pyrocles*, so vnworthinesse must be the death of *Musidorus*.
 But the mother of *Pyrocles* (shortly after her child birth) dying, was cause that
Euarchus recommended the care of his onely sonne to his sister; doing it the rather
 because the warre continued in cruell heat, betwixt him and those euill neighbours
 of his. In which meane time those young Princees (the onely comforters of that ver-
 tuous widow) grewe on so, that *Pyrocles* taught admiration to the hardest conceits:
Musidorus (perchaunce because among his subiects) exceedingly beloued: and by
 the good order of *Euarchus* (well performed by his sister) they were so brought vp,
 that all the sparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in them, were so blowne to
 giue forth their vttermost heat, that iustly it may be affirmed, they enflamed the af-
 fections of all that knew them. For almost before they could perfectly speake, they
 began to receiue conceits not vnworthie of the best speakers: excellent deuises be-
 ing vsed, to make euen their sports profitable; images of battailes, and fortifications
 being then deliuered to their memorie, which after, their stronger iudgemets might
 dispence, the delight of rales being conuerted to the knowledge of all the stories of
 worthie Princes both to moue them to do nobly, and teach them how to do nobly;
 the beautie of vertue still being set before their eyes, and that taught them with far
 more diligent care, then Grammaticall rules, their bodies exercised in all abilities,
 both of doing and suffering, and their minds acquainted by degrees with daungers,

and in summe, all bent to the making vp of princely mindes: no seruile feare vsed towards them, nor any other violent restraint, but still as to Princes: so that a habite of commaunding was naturalized in them, & therefore the farther from Tyrannie: Nature hauing done so much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builded.

Among which nothing I so much delight to recount, as the memorable friendship that grew betwixt the two Princes, such as made them more like then the likeness of all other vertues, and made them more neere one to the other, then the neerenes of their blood could aspire vnto; which I thinke grew the faster, and the faster was tied betweene them, by reason that *Musidorus* being elder by three or 10
four yeares, it was neither so great a difference in age as did take away the delight in societie, and yet by the difference there was taken away the occasion of childish contentions; till they had both past ouer the humour of such contentions. For *Pyrocles* bare reuerence full of loue to *Musidorus*, and *Musidorus* had a delight full of loue in *Pyrocles*. *Musidorus*, what he had learned either for bodie or minde, would 15
teach it to *Pyrocles*; and *Pyrocles* was so glad to learne of none, as of *Musidorus*: till *Pyrocles*, being come to sixteene yeares of age, he seemed so to ouerrun his age in growth, strength, and all things following it, that not *Musidorus*, no nor any man liuing (I thinke) could performe any action, either on horse, or foote, more strongly, or deliuer that strength more nimble, or become the deliuerie more gracefully, or im- 20
ploy all more vertuously. Which may well seeme wonderfull: but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull subiect.

At which time, vnderstanding that the King *Euarchus*, after so many yeares warre, and the conquest of all *Pannonia*, and almost *Thrace*, had now brought the conclusion of all to the siege of *Bizantium* (to the raising of which siege great forces 25
were made) they would needes fall to the practise of those vertues, which they before learned. And therefore the mother of *Musidorus* nobly yeelding ouer her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother shee was in effect to them both) the rather that they might helpe her beloued brother, they brake off all delays; which *Musidorus* for his part thought alreadie had deuoured too much of his good time, 30
but that he had once graunted a boone (before he knew what it was) to his deere friend *Pyrocles*; that he would neuer seeke the aduentures of armes, vntill he might go with him: which hauing fast bound his hart (a true slaue to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne humour for his friends sake, till now being both sent for by *Euarchus*, and finding *Pyrocles* able euery way to go thorow with 35
that kinde of life, he was as desirous for his sake, as for his owne, to enter into it. So therefore preparing a nauie, that they might go like themselues, and not only bring the comfort of their presence, but of their power to their deere parent *Euarchus*, they recommended themselues to the Sea, leauing the shore of *Theffalia* full of teares and vowes; and were receiued thereon with so smooth and smiling a face, as 40
if *Neptune* had as then learned falsely to fawne on Princes. The winde was like a seru-
uant, wayting behind them so iust, that they might fill the sailes as they listed; and the best saylers shewing themselues lesse couetous of his liberalitie, so tempered it, that they all kept together like a beaurifull flocke, which so well could obey their
maisters pipe: without sometimes, to delight the Princes eyes, some two or three 45
of them would striue, who could either by the cunning of well spending the windes breath, or by the aduantageous building of their mouing houses) leaue their fel-
lowes behind them in the honour of speede: while the two Princes had leasure

to see the practise of that, which before they had learned by bookes : to consider the art of catching the winde prisoner, to no other end, but to runne away with it; to see how beautie, and vse can so well agree together, that of all the trinckets, where-with they are attired, there is not one but serues to some necessarie purpose. And
 5 (ô Lord) to see the admirable power and noble effects of Loue, whereby the seeming insensible Loadstone, with a secret beautie (holding the spirit of iron in it) can draw that hardharted thing vnto it, and (like a vertuous mistresse) not onely make it bow it selfe, but with it make it aspire to so high a Loue, as of the heauenly Poles; and thereby to bring forth the noblest deedes, that the children of the Earth can
 10 boast of. And so the Princes delighting their conceits with confirming their knowledge, seeing wherein the Sea-discipline differed from Land-seruice, they had for a day and almost a whole night, as pleasing entertainment, as the falsest hart could giue to him he meanes worst to.

But by that the next morning began a little to make a guilden shewe of a good
 15 meaning, there arose euen with the Sunne, a vaile of darke cloudes before his face, which shortly (like inke powred into water) had blacked ouer all the face of heauen; preparing (as it were) a mournfull stage for a Tragedie to be played on. For forth-with the windes began to speake lowder, and as in a tumultuous kingdom, to think themselues fittest instruments of commaundement; and blowing whole stormes
 20 of haile and raine vpon them, they were sooner in daunger, then they could almost bethinke themselues of change. For then the traitorous Seabegan to swell in pride against the afflicted Nauie, vnder which (while the heauen fauoured them) it had layne so calmedly, making mountaines of it selfe, ouer which the tossed and tottring ship should clime, to be streight carried downe againe to a pit of hellish darknesse;
 25 with such cruell blowes against the sides of the ship (that which way so euer it went, was still in his malice) that there was left neither power to stay, nor way to escape. And shortly had it so disseuered the louing companie, which the day before had tarried together, that most of them neuer met againe, but were swallowed vp in his neuer-satisfied mouth. Some in deede (as since was knowne) after long wandring
 30 returned into *Theffalia*; other recovered *Bizantium*, and serued *Euarehus* in his warre. But in the ship wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud Lords be when fortune failes them) though they employed all industrie to saue themselues, yet what they did, was rather for duetic to nature, then hope to escape. So ougly a darknesse, as if it would preuent the nights comming, vsurped the dayes
 35 right: which accompanied sometimes with thunders, alwayes with horrible noyses of the chafing windes) made the masters and pilots so astonished, that they knew not how to direct, and if they knew, they could scarcely (when they directed) heare their owne whistle. For the sea straue with the windes which should be lowder, and the shrouds of the ship with a ghastfull noise to them that were in it, witnessed,
 40 that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heauen roaring out thunders the more amazed them, as hauing those powers for enemies. Certainly there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in those floting kingdomes. For that dwelling place is vnnaturall to mankind, and then the terriblenesse of the continual motion, the desolation of the far-being from
 45 comfort, the eye and the eare hauing ougly images euer before it, doth still yexe the mind, euen when it is best armed against it. But thus the day past (if that might be called a day) while the cunningest mariners were so conquered by the storme, as they thought it best with stricken sailes to yeeld to be gouerned by it: the valiantest

feeling inward disinayednesse, and yet the fearfullest ashamed fully to shew it, seeing that the Princes (who were to part from the greatest fortunes) did in their countenances accuse no point of feare, but encouraging them to do what might be done (putting their hands to euerie most painfull office) taught them at one instant to promise themselves the best, and yet to despise the worst. But so were they carried by the tyrannie of the winde, and the treason of the Sea, all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it shewed it selfe towards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glasse, then by the day cleerenesse) hauing runne fortune as blindly, as it selfe euer was painted, lest the conclusion should not aunswere to the rest of the play, they were driven vpon a rocke: which hidden with those outrageous waues, did, as it were, closely dissemble his cruell minde, till with an vnbeleued violence (but to them that haue tried it) the ship ranne vpon it; and seeming willinger to perish then to haue her course stayed, redoubled her blowes, till shee had broken her selfe in peeces; and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the seas greedinesse, lest nothing within it, but despaire of safetie, and expectation of a lothsome end. There was to be seene the diuerse maner of mindes in distresse: some fate vpon the top of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the sea swallowed them; some one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to preuent drowning; some prayed, and there wanted not of them which cursed, as if the heauens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monstrosous crie begotten of manie roaring voices, was able to infect with feare a minde that had not preuented it with the power of reason.

But the Princes vsing the passions of fearing euill, and desiring to escape, onely to serue the rule of vertue, not to abandō ones self, leapt to a ribbe of the ship, which broken from his fellowes, floted with more likelyhood to do seruice, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; vpon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne seruants of theirs; and streight they foure were caried out of sight, in that huge rising of the sea, from the rest of the ship. But the peece they were on sinking by little and little vnder them, not able to support the weight of so manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was *Leucippus*, the yonger *Nellus*) shewed themselves right faithfull and gratefull seruants vnto them; gratefull (I saie) for this cause: Those two gentlemen had bene taken prisoners in the great warre the king of *Thrygia* made vpon *Thessalia*, in the time of *Musidorus* his infancie; and hauing beene sold into another countrie (though peace fell after betweene these Realmes) could not be deliuered, because of their valour knowne, but for a farre greater summe, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in respect of the great expences her selfe and people had beene put to in those warres; and so had they remained in prison about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing speeches of their good deserts) found meanes both by selling all the Iewels they had of great price, and by giuing vnder their handes great estates when they should come to be Kings (which promises their vertue promised for them should be kept) to get so much treasure as redeemed them from captiuitie. This remembred, and kindly remembred by these two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall duetie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde of the boord, committing themselves to the seas rage, and euen when they meant to die, themselves praying for the Princes liues. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, so moued the Princes hearts as the tenderesse of that louing part, farre from

from glorie, hauing so few lookers on; far from hope of reward, since themselves were sure to perish.

But now of all the royall Nauie they lately had, they had left but one litle peece of one ship, whereon they kept themselves in all truth, hauing enterchanged their cares, while either cared for other, each comforting and counselling how to labour for the better, and to abide the worse. But so fell it out, that as they were caried by the tide (which there seconded by the storme ran exceeding swiftly) *Musidorus* seeing (as he thought) *Pyrocles* not well vpon the boord, as he would with his right hand haue helped him on better, he had no sooner vnfastened his holde, but that a waue forcible spoiled his weaker hand of hold, & so for a time parted those friends, each crying to the other, but the noise of the sea drowned their farewell, But *Pyrocles* (then carelesse of death, if it had come by any means, but his owne) was shortly brought out of the seas furie to the lands comfort, when (in my conscience I know) that comfort was but bitter vnto him: and bitter indeed it fell out euen in it selfe to be vnto him.

For being cast on land much bruised and beaten both with the seas hard farewell, and the shores rude welcome; and euen almost deadly tyred with the length of his vncomfortable labour, as he was walking vp to discouer some bodie, to whom he might go for reliefe, there came straight running vnto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne) by appointment watched (with manie others) in diuerse places along the coast: who laid hands of him, and without either questioning with him, or shewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worse, hauing no regard to the hard plight he was in (being so wet and weake) they caried him some miles thence, to a house of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more ciuilitie (though with much more businesse then those vnderfellowes had shewed) began in captious maner to put interrogatories vnto him. To which (he vnused to such entertainment) did shortly and plainly answere, what he was, and how he came thither. But that no sooner knowne, with numbers of armed men to guard him (for mischiefe, not from mischiefe) he was sent to the kings Court, which as then was not aboue a dayes journey off, with letters from that officer, containing his owne seruiceable diligence in discouering so great a personage, adding withall more then was true of his coniectures, because he would endeare his owne seruice.

This countrie whereon he fell was Phrygia, and it was to the king thereof to whom he was sent, a Prince of a melancholie constitution both of bodie & mind; wickedlie sad, euer musing of horrible matters; suspecting, or rather condemning all men of euill, because his mind had no eye to espie goodnesse: and therefore accusing *Sycophantes* of all men did best sort to his nature; but therefore not seeming *Sycophantes*, because of no euill they said, they could bring any new or doubtful thing vnto him, but such as already he had bene apt to determine; so as they came but as proofes of his wisdom: fearfull and neuer secure; while the feare he had figured in his mind had any possibilitie of euent. A tode-like retirednesse, and closenesse of mind; nature teaching the odioufnesse of poyson, and the daunger of odioufnesse. Yet while youth lasted in him, the exercises of that age, and his humour (not yet fullie discouered) made him something the more frequentable, and lesse daungerous. But after that yeares began to come on with some, though more seldome shewes of a bloudie nature, and that the prophetic of *Musidorus* destinie came to his cares (deliuered vnto him, and receiued of him with the hardest

interpretation, as though his subiects did delight in the hearing thereof.) Then gaue he himselfe indeed to the full currant of his disposition, especiallie after the warre of Thessalia, wherein (though in truth wrongly) he deemed, his vnsuccesse proceeded of their vnwillingnesse to haue him prosper: and then thinking himselfe contemned, (knowing no countermine against contempt, but terrour) began to let 5 nothing passe which might beare the colour of a fault, without sharp punishment: and when he wanted faults, excellencie grew a fault; and it was sufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be guiltie. And as there is no humour, to which impudent pouertie cannot make it selfe seruiceable, so were there enow of those of desperate ambition, who would build their houses vpon others ruines, which after 10 should fall by like practises. So as seruitude came mainly vpon that poore people, whose deedes were not onely punished, but words corrected, and euen thoughts by some meane or other puld out of them: while suspition bred the mind of cruelty, and the effects of crueltie stirred a new cause of supition. And in this plight (full of watchfull fearefulnesse) did the storme deliuer sweet *Pyrocles* to the stormy minde 15 of that Tyrant, all men that did such wrong to so rare a straunger (whose countenance deserued both pitie and admiration) condemning themselues as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their forces.

But when this bloody king knew what he was, and in what order he and his cosin *Musidorus* (so much of him feared) were come out of *Thessalia*, assuredly thinking 20 (because euer thinking the worst) that those forces were provided against him; glad of the perishing (as he thought of *Musidorus*, determined in publike sort to put *Pyrocles* to death. For hauing quite lost the way of noblenesse, he straued to clime to the height of terriblenesse; and thinking to make all men adread, to make such one anemie, who would not spare, nor feare to kill so great a Prince; and lastlie, 25 hauing nothing in him why to make him his friend, he thought he would take him away from being his enemie. The day was appointed, and all things appointed for that cruell blow, in so solemne an order, as if they wold set forth tyranny in most gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of inuincible valour, yet so vniustly subiect to such outrageous wrong, carying himselfe in all his demeanour so constantly abiding extremitie, that one might see it was the cutting away of the greatest hope 30 of the world, and destroying vertue in his sweetest growth.

But so it fell out, that his death was preuented by a rare example of friendship in *Musidorus*: who being almost drowned, had bene taken vp by a Fisherman belonging to the kingdom of Pontus; & being there, & vnderstanding the full discourse (as 35 Fame was verie prodigall of so notable an accident) in what case *Pyrocles* was; learning withall, that his hate was farre more to him then to *Pyrocles*, he found means to acquaint himselfe with a noble man of that Countrie, to whom largely discouering what he was, he found him a most fit instrument to effectuate his desire. For this Nobleman had bene one, who in many warres had serued *Euarchus*, and had 40 bin so mind-stricke by the beautie of vertue in that noble king, that (though not born his subiect) he euer profest himselfe his seruant. His desire therefore to him was, to keepe *Musidorus* in a strong Castle of his, and then to make the king of *Phrygia* vnderstand that if he would deliuer *Pyrocles*, *Musidorus* would willinglie put himself into his hands; knowing well, that how thirstie soeuer he was of *Pyrocles* blood, he would rather drinke that of *Musidorus*. 45

The Nobleman was loth to preferue one by the losse of another, but time vrging resolution; the importunitie of *Musidorus* (who shewed a minde not to ouer-

ouerlieue *Pyrocles*) with the affection he bare to *Euarchus*, so preuailed, that he caried this strange offer of *Musidorus*, which by that Tyrant was greedilie accepted.

And so vpon securitie of both sides, they were enterchanged. Where I may not omit the worke of friendship in *Pyrocles*, who both in speech & countenance to *Musidorus*, well shewed, that he thought himselfe iniured, and not relieued by him: asking him, what he had euer seene in him, why he could not beare the extremities of mortall accidents as well as any man? and why he should enuy him the glorie of suffering death for his friends cause, and (as it were) rob him of his owne possession? But in this notable contention (where the conquest must be the conquerers destruction, and safety the punishment of the conquered) *Musidorus* preuailed: because he was a more welcome praye to the vniust king, and as chearefully going towards, as *Pyrocles* went frowardly frōward his death, he was deliuered to the king, who could not be enough sure of him, without he fed his own eyes vpon one, whom he had begun to feare, as soone as the other began to be.

Yet because hee would in one act, both make ostentation of his owne felicitie (into whose hands his most feared enemy was fallen) and withall cut off such hopes from his suspected subiects (when they should know certainlie he was dead) with much more skilfull crueltie, and horrible solemnitie hee caused each thing to be prepared for his triumph of tyrannie. And so the day being come, he was led forth by many armed men (who often had bene the fortifiers of wickednesse) to the place of execution: where comming with a mind comforted in that he had done such seruice to *Pyrocles*, this strange encounter he had.

The excelling *Pyrocles* was no sooner deliuered by the kings seruants to a place of libertie, then he bent his wit and courage (and what would not they bring to passe?) how either to deliuer *Musidorus*, or to perish with him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no forces sufficient by force to rescue him) to bring himselfe to die with him, (litle hoping of better euent) he put himselfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of some few crownes he tooke of that noble-man (who full of sorrow, though not knowing the secret of his intent, suffered him to go in such order from him) he (euen he, borne to the greatest expectation, and of the greatest bloud that any Prince might be) submitted himselfe to be seruant to the executioner that should put to death *Musidorus*: a farre notabler prooffe of his friendship, considering the height of his mind, then any death could be. That bad officer not suspecting him, being arayed fit for such an estate, and hauing his beautie hidden by many toule spots he artificiallie put vpon his face, gaue him leaue not onely to weare a sword himselfe, but to beare his sword prepared for the iustified murder. And so *Pyrocles* taking his time, when *Musidorus* was vpon the scaffold (separated somewhat from the rest as allowed to say something) he stept vnto him, and putting the sword into his hand not bound (a point of ciuility the officers vsed towards him, because they doubted no such enterprise) *Musidorus*, said he, die noble. In truth, neuer man betweene ioy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after considering his case, had such a confusion of thoughts, as I had, when I saw *Pyrocles*, so neare me. But with that *Dorus* blushed, and *Pamela* smiled: and *Dorus* the more blushed at her smiling, and she the more smiled at his blushing; because he had (with the remembrance of that plight he was in) forgotten in speaking of himselfe to vse the third person. But *Musidorus* turned againe her thoughts from his cheekes to his tongue in this sort: But, said he, when they were with swordes in hands, not turning backes one to the other (for there they knew was no

place of defence) but making it a preservation in not hoping to be preserved, and now acknowledging themselves subject to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princelie birth, they flew amongst them all (for all were enemies) and had quicklie either with flight or death, left none vpon the scaffold to annoy them. Wherein *Pyrocles* (the excellent *Pyrocles*) did such wonders beyond beleefe, as was able to leade *Musidorus* to courage, though he had bene borne a coward. But indeed iust rage and desperate vertue did such effects, that the popular sort of the beholders began to be almost superstitiously amazed, as at effects beyond mortal power. But the king with angrie threatnings from out a window (where he was not ashamed the world should behold him a beholder) commaunded his guard and the rest of his souldiers to hasten their death. But many of them lost their bodies to loose their soules, when the Princes grew almost so wearie, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

But as they were still fighting with weake armes and strong hearts, it happened, that one of the souldiers (commaunded to go vp after his fellowes against the Princes) hauing receiued a light hurt, more wounded in his heart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came vp with modestie: which another of his fellowes seeing, to picke a thanke of the king, strake him vpon the face, reuiling him, that so accompanied, he would runne away from so few. But he (as manie times it falls out) onlie valiant, when he was angrie, in reuenge thrust him through: which with his death was straight reuenged by a brother of his; and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongst the souldiers; which scene, and not vnderstood by the people (vsed to feares, but not vsed to be bolde in them) some began to crie treason; and that voice straight multiplying it selfe, the king (o the cowardise of a guiltie conscience) before anie man set vpon him, fled away. Wherewith a bruit (either by arte of some well meaning men, or by such chaunce as such things often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the king was slaine; wherewith certaine young men of the brauest minds, cried with loud voyce, Libertie; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them, set vpon the guard and souldiers, as chiefe instruments of tyrannie: and quicklie ayded by the Princes they had left none of them aliue, nor any other in the citie, who they thought had in any sort set his hand to the worke of their seruitude, and (God knowes) by the blindness of rage, killing many guiltlesse persons, either for affinitie to the tyrant, or enmitie to the tyrant-killers. But some of the wiser (seeing that a popular licence is indeed the many-headed tyrannie) preuayled with the rest to make *Musidorus* their chiefe: choosing one of them (because Princes) to defend the, and him because elder and most hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom forthwith they lifted vp, Fortune (I thinke) smiling at her worke therein, that a scaffold of execution should grow a scaffold of coronation.

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth, that the king was not dead, but fled to a strong castle of his, neare hand, where he was gathering forces in all speed possible to suppress this mutiny. But now they had runne themselves too farre out of breath, to go backe againe the same careere; and too wel they knew the sharpenesse of his memorie to forget such an iniurie; therefore learning vertue of necessity, they continued resolute to obey *Musidorus*. Who seeing what forces were in the citie, with them issued against the tyrant, while they were in this heate; before practises might be vsed to disseuer them: and with them met the king, who likewise hoping litle to preuaile by time, knowing and finding his peoples hate, met

met him with litle delay in the field : where himselfe was slaine by *Musidorus*, after he had seene his onlie sonne (a Prince of great courage and beautie, but fostered vp in bloud by his naughtie father) slaine by the hand of *Pyrocles*. This victorie obtained with great, and truly not vnderferued honour to the two Princes, the whole estates of the countrey with one consent, gaue the crowne and all other marks of so-
 5 ueraigntie to *Musidorus*; desiring nothing more then to liue vnder such a government as they promised themselues of him.

But he thinking it a greater greatnesse to giue a kingdome, then get a kingdome, vnderstanding that there was left of the bloud royall, & next to the succession, an
 10 aged Gentleman of approued goodnesse (who had gotten nothing by his cousins power but danger from him, & odioufnesse for him) hauing past his time in modest se- crecy, & as much from intermeddling in matters of gouernment, as the greatnesse of his bloud would suffer him, did (after hauing receiued the full power to his owne hands) resigne all to the Nobleman; but with such conditions, and cautions of the
 15 conditions, as might assure the people (with as much assurance as worldly matters beare) that not only that Gouvernour, of whom indeed they looked for all good, but the nature of the gouernment, should be no way apt to decline to tyranny.

This doing set forth no lesse his magnificence, then the other act did his mag- nanimitie; so that greatly praised of all, and iustlie beloued of the new king, who
 20 in all both words and behauiour protested himselfe their Tenant, and Liegeman, they were drawne thence to reuenge those two seruants of theirs, of whose me- morable faith, I told you (most excellent Princeesse) in willingly giuing themselues to be drowned for their sakes; but drowned indeed they were not, but gate with painfull swimming vpon a rocke: from whence (after being come as neare fami-
 25 shing, as before drowning) the weather breaking vp, they were brought to the main land of *Pontus*; the same countrey vpon which *Musidorus* also was fallen, but not in so luckie a place.

For they were brought to the king of that countrey, a Tyrant also, not through suspition, greedinesse, or reuengefulnessse, as he of *Phrygia*, but (as I may terme it) of
 30 a wanton cruelty: inconstant in his choise of friends, or rather neuer hauing a friend but a playfellow; of whom when he was wearie, he could not otherwise rid himselfe then by killing them; giuing sometimes prodigally, not because he loued them to whom he gaue, but because he lusted to giue: punishing, not so much for hate or anger, as because he felt not the sinart of punishment: delighted to be flattered, at
 35 first for those vertues which were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering: with like iudgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had perfourmed some notable mischiefe.

He chaunced at that time (for indeed long time none lasted with him) to haue next in vse about him, a man of the most enuious disposition, that (I thinke) euer
 40 infected the aire with his breath; whose eyes could not looke right vpon anie hap- pie man, nor eares beare the burthen of any bodies praise: contrarie to the natures of all other plagues, plagued with othes well being; making happinesse the ground of his unhappinesse, & good newes the argument of his sorow: in sum, a man whose fauour no man could winne, but by being miserable. And so, because these two
 45 faithfull seruants of theirs came in miserable sort to that Court, he was apt enough at first to fauour them; and the king vnderstanding of their aduenture, (wherein they had shewed so constant a faith vnto their Lords) sodainlie fallies to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite praises, and praising

himselfe in his heart, in that he praised them. And by and by were they made great Courtiers, and in the way of minions, when aduancement (the most mortall offence to enuie) stirred vp their former friend, to ouerthrow his owne worke in the; taking occasion vpon the knowledge (newlie come to the Court) of the late death of the king of Phrygia destroyed by their two Lords, who hauing bene a neare kinsman to this Prince of *Pontus*, by this enuious Counsellour, partly with suspition of practife, partly with glorie of in-part reuenging his cousins death, the king was sodainly turned, and euerie turne with him was a downe-fall) to locke them vp in prison, as seruants to his enemies, whom before he had neuer knowne, nor (till that time one of his owne subiects had entertained and dealt for them) did euer take heed of. But now earnest in euerie present humour, and making himselfe braue in his liking, he was content to giue them iust cause of offence, when they had power to make iust reuenge. Yet did the Princes send vnto him before they entred into warre, desiring their seruants libertie. But he swelling in their humbleness, (like a bubble blowne vp with a small breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or neuer knowing humanitie, caused their heads to be stricken off, by the aduice of his enuious Counsellour (who now hated them so much the more as he foresawe their happiness in hauing such, and so fortunate maisters) and sent them with vnroyall reproches to *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles*, as if they had done traiterouslie, and not heroically in killing his tyrannicall cousin.

But that iniurie went beyond all degree of reconcilment; so that they making forces in *Phrygia* (a kingdome whollie at their commandement, by the loue of the people, and gratefulnesse of the king) they entred his countrie; and whollie conquering it (with such deeds as at least Fame said were excellent) tooke the king; & by *Musidorus* commandement (*Pyrocles* heart more enclining to pitie) he was slaine vpon the tombe of their two true seruants; which they caused to be made for them with royall expences, and notable workmanship to preserue their dead liues. For his wicked seruant he should haue felt the like, or worse, but that his heart brake euen to death with the beholding the honour done to their dead carcases. There might *Pyrocles* quietly haue enioyed that Crowne, by all the desire of that people, most of whom had reuolted vnto him: but he finding a sister of the late kings (a faire and well esteemed Lady) looking for nothing more, then to be oppressed with her brothers ruines, gaue her in marriage to the Nobleman his fathers olde friend, and endowed them with the Crowne of that kingdome. And not content with those publike actions, of princely, and (as it were) gouerning vertue, they did (in that kingdome and some other neere about) diuerse acts of particular trials, more famous, because more perilous. For in that time those regions were full both of cruell monsters, and monstrous men: all which in short time by priuate combats they deliuered the countries of.

Among the rest, two brothers of huge both greatnesse and force, therefore commonlie called Giants, who kept themselues in a castle seated vpon the top of a rock, impregnable, because there was no comming vnto it but by one narrow path, where one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. These brothers had a while serued the king of *Pontus*, and in all his affaires (especiallie of warre, whereunto they were only apt) they had shewed as vnconquered courage, so a rude faithfulness: being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of deceit; not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and vprightly dealt with; rather impatient of iniurie, then delighted with more then ordinarie curtesies; and in iniuries

more

more sensible of smart or losse, then of reproch or disgrace. These men being of this nature (and certainly iewels to a wise man, considering what indeed wonders they were able to perfourme) yet were discarded by that vnworthy Prince, after manie notable deserts, as not worthie the holding. Which was the more euident to them; because it sodainlie fell from an excesse of fauour, which (manie examples hauing taught them) neuer stopt his race till it came to an headlong ouerthrow: they full of rage, retired themselues vnto this castle: where thinking nothing iuster then reuenge, nor more noble then the effectes of anger, that (according to the nature) full of inward brauerie and fiercenesse, scarcely in the glasse of reason, thinking it selfe faire, but when it is terrible, they immediatly gaue themselues to make all the countrie about them (subiect to that king) to smart for their Lords follie: not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they were, the more it testified their spite, which they desired to manifest. And with vse of euill, growing more and more euill, they tooke delight in slaughter, and pleased themselues in making others wracke the effect of their power: so that where in the time that they obeyed a maister, their anger was a seruiceable power of the mind to do publike good; so now vnbrideled, and blind iudge of it selfe, it made wickednesse violent, and praised it selfe in excellencie of mischiefe; almost to the ruine of the countrie, not greatly regarded by their carelesse and louelesse king. Till now these Princes finding them so fleshed in crueltie, as not to be reclaimed, secretly vnder-tooke the matter alone: for accompanied they would not haue suffered them to haue mounted; and so those great fellows scornfullie receiuing them, as foolish birds fallen into their net, it pleased the eternall iustice to make them suffer death by their hands: and so they were manifoldlie acknowledged the sauers of that countrie.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to set forth the nũbers of well deuised honors done vnto them: but as high honor is not onlie gotten and borne by paine and danger, but must be nursed by the like, or else vaniseth as soone as it appears to the world: so the naturall hunger thereof (which was in *Pyrocles*) suffered him not to account a resting seat of that, which euer either riseth or falleth, but still to make one occasion beget another; whereby his doings might send his praise to others mouthes to rebound againe true contentmēt to his spirit. And therefore hauing well established those kingdomes vnder good gouernors, and rid them by their valure of such giants and monsters, as before time armies were not able to subdue, they determined in vknowne order to see more of the world, and to imploy those gifts esteemed rare in them, to the good of mankind; and therefore would themselues (vnderstanding that the king *Euarchus* was passed all the cumber of his warres) go priuately to seeke exercises of their vertue, thinking it not so worthie to be brought to heroicall effects by fortune, or necessitie, (like *Vlysses* and *Aeneas*) as by ones own choice and working. And so went they away from verie vnwilling people to leaue them, making time haste it selfe to be a circumstance of their honor, and one place witnesse to another of the truth of their doings. For scarcely were they out of the confines of *Pontus*, but that as they rid alone armed, (for alone they went, one seru-
ing the other) they met an aduenture; which though not so notable for any great effect they performed, yet worthie to be remembered for the vnuised examples therein, as well of true naturall goodnesse, as of wretched vngratefulnesse.

It was in the kingdome of *Galacia*, the season being (as in the depth of winter) verie cold, and as then sodainlie growne to so extreame and foule a storme, that

neuer any winter (I thinke) brought forth a fowler child: so that the Princes were euen cōpelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to seeke some shrowding place which a certain hollow rocke offering vnto them, they made it their shield against the tempests furie. And so staying there, till the violence thereof was passed, they heard the speach of a couple, who not perceiuing them, being hid within that rude canapie, held a straunge and pitifull disputation, which made them step out, yet in such sort, as they might see vnseene. There they perceiued an aged man, and a young, scarce come to the age of a man, both poorely arrayed, extreame-ly weather-beaten; the olde man blind, the young man leading him: and yet through all those miseries, in both there seemed to appeare a kind of noble-nesse, not sutable to that affliction. But the first words they heard, were these of the old man. Well *Leonatus* (said he) since I cannot perswade thee to leade me to that which should end my grieffe, and thy trouble, let me now intreat thee to leaue me: feare not, my miserie cannot be greater then it is, and nothing doth become me but miserie: feare not the daunger of my blind steps, I cannot fall worse then I am: and do not I pray thee, do not obstinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednesse: but flie, flie from this region only worthie of me. Deare father (answered he) do not take away from me the only remnant of my happinesse: while I haue power to do you seruice, I am not whollie miserable. Ah my sonne (said he, and with that he groined, as if sorrow straue to breake his heart) how euill fits it me to haue such a sonne, and how much doth thy kindnesse vpbraid my wickednesse? These dolefull speeches, and some others to like purpose (well shewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moued the Princes to go out vnto them, and aske the younger what they were? Sirs (answered he with a good grace, and made the more agreeable by a certaine noble kind of piteousnesse) I see well you are straungers, that know not our miserie, so well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we must be miserable. Indeed our state is such, as though nothing is so needfull vnto vs as pitie, yet nothing is more daungerous vnto vs, then to make our selues so knowne as may stirre pitie: but your presence promiseth that crueltie shall not ouer-runne hate: and if it did, in truth our state is sunke below the degree of feare.

This old man (whom I leade) was lately rightfull Prince of this countrie of *Paphlagonia*, by the hard-hearted vngratefulness of a sonne of his, depriued, not onely of his kingdome (wherof no forraine forces were euer able to spoyle him) but of his sight, the riches which Nature graunts to the poorest creatures. Whereby, and by other his vnnaturall dealings, he hath bene driuen to such grieffe, as euen now he would haue had me to haue led him to the top of this rocke, thence to cast himselfe headlong to death: and so would haue made me, who receiued my life of him, to be the worker of his destruction. But noble Gentlemen, said he, if either of you haue a father, and feele what dutifull affection is engrafted in a sonnes heart, let me intreat you to conueigh this afflicted Prince to some place of rest and securitie: amongst your worthie acts it shall be none of the least, that a king of such might and fame, & so vniustlie oppressed, is in any sort by you relieued.

But before they could make him answere, his father beganne to speake. Ah my sonne, said he, how euill an Historian are you, that leaue out the chiefe knot of all the discourse? my wickednesse, my wickednesse: and if thou doest it to spare my eares (the only sense now left me proper for knowledge) assure thy selfe thou doest mistake me: and I take witnesse of that Sunne which you see (with that he cast vp his

his blind eyes, as if he would hunt for light) and with my selfe in worse case then I do wish my selfe, which is as euill as may be, if I speake vnrulie, that nothing is so welcome to my thoughts, as the publishing of my shame. Therefore know you Gentlemen (to whom from my heart I wish that it may not proue some ominous foretoken of misfortune to haue met with such a miser as I am) that whatsoeuer my son (ô God, that truth binds me to reproch him with the name of my son) hath said is true. But besides those truthe, this also is true, that hauing had in lawfull marriage, of a mother fit to beare royall children, this sonne (such a one as partly you see, and better shall know by my short declaration) and so enioyed the expectations in the world of him, till he was growne to iustifie their expectations (so as I needed enuie no father for the chiefe comfort of mortalitie, to leaue another ones selfe after me) I was caried by a bastard sonne of mine (if at least I be bound to beleue the words of that base woman my concubine, his mother) first to dislike, then to hate, lastlie to destroy, or to do my best to destroy this sonne (I thinke you thinke) vnderferuing destruction. What wayes be vsed to bring me to it, if I should tell you, I should tediouslie trouble you with as much poisonous hypocrisie, desperate fraud, smooth malice, hidden ambition, and smiling enuie, as in anie living person could be harboured: but I list it not; no remembrance of naughtinesse delights me but mine owne; and me thinks, the accusing his traps might in some maner excuse my fault, which certainlie I lothe to do. But the conclusion is, that I gaue order to some seruants of mine, whom I thought as apt for such charities as my selfe, to leade him out into a forrest, and there to kill him.

But those theetues (better natured to my sonne then my selfe) spared his life, letting him go to learne to liue poorely: which he did, giuing himselfe to be a priuate souldier in a countrey here by: but as he was ready to be greatly aduanced for some noble peeces of seruice which he did, he heard newes of me: who (drunke in my affection to that vnlawfull and vnnaturall sonne of mine) suffered my selfe so to be gouerned by him, that all fauours and punishments passed by him, all offices, and places of importance distributed to his fauorites; so that ere I was aware, I had left my selfe nothing but the name of a King: which he shortly wearie of too, with many indignities (if any thing may be called an indignitie, which was laid vpon me) threw me out of my seat, and put out my eyes; and then (proud in his tyrannie) let me go, neither imprisoning, nor killing me; but rather delighting to make me feeble my miserie; miserie indeed, if euer there were anie; full of wretchednesse, fuller of disgrace, and fullest of guiltinesse. And as he came to the crowne by so vniust means, as vniustlie he kept it, by force of straunger souldiers in *Citadels*, the nests of tyrannie, and murderers of libertie; disarming all his owne countermen, that no man durst shew himselfe a wel-willer of mine: to say the truth (I thinke) few of them being so (considering my cruell follie to my good sonne, and foolish kindnesse to my vnkind bastard:) but if there were any who felt a pitie of so great a fall, and had yet any sparkes of vnslaine dutie left in them towards me; yet durst they not shew it, scarce lie with giuing me almes at their doores; which yet was the onlie sustenance of my distressed life, no bodie daring to shew so much charitie, as to lend me a hand to guide my darke steps: till this sonne of mine (God knowes, worthy of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father) forgetting my abominable wrongs, not recking daunger, and neglecting the present good way hee was in of doing himselfe good, came hither to do this kind office you see him performe towards me, to my vnspeakeable grieve; not onlie because his kindnesse is a glasse euen to my

blind eyes of my naughtinesse, but that aboue all griefes, it grieues me he should desperatelie aduenture the losse of his well-deseruing life for mine, that yet owe more to Fortune for my deserts, as if he would carie mudde in a chest of Chrystall: for well I know, he that now raigneth, how much so euer (and with good reason) he despiseth me, of all men despised; yet he will not let slip any aduantage to make away him, whose iust title (ennobled by courage & goodnesse) may one day shake the seat of a neuer secure tyrannie. And for this cause I craued of him to leade me to the top of this rocke, indeed I must confesse, with meaning to free him from so serpentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I purposed, onely therein since he was borne, shewed himselfe disobedient vnto me. And now Gentlemen, you haue the true storie, which I pray you publish to the world, that my mischieuous proceedings may be the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onlie reward now left for so great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine that of you, which my sonne denies me: for neuer was there more pity in sauing any, then in ending me, both because therein my agonie shall end, & so you shal preferue this excellent young man, who else wilfully followes his owne ruine.

The matter in it selfe lamentable, lamentable expressed by the old Prince (which needed not take to himselfe the gestures of pitie, since his face could not put off the markes thereof) greatly moued the two Princes to compassion, which could not stay in such hearts as theirs without seeking remedie. But by and by the occasion was presented: for *Plexirtus* (so was the bastard called) came thither with fortie horse, onelie of purpose to murder this brother, of whose comming he had soone aduertisement, and thought no eyes of sufficient credite in such a matter, but his owne, and therefore came himselfe to be actor, and spectator. And as soone as he came, not regarding the weake (as he thought) gard of but two men, commaunded some of his followers to set their hand; to his, in the killing of *Leonatus*. But the young Prince (though not otherwise armed but with a sword) how falsely soeuer he was dealt with by others, would not betray himselfe; but brauely drawing it out, made the death of the first that assayed him, warne his fellowes to come more warily after him. But then *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* were quicklie become parties (so iust a defence deseruing as much as old friendship) and so did behaue them among that companie (more iniurious then valiant) that many of them lost their liues for their wicked maister.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at last preuailed, if the king of *Pontus* (late-ly by them made so) had not come vnlooked for to their succour. Who (hauing had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently vpon some great danger, presently to follow those two Princes, whom he most dearlie loued) was come in all haste, following as well as he could their tracke with a hundred horses in that cuntry, which he thought (considering who then raigned) a fit place enough to make the stage of anie Tragedie.

But then the match had bene so ill made for *Plexirtus*, that his ill-led life, and worse gotten honour should haue tumbled together to destruction; had there not come in *Tydeus* and *Telenor*, with fortie or fiftie in their suite, to the defence of *Plexirtus*. These two were brothers, of the noblest house of that countrie, brought vp from their infancie with *Plexirtus*; men of such prowesse, as not to know feare in themselves, and yet to teach it in others that should deale with them: for they had often made their liues triumph ouer most terrible daungers; neuer dismayed, and euer fortunate; and truely no more settled in valure, then disposed to goodnesse and iustice

iustice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could haue learned to make friendship a child, and not the father of Vertue. But bringing vp (rather the choice) hauing first knit their minds vnto him (indeed craftie enough, either to hide his faults, or neuer to shew them, but when they might pay home) they willingly
 5 held out the course, rather to satisfie him, then all the world; and rather to be good friends, then good men: so as though they did not like the euill he did, yet they liked him that did the euill; and though not counsellours of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they hauing heard of this sodaine going out with so smal a cōpanie, in a cōtrie full of euill-wishing minds toward him (though they knew
 10 not the cause) followed him; till they found him in such case, as they were to venture their liues, or else he to lose his: which they did with such force of mind and bodie, that trulie I may iustly say, *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* had neuer till then found any, that could make them so well repeat their hardest lesson in the feates of armes. And brieflie so they did, that if they ouercame not; yet were they not ouercome, but carried away that vngratefull maister of theirs to a place of securitie, howsoeuer the
 15 Princes laboured to the contrarie. But this matter being thus far begun, it became not the constancie of the Princes so to leaue it; but in all hast making forces both in *Pontus* and *Phrigia*, they had in few dayes left him but onely that one strong place where he was. For feare hauing bene the only knot that had fastened his people vnto him, that once vntied by a greater force, they all scattered from him, like so many birds, whose cage had bene broken.

In which season the blind king (hauing in the chiefe citie of his realme set the crowne vpon his sonne *Leonatus* head) with many tears (both of ioy and sorow) setting forth to the whole people, his owne fault and his sons vertue, after he had kist
 25 him, and forc'd his sonne to accept honour of him (as of his new-become subiect) euen in a moment died, as it should seeme, his heart broken with vnkindnesse and affliction, stretched so far beyond his limits with this excesse of comfort, as it was able no longer to keep safe his vital spirits. But the new king (hauing no lesse louingly performed all duties to him dead, then aliue) pursued on the siege of his vnnaturall brother, asmuch for the reuenge of his father, as for the establisshing of his owne quiet. In which siege truly I cannot but acknowledge the prowesse of those two brothers, then whom the Princes neuer found in all their trauell, two of greater abilitie to performe, nor of abler skill for conduct.

But *Plexirtus* finding, that if nothing else, famine would at last bring him to destruction, thought better by humblenesse to creepe, where by pride he could not march. For certainly so had nature formed him, and the exercise of craft conformed him to all turningnesse of sleights, that though no man had lesse goodnesse in his soule then he, no man could better find the places whence arguments might grow of goodnesse to another; though no man felt lesse pitie, no man could tel better how to stirre pitie; no man more impudent to denie, where proofes were not
 40 manifest; no man more ready to confesse with a repenting maner of aggrauating his owne euill, where deniall would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this way, that hauing gotten a passport for one (that pretended he would put *Plexirtus* aliue into his hands) to speake with the king his brother, hee himselfe (though much against the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather wished to die in braue defence)
 45 with a rope about his necke, barefooted, came to offer himselfe to the discretion of *Leonatus*. Where what submission he vsed, how cunningly in making greater the fault, he made the faultinesse the lesse, how artificiallie he could set out the torments

of his owne conscience, with the burdensome cumber he had found of his ambitious desires, how finely seeming to desire nothing but death, as ashamed to liue, he begg'd life in the refusing it, I am not cunning enough to be able to expresse: but so fell out of it, that though at first sight *Leomatus* saw him with no other eye, then as the murderer of his father; and anger already began to paint reuenge in many colours, ere long he had not only gotten pitie, but pardon; and if not an excuse of the fault past, yet an opinion of a future amendment: while the poore villaines (chiefe ministers of his wickednesse, now betrayed by the authour thereof,) were deliuered to manie cruell sorts of death; he so handling it, that it rather seemed, he had more come into the defence of an vnremediable mischiefe already committed, then that they had done it at first by his consent. 10

In such sort the Princes left these reconciled brothers (*Plexirtus* in all his behaviour carying him in farre lower degree of seruice, then the euer-not lenature of *Leomatus* wold suffer him) and taking likewise their leaues of their good friend the king of *Pontus* (who returned to enioy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdome) 15 they priuately went thence, hauing only with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs accompanie them through diuerse places; they foure doing acts more daungerous, though lesse famous, because they were but priuate chiuallries: till hearing of the faire & vertuous Queene *Erona* of Lycia, besieged by the puissant king of Armenia, they bent themselues to her succour, both because the weaker (and weaker as being a Lady) and partlie because they heard the king of Armenia had in his companie three of the most famous men liuing, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the world. Wherof one was the Prince *Plangus* (whose name was sweetned by your breath, peerelesse Lady, when the last day it pleased you to mention him vnto me:) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) 25 *Barzanes* and *Enardes*, men of Giant-like both hugenesse and force: in which two especiallie, the trust the king had of victorie was reposed. And of them, those brothers *Tydeus* and *Telenor* (sufficient iudges in warlike matters) spake so high commendations, that the two Princes had euen a youthful longing to haue some trial of their vertue. And therefore as soone as they were entred into Lycia, they ioyned theselues with them that faithfully serued the poore Queene, at that time besieged: 30 and ere long animated in such sort their almost ouerthrowne hearts, that they went by force to relieue the towne, though they were deprived of a great part of their strength by the parting of the two brothers, who were sent for in all hast to returne to their old friend and maister *Plexirtus*: who (willingly hood-winking themselues from seeing his faults, and binding themselues to beleue what he said) often abused the vertue of courage to defend his fowle vice of iniustice. But now they were sent for to aduaunce a conquest he was about; while *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* pursued the deliuerie of the Queene *Erona*. 35

I haue heard (said *Pamela*) that part of the story of *Plangus*, whē he passed through this countrie: therefore you may (if you list) passe ouer that warre of *Eronas* quarrell, least if you speake too much of warre matters, you should wake *Mopsa*, which might happily breed a great broile. He looked, & saw that *Mopsa* indeed sate swallowing of sleepe with open mouth, making such a noise withall, as no body could lay the stealing of a nap to her charge. Whereupon, willing to vse that occasion, he kneeled down, & with humble-heartednesse & hardy earnestnesse printed in his graces, 45 Alas (said he) diuine lady, who haue wrought such miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of the basest) to think al principalities base, in respect of the sheephooke, which

which may hold him vp in your sight; vouchsafe now at last to heare in direct words my humble sute, while this dragon sleepes, that keeps the golden fruite. If in my desire I wish, or in my hopes aspire, or in my imagination faine to my self any thing which may be the least spot to that heauely vertue, which shines in all your doings;

5 I pray the eternal powers, that the words I speake may be deadly poysons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my hopes, all my desires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their own confusion. But if loue, loue of you, loue of your vertues, seeke onely that fauour of you, which becommeth that gratefulnesse, which cannot misbecome your excellencie, O doo not: He would haue saide further, but *Pamela* calling aloud *Mopsa*, she sodainely start vp, staggering, and rubbing her eies, ran first
10 out of the doore, and then back to them, before she knew how she went out, or why she came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little selfe, she asked *Pamela*, why she had called her. For nothing (saide *Pamela*) but that you might heare some tales of your seruants telling: and therefore now (saide she *Dorus*) go on.

15 But as he (who found no so good sacrifice, as obedience) was returning to the story of himselfe, *Philoslea* came in, and by and by after her, *Miso*; so as for that time they were faine to let *Dorus* depart. But *Pamela* (delighted euen to preserue in her memory, the words of so well a beloued speaker) repeated the whole substance to her sister, till their sober dinner being come and gone, to recreate themselues something, (euen tyred with the noysomnes of *Misos* conuersation) they determined to
20 goe (while the heat of the day lasted) to bath themselues (such being the manner of the *Arcadian* nimphes often to doo) in the riuer of *Ladon*, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight them vnder some shadow. But they could not stir, but that *Miso* with her daughter *Mopsa* was after them: and as it lay in their way to passe
25 by the other lodge, *Zelma* out of her window espied them, and so stole down after them: which sheemight the better do, because that *Gynecia* was sicke, and *Basilus* (that day being his birth-day) according to his maner, was busie about his deuotions; and therefore she went after, hoping to finde some time to speake with *Philoslea*: but not a word coulde shee beginne, but that *Miso* would be one of the
30 audience; so that shee was driuen to recommend thinking, speaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently performed her trust, til they came to the riuerside, which of all the riuers of *Greece* had the price for excellent purenesse and sweetenesse, in so much as the verie bathing in it, was accounted exceeding healthfull. It ranne vpon so fine and delicate a ground, as one could not easily iudge, whether the
35 Riuer did more wath the grauell, or the grauell did purifie the Riuer; the Riuer not running forth right, but almost continually winding, as if the lower streames would returne to their spring, or that the Riuer had a delight to play with it selfe, The banckes of either side seeming armes of the louing earth, that faine would embrace it; and the Riuer a wanton nymph which still would slippe from it: either
40 side of the bancke being fringed with most beautifull trees, which resisted the sunnes darts from ouer-much piercing the naturall coldnesse of the Riuer. There was the

But among the rest a goodly *Cypres*, who bowing her faire head ouer the water, it seemed she looked into it, & dressed her greene locks by that running Riuer. There the Princeesses determining to bath theselues, though it was so priuiledged a place, vpo pain of death, as no
45 bodie durst presume to come thither, yet for the more surety, they looked round about, and could see nothing but a water spaniell, who came downe the riuer shewing that he hunted for a ducke, & with a snuffling grace, disdaining that his smelling

force could not as well preuaile thorow the water, as thorough the aire, & therefore wayting with his eye, to see whether he could espie the duckes getting vp againe: but then a litle below them failing of his purpose, he got out of the riuer, & shaking off the water (as great men do their friends, now he had no further cause to vse it) inweeded himselfe so, as the Ladies lost the further marking his sportfulnesse: & inui-
ting *Zelmane* also to wash her selfe with them, & she excusing her selfe with hauing taken a late cold, they began by peece-meale to take away the eclipsing of their apparell.

Zelmane would haue put to her helping hand, but she was taken with such a quivering, that she thought it more wisdome to leane her selfe to a tree and looke on, while *Miso* and *Mopsa* (like a couple of foreswat melters) were getting the pure siluer of their bodies out of the vre of their garments. But as the rayments went off to receiue kisses of the ground, *Zelmane* enuied the happinesse of all, but of the smocke was euen iealous, and when that was taken away too, and that *Philoclea* remained (for her *Zelmane* onely marked) like a *Dyamon* taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun getting from vnder a cloud, and shewing his naked beames to the full view, then was the beauty too much for a patient sight; the delight too strong for a stayed conceipt: so that *Zelmane* could not choose but run, to touch, embrace and kisse her; But conscience made her come to her selfe, and leaue *Philoclea*, who blushing, and withall smiling, making shamefastnesse pleasant, & pleasure shamefast, tenderly moued her feet, vnwonted to feele the naked ground, till the touch of the cold water made a pretty kind of shugging come ouer her body, like the twinkling of the fairest among the fixed stars. But the riuer it selfe gaue way vnto her, so that shee was streight breast high; which was the deepest that ther-about she could be: & whē cold *Ladon* had once fully imbraced them, himselfe was no more so cold to those Ladies, but as if his cold complexion had bin heated with loue, so seemed he to play about euery part he could touch.

Ah sweete, now sweetest *Ladon* (sayd *Zelmane*) why dost thou not stay thy course to haue more full tast of thy happines? But the reason is manifest, the vpper streames make such hast to haue their part of embracing, that the neather (though lothly) must needes giue place vnto them. O happy *Ladon*, within whom she is, vpon whom her beauty fals, thorough whom her eye pierceth, O happy *Ladon*, which art now an vnperfect mirror of all perfection, canst thou euer forget the blessednes of this impression? if thou do, then let thy bed be turned from fine grauell, to weeds and mud; if thou do, let some vniust niggards make weres to spoile thy beauty; if thou do, let some greater riuer fall into thee, to take away the name of *Ladon*. Oh *Ladon*, happy *Ladon*, rather slide then run by her, least thou shouldest make her legs slip from her; & then, O happy *Ladon*, who would then call thee, but the most cursed *Ladon*? But as the Ladies plaid them in the water, sometimes striking it with their hands, the water (making lines in his face) seemed to smile at such beating, & with twenty bubbles, not to be content to haue the picture of their face in large vpon him, but he wold in each of those bubbles set forth the miniature of them.

But *Zelmane*, whose sight was gaine-sayd by nothing but the transparent vaile of *Ladon* (like a chamber where a great fire is kept, though the fire be at one stay, yet with the continuance continually hath his heate encreased) had the coales of her affection so kindled with wonder, and blowne with delight, that now all her parts grudged, that her eyes should doe more homage, then they, to the Princeesse of them. In so much that taking vp the Lute, her wit began to bee with a diuine furie inspired;

inspired; her voice would in so beloued an occasion second her wit; her handes accorded the Lutes musicke to the voice; her panting heart danced to the musicke; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it should be celebrated; her soule the Queene which should be delighted. And so together went the vtterance and the inuention, that one might iudge, it was *Philoclea*s beautie which did speedily write it in her eyes; or the sence thereof, which did word by word endite it in her minde, whereto she (but as an organ) did onely lend vtterance. The song was to this purpose.

WHat tong can her perfections tell,
In whose each part all pens may dwell?

Her haire fine threeds of finest gold
In curled knots mans thought to hold:

But that her fore-head sayes in me

A whiter beautie you may see.

Whiter indeed; more white then snow,

Which on cold winters face doth grow.

That doth present those euen browes,

Whose equall line their angles bowes,

Like to the Moone when after change

Her horned head abroad doth raunge:

And arches be to heauenly lids,

Whose winke each bold attempt forbids.

For the black starres those Spheares containe

The matchlesse paire, euen praise doth staine

No lampe, whose light by Art is got,

No sunne, which shines and seeth not,

Can liken them without all peere,

Sauie one as much as other cleere:

Which onely thus unhappie be,

Because themselues they cannot see.

Her cheekes with kindly claret spred.

Aurora-like new out of bed,

Or like the fresh Queene-apples side,

Blushing at sight of Phoebus pride.

Her nose, her chinne pure iuorie wearts:

No purer then the pretie eares.

So that therein appeares some blood,

Like wine and milke that mingled stood.

In whose Incirclets if ye gaze,

Your eyes may tread a Louers maze.

But with such turnes the voice to stray,

No talke vntaught can find the way.

The tippe no ieuell needes to weare:

The tippe is ieuell of the eare.

But who those ruddie lips can misse?

Which blessed still themselues do kisse.

Rubies, Chirries, and Roses new,

*In worth, in tast, in perfit hew:
 VVhich neuer part but that they shewe
 Of precions pearle the double rowe,
 The second sweetly-fenced ward,
 Her heavenly-dewed tongue to gard.
 VVhence neuer word in vaine did flowe.*

*Faire vnder these doth statly growe,
 The handle of this precions worke,
 The neck, in which strange graces lurke.
 Such be I thinke the sumptuous towers
 VVhich skill doth make in Princes bowers.*

*So good a say inuities the eye,
 A little downward to espie,
 The liuelie clusters of her brests,
 Of Venus babe the wanton nests:
 Like pomels round of Marble cleere:
 VVhere azurde veines well mixt appeere,
 VVith dearest tops of porphyrie.*

*Betwixt these two a way doth lie,
 A way more worth hie beauties fame,
 Then that which beares the Milkie name.
 This leades into the ioyous field,
 VVhich omely still doth Lillies yeeld:
 But Lillies such whose natine smell
 The Indian odours doth excell.
 VVaste it is calde, for it doth waste
 Mens lines, vntill it be imbraste.*

*There may one see, and yet not see
 Her ribbes in white all armed bee.
 More white then Neptunes fomie face,
 VVhen strugling rockes he would imbrace.*

*In those delights the wandring thought
 Might of each side astray be brought,
 But that her pannel doth vnite,
 In curious circle, busie sight:
 A daintie scale of virgin-waxe,
 VVhere nothing but impression lackes.*

*Her bellie their glad sight doth fill,
 Instly entisled Cupids hill.
 A hill most fitte for such a master,
 A spotlesse mine of Alabaster.
 Like Alabaster faire and sleeke,
 But soft and supple fatten like.*

*In that sweete seate the Boy doth sport:
 Loath, I must leaue his chiefe resort.
 "For such a vse the world hath gotten,
 "The best things still must be forgotten.
 Yet neuer shall my song omitte*

Her

Her thighes, for Ouids song more fittes;
 Which flanked with two sugred flankes,
 Lift vp their stately swelling bankes;
 That Albion cliues in whitenesse passe:
 With hanches smooth as looking glasse.

But bow all knees, now of her knees
 My tongue doth tell what fancie sees.
 The knottes of ioy, the gemmes of loue,
 whose motion makes all graces moue.
 whose bought incand doth yeeld such sight,
 Like cunning Painter shadowing white.
 The gartring place with child-like signe,
 Shewes easie print in mettall fine.

But then againe the flesh doth rise
 In her braue calues like christall skies.
 whose Atlas is a smallest small,
 More white then whitest bone of all.

Thereout steales out that round cleane foot
 This noble Cedars precious roote:
 In shewe and sent pale violets,
 Whose steppe on earth all beautie sets.

But back vnto her back, my Muse,
 Where Ledas swanne his feathers mewes,
 Along whose ridge such bones are met,
 Like comfits round in marchpane set.

Her shoulders be like two white Dones,
 Pearching within square royall roones,
 Which leaded are with siluer skinne,
 Passing the hate-spott Ermelin.

And thence those armes deriued are;
 The Phoenix wings are not so rare
 For faultlesse length, and stainelesse hewe,

Ah woe is me, my woes renewe.

Now course doth leade me to her hand,
 Of my first loue the fatall band.

Where whitenesse doth for euer sit:
 Nature herselfe enameld it.

For there with strange compact doth lie
 Warme snow, moist pearle, soft iuorie.

There fall those Saphir-coloured brookes,
 Which conduit-like with curious crookes,
 Sweet Ilands make in that sweet land.

As for the fingers of the hand,
 The bloody shaftes of Cupids warre,
 With amatists they headed are.

Thus hath each part his beauties part,
 But how the Graces doo impart
 To all her limmes a speciall grace,

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Becoming euerie time and place.
 Which doth euen beantie beautifie,
 And most bewitch the wretched eye.
 How all this is but a faire Inne
 Of fairer guests, which dwell within.
 Of whose high praise, and praisefull blisse,
 Goodnesse the penne, heauen paper is.
 The inke immortall fame doth lend:
 As I began, so must I end.
 No tongue can her perfections tell,
 In whose each part all tongues may dwell.*

But as *Zelmane* was comming to the latter end of her song, shee might see the
 same water-spaniell which before had hunted, come & fetch away one of *Philocleas*
 gloues; whose fine proportion, shewed well what a daintie guest was wont there
 to be lodged. It was a delight to *Zelmane*, to see that the dogge was therewith de-
 lighted, and so let him go a little way withall, who quickly caried it out of sight a-
 mong certaine trees and bushes, which were verie close together. But by and by he
 came againe, and amongst the raiments (*Miso* and *Mopsa* being preparing sheets
 against their coming out) the dog lighted vpon a little booke of four or fve leaues
 of paper, and was bearing that away too. But then *Zelmane* (not knowing what im-
 portance it might be of) ran after the dog, who going streight to those bushes, she
 might see the dog deliuer it to a Gentleman who secretly lay there. But she hastily
 comming in, the Gentleman rose vp, & with a curteous (though sad) countenance
 presented himselfe vnto her. *Zelmanes* eies streight willed her minde to marke him: 25
 for she thought, in her life she had neuer seene a man of a more goodly presence, in
 whom strong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beantie fiercenesse: being in-
 deed such a right manlike man, as Nature often erring, yet shewes she would faine
 make. But when she had a while (not without admiration) viewed him, she desired
 him to deliuer backe the gloue and paper, because they were the Ladie *Philocleas*;
 telling him withall, that she would not willingly let them know of his close lying in
 that prohibited place, while they were bathing themselues; because shee knew
 they would be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (answered he) the worst of
 the complaint is already passed, since I feele of my fault in my selfe the punishment.
 But for these things I assure you, it was my dogs wanton boldnes, not my presump-
 tion. With that he gaue her backe the paper: But for the gloue (said he) since it is
 my Ladie *Philocleas*, giue me leaue to keepe it, since my hart cannot perswade it self
 to part from it. And I pray you tell the Lady (Lady indeed of all my desires) that
 owes it, that I will direct my life to honour this gloue with seruing her. O villaine
 (cried out *Zelmane*, madded with finding an vnlooked-for Riual, and that he would
 make her a messenger) dispatch (said she) and deliuer it, or by the life of her that
 owes it, I wil make thy soule (though too base a price) pay for it. And with that drew
 out her sword, which (*Amazon-like*) she euer ware about her. The Gentleman reti-
 red him self into an open place frō among the bushes; & then drawing out his too,
 he offred to deliuer it vnto her, saying withall, God forbid I should vse my sword a-
 gainst you, since (if I be not deceiued) you are the same famous *Amazon*, that both
 defended my Ladies iust title of beantie against the valiant *phalantus*, and saued her
 life in killing the Lion: therefore I am rather to kisse your hands, with acknowledge-
 ing

ging my selfe bound to obey you. But this curtesie was worse then a bastonado to *Zelmane*: so that againe with ragefull eyes she bad him defend him selfe, for no lesse then his life should answere it. A hard case (said he) to teach my sword that lesson, which hath euer vsed to turne it selfe to a shield in a Ladies presence. But *Zelmane*,
 5 harkening to no more wordes, began with such wittie furie to pursue him with blowes and thrusts, that Nature and Vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his safetie. Yet still courtesie, that seemed incorporate in his heart, would not be perswaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to stand vpon the best defensive gard he could; somtimes going backe, being content in that respect to take on
 10 the figure of cowardise; somtime with strong and well-met wardes; somtime cunning auoidings of his body; and somtimes faining some blowes, which himselfe puld backe before they needed to be withstood. And so with play did he a good while fight against the fight of *Zelmane*, who (more spited with that curtesie, that one that did nothing should be able to resist her) burned away with choller any motions,
 15 which might grow out of her own sweet disposition, determining to kill him if he fought no better; and so redoubling her blowes, draue the stranger to no other shift then to ward, & go backe; at that time seeming the image of innocencie against violence. But at length he found, that both in publike & priuate respects, who stands only vpon defence, stands vpon no defence: for *Zelmane* seeming to strike at his head,
 20 and he going to ward it, withall stept back as he was accustomed, she stopt her blow in the aire, and sodainly turning the point, ran full at his breast; so as he was driuen with the pōmell of his sword (hauing no other weapon of defence to beat it downe: but the thrust was so strong, that he could not so wholly beate it away, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But *Zelmane* retiring her sword, and
 25 seeing his blood, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie; and hartily sorie, and euen ashamed with her selfe she was, considering how little he had done, who well she found could haue done more. In so much that she said, truly I am sorie for your hurt, but your selfe gaue the cause, both in refusing to deliuer the gloue, and yet not fighting as I know you could haue done. But (said she)
 30 because I perceiue you disdayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you shall meet with a neere kinsman of mine, *Pyrocles* Prince of Macedon, and I giue you my worde, he for me shall maintaine this quarell against you. I would (answered *Amphialus*) I had many more such hurts to meete and know that worthy Prince, whose vertue I loue and admire, though my good destiny hath not bene to see his person.

35 But as they were so speaking, the yong Ladies came, to whom *Mopsa* (curious in any thing, but her own good behauiour) hauing followed and seene *Zelmane* fighting, had cried, what she had seene, while they were drying themselues, and the water (with some drops) seemed to weepe, that it should part from such bodies. But
 40 they carefull of *Zelmane* (assuring themselues that any *Arcadian* would beare reuerence to them) *Pamela* with a noble mind, and *Philoclea* with a louing) hastily hiding the beauties, whereof Nature was proude, and they ashamed) they made quick worke to come to saue *Zelmane*. But alreadie they found them in talke, and *Zelmane* carefull of his wound. But when they saw him they knew it was their cosin
 45 germain, the famous *Amphialus*; whom yet with a sweete-graced bitterneffe they blamed for breaking their fathers commaundement, especially while themselues were in such sort retired. But he craued pardon, protesting vnto them that he had ony bene to seeke solitarie places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good

while posselt him, and guided to that place by his spaniel, where while the dog hunted in the riuer, he had withdrawne himselfe to pacifie with sleepe his ouerwatched eyes: till a dreame waked him, and made him see that whereof he had dreamed, and withall not obscurely signified, that he felt the smart of his owne doings. But *Philoclea* (that was euen iealous of her selfe for *Zelmane*) would needes haue her gloue, and not without so mightie a lowre as that face could yeeld. As for *Zelmane* when she knew, it was *Amphialus*, Lord *Amphialus* (said she) I haue long desired to know you, heretofore I must confesse with more goodwill, but still with honoring your vertue, though I loue not your person: and at this time I pray you let vs take care of your wound, ypon condition you shal hereafter promise, that a more knightly combat shalbe performed between vs. *Amphialus* answered in honorable sort, but with such excusing himselfe, that more and more accused his loue to *Philoclea*, and prouoked more hate in *Zelmane*. But *Mopsa* had alreadie called certain shepheards not far off (who knew & well obserued their limits) to come and help to carrie away *Amphialus*, whose wound suffered him not without danger to straine it: and so he leauing himselfe with them, departed from them, faster bleeding in his hart, then at his wound: which bound vp by the sheetes, wherewith *Philoclea* had bene wrapped, made him thank the wound, and blesse the sword for that fauour.

He being gone, the Ladies (with mery anger talking, in what naked simplicitie their cousin had scene them) returned to the lodge-ward: yet thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake off so pleasing a companie, with going to performe a cumberfome obedience, *Zelmane* inuited them to the litle arbour, only reserued for her, which they willingly did: and there sitting, *Pamela* hauing a while made the lute in his language, shew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers, *Zelmane* deliuered vp the paper, which *Amphialus* had at first yeelded vnto her: and seeing written vpon the backside of it, the complaint of *Plangus*, remembring what *Dorus* had told her, and desiring to know how much *Philoclea* knew of her estate, she tooke occasion in presenting of it, to aske whether it were any secret, or no. No truly (answered *Philoclea*) it is but euen an excercise of my fathers writing, vpon this occasion: He was one day somewhile before your comming hither) walking abroad, hauing vs two with him, almost a mile hence; and crossing a hie way, which comes from the cittie of *Megalopolis*, he saw this Gentleman, whose name is there written, one of the proprest and best-graced men that euer I sawe, being of middle age and of a meane stature. Hee lay as then vnder a tree, while his seruants were getting fresh post-horses for him. It might seeme he was tired with the extreme trauaile he had taken, and yet not so tyred, that he forced to take any rest; so hasty he was vpon his iourney: and withall so sorrowfull, that the verie face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, euen groanes, teares, and passionate talking to himselfe, moued my Father to fal in talke with him: who at first not knowing him, answered him in such a desperat phraze of grieve, that my Father afterward tooke a delight to set it down in such forme as you see: which if you reade, what you doubt of, my sister and I are able to declare vnto you. *Zelmane* willingly opened the leaues, and red it, being written Dialogue-wise in this manner.

Plangus.

Basilus.

Plangus.

A *Las how long this pilgrimage doth last?
what greater ills haue now the heauens in store,
To couple comming harmes with sorrowes past?*

Long

Long since my voice is hoarse, and throte is sore,
 With cries to skies, and curses to the ground,
 But more I plaine, I feele my woes the more.
 Ah where was first that cruell cunning found,
 To frame of Earth a vessell of the minde,
 Where it should be to self-destruction bound?
 What needed so high sprites such mansions blind?
 Or wrap in flesh what do they here obtaine,
 But glorious name of wretched humane-kind?
 Balles to the starres, anathralles to Fortunes vaigne;
 Turnd from themselues, infected with their cage,
 Where death is feard, and life is held with paine.
 Like players plaist to fill a filthy stage,
 Where change of thoughts one foole to other shewes,
 And all but iests, saue onely sorrowes rage,
 The child feeles that; the man that feeling knowes,
 With cries first borne, the presage of his life,
 Where wit but serues, to haue true tast of woes.
 A Shop of shame, a Booke where blots be rife,
 This bodie is: this bodie so composed,
 As in it selfe to nourish mortall strife,
 So diuers be the Elements disposed
 In this weake worke, that it can neuer be
 Made uniforme to any state reposed.
 Griefe only makes his wretched state to see
 (Euen like a toppes which nough: but whipping moues)
 This man, this talking beast, this walking tree,
 Griefe is the stone which finest iudgement proues:
 For who grieues not hath but a blockish braine,
 Since cause of griefe no cause from life remoues.

Basilius. How long wilt thou with monefull musicke staine
 The cheerefull notes these pleasant places yeeld,
 Where all good haps a perfect state maintaine?

Plangus. Curst be good haps, and curst be they that build
 Their hopes on haps, and do not make dispaire
 For all these certaine blowes the surest shield.
 Shall I that saw Eronaes shining haire
 Torne with her hands, and those same hands of snow
 With losse of purest blood themselues to teare?
 Shall I that saw those breasts, where beauties flow,
 Swelling with sighes, made pale with mindes disease,
 And saw those eyes (those Sonnes) such showres to show,
 Shall I, whose eares her mournfull words did seaze,
 Her words in syrup laid of sweetest breath,
 Relent those thoughts which then did so displease?
 No, no: Dispaire my dayly lesson saith,

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

And saith, although I seeke my life to flie,
 Plangus must liue to see Eronaes death,
 Plangus must liue some helpe for her to trie
 (Though in dispaire) for loue so forceth me
 Plangus doth liue, and shall Erona dye?
 Erona dye? O heauen (if heauen there be)
 Hath all thy whirling course so small effect?
 Serue all thy starrie eyes this shame to see?
 Let dolts in haste some altars faire erect
 To those high powers, which idly sit above,
 And vertue do in greatest need neglect.

Basilus. O man, take heed, how thou the Gods do moue
 To cause full wrath, which thou canst not resist.
 Blasphemous words the speaker vaine do proue.
 Alas while we are wrapt in foggie mist
 Of our selfe-loue (so passions do deceaue)
 We thinke they hurt, when most they do assist.
 To harme vs wormes should that high Iustice leane
 His nature? nay, him selfe? for so it is.
 What glorie from our losse can he receaue?
 But still our dazeled eyes their way do misse,
 While that we do at his sweete scourge repine,
 The kindly way to beat vs on to blisse.
 If she must dye, then hath she past the line
 Of lothsom dayes, whose losse how canst thou mone,
 That doost so well their miseries define?
 But such we are with inwarde tempest blowne
 Of windes quite contrarie in wanes of will:
 We mone that lost, which had we did bemone.

Plangus. And shall she dye? shall cruell fier spill
 Those beames that set so many harts on fire?
 Hath she not force euen death with loue to kill?
 Nay euen cold Death enflame with hot desire
 Her to enioy where ioy it selfe is thrall,
 Will spoyle the earth of his most rich attire.
 Thus Death becomes a riual to vs all,
 And hopes with foule embracements her to get,
 In whose decay Vertues faire shrine must fall.
 O Vertue weake, shall death his triumph set
 Vpon thy spoiles, which neuer should lye wast?
 Let Death first dye; be thou his worthy let.
 By what eclipse shall that Sunne be defaste?
 What mine hath erst thrown down so faire a tower?
 What sacriledge hath such a saint disgrast?
 The world the garden is, she is the flower
 That sweetens all the place; she is the guest

of

Of rareſt price, both heav'n and earth her bower.
 And ſhall (ō me) all this in aſhes reſt?
 Alas, if you a Phoenix new will haue
 Burnt by the Sunne, ſhe firſt muſt build her neſt.
 But v'ell you know, the gentle Sunne would ſawe
 Such beames ſo like his owne, which might haue might
 In him, the thoughts of Phaëtons damme to graue.
 Therefore, alas, you uſe vile Vulcans ſpight,
 VVhich nothing ſpares, to melt that Virgin-waxe,
 VVhich while it is, it is all Aſias light.
 O Mars, for what doth ſerue thy armed axe?
 To let that wit-old beaſt conſume in flames
 Thy Venus childe, whoſe beaurie Venus lacks?
 O Venus (if her praiſe no enuy frames,
 In thy high minde) get her thy husbands grace.
 Sweete ſpeaking of a curriſh harte reclaimes.
 O eyes of mine, where once ſhe ſaw her face,
 Her face which was more liuely in my heart;
 O braine, where thought of her hath onely place;
 O hand, which toucht her hand when we did part;
 O lippes, that kiſt that hand with my teares ſpent;
 O tongue, then dumbe, not daring tell my ſmart;
 O ſoule whoſe lone in her is onely ſpent,
 VVhat ere you ſee, think, touch, kiſſe, ſpeake, or lone,
 Let all for her, and vnto her be bent.

Baſilius. Thy wailing words do much my ſpirits moue,
 They vttered are in ſuch a feeling faſhion,
 That ſorrowes work againſt my will I prone.
 Me-thinkes I am partaker of thy paſſion,
 And in thy caſe do glaſſe mine owne debilitie:
 Selfe-guiltie folke moſt prone to feele compaſſion.
 Yet Reaſon ſaith, Reaſon ſhould haue abilitie
 To hold theſe wordly things in ſuch proportion;
 As let them come or go with euen facilitie.
 But our Deſires tyrannicall extortion
 Doth force vs there to ſet our chiefe delightfulnes,
 VVhere but a baiting place is all our portion.
 But ſtill, although we faile of perfeſt rightfulnes,
 Seek we to tame theſe childish ſuperfluities:
 Let vs not winke though void of pureſt ſighfulnes.
 For what can breed more peeuish incongruities,
 Then man to yeeld to female lamentations?
 Let vs ſome Grammar learne of more congruities.

45 Plangus. If through mine eares pierce any conſolation,
 By wiſe diſcourſe, ſweete tunes, or Poets fiction;
 If ought I ceaſe theſe hideous exclamations,

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

*While that my soule, she, she liues in affliction,
 Then let my life long time on earth maintained be,
 To wretched me, the last worst malediction.
 Can I, that knew her sacred partes, restrained be
 From any ioy? know fortunes vile displacing her,
 In morall rules let raging woes contained be?
 Can I forget, when they in prison placing her,
 With swelling heart in spite and due disdainfulnesse
 She lay for dead till I helpt with unlacing her?
 Can I forget from how much mourning painfullnesse
 With Diamond in window-glasse she graued,
 Erona dye, and end this ougly painfullnesse?
 Can I forget in how strange phrase she craued
 That quickly they would her burne, drowne, or smother,
 As if by death she onely might be saued?
 Then let me eke forget one hand from other:
 Let me forget that Plangus I am called:
 Let me forget I am sonne to my mother,
 But if my memory must thus be thrall'd
 To that strange stroke which conquer'd all my senses,
 Can thoughts still thinking, so rest vnappall'd?*

*Basilus. Who still doth seeke against him selfe offences,
 What pardon can auail? or who employes him
 To hurt himselfe, what shields can be defences?
 VVoe to poore man: ech outward thing annoyes him
 In diuers kinds; yet as he were not filled,
 He heapes in outward griefe, that most destroyes him.
 Thus is our thought with paine for thisles tilled:
 Thus be our noblest partes dryed up with sorrow:
 Thus is our minde with too much minding spilled.
 One day layes up stufte of griefe for the morrow:
 And whose good haps do leane him unprouided,
 Condoling cause of friendship he will borrow,
 Betwixt the good and shade of good diuided,
 VVe pittie deeme that which bus weakenes it;
 So are we from our high creation sided.
 But Plangus lest I may your sicknesse misse
 Or rubbing, hurt the sore, I here do end.
 The asse dia hurt when he did thinke to kisse.*

When *Zelma* had read it ouer, maruelling verie much of the speech of *Erona*'s death, and therefore desirous to know further of it, but more desirous to heare *Philoclea* speake, Most excellent Ladie (said she) one may be little the wiser for reading this Dialogue, since it neither sets foorth what this *Plangus* is, nor what *Erona* 45
 is, nor what the cause should be which threatens her with death, & him with sorow:
 therefore I would humbly craue to vnderstand the particular discourse therof: be-
 cause (I must confesse) something in my trauaile I haue hard of this strange matter,
 which

which I would be glad to find by so sweet an authoritie confirmed. The truth is (answered *Philoctea*) that after he knew my father to be Prince of this country, while he hoped to preuaile something with him in a great request he made vnto him, he was content to open fullie the estate both of himselfe, and of that Lady; which with
 5 my sisters help (saide she) who remembers it better then I, I will declare vnto you: & first of *Erona* (being the chiefe subiect of this discourse) this storie (with more tears and exclamations then I list to spend about it) he recounted.

Of late there raigned a king in *Lydia*, who had for the blessing of his mariage, this onely daughter of his, *Erona*; a Princeesse worthie for her beautie, as much praue, as beautie may be praise-worthie. This Princeesse *Erona*, being 19 yeares of age, seeing the countrie of *Lydia* so much deuoted to *Cupid*, as that in euerie place his naked pictures and images were superstitiously adored (either moued thereunto by the esteeming that could be no Godhead, which could breed wickednes, or the shamefast consideration of such nakednesse) procured so much of her father, as vnto her
 10 to pull downe, and deface all those statues and pictures. Which how terribly he punished (for to that the *Lydians* impute it) quickly after appeared.

For she had not liued a yeare longer, when she was stricken with most obstinate Loue, to a young man but of meane parentage, in her fathers court, named *Antiphilus*: so meane, as that he was but the sonne of her Nurse, and by that means (without
 20 other desert) became knowne of her. Now so euill could she conceale her fire, and so wilfullie perseuered she in it, that her father offering her the mariage of the great *Tiridates* king of Armenia (who desired her more then the ioyes of heauen) she for *Antiphilus* sake refused it. Many wayes her father sought to withdraw her from it; sometimes perswasions, sometimes threatnings; once hiding *Antiphilus*, and giuing
 25 her to vnderstand that he was fled the countrie: lastly, making a solemne execution to be done of another, vnder the name of *Antiphilus*, who he kept in prison. But neither she liked perswasions, nor feared threatnings, nor changed for absence: & when she thought him dead, she sought all means (as well by poyson as knife) to send her soule, at least, to be married in the eternall Church with him. This so brake the tender fathers heart, that (leauing things as he found them) he shortly after died. Then
 30 forthwith *Erona* (being seized of the crowne, and arming her will with authoritie) sought to aduance her affection to the holie title of matrimonie.

But before she could accomplish all the solemnities, she was ouertaken with a warre the king *Tiridates* made vpon her, only for her person; towards whom (for her
 35 ruine) Loue had kindled his cruell heart, indeed cruell and tyrannous: for (being far too strong in the field) he spared not man, woman, and child, but (as though there could be found no foile to set forth the extremitie of his loue, but extremitie of hatred) wrote, as it were, the sonets of his Loue in the blood, and tuned them in the cries of her subiects; although his faire sister *Artaxia* (who would accompanie him
 40 in the armie) sought all means to appease his furie: till lastlie, he besieged *Erona* in her best citie, vowing to win her, or lose his life. And now had he brought her to the point either of a wofull consent, or a ruinous deniall, when there came thither (following the course which Vertue and Fortune led them) two excellent young Princes, *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, the one Prince of *Macedon*, the other of *Thessalia*: two Princes, as *Plangus* said (and he witnessed his saying with sighes and teares) the most
 45 accomplished both in bodie and mind, that the Sun euer look'd vpon. While *Philoctea* spake those words; o sweet words (thought *Zelma* to her selfe) which are not only a praise to me, but a praise to praise it selfe, which out of that mouth issueth.

These two Princes (said *Philoclea*) aswell to help the weaker (especiallie being a Ladie) as to saue a Greeke people from being ruined by such, whom we call and count barbarous, gathering together such of the honestest Lycians, as would venture their liues to succour their Princeesse: giuing order by a secret message they sent into the citie, that they shold issue with all force at an appointed time; they set vpon *Tiridates* campe, with so well guided a fiercenesse, that being of both sides assaulted, he was like to be ouerthrowne: but that this *Plangus* (being Generall of *Tiridates* horfmen) especially ayded by the two mightie men *Euardes* and *Barzanes*, rescued the footmen, euen almost defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their succours both of men and victuall) to enter the citie.

Which when *Tiridates* found would make the warre long, (which length seemed to him worse then a languishing consumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in his retinue, against those two Princes and *Antiphilus*: and that thereupon the quarrell should be decided, with compact, that neither side should help his fellow: but of whose side the more ouercame, with him the victorie should remaine. *Antiphilus* (though *Erona* chose rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for shame refuse the offer, especially since the two strangers that had no interest in it, did willingly accept it: besides that, he saw it like enough, that the people (wearie of the miseries of war) would rather giue him vp, if they saw him shrink, then for his sake venture their ruine: considering that the challengers were farre of greater worthinesse then himselfe. So it was agreed vpon; and against *Pyrocles* was *Euardes* king of Bithinia; *Barzanes* of Hircania against *Musidorus*, two men, that thought the world scarce able to resist them: and against *Antiphilus* he placed this same *Plangus*, being his owne cousin germane, and sonne to the king of *Iberia*. Now so it fell out, that *Musidorus* slew *Barzanes*, and *Pyrocles* *Euardes*; which victory those Princes esteemed aboue all that euer they had: but of the other side *Plangus* tooke *Antiphilus* prisoner: vnder which colour (as if the matter had bene equall, though indeed it was not, the greater part being overcome of his side) *Tiridates* continued his warre: and to bring *Erona* to a compelled yeelding, sent her word that he would the third morow after, before the walles of the town strike off *Antiphilus* head without his suite in that space were granted; adding withall (because he had heard of her desperate affectiō) that if in the meane time she did her selfe any hurt, what tortures could be deuised should be laid vpon *Antiphilus*.

Then lo if *Cupid* be a God, or that the tyrannie of our owne thoughts seeme as a God vnto vs: but whatsoeuer it was, then it did set forth the miserableness of his effects: she being drawne to two contraries by one cause: for the loue of him commaunded her to yeeld to no other: the loue of him commaunded her to preserue his life: which knot might well be cut, but vntied it could not be. So that loue in her passions (like a right make-bate) whispered to both sides arguments of quarrell. What (said he of the one side) doest thou loue *Antiphilus*, o *Erona*? and shall *Tiridates* enioy thy bodie? With what eyes wilt thou looke vpon *Antiphilus*, when he shall know that another possesseth thee? But if thou wilt do it, canst thou do it? canst thou force thy heart? Thinke with thy selfe, if this man haue thee, thou shalt neuer haue more part of *Antiphilus* then if he were dead. But thus much more, that the affection shall be still gnawing, and the remorse still present. Death perhaps wil coole the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou shalt euer lone, and euer lacke. Thinke this beside, if thou marie *Tiridates*, *Antiphilus* is so excellēt a man, that long he cannot be from being in some high place married; canst thou suffer that too? If

another kill him, he doth him the wrong: if thou abuse thy body, thou doost him the wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, or at another time he shal die. But it shalbe thy worke, thy shamefull worke, which is in thy power to shun, to make him liue to see thy faith falsified, and his bed defiled. But when Loue had well
 5 kindled that party of her thoughts, then went he to the other side. What (sayd he) O *Erona*, and is thy Loue of *Antiphilus* come to that point, as thou dost now make it a question, whether he shall die, or no? O excellent affection, which for too much loue, will see his head off. Marke well the reasons of the other side, and thou shalt see, it is but loue of thy selfe which so disputeth. Thou canst not abide *Tiridates*: this is
 10 but loue of thy selfe: thou shalt bee ashamed to looke vpon him afterwards; this is but feare of shame, and loue of thy selfe: thou shalt want him as much then; this is but loue of thy selfe: he shalbe married; if he be well, why should that grieue thee, but for loue of thy selfe? No, no, pronounce these words if thou canst, let *Antiphilus* die. Then the images of each side stood before her vnderstanding; one time shee
 15 thought she saw *Antiphilus* dying: another time she thought *Antiphilus* saw her by *Tiridates* enioyed: twenty times calling for a seruant to carry message of yeelding, but before he came the mind was altered. She blusht when she considered the effect of granting; she was pale, when shee remembred the fruits of denying. For weeping, sighing, wringing her hands, and tearing her haire, were indifferent of
 20 both sides. Easily she would haue agreed to haue broken all disputations with her owne death, but that the feare of *Antiphilus* furdur torments staied her. At length, euen the euening before the day appointed of his death, the determination of yeelding preuailed, especially, growing vpon a message of *Antiphilus*; who with all the coniuring termes he could deuise, besought her to saue his life, vpon any conditiōs.
 25 But she had no sooner sent her messenger to *Tiridates*, but her mind changed, & she went to the two yong Princes, *Pyrocles* & *Musidorus*, & falling downe at their feete, desired them to try some way for her deliuerance; shewing her selfe resoluēd, not to ouer-lieue *Antiphilus*, nor yet to yeeld to *Tiridates*.

They that knew not what she had done in priuate, prepared that night accordingly: & as sometimes it fals out, that what is inconstancy, seemes cunning; so did this change indeed stand in as good steed as a witty dissimulatiō. For it made the K. as reckles, as them diligent: so that in the deadtime of the night, the Princes issued out of the towne; with whom she would needes go, either to die her selfe, or reskew
 30 *Antiphilus*, hauing no armor, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what deuise (though *Plangus* at large described it) the conclusion was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes so preuailed, that *Antiphilus* was succoured, & the king slaine. *Plangus* was then the chiefe man left in the campe; and therefore seeing no other remedy, conueied in safety into her coutry *Artaxia*, now Queene of *Armenia*; who with true lamentations, made knowne to the world, that her new greatnesse,
 40 did nō way comfort her in respect of her brothers losse, whom she studied al meanes possible to reuenge vpon euery one of the occasioners, hauing (as she thought) overthrowne her brother by a most abhominable treason. In somuch, that being at home, she proclaimed great rewards to any priuate man, and her selfe in mariage to any Prince, that would destroy *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*. But thus was *Antiphilus*
 45 redeemed, and (though against the consent of all her nobility) married to *Erona*; in which case the two Greeke Princes (being called away by another aduenture) left them.

But now me thinkes as I haue read some Poets, who when they intend to tell

some horrible matter, they bid men shun the hearing of it; so if I do not desire you to stop your eares from me, yet may I wel desire a breathing time, before I am to tel the execrable treason of *Antiphilus*, that brought her to this miserie; and withall wish you all, that from all mankind indeed you stop your eares. O most happy were we, if we did set our loues one vpon another. (And as she spake that word, her cheeks in red letters writ more then her tongue did speake.) And therefore since I haue named *Plangus*, I pray you sister (saide she) helpe me with the rest, for I haue held the stage long enough; and if it please you to make his fortune knowne, as I haue done *Eronas*, I will after take heart againe to go on with his falshood; and so betweene vs both, my Lady *Zelmane* shall vnderstand both the cause and parties of this Lamentation. Nay, I beshrow me the (saide *Miso*) I will none of that, I promise you, as long as I haue the gouernement, I will first haue my tale, and then my Lady *Pamela*, my Lady *Zelmane*, and my daughter *Mopsa* (for *Mopsa* was then returned from *Amphialus*) may draw cuts, and the shortest cut speake first. For I tell you, and this may be suffered, when you are married, you will haue first and last word of your husbands. The Ladies laughed to see with what an eager earnestnes she looked, hauing threatning not only in her ferret eyes, but while she spake, her nose seeming to threaten her chin, and her shaking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedie, they must obey: & *Miso* sitting on the ground with her knees vp, and her hands vpon her knees) tuning her voice with manie a quauering cough, thus discoursed vnto the. I tell you true (saide she) whatsoeuer you think of me, you wil one day be as I am; and I, simple though I sit here, thought once my penie as good siluer, as some of you do: and if my father had not plaid the hastie foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might haue had another-gaines husband then *Dametas*. But let that passe, God amend him: and yet I speake it not without good cause. You are full in your tittle tatlings of *Cupid*: here is *Cupid*, and there is *Cupid*. I will tell you now what a good olde woman told me, what an olde wife man told her, what a great learned cleauke told him, and gaue it him in writing; and here I haue it in my prayer booke. I pray you (saide *Philoclea*) let vs see it & read it. No hast but good (saide *Miso*) you shal first know how I came by it. I was a young girle of a seuen and twenty yeare old, & I could not go through the street of our village, but I might heare the young men talke: O the pretie litle eyes of *Miso*: o the fine thin lips of *Miso*: o the goodly fat hands of *Miso*; besides, how well a certaine wrying I had of my necke became me. Then the one would winke with one eye, and the other cast daylies at me: I must confesse seeing so many amorous, it made me set vp my peacockes taile with the highest. Which when this good old woman perceiued (o the good wold woman, well may the bones rest of the good wold woman) she cald me to her into her house. I remember full well it stood in the lane as you go to the Barbers shop, all the towne knew her, there was a great losse of her: she called me to her, and taking first a sop of wine to comfort her heart (it was of the same wine that comes out of *Candia*, which we pay so deare for now a dayes, and in that good world was verie good cheape) she cald me to her; Minion saide she (indeed I was a prety one in those dayes, though I say it) I see a number of lads that loue you: Well (saide she) I say no more: do you know what Loue is; With that she brought me into a corner, where there was painted a foule fiend I trow: for he had a paire of hornes like a Bull, his feet clouen, as manie eyes vpon his bodie, as my gray mare hath dappels, and for all the world so placed. This monster fate like a hangman vpon a paire of gallows, in his right hand he was painted holding a crown of Laurel, in his left hand a purse of money, & out of his mouth hung

hung a lace of two faire pictures, of a man and a woman, and such a countenance he shewed, as if he would perswade folkes by those alurements to come thither and be hanged. I, like a tender hearted wench skrieked out for feare of the diuell. Well (said she) this same is euen Loue: therefore do what thou list with all those fellowes, one after another; & it reckes not much what they do to thee, so it be in secret; but vpon my charge, neuer loue none of them. Why mother (said I) could such a thing come frō the bellie of the faire *Venus*? for a few dayes before, our Priest (betweene him and me) had told me the whole storie of *Venus*. Tush (said she) they are all deceiued: and therewith gaue me this booke, which she said, a great maker of ballads had giuē
 10 to an old Painter, who for a litle pleasure, had bestowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (said she) and thou shalt see that his mother was a cow, & the false *Argus* his father. And so she gaue me this booke, and there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good olde woman, made her make such a face to weepe, as if it were not sorow, it was the carkasse of sorow that appeared there.
 15 But while her teares came out, like raine falling vpon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her prayer booke was read among these Ladies, which contained this.

Poore Painters oft vwith sillie Poets ioyne,
 To fill the world vwith straunge but vaine conceits:
 20 One brings the stuffe, the other stamps the coine,
 which breeds nought else but gloses of deceits.
 Thus Painters Cupid paint, thus Poets do
 A naked God, blind, young vwith arrowes two.
 Is he a God, that ener flies the light?
 25 Or naked he, disguis'd in all vnruth?
 If he be blind, how hitteth he soright?
 How is he young, that tam'd old Phœbus youth?
 But arrowes two, and tips with gold or lead?
 Some hurt, accuse a third with hornie head.
 30 No, nothing so; an old false knaue he is,
 By Argus got on Io, then a Cow:
 what time for her luno her Ioue did misse,
 And charge of her to Argus did allow.
 Mercurie kill'd his false sire for this act,
 35 His damme a beast vvas pardon'd beastlie fact.
 with fathers death, and mothers guiltie shame,
 with Ioues disdain at such a riuals seed:
 The vvretch compeld, a runnagate became,
 And learn'd vvhat ill a miser state doth breed:
 40 To lie, to steale, to prie, and to accuse,
 Naught in him selfe each other to abuse.
 Tet beares he still his parents stately gifts,
 A horned head, clouen feet, and thousand eyes,
 Some gazing still, some winking wilie shifts,
 with long large eares, where neuer rumour dies.
 45 His horned head doth seeme the heauen to spight,
 His clouen foot doth neuer tread aright.
 Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Cloth'd in the shape which sooneſt may deceine:
Thou halfe a beaſt, ech beaſtly vice he plants,
In thoſe weake hearts that his aduice receine.
He proules each place ſtill in new colours decks,
Sucking ones ill, another to infect.
To narrow breſts he comes all wrapt in gaine:
To ſwelling harts he ſhines in honours fire:
To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;
Creeping to each with flattering of deſire,
But for that Loe is worſt which rules the eyes,
Thereon his name, there his chiefe triumph lies.
Millions of yeares this old driuelt Cupid lines;
VVhile ſtill more wretch, more wicked he doth proue:
Till now at length that loue him office giues,
(At Iunos ſuite, vvho much did Argus loue)
In this our vvorld a hang-man for to be,
Of all thoſe fooles, that vvill haue all they ſee.

The Ladies made ſport at the deſcription and ſtorie of *Cupid*. But *Zelmane* could ſcarce ſuffer thoſe blaſphemies (as ſhe took them) to be read, but humbly beſought *Pamela* ſhe wold performe her ſilters requeſt of the other part of the ſtorie. Noble Lady (answered ſhe, beautifying her face with a ſweet ſmiling, and the ſweetneſſe of her ſmiling with the beauty of her face) ſince I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not giue example of diſobedience. My gouerneſſe will haue vs draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let vs do ſo: and ſo perhaps it will light vpon you to entertaine this companie with ſome ſtorie of your owne; and it is reaſon our eares ſhould be willing to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliuer. I will thinke (answered *Zelmane*) excellent Princeſſe, my tongue of ſome value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to fauour me. But *Pamela* pleaſantlie perſiſting to haue Fortune their iudge, they ſet hands, & *Mopſa* (though at the firſt for ſqueamiſhneſſe going vp & downe, with her head like a bote in a ſtorme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that ſaw not the colour of them) gaue her the preheminance: and ſo being her time to ſpeake (wiping her mouth, as there was good cauſe) ſhe thus tumbled into her matter. In time paſt (ſaid ſhe) there was a king, the mightieſt man in all his countrie, that had by his wife, the faireſt daughter that did euer eat pap. Now this king did keepe a great houſe, that euerie body might come and take their meat freely. So one day, as his daughter was ſitting in her window, playing vpon a harpe, as ſweete as anie Roſe; and combing her head with a combe all of precious ſtones, there came in a Knight into the Court, vpon a goodly horſe, one haire of gold, and the other of ſiluer; and ſo the knight caſting vp his eyes to the window, did fall into ſuch loue with her, that hee grew not worth the bread he eate; till many a ſorie day going ouer his head, with Dayly Diligence and Griefſie Grones, he wan her affection, ſo that they agreed to run away together. And ſo in May vvhen all true harts reioyce, they ſtale out of the Caſtell, without ſtaying ſo much as for their breakfast. Now forſooth, as they went togethier, oftē all to kiſſing one another, the Knight told her, he was brought vp among the water-Nymphs, who had ſo bewitched him, that if he were euer aſkt his name, he muſt preſently vaniſh away: and therefore charged her vpon his bleſſing, that ſhe neuer aſke him what he was, nor whither he would.

And

And so a great while she kept his commandement; till once, passing through a cruell wilderness, as darke as pitch; her mouth so watred, that she could not chuse but aske him the question. And then, he making the grieuoufests complaints that would haue melted a tree to haue heard them, vanished quite away: and she lay downe, casting forth as pitifull cries as any shrich-owle. But hauing laien so (wet by the raine, & burnt by the Sun) fife dayes, and fife nights, shee gat vp and went ouer many a high hill, and many a deepe riuer; till she came to an Aunts house of hers; and came, and cried to her for helpe: and she for pittie gaue her a Nut, and bad her neuer open her Nut, till she was come to the extreamest misery that euer tongue could speake
 10 of. And so she went, and she went, & neuer rested the euening, where she went in the morning; till she came to a second Aunt; and she gaue her another Nut.

Now good *Mopsa* (said the sweete *Philoclea*) I pray thee at my request keepe this tale, till my marriage day, and I promise thee that the best gowne I weare that day shalbe thine. *Mopsa* was very glad of the bargain, especially that it should grow a
 15 festiuall Tale: so that *Zelmane*, who desired to find the vtermost what these Ladies vnderstood touching her selfe, and hauing vnderstood the danger of *Erona* (of which before she had neuer heard) purposing with her self (as soone as this pursuit she now was in, was brought to any effect) to succour her, intreated againe, that shee might know as well the story of *Plangus*, as of *Erona*. *Philoclea* referred it to her sisters perfecter remembrance, who with so sweet a voice, & so winning a grace, as in themselves
 30 were of most forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner to their earnest request soone condescended.

The father of this Prince *Plangus* as yet liues, and his king of *Iberia*: a man (if the iudgement of *Plangus* may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing euill, without himself mistake the euil, seeing it disguised vnder some forme of goodnesse. This Prince, being married at the first to a Princeesse (who both from her aunc-
 25 cesters, and in her selfe was worthy of him) by her had this son *Plangus*. Not long after whose birth, the Queene (as though she had performed the message for which she was sent into the world) returned againe vnto her maker. The king (sealing vp all
 30 thoughts of loue vnder the image of her memory) remained a widdower many yeres after; recompencing the griefe of that disioyning from her, in conioyning in himselfe both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her only child *Plangus*. Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eyes may iudge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excused by the greenenesse of his youth, which tooke all the fault vpon it selfe) loued a priuate mans wife of the principall City of that kingdome, if that may bee called loue, which he rather did take into himselfe willingly, then by which he was taken forcibly. It sufficeth, that the yong mā perswaded himself he loued her: she being a womā beautifull enough
 40 if it be possible, that the only outside can iustly entitle a beauty. But finding such a chafe as only fled to bee caught, the young Prince brought his affection with her to that point, which ought to engraue remorse in her hart, & to paint shame vpon her face. And so posselt he his desire without any interruption; he constantly fauouring her, and she thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the spots
 45 of a broken wedlocke. But as I haue seene one that was sicke of a sleeping disease, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: so out of his sinfull sleepe his mind (vnworthy so to be lost) was not to bee cald to it selfe, but by a sharpe accident. It fell out, that his many-times leauing of the court (in vndue times) began to

be noted; and (as Princes eares be manifold) from one to another came vnto the king; who (carefull of his onlie sonne) sought, and found by his spies (the necessarie euill seruants to a king) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights so diuerted. Whereupon, the king (to giue his fault the greater blow) vsed such means by disguising himselfe, that he found thē (her husband being absent) in her house together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly ashamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatnings vpon her, and vpon him reproches. But the poore young Prince (deceiued with that young opinion, that if it be euer lawfull to lie, it is for ones Louer,) employed all his wit to bring his father to a better opinion. And because he might bend him from that (as he counted it) crooked conceit of her, he wrested him, as much as he could possible, to the other side: not sticking with prodigall protestations to set forth her chastitie; not denying his owne attempt, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophistrie preuailed, his father beleeued, and so beleued, that ere long (though he were already stept into the winter of his age) he found himselfe warme in those desires, which were in his sonne far more excusable. To be short, he gaue himselfe ouer vnto it; and (because he would auoid the odious comparison of a young riuall) sent away his sonne with an armie, to the subduing of a Province lately rebelled against him, which he knew could not be a lesse worke then of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaued him so worthilie, as euen to this countrie the fame thereof came, long before his owne comming: while yet his father had a speedier successe, but in a farre vnnobler conquest. For while *Plangus* was away, the old man (growing only in age and affection) followed his suit with all means of vn honest seruants, large promises, and each thing else that might helpe to counteruaile his owne vn loueliness.

And she (whose husband about that time died) forgetting the absent *Plangus*, or at least not hoping of him to obtaine so aspiring a purpose, left no arte vnused, which might keepe the line from breaking, whereat the fish was already taken, not drawing him violently, but letting him play himselfe vpon the hooke, which he had so greedily swallowed. For, accompanying her mourning garments with a dolefull countenance, yet neither forgetting handsonnesse in her mourning garments, nor sweetnesse in her dolefull countenance; her words were euer seasoned with sighes, and any fauour she shewed, bathed in teares, that affection might see cause of pitie, and pitie might perswade cause of affection. And being growne skillfull in his humours, she was no lesse skillfull in applying his humours: neuer suffering his feare to fall to a dispaire, nor his hope to hasten to an assurance: she was content he should thinke that she loued him; & a certaine stolne looke should sometimes (as though it were against her will) bewray it: But if therevpon he grew bold, he straight was encountered with a maske of vertue. And that which seemeth most impossible vnto me (for as neare as I can repeat it as *Plangus* told it) she could not onlie sigh when she would, as all can do, & weepe when she would, as (they say) some can do; but being most impudent in her heart) she could, when she would, teach her cheeks blushing, and make shamefastnesse the cloke of shamelesnesse. In sum, to leaue out many particularities which he recited, she did not only vse so the spur, that his desire ran on; but so the bit, that it ran on euen in such a careere as she would haue it; that within a while the king, seeing with no other eies but such as she gaue him, & thinking on no other thoughts, but such as she taught him; hauing at first liberal measure of fauours, thē shortened of thē, whē most his desire was inflam'd; he saw no other way but marriage to satisfie his longing, & her mind (as he thought) louing, but chastly louing: so that

that by the time *Plangus* returned from being notably victorious of the Rebels, he found his father, not only married, but already a father of a sonne and a daughter by this woman. Which though *Plangus* (as he had euery way iust cause) was grieved at; yet did his griefe neuer bring foorth either contemning of her, or repining at his father. But she (who besides she was growne a mother, and a stepmother, did reade in
 5 his eyes her owne fault, and made his conscience her guiltines) thought still that his presence caried her condemnation: so much the more, as that she (vnchastly attempting his wonted fancies found (for the reuerence of his fathers bed) a bitter refusall: which breeding rather spite then shame in her, or if it were a shame, a shame not of
 10 the fault, but of the repulse, she did not only (as hating him) thirst for a reuenge, but (as fearing harme from him) endeouored to do harme vnto him. Therefore did she trie the vttermost of her wicked wit, how to ouerthrow him in the foundation of his strength, which was, in the fauour of his father: which because she saw strong both in nature and desert, it required the more cunning how to vndermine it. And therefore (shunning the ordinary trade of hireling sycophants) she made her praises of
 15 him, to be accusations; & her aduancing him, to be his ruine. For first with words (neerer admiration then liking) she would extoll his excellencies, the goodlinesse of his shape, the power of his wit, the valiantnesse of his courage, the fortunatenesse of his successes: so as the father might find in her a singular loue towards him: nay, she shunned not to kindle some few sparkes of ieaousie in him. Thus hauing gotten
 20 an opinion in his father, that shee was farre from meaning mischief to the sonne, then fell she to praise him with no lesse vehemency of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then she sets foorth the liberty of his mind, the high flying of his thoughts, the fittnesse in him to beare rule, the singular loue the subiects bare him; thas it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their fauours, or
 25 his courage in imploying their fauours: that he was not borne to liue a subiect-life, each action of his bearing in it Maiesty, such a kingly entertainment, such a kingly magnificence, such a kingly heart for enterprises: especially remembring those vertues, which in a successor are no more honoured by the subiects, then suspected of
 30 the Princes. Then would she by putting off obiections, bring in obiections to her husbands head, already infected with suspition. Nay (would she say) I dare take it vpon my death, that he is no such sonne, as many of like might haue bin, who loued greatnesse so well, as to build their greatnesse vpon their fathers ruine. Indeed Ambition, like Loue, can abide no lingring, and euer vrgeth on his owne successes; hating nothing, but what may stop them. But the Gods forbid, we should euer once
 35 dreame of any such thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you and the world should know, what he cā do: but the more power he hath to hurt, the more admirable is his praise, that he will not hurt. Then euer remembring to strengthen the suspition of his estate with priuate ieaousie of her loue, doing him excessiue honor
 40 when he was in presence, & repeating his prety speeches & graces in his absence; besides, causing him to be imployed in all such dangerous matters, as either he should perish in them, or if he preuailed, they should increafe his glorie: which she made a weapon to wound him, vntill she found that suspition began already to speake for it selfe, and that her husbands eares were growne hungry of rumours, and his eyes
 45 prying into euery accident.

Then tooke she help to her of a seruant neare about her husband, whō she knew to be of a hasty ambition, and such a one, who wanting true sufficiencie to raise him, would make a ladder of any mischief. Him she vseth to deale more plainly

in alleaging causes of iealousie, making him know the fittest times when her husband already was stirred that way. And so they two, with diuerse waies, nourished one humour, like Musicians, that singing diuerse parts, make one musicke. He sometime with fearefull countenance would desire the king to looke to himselfe; for that all the court and city were full of whisperings, and expectation of some sudden change, vpon what ground himselfe knew not. Another time he would counsell the K. to make much of his son, and hold his fauour, for that it was too late now to keep him vnder. Now seeming to feare himselfe, because (he sayd) *Plangus* loued none of them that were great about his father. Lastly, breaking with him directly (making a sorrowfull countenance, & an humble gesture beare false witnesse for his true meaning) that he found, not only souldiery, but people weary of his gouernment, and all their affection bent vpon *Plangus*. Both he and the Queene concurring in strange dreames, and each thing else, that in a mind (already perplexed) might breede astonishment: so that within a while, all *Plangus* actions began to be translated into the language of suspition.

Which though *Plangus* found, yet could he not auoid, euē contraries being driuē to draw one yoke of argument: if he were magnificent, he spent much with an aspiring intent: if he spared, he heaped much with an aspiring intent: if he spake curteously, he angled the peoples harts: if he were silent, he mused vpon some daungerous plot. In sum, if he could haue turned himselfe to as many formes as *Proteus*, euery forme should haue bin made hideous.

But so it fell out, that a meere trifle gaue them occasion of further proceeding. The king one morning, going to a vineyard that lay along the hill whereupon his castle stood, he saw a vine-labourer, that finding a bough broken, tooke a branch of the same bough for want of another thing, and tied it about the place broken. The King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (said he) I make the sonne bind the father. This word (finding the king already superstitious through suspition) amazed him streight, as a presage of his owne fortune: so that, returning, and breaking with his wife how much he misdoubted his estate, she made such gaine-saying answers as while they strauē, strauē to be overcome. But euen while the doubts most boiled, she thus nourished them.

She vnder-hand dealt with the principall men of that country, that at the great Parliament (which was then to be held) they should in the name of all the estates perswade the king (being now stept deeply into old age) to make *Plangus*, his associate in gouernment with him: assuring them, that not onely she would ioine with them, but that the father himselfe would take it kindly; charging them not to acquaint *Plangus* withall; for that perhaps it might be harmefull vnto him, if the king should find, that he were a party. They (who thought they might do it, not only willingly, because they loued him, and truly, because such indeede was the mind of the people, but safely, because she who ruled the king was agreed thereto) accomplished her counsell: she indeed keeping promise of vehement perswading the same: which the more she and they did, the more she knew her husband wold feare, and hate the cause of his feare. *Plangus* found this, and humbly protested against such desire, or will to accept. But the more he protested, the more his father thought he dissembled, accounting his integrity to be but a cunning face of falshood: & therefore delaying the desire of his subiects, attended some fit occasion to lay hands vpon his son: which his wife brought thus to passe.

She caused that same minister of hers to go vnto *Plangus*, and (enabling his words with

with great shew of faith, and endearing them with desire of secrecie) to tell him, that he found his ruine conspired by his stepmother, with certaine of the noble men of that countrey, the king himselfe giuing his consent, and that few dayes should passe before the putting it in practise: withall discovering the very truth indeede, with what cunning his stepmother had proceeded. This agreeing with *Plangus* his
 5 owne opinion, made him giue him the better credit: yet not so far, as to flie out of his countrey (according to the naughty fellowes perswasion) but to attend, and to see further. Whereupon the fellow (by the direction of his mistresse) told him one day, that the same night about one of the clocke, the king had appointed to haue his wife, and those noble men together, to deliberate of their manner of proceeding a-
 10 gainst *Plangus*: and therefore offered him, that if himselfe would agree, he would bring him into a place where she should heare all that passed; and so haue the more reason both to himselfe, and to the world, to seeke his safety. The poore *Plangus* (being subiect to that onely disadvantage of honest harts, credulity) was perswaded by him: and arming himselfe (because of his late going) was closely conueied into the
 15 place appointed. In the meane time his stepmother, making al her gestures cunningly counterfeite a miserable affliction, she lay almost groueling on the flower of her chamber, not suffering any body to comfort her; vntill they calling for her husband, and he held off with long enquiry, at length, she told him (euen almost crying out euery word) that she was weary of her life, since she was brought to that plunge, ei-
 20 ther to conceale her husbands mother, or accuse her sonne, who had euer beene more deare, then a sonne vnto her. Then with many interruptions and exclamations she told him, that her sonne *Plangus* (sollici ing her in the olde affection betweene them) had besought her to put her helping hand to the death of the king; as-
 25 suring her, that though all the lawes in the world were against it, he would marry her when he were king.

She had not fully sayd thus much, with many pitifull digressions, when in comes the same fellow, that brought *Plangus*: and running himselfe out of breath, fell at the kings feete, beseeching him to saue himselfe; for that there was a man with a sword drawne in the next room. The king affrighted, went out, and called his gard,
 30 who entring the place, found indeed *Plangus* with his sword in his hand, but not naked, but standing suspiciously inough, to one already suspicious. The king (thinking he had put vp his sworde because of the noise) neuer tooke leasure to heare his answere, but made him prisoner, meaning the next morning to put him to death in the marker place.

35 But the day had no sooner opened the eyes & eares of his friends & followers, but that there was a little army of them, who came, & by force deliuered him; although numbers on the other side (abused with the fine framing of their report) took armes for the king. But *Plangus*, though he might haue vsed the force of his friends, to re-
 40 uenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet the naturall loue of his father, and hate to make their suspicion seeme iust, caused him rather to choose a voluntarie exile, then to make his fathers death the purchase of his life: and therefore went he to *Ti-ridates*, whose mother was his fathers sister, liuing in his Court eleuen or twelue yeares, euer hoping by his intercession, and his owne desert, to recouer his fathers grace. At the end of which time, the warre of *Erona* happened, which my sister with
 45 the cause thereof discoursed vnto you.

But his father had so deeply engraued the suspicion in his hart, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a fearefull guiltines, then of an humble faithfulness; & ther-

fore continued his hate, with such vehemency, that he did euen hate his Nephew *Tiridates*, and afterwards his neece *Artaxia*, because in their Court hee receiued countenance, leauing no meanes vnattempted of destroying his son; among other, employing that wicked seruant of his, who vndertooke to empoison him. But his cunning disguised him not so well, but that the watchfull seruants of *Plangus* did discouer him. Whereupon the wretch was taken, and (before his well deserued execution) by torture forced to confesse the particularities of this, which in generall I haue told you.

Which confession autenticallly set downe (though *Tiridates* with solemne Embassage sent it to the king) wrought no effect. For the king hauing put the reines of the government into his wiues hand, neuer did so much as reade it; but sent it streight by her to be considered. So as they rather heaped more hatred vpon *Plangus*, for the death of their seruant. And now finding, that his absence, & their reports had much diminished the wauering peoples affection towards *Plangus*, with aduancing fit persons for faction, and granting great immunities to the commons, they preuailed so farre, as to cause the sonne of the second wife, called *Palladius*, to be proclaimed successour, and *Plangus* quite excluded: so that *Plangus* was driuen to continue his seruing *Tiridates*, as he did in the warre against *Erona*, and brought home *Artaxia*, as my sister told you; when *Erona* by the treason of *Antiphilus*. But at that word she stopped. For *Basilus* (not able longer to abide their absence) came suddenly among them, and with smiling countenance (telling *Zelmane* he was affraid she had stolen away his daughters) inuited them to follow the Sunnes counsell in going then to their lodgings; for indeede the Sun was ready to set. They yeelded, *Zelmane* meaning some other time to vnderstand the story of *Antiphilus* treason, and *Eronas* daunger, whose cause she greatly tendred. But *Miso* had no sooner espied *Basilus*, but that as spitefully, as her rotten voyce could vtter it, she set forth the sawcinesse of *Amphialus*. But *Basilus* only attended what *Zelmanes* opinion was, who though she hated *Amphialus*, yet the nobility of her courage preuailed ouer it, and she desired he might be pardoned that youthfull error; considering the reputation he had, to be one of the best knights in the world; so as hereafter he gouerned himselfe, as one remembering his fault. *Basilus* giuing the infinit tearmes of praises to *Zelmanes* both valour in conquering, and pittifulnesse in pardoning, commanded no more words to bee made of it, since such he thought was her pleasure.

So brought he them vp to visite his wife, where betweene her and him, the poore *Zelmane* receiued a tedious entertainment; oppressed with being loued, almost as much, as with louing. *Basilus* not so wise in couering his passion, could make his tongue go almost no other pace, but to runne into those immoderate praises, which the foolish Louer thinkes short of his Mistresse though they reach farre beyond the heauens. But *Gynecia* (whom womanly modesty did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes vse the aduantage of her sexe in kissing *Zelmane*, as she sate vpon her bed-side by her; which was but still more and more sweete incense, to cast vpon the fire wherein her heart was sacrificed: Once *Zelmane* could not stirre, but that, (as if they had beene poppets, whose motion stood onely vpon her pleasure) *Basilus* with seruiceable steppes, *Gynecia* with greedy eyes would follow her. *Basilus* mind *Gynecia* well knew, and could haue found in her hart to laugh at, if mirth could haue borne any proportion with her fortune. But all *Gynecias* actions were interpreted by *Basilus*, as proceeding from ieaiousie of his amorousnesse. *Zelmane* betwixt both (like the poore child, whose father while he beates him, will make him beleue it is for

for loue; or like the sicke man, to whom the Phisition sweares, the ill-tasting wallowish medicine he profers, is of a good taste) their loue was hatefull, their curtesie troublesome, their presence cause of her absence thence, where not only her light, but her life consisted. Alas (thought she to her selfe) Deare *Dorus*, what odds is there betweene thy destiny and mine? For thou hast to do in thy pursuite but with shepherdish folkes, who trouble thee with a litle enuious care, and affected diligence. But I (besides that I haue now *Miso* the worst of thy diuels, let loose vpon me) am waited on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eies of Loue and lealoufie. Alas, incōparable *Philoclea*, thou euer seest me, but dost neuer see me as I am: thou hearest willingly al that I dare say, & I dare not say that which were most fit for thee to heare. Alas who euer but I was imprisoned in liberty, and banished being still present? To whom but me haue louers bin iaylours, & honor a captiuitie?

But the night comming on with her silent steps vpon them, they parted each from other (if at least they could be parted, of whom euery one did liue in another) and went about to flatter sleepe with their beds, that disdained to bestow it selfe liberally vpon such eyes which by their will would euer be looking: and in least measure vpon *Gynecia*. Who (when *Basilus* after long tossing was gotten a sleepe, and the cheerefull comfort of the lights remoued from her) kneeling vp in her bed, began with a soft voyce, and swolne hārt, to renue the curses of her birth; & then in a maner embracing her bed; Ah chastest bed of mine (said she) which neuer heretofore couldst accuse me of one defiled thought, how cāst thou now receiue this defastred chāgeling? Happy, happy, be they only which be not: & thy blessednes only in this respect thou maiest feelee, that thou hast no feeling. With that she furiously tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here o forgotten vertue (sayd she) this miserable sacrifice; while my soule was clothed with modesty, that was a comely ornament: now why should nature crowne that head, which is so wicked, as her only despaire is, she cannot be enough wicked? More she wold haue said, but that *Basilus* (awaked with the noise) took her in his armes, & began to comfort her; the good-man thinking, it was al for a lealous loue of him: which humour if she wold a litle haue maintained, perchance it might haue weakned his new conceiued fancies. But he finding her answers wandering from the purpose, left her to her selfe (glad the next morning to take the aduantage of a sleep, which a litle before day ouer-watched with sorrow, her teares had as it were sealed vp in her eyes) to haue the more conference with *Zelmane*, who baited on this fashion by these two louers, & euer kept from any meane to declare her selfe, found in her selfe a dayly increafe of her violent desires; like a riuer the more swelling, the more his current is stopped.

The chiefe recreation she could find in her anguish, was sometime to visite that place, where first she was so happy as to see the cause of her vnhap. There wold she kisse the ground, and thanke the trees, blesse the ayre, & do dutifull reuerence to euery thing that she thought did accompany her at their first meeting: then returne againe to her inward thoughts; sometimes dispaire darkning all her imaginations, sometimes the actiue passion of loue cheering and cleering her inuention, how to vnbar that combersome hinderance of her two ill-matched louers. But this morning *Basilus* himselfe gaue her good occasion to go beyond them. For hauing cōbd and trickt himselfe more curiously, then any time forty winters before, comming where *Zelmane* was, he found her giuen ouer to her musical muses, to the great pleasure of the good old *Basilus*, who retired himselfe behind a tree, while she with a most sweete voice did vtter these passionate verses:

Loued I am, and yet complaine of Loue:
 As louing not accus'd in Loue: I die.
 When pittie most I craue, I cruell proue:
 Still seeking Loue, Loue found as much I flie.
 Burnt in my selfe, I muse at others fire:
 What I call wrong, I do the same, and more:
 Bard of my will, I haue beyond desire:
 I wayle for want, and yet am chokt with store.
 This is thy worke, thou God for ever blind:
 Though thousands old, a Boy entit'led still.
 Thus children do the silly birds they find,
 Vnith stroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.
 Yet thus much Loue, ô Loue, I craue of thee:
 Let me be lou'd, or els not loued be.

Basilus made no great hast from behind the tree, till he perceiued she had fully ended her musicke. But then loth to loose the precious fruite of time, he presented himselfe vnto her, falling downe vpon both his knees, and holding vp his hands, as the old gouernesse of *Danae* is painted, when she suddenly saw the golden showre, 20
 O heauenly woman, or earthly Goddesse (sayd he) let not my prefence be odious vnto you, nor my humble suite seeme of small weight in your eares. Vouchsafe your eies to descend vpon this miserable old mā, whose life hath hitherto bin maintayned but to serue as an encrease of your beautifull triumphs. You only haue ouerthrowne me, & in my bondage consists my glory. Suffer not your own worke to be despised of 25
 you, but looke vpon him with pittie, whose life serues for your praise. *Zelmane* (keeping a countenance ascanfes, she vnderstood him not) told him, It became her euill to suffer such excessiue reuerence of him, but that it worse became her to correct him, to whom she owed duty: that the opinion she had of his wisdom was such, as made her esteeme greatly of his words; but that the words themselues sounded so, as she 30
 could not imagine what they might intend. Intend? (said *Basilus*, proud that that was brought in question) what may they intend, but a refreshing of my soule, and a swaging of my heat, and enioying those your excellencies, wherein my life is vpheld, & my death threatned? *Zelmane* lifting vp her face, as if she had receiued a mortall injury of him. And is this the deuotion your ceremonies haue bin bent vnto? sayd she: Is 35
 it the disdaine of my estate, or the opinion of my lightnesse, that haue emboldned such bate fancies towards me? enioying quoth you? now little ioy come to them that yeeld to such enioying. Poore *Basilus* was so appalled, that his legges bowed vnder him; his eyes lookt as though he should gladly hide himselfe; and his old bloud going to his hart, a generall shaking all ouer his body possessed him. At length with a 40
 wan mouth; he was about to giue a stammering answer, when it came into *Zelmanes* head by this deuise to make her profit of his folly; and therefore with a relented countenance, thus sayd vnto him: Your words (mighty Prince) were vnfit either for me to heare, or you to speake: but yet the large testimony I see of your affection makes me willing to suppress a great number of errors. Only thus much I thinke good to say, 45
 that the same words in my Lady *Philocleas* mouth, as from one woman to another (so as there were no other body by) might haue had a better grace; and perchance haue found a gentler receipt.

Basilus

Basilus (whose senses by desire were held open, and conceipt was by loue quickned) heard scarcely halfe her answere out, but that (as if speedy flight might saue his life) he turned away, and ranne with all the speede his body would suffer him, towards his daughter *Philoclea*: whom he found at that time dutifully watching by her mother, and *Miso* curiously watching her; hauing left *Mopsa* to do the like seruice to *Pamela*. *Basilus* forthwith calling *Philoclea* aside, (with all the coniuering words which Desire could endite and Authoritie vtter) besought her she would preferue his life, in whom her life was begun; she would saue his gray haire from rebuke, and his aged mind from despaire; that if she were not cloyed with his companie, and that she thought not the earth ouer-burthened with him, she would coole his fierie griefe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatsoeuer he was, he was nothing but what it pleased *Zelmane*; all the powers of his spirit depending of her: that if she continued cruell, he could no more sustaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitfull in the Sunnes continuall absence. He concluded, she should in one payment requite all his deserts: and that she needed not disdainie anie seruice (though neuer so meane) which was warranted by the sacred name of a father. *Philoclea* more glad then euer she had knowne her selfe, that she might by this occasion, enioy the priuate conference of *Zelmane*, yet had so sweete a feeling of vertue in her mind, that she would not suffer a vile colour to be cast ouer her faire thoughts, but with humble grace answered her father: That there needed neither promise nor perswasion to her, to make her do her ytermost for her fathers seruice: that for *Zelmanes* fauour, she would in all vertuous sort seeke it towards him: and that as she would not pierce further into his meaning, then himselfe should declare, so would she interpret all his doings to be accomplished in goodnesse: and therefore desired (if otherwise it were) that he would not impart it to her, who then should be forced to begin (by true obedience) a shew of disobedience: rather performing his generall commandement, which had euer beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, sprong out of passion, and contrary to the former. *Basilus* content to take that, since hee could haue no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free accessse vnto *Zelmane*) allowed her reasons, and tooke her proffer thankfully, desiring only a speedy returne of comfort. *Philoclea* was parting, & *Miso* streight behind her, like *Alecto* following *Proserpina*. But *Basilus* forced her to stay, though with much a do, she being sharp-set vpon the fulfilling of a siREWd office, in ouer-looking *Philoclea*: and so sayd to *Basilus*, that she did as she was commanded, and could not answer it to *Gyrecia*, if she were any whit from *Philoclea*: telling him true, that he did euill to take her charge from her. But *Basilus* (swearing he wold put out her eies, if she stird a foot to trouble his daughter) gaue her a stop for that while.

So away departed *Philoclea*, with a new field of fancies for her trauayling mind. For well she saw, her father was growne her aduerse party, & yet her fortune such, as she must fauour her Riual, and the fortune of that fortune such, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrary meane helpe her.

But she walkt but a little on, before she saw *Zelmane* lying vpon a banke, with her face so bent ouer *Ladon*, that (her teares falling into the water) one might haue thought, that she began meltingly to be metamorphosed to the vnder-running riuer. But by and by, with speech she made knowne, as well that she liued, as that she sorrowed. Faire streames (sayd she) that do vouchsafe in your clearenesse to represent vnto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of my teares vnto you,

procure your stay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at last, to find some thing that pities me: and that all things of comfort and pleasure do not flie away from me. But if the violence of your spring commaund you to haste away, to pay your duties to your great Prince, the Sea, yet carry with you these few words, and let the vttermost ends of the world know them. A loue more cleere then your selues, dedicated to a loue (I feare) more cold then your selues, with the cleerenesse layes a night of sorrow vpon me; and with the coldnes enflames a world of fire within me. With that she tooke a willow sticke, and wrote in a sandie banke these few verses:

Over these brookes trusting to ease mine eyes,
(Mine eyes euen great in labour vvith their teares)
I layde my face; my face wherein there lies
Clusters of cloudes, which no Sunne euer cleares.
In watry glasse my watric eyes I see:
Sorrowes ill easde, where sorrowes painted be.

My thoughts imprison'd in my secret woes,
With flamie breathes do issue oft in sound:
The sound to this strange aier no sooner goes,
But that it doth with Echoes force rebound,
And make me heare the plaints I would refraine:
Thus outward helps my inward grieve maintaine.

Now in this sand I vvould discharge my mind,
And cast from me part of my burdnous cares:
But in the sand my tales foretold I find,
And see therein how well the vvriter fares.
Since streame, aier, sand, mine eyes and eares conspire:
What hope to quench, where each thing blowes the fire?

And assoone as she had written them (a new swarme of thoughts stinging her mind) she was ready with her foote to giue the new-borne letters both death and buriall. But *Philoclea* (whose delight of hearing and seeing was before a stay from interrupting her) gaue her selfe to be scene vnto her, with such a lightning of beauty vpon *Zelmae*, that neither she could looke on, nor would looke off. At last *Philoclea* (hauing a litle mused how, to cut the threede euen, betweene her owne hopelesse affection, and her fathers vnbridled hope) with eyes, cheekes, and lips (whereof each sang their part, to make vp the harmonie of bashfulnesse) began to say, My Father to whom I owe my selfe, and therefore, when *Zelmae* (making a womanish habite to be the Armour of her boldnesse, giuing vp her life to the lips of *Philoclea*, and taking it againe by the sweetenesse of those kisses) humbly besought her to keepe her speech for a while within the Paradise of her mind. For well shee knew her fathers errand, who should soone receiue a sufficient answer. But now she demaunded leaue not to loose this long fought-for commodity of time, to ease her heart thus farre, that if in her agonies her destinie was to be condemned by *Philocleas* mouth, at least *Philoclea* might know, whom she had condemned. *Philoclea* easily yeelded to graunt her owne desire: and so making the greene banke the

the situation, and the riuer the prospect of the most beautifull buildings of Nature, *Zelmae* doubting how to begin, though her thoughts already had run to the ende, with a mind fearing the vnworthinesse of euery word that thold be presented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this maner.

5 Most beloued Lady, the incomparable excellencies of your selfe (waited-on by the greatnesse of your estate) and the importance of the thing (whereon my life consisteth) doth require both many ceremonies before the beginning, and many circumstances in the vttering my speech, both bold and fearefull. But the small opportunity of enuious occasion (by the malicious eye hatefull Loue doth cast vpon me) and the extreame bent of my affection (which will either breake out in words, or
10 breake my heart) compell me, not only to embrace the smallest time, but to passe by the respects due vnto you, in respect of your poore caitifes life, who is now, or neuer to be preserued. I do therefore vow vnto you, hereafter neuer more to omit all dutifull forme: do you only now vouchsafe to heare the matter of a minde most perplexed. If euer the sound of Loue haue come to your eares, or if euer you haue
15 vnderstood, what force it hath had to conquer the strongest hearts, and change the most settled estates: receiue here an example of those strange Tragedies; one, that in himselfe containeth the particularities of all those misfortunes: and from hencefoorth beleue that such a thing may be, since you shall see it is. You shall see
20 (I say) a liuing image, and a present story of what Loue can doe, when he is bent to ruine.

But alas, whither goest thou my tongue? or how doth my heart consent to adventure the reuealing his neereft touching secret? But peace Feare, thou comest too late, when already the harme is taken. Therefore I say againe, ô onely Princessesse, attend here a miserable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes
25 *Pyrocles*, Prince of *Macedon*, whom you onely haue brought to this game of Fortune, and vnused *Metamorphosis*: whom you onely haue made neglect his countrie, forget his father, and lastly, forsake to bee *Pyrocles*: the same *Pyrocles*, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a shipp, which being burned, *Pyrocles* was drowned. O most true presage for these traytors, my eyes, putting me into a ship
30 of Desire, which dayly burneth, those eyes (I say) which betraied me, will neuer leaue till they haue drowned me. But be not, bee not (most excellent Ladie) you that Nature hath made to bee the Load-starre of comfort, bee not the Rocke of shipwracke: you whom vertue hath made the Princessesse of felicitie, bee not the minister of ruine: you whom my choise hath made the Goddesse of my safety, ô let
35 not, let not, from you be powred vpon me destruction. Your faire face hath manie tokens in it of amazement at my words: thinke then what his amazement is, from whence they come: since no words can carry with them the life of the inward feeling. I desire, that my desire may bee waied in the ballances of Honour, and let Vertue hold them. For if the highest Loue in no base person may aspire to grace,
40 then may I hope your beautie will not be with pittie. If otherwise you bee (alas but let it be so) resolued, yet shall not my death bee comfortlesse, receiuing it by your sentence.

The ioy which wrought into *Pygmalions* mind, while hee found his beloued, image was softer, and warmer in his folded armes, till at length it accomplished his
45 gladnesse with a perfect womans shape (stil beautified with the former perfections) was euen such, as by each degree of *Zelmaes* words creepingly entred into *Philo-clea*: till her pleasure was fully made vp with the manifesting of his being; which

was such as in hope did ouercome Hope. Yet Doubt would faine haue playd his part in her mind, and cald in question, how she should bee assured that *Zelmane* was *Pyrocles*. But Loue streight stood vp and deposed, that a lie could not come from the mouth of *Zelmane*. Besides, a certaine sparke of honour, which rose in her well-disposed mind, made her feare to be alone with him, with whom alone she desired to be (with all the other contradictions growing in those minds, which neither absolutely clime the rocke of Vertue, nor freely sinke into the sea of Vanity) but that sparke soone gaue place, or at least gaue no more light in her mind, then a candle doth in the Sunnes presence. But euen sicke with a surfet ioy, and fearefull of she knew not what (as he that newly finds huge treasures, doubts whether he sleep or no, or like a fearefull Deere, which then lookes most about, when he comes to the best feede) with a shrugging kind of tremor through all her principall parts, she gaue these affectionate words for answer. Alas, how painefull a thing it is to a deuided mind to make a well-ioyned answer? how hard it is to bring inward shame to outward confession? and what handsomnesse-trow you can be obserued in that speech, which is made one knowes not to whom? Shall I say *ô Zelmane*? Alas your words be against it. Shall I say Prince *Pyrocles*? wretch that I am, your shew is manifest against it. But this, this I may well say; If I had continued as I ought, *Philoclea*, you had either neuer bene, or euer bene *Zelmane*: you had either neuer attempted this change, set on with hope, or neuer discovered it, stopt with despaire. But I feare me, my behauour ill gouerned, gaue you the first comfort: I feare me, my affection ill hid, hath giuen you this last assurance: I feare indeed, the weakenesse of my government before, made you thinke such a maske would be gratefull vnto me: and my weaker government since, makes you to pull off the visar. What shall I doo then? shall I seeke far-fetched inuentions? shall I labour to lay marble colours ouer my ruinous thoughts? or rather, though the purenesse of my virgin-mind be stained, let me keepe the true simplicity of my word. True it is, alas too true it is, *ô Zelmane* (for so I loue to call thee, since in that name my loue first began, and in the shade of that name my loue shall best lie hidden) that euen while so thou wert (what eye bewitched me I know not) my passions were fitter to desire, then to be desired. Shall I say then, I am sorry, or that my loue must be turned to hate, since thou art turned to *Pyrocles*? how may that well bee, since when thou wert *Zelmane*, the despaire thou mightest not be thus, did most torment me. Thou hast then the victory: vse it with vertue. Thy vertue wan me; with vertue preferue me. Dooft thou loue me? keepe me then still worthy to be beloued.

Then held she her tongue, and cast downe a self-accusing looke, finding, that in her selfe she had (as it were) shot out of the bow of her affection, a more quicke opening of her mind, then she minded to haue done. But *Pyrocles* so caried vp with ioy, that he did not enuy the Gods felicity, presented her with some iewels of right princely value, as some little tokens of his loue, and quality: and withall shewed her letters from his father king *Euarchus*, vnto him, which euen in the Sea had amongst his iewels bin preferued. But little needed those proofes to one, who wold haue fallē out with her self, rather then make any contrary coniectures to *Zelmanes* speeches; so that with such imbracements, as it seemed their soules desired to meet, and their harts to kisse, as their mouthes did: which faine *Pyrocles* would haue sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire, but *Philoclea* commanded the contrary; and yet they passed the promise of mariage.

And then at *Philocleas* intreaty, who was willing to purloine all occasions of remayning

remaining with *Zelmane*, she told her the storie of her life, frō the time of their departing from *Erona*, for the rest she had already vnderstood of her sister. For (said she) I haue vnderstood, how you first in the companie of your noble cousin *Musidorus*, parted from *Theffalia*, and of diuerse aduentures, which with no more danger then glorie you passed through, till your comming to the succour of the Queene *Erona*; and the end of that warre (you might perceiue by my selfe) I had vnderstood of the Prince *Plangus*. But what since was the course of your doings, vntill you came, after so many victories, to make a conquest of poore me, that I know not, the same thereof hauing rather shewed it by peeces, then deliuered any full forme of it. Therefore, deare *Pyrocles* (for what can my eares be so sweetly fed with, as to heare you of you) be liberall vnto me of those things, which haue made you indeed precious to the world, and now doubt not to tell of your perils, for since I haue you heere out of them, euen the remembrance of them is pleasant. *Pyrocles* easily perceiued she was content with kindnesse, to put off occasion of further kindnesse; wherein Loue shewed himselfe a cowardly boy, that durst not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Loue proued himselfe valiant, that durst with the sword of reuerent dutie gaine-stand the force of so manie enraged desires. But so it was, that though hee knew this discourse was to entertaine him from a more straight parley, yet he durst not but kisse his rod, & gladly make much of that entertainment which she allotted vnto him: & therefore with a desirous sigh chastening his breack for too much desiring: Sweet Princeesse of my life (said he) what Trophies, what Triumph, what Monuments, what Histories might euer make my fame yeeld so sweet a Musike to my eares, as that it pleaseth you to lend your minde to the knowledge of any thing touching *Pyrocles*, onely therefore of value, because he is your *Pyrocles*? And therefore grow I now so proud, as to thinke it worth the hearing, since you vouchsafe to giue it the hearing. Therefore (onely height of my hope) vouchsafe to know, that after the death of *Tiridates*, and setting *Erona* in her gouernment, for settled we left her, howsoeuer since (as I perceiued by your speech the last day) the vngratefull treason of her ill-chosen husband ouerthrew her (a thing in truth neuer til this time by me either heard, or suspected) for who could thinke, without hauing such a mind as *Antiphilus*, that so great a beautie as *Erona* (indeed excellent) could not haue held his affection? so great goodnesse could not haue bound gratefulnesse? and so high aduancement could not haue satisfied his ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickednesse may well be compared to a bottomlesse pit, into which it is farre easier to keepe ones selfe from falling, then being fallen, to giue ones selfe any stay from falling infinitely. But for my cousin and me, vpon this cause we parted from *Erona*.

Euardes (the braue and mightie Prince, whom it was my fortune to kill in the combat for *Erona*) had three Nephewes, sonnes to a sister of his; all three set among the foremost rankes of Fame for great minds to attempt, and great force to perforce what they did attempt, especially the eldest, by name *Anaxius*, to whom all men would willinglie haue yeelded the height of praise, but that his nature was such, as to bestow it vpon himselfe, before any could giue it. For of so vn-supportable a pride he was, that where his deedes might well stirre enuie, his demeanour did rather breed disdain. And if it be true that the Gyants euer made war against heauen, he had bene a fit ensigne-bearer for that company. For nothing seemed hard to him, though impossible; and nothing vniust, while his liking was his iustice. Now he in these wars had flatly refused his aid; because he could not brooke,

that the worthy Prince *Plangus* was by his chosen *Tiridates* preferred before him. For allowing no other weights, but the sword and speare in iudging of desert, how much he esteemed himselfe before *Plangus* in that, so much would he haue had his allowance in his seruice.

But now that he vnderstood that his vnclē was slaine by me, I think rather scorne 5
that any should kill his vnclē, then any kindnesse (an vn-vsēd guest to an arrogant
foule) made him seeke his reuenge; I must confesse in maner gallant enough. For
he sent a challenge vnto me to meet him at a place appointed, in the confines of the
kingdome of *Lycia*, where he would proue vpon me, that I had by some treachery 10
ouercome his vnclē, whom else many hūdrēds such as I, could not haue withstood.
Youth and successe made me willing enough to accept anie such bargaine, especi-
allie, because I had heard that your cousin *Amphialus* (who for some years hath vni-
uersally borne the name of the best knight in the world) had diuerse times fought
with him, and neuer bene able to maister him; but so had left him, that euery man 15
thought *Anaxius* in that one vertue of curtesie farre short of him, in all other his
match; *Anaxius* still deeming himselfe for his superiour. Therfore to him I would
go, and I would needs go alone, because so I vnderstood for certaine, he was; and
(I must confesse) desirous to do something without the companie of the incompa-
rable Prince *Musidorus*, because in my heart I acknowledge that I owed more to his
presence, then to any thing in my selfe, whatioeuer before I had done. For of him 20
indeed (as of any worldly cause) I must grant, as receiued, what euer there is, or may
be good in me. He taught me by word, and best by example, giuing me in him so
liuely an image of vertue, as ignorance could not cast such mist ouer mine eyes, as
not to see, and to loue it, and all with such deare friendship and care, as (ō heauen)
how can my life euer requite vnto him? which made me indeed find in my selfe such 25
a kind of depending vpon him, as without him I found a weaknesse, and a mistrust-
fulnesse of my selfe, as one strayed from his best strength, when at any time I mist
him. Which humour perceiuing to ouer-rule me, I straued against it; not that I was
vnwilling to depend vpon him in iudgement, but by weakenesse I wold not; which
though it held me to him, made me vnworthie of him. Therfore I desired his leaue, 30
and obtained it; such confidence hee had in me, preferring my reputation before
his own tendernes; & so priuatelie went frō him, he determining (as after I knew)
in secret maner, not to be farre from the place, where we appointed to meete, to
preuent any foule play that might be offered vnto me. Full loth was *Erona* to let vs
depart from her (as it were) forefeeling the harmes which after fell to her. But I, 35
(rid fully from those cumbers of kindnesse, and halfe a dayes iourney in my way to-
ward *Anaxius*) met an aduenture, which (though in it selfe of small importance) I
will tell you at large, because by the occasion therof I was brought to as great cum-
ber and danger, as lightly anie might escape.

As I past through a Laund (each side whereof was so bordered both with high 40
timber trees, and copses of farre more humble growth, that it might easilie bring a
solitarie mind to looke for no other companions then the wild burgesses of the for-
rest) I heard certaine cries, which comming by pawfes to mine eares from within
the wood of the right hand, made me well assured by the greatnesse of the crie,
it was the voice of a man, though it were a verie vnmanlike voyce, so to crie. But 45
making mine eare my guide; I left not many trees behinde me, before I sawe at
the bottome of one of them a gentle-man, bound (with manie garters hand & foot,
so as well he might tumble and tosse, but neither runne nor resist he could. Vpon
him

him (like so manie Eagles vpon an Oxe) were nine Gentlewomen; trulie such, as one might wel enough say, they were handsome. Each of them held bodkins in their hands, wherewith continually they pricked him, hauing bene before hand vnarmed of anie defence from the waste vpward, but onely of his shirt: so as the poore man
 5 wept and bled, cried and prayed, while they sported themselues in his paine, and delighted in his prayers as the arguments of their victorie.

I was moued to compassion, and so much the more that he straight cald to me for succour, desiring me at least to kill him, to deliuer him from those tormenters. But before my selfe could resolue, much lesse any other tell what I wou'd resolue,
 10 there came in cholerike haste towards me about seuen or eight knights; the foremost of which willed me to get me away, and not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due reuenge, but with so ouermaistring a maner of pride, as trulie my heart could not brooke it: and therefore (answering them, that how I would haue defended him from the Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began
 15 a combate first with him particularlie, and after his death with the others (that had lesse good maners) iointlie. But such was the end of it, that I kept the field with the death of some, and flight of others. In so much as the women (afraid, what angrie victorie would bring forth) ran all away, sauing onely one; who was so fletht in malice, that neither during, nor after the fight, she gaue anie truce to her crueltie, but
 20 still vsed the litle instrument of her great spight, to the well witnest paine of the impatient patient: & was now about to put out his eyes, which all this while were spared, because they should do him the discomfort of seeing who preuayled ouer him. When I came in, and after much adoe, brought her to some conference, (for sometime it was before she would hearken, more before she would speake; and most, be-
 25 fore she would in her speech leaue off the sharpe remembrance of her bodkin) but at length when I puld off my head-peece, and humblie entreated her pardon, or knowledge why she was cruell; out of breath more with choller (which increased in his owne exercise) then with the paine she tooke, much to this purpose she gaue her grieve vnto my knowledge. Gentleman (said she) much it is against my will to fore-
 30 beare any time the executing of my iust reuenge vpon this naughty creature, a man in nothing, but in deceiuing women. But because I see you are young, and like enough to haue the power (if you wold haue the mind) to do much more mischief then he, I am content vpon this bad subiect to reade a lecture to your vertue.

This man called *Pamphilus*, in birth I must confesse is noble (but what is that to
 35 him, if it shall be a staine to his dead ancestors to haue left such an off-spring) in shape as you see, not vncomely (indeed the fit maske of his disguised falshood) in conuersation wittily pleasant, and pleasantly gamefome; his eyes full of mery simplicitie, his words of heartie companableness; and such a one, whose head one would not thinke so stayed, as to thinke mischieuouuslie: delighted in all such things,
 40 which by imparting the delight to others, makes the vs thereof welcome; as, Musike, Dauncing, Hunting, Feasting, Riding, and such like. And to conclude, such a one, as who can keepe him at armes end, need neuer wish a better companion. But vnder these qualities lies such a poysonous Adder, as I will tell you. For by those gifts of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable) he creepes, nay (to say
 45 truly) he flies so into the fauour of poore silly women, that I would be too much ashamed to confesse, if I had not reuenge in my hand, as well as shame in my cheeks. For his hart being wholie delighted in deceiuing vs, we could neuer be warned, but rather one bird caught, serued for a stale to bring in more. For the more he gat, the

more still he shewed, that he (as it were) gaue away to his new mistresse, when hee betrayed his promises to the former. The cunning of his flatterie, the readinesse of his teares, the infinitenesse of his vows, were but among the weakest threeds of his net. But the stirring our owne passions, and by the entrance of them, to make himselfe Lord of our forces; there lay his Maisters part of cunning, making vs now 5
 iealous, now enuious, now proud of what we had, desirous of more; now giuing one the triumph, to see him that was Prince of many, Subiect to her; now with an estranged looke, making her feare the losse of that mind, which indeed could neuer be had: neuer ceasing humblenesse and diligence, till he had imbarcked vs in some such disaduantage, as we could not returne drie-shod; & then sodainly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant. For so would he vse his imperiousnesse, that we had a delightfull feare & an awe, which made vs loth to lose our hope. And, which is strangest (when sometimes with late repentance I thinke of it) I must confesse, euen in the greatest tempest of my iudgement was I neuer driven to thinke him excellent, and yet so could set my mind, both to get and keep him, as though therein had laine 15
 my felicitie: like them I haue seene play at the ball, grow extreamely earnest, who should haue the ball, and yet euerie one knew it was but a ball. But in end, the bitter sauce of the sport was, that we had either our hearts broken with sorow, or our estates spoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for euer lost, partly by our owne faults, but principally by his faultie vsing of our faultes. For neuer was there man that could with more scornfull eyes behold her, at whose feet hee had 20
 lately laine, nor with a more vnmanlike brauerie vse his tongue to her disgrace, which lately had sung sonets of her praises: being so naturally inconstant, as I maruell his soule findes not some way to kill his bodie, whereto it had bene so long vnited. For so hath he dealt with vs (vnhappy fooles) as wee could neuer tell, whether he made greater haste after he once liked, to enioy, or after he once enjoyed, to forsake. But making a glorie of his owne shame, it delighted him to be challenged of vnkindnesse: it was a triumph vnto him to haue his mercie called for: & he thought the fresh colours of his beautie were painted in nothing so well, as in the ruines of his louers: yet so farre had we engaged our selues (vnfortunate soules) that we listed not complaine, since our complaints could not but carie the greatest accusation to our selues. But euerie of vs (each for her selfe) laboured all means how to reco- 30
 uer him, while he rather dayly sent vs companions of our deceit, then euer returned in any sound & faithfull maner. Till at length he concluded all his wrongs with betrothing himselfe to one (I must confesse) worthie to be liked, if any worthinesse might excuse so vnworthy a changeablenesse; leauing vs nothing but remorse for 35
 what was past, and despaire of what might follow. Then indeed the common iniurie made vs all ioyne in fellowship, who till that time, had employed our endeouours one against the other. For we thought nothing was a more condemning of vs, then the iustifying of his loue to her by marriage: then Despaire made Feare valiant, and Reuenge gaue Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you sawe here) 40
 deuised how to get him amōg vs alone: which he (suspecting no such matter of the, whom he had by often abuses, he thought, made tame to bee still abused) easilie gaue vs oportunitie to do.

And a man may see, euen in this, how soone Rulers grow proud, and in their pride foolish: he came with such an authority among vs, as if the Planets had done 45
 enough for vs, that by vs once he had bene delighted. And when we began in courteous maner, one after the other, to lay his vnkindnesse vnto him, he seeing himselfe

con-

confronted by so many (like a resolute Orator) went not to deniall, but to iustifie his cruell falshood, & all with such iests, & disdainfull passages, that if the iniurie could not be made greater, yet were our conceits made the apter to apprehend it.

Among other of his answers (forsooth) I shall neuer forget, how he wold proue
 5 it was no inconstancie to chaunge from one loue to another, but a great constancie; and contrarie, that which we call constancie, to be most changeable. For (said he) I euer loued my delight, and delighted alwayes in what was louelie: and where-
 10 soeuer I found occasion to obtaine that, I constantly followed it. But these constant fooles you speake of, though their Mistresse grow by sicknesse foule, or by fortune miserable, yet still will loue her, and so commit the absurdest inconstancie that
 15 may be, in chaunging their loue from fairenesse to foulnesse, and from lowlinesse to his contrarie; like one not content to leaue a friend, but will straight giue over himselfe to his mortall enemy: where I (whom you call inconstant) am euer constant; to Beautie, in others; and Delight in my selfe. And so in this iollie scoffing
 20 brauerie he went ouer vs all, saying he left one, because she was ouer-wayward: another, because she was too soone wonne: a third, because she was not merie enough: a fourth, because she was ouer gamesome: the fift, because she was growne with griefe subiect to sicknesse: the sixt, because she was so foolish, as to be iealous of him: the seuenth, because she had refused to carie a letter for him to another that
 25 he loued: the eight, because she was not secret: the ninth, because she was not liberal: but to me, who am named *Dido*, and indeed haue met with a false *Aeneas*, to me, I say (o the vngrateful villanie) he could find no other fault to obiect, but that (perdie) he met with manie fairer.

But when he had thus plaid the carelesse Prince, we (hauing those seruants of
 25 ours in readinesse, whom you lately so manfully ouercame) laid hold of him; beginning at first but that trifling reuenge, in which you found vs busie; but meaning afterwards to haue mangled him so, as should haue lost his credite for euer abusing more. But as you haue made my fellowes flie away, so for my part the greatnesse of his wrong ouer shadowes, in my iudgement the greatnesse of any daunger. For was
 30 it not enough for him to haue deceiued me, and through the deceit abused me, and after the abuse forsaken me, but that he must now, of all the companie, and before all the company, lay want of beauty to my charge? Many fairer? I trow euen in your iudgement, Sir, (if your eyes do not beguile me) not many fayrer; and I know (who-
 35 soeuer sayes the contrary) there are not many fayrer. And of whom shold I receiue this reproch, but of him, who hath best cause to know there are not manie fayrer? And therefore howsoeuer my fellowes pardon his iniuries, for my part I will euer remember, and remember to reuenge this scorne of all scornes. With that she to him afresh; and surely would haue put out his eyes (who lay mute for shame, if he
 40 did not sometimes crie for feare) if I had not leapt from my horse, and mingling force with intreaty, stayed her fury.

But while I was perswading her to meekenesse, comes a number of his friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they should kill that woman, that had thus betrayed and disgraced him. But then I was faine to forsake the ensigne, vnder which I had
 45 before serued, and to spend my vttermost force in the protecting of the Lady; which so well preuayled for her, that in end there was a faithful peace promised of all sides. And so I leauing her in a place of security (as she thought) went on my journey towards *Anaxius*, for whom I was faine to stay two dayes in the appointed place, hee disdainning to waite for me, till he was sure I were there.

I did patiently abide his angrie pleasure, til about that space of time he came (indeed, according to promise) alone: and (that I may not say too litle, because he is wont to say too much) like a man, whose courage was apt to clime ouer any daunger. And assoone as euer he came neare me, in fit distance for his purpose, hee with much furie, (but with furie skilfullie guided) rad vpon me; which I (in the best fort I could) resisted, hauing kept my selfe readie for him, because I had vnderstood that he obserued few complements in matter of armes, but such as a proud anger did indite vnto him. And so putting our horses into a full careere, we hit each other vpon the head with our Launces: I thinke he felt my blow, for my part (I must confesse) I neuer receiued the like: but I thinke though my senses were astonished, my mind forced them to quicken themselues, because I had learned of him, how litle fauour he is wont to shew in any matter of aduantage. And indeed he was turned, and comming vpon me with his sword drawne, both our staues hauing bene broken at that encounter: but I was so readie to answere him, that trulie I know not who gaue the first blow. But wholoever gaue the first, was quicklie seconded by the second. And indeed (excellentest Ladie) I must say trulie, for a time it was well fought betweene vs; he vndoubtedlie being of singular valour, (I would to God it were not abased by his too much loftinesse) but as by the occasion of the combate, winning and losing ground, we chaunged places, his horse hapned to come vpon the point of the broken speare, which fallen to the ground, chaunced to stand vppward, so as it lighting vpon his heart, the horse died. He driuen to dismount, threatned, if I did not the like, to do as much for my horse, as fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or because I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victorie, I descended. So began our foot-fight in such sort that we were well entred to bloud of both sides, when there comes by that vnconstant *Pamphilus*, whom I had deliuered (easie to be knowne, for he was bare-faced) with a dozen armed men after him; but before him he had *Dido* (that Ladie, who had most sharply punished him) riding vpon a palfrey, he following her with most vnmanlike crueltie; beating her with wands he had in his hand, she crying for sence of paine, or hope of succour: which was so pitifull a sight vnto me, that it moued me to require *Anaxius* to deferre our combate till another day, and now to performe the duties of knight-hood in helping this distressed Lady. But he that disdaines to obey any thing but his passion (which he cals his mind) bad me leaue off that thought; but when hee had killed me, he would then (perhaps) go to her succour. But I well finding the fight would belong betweene vs (longing in my heart to deliuer the poore *Dido*) giuing him so great a blowe, as somewhat stayed him, (to terme it aright) I flatly ran away from him toward my horse, who trotting after the company, in mine armour, I was put to some paine, but that vse made me nimble vnto it. But as I followed my horse, *Anaxius* followed me; but his proud heart did so disdaine that exercise, that I had quickly ouer-runne him, and ouertaken my horse; being (I must confesse) ashamed to see a number of countrie folkes, who happened to passe thereby, who hallowed and howted after me as at the arrantest coward that euer shewed his shoulders to his enemy. But when I had leapt on my horse (with such speedy agility, that they all cried; O see how feare giues him wings) I turned to *Anaxius* and aloud promised him to returne thither againe, as soon as I had relieved the iniuriéd Lady. But he rayling at me, with all the base words angrie contempt could endite; I said no more, but, *Anaxius*, assure thy self, I neither feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And so vsing no weapon of a knight as at that time but my spurres, I ranne in my knowledge after *Pamphilus*, but in all their conceits from *Anaxius*, which as

far

far as I could heare, I might well heare testified with such laughters & games, that I was some few times moued to turne backe againe.

But the Ladies miserie ouer-balanced my reputation so that after her I went, and with six houres hard riding (through so wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my horse somtimes, then of my selfe, so rightly to hit the way) I ouergat them a little before night, neere to an old il-fauoured castle, the place where I perceiued they meant to performe their vnknighly errand. For there they began to strip her of her clothes, when I came in among them, and running through the first with a launce, the iustnesse of the cause so enabled me against the rest (false-hearted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as short time almost as I had bene fighting with onely *Anaxius*, deliuered her frō those iniurious wretches: most of whom carried newes to the other world, that amongst men secret wrongs are not alwaies left unpunished. As for *Pamphilus*, he hauing once seene, & (as it should seeme) remembred me, euen from the beginning began to be in the rereward, & before they had left fighting, he was too far off to giue them thanks for their paines. But whē I had deliuered to the Ladie a full libertie, both in effect, & in opinion, (for sometime it was before she could assure her selfe shee was out of their hands, who had laid so vehement apprehension of death vpon her) shee then told me, how as she was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too soone trusting to the fallhood of reconciliation) *Pamphilus* had set vpon her, & killing those that were with her, carried her selfe by such force, & with such manner as I had seene, to this place, where he meant in cruell & shamefull manner to kill her, in the sight of her owne Father, to whom he had already sent word of it, that out of his castle window (for this castle, she said, was his) he might haue the prospect of his onely childes destruction, if my comming, whom (she said) he feared (as soone as he knew me by the armour) had not warranted her from that neere approaching cruelty. I was glad I had done so good a deede for a Gentlewoman not vnhandsome, whome before I had in like sort helped. But the night beginning to perswade some retiring place, the Gentlewoman, euen out of countenance before she began her speech, much after this manner inuited mee to lodge that night with her father.

Sir (said she) how much I owe you, can be but abased by words, since the life I haue, I hold it now the second time of you: and therefore neede not offer seruice vnto you, but onely to remember you, that I am your seruant: and I would, my being so, might any way yeeld any small contentment vnto you. Now onely I can but desire you to harbour your selfe this night in this castle; because the time requires it; and in truth this countrie is verie dangerous for murdering theeues, to trust a sleeping life among them. And yet I must confesse, that as the loue I beare you makes me thus inuite you, so the same loue makes me ashamed to bring you to a place, where you shal be so (not spoken by ceremony but by truth) miserably entertained. With that shee told me, that though shee spake of her father (whom she named *Chremes*) she would hide no truth from me, which was in summe, that as he was of all that region the man of greatest possessions (and riches, so was he either by nature, or an euill receiued opinion, giuen to sparing, in so vnmeasurable sorte, that he did not onely barre himselfe from the delightfull, but almost from the necessarie vse thereof; scarcely allowing him selfe fitt sustenance of life, rather then he would spend of those goods for whose sake only he seemed to ioy in life. Which extreame dealing (descending from himselfe vpon her) had driuen her to put her selfe with a great Lady of that countrie, by which occasion she had stumbled

vpon such mischances, as were little for the honor either of her, or her familie. But so wise had he shewed himselfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his cost, he was content to be deafe to any noise of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then she deserued, yet she could not denie, but she was driuen thereby to receiue more then decent fauours. She concluded, that there at least I should be free from iniuries, & should be assured to her-ward to abound as much in the true causes of welcomes, as I should find want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my selfe to measure the delicacie of foode and rest, by hunger and wearinesse, at that time well stored of both, did not abide long entreatie; but went with her to the Castle: which I found of good strength, hauing a great mote round about it; the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whose vnthrifitie sonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne vp, where we were faine to crie a good while before we could haue aunswere, and to dispute a good while before aunswere would be brought to acceptance. At length a willingnesse, rather then a ioy to receiue his daughter, whome he had lately seen so neere death, & an opinion brought into his head by course, because he heard himselfe called a Father; rather then any kindnesse that he found in his owne hart, made him take vs in; for my part by that time growne so wearie of such entertainment, that no regard of my selfe, but onely the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this *Chremes*, a driueling old fellow, leane, shaking both of head and hands, already halfe earth, & yet then most greedie of Earth: who scarcely would giue me thanks for what I had done, for feare I suppose, that thankfulness might haue an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giuing me a false welcome, I might perceiue in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to say, whether the displeasure of her companie did not ouer-way the pleasure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into so bare a house, that it was the picture of miserable happinesse, and rich beggerie (serued onely by a companie of rusticall villaines, full of sweat & dust, not one of them other, then a labourer) in summe (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging such, as would make one detest nigardnesse, it is so sluttish a vice. His talke of nothing but of his pueritie, for feare belike least I should haue proued a yong borrower. In summe, such a man, as any enimie could not wish him worse then to be himselfe. But there that night bid I the burthen of being a tedious guest to a loathsome host; ouer-hearing him sometimes bitterly warne his daughter of bringing such costly mates vnder his roofe: which shee grieuing at, desired much to know my name, I thinke partly of kindnesse, to remember who had done some thing for her, and partly, because shee assured her selfe I was such a one as would make euen his miser-mind contented with what he had done. And accordingly shee demaunded my name, and estate, with such earnestnesse, that I whome *Loue* had not as then so robbed me of my selfe, as to be another then I am, told her directly my name and condition: wherof she was no more glad then her father, as I might wel perceiue by some ill fauoured cherefulness, which then first began to wrinkle it selfe in his face.

But the causes of their ioyes were farre different; for as the shepheard and the butcher both may looke vpon one sheepe with pleasing conceits, but the shepheard with minde to profit himselfe by preseruing, the butcher with killing him: So she reioyced to finde that mine own benefits had me to be her friend, who was a Prince of such greatnesse, and louingly reioyced: but his ioy grewe (as I to my danger after perceiued) by the occasion of the Queene *Artaxias* setting my head

to sale, for hauing slaine her brother *Tiridates*; which being the summe of an hundred thousand crownes (to whosoeuer brought me aliuie into her hands) that old wretch, (who had ouer-liued all good nature) though he had lying idly by him much more then that, yet aboue all things louing money, for monies owne sake determined to betray me, so well deseruing of him for to haue that which he was determined neuer to vse. And so knowing that the next morning I was resolu'd to go to the place where I had left *Anaxius*, he sent in all speed to a Captaine of a Garrison neere by; which though it belonged to the King of *Iberia*, (yet knowing the Captaines humor to delight so in riotous spending, as he cared not how he came by the meanes to maintaine it) doubted not that to be halfe with him in the gaine, he would play his quarters part in the treason. And therefore that night agreeing of the fittest places where they might surpris'e me the morning, the old caitiffe was growne so ceremonious, as he would needs accompanie me some myles in my way; a sufficient token to me, if Nature had made me apt to suspect; since a churles curtesie rarely comes, but either for gaine, or falsehood. But I suffered him to stumble into that point of good manner: to which purpose he came out with all his clownes, horst vpon such cart-iades, and so furnished, as in good faith I thought with my self, if that were thrift, I wisht none of my friends or subiects euer to thrive. As for his daughter (the gentle *Dido*) she would also (but in my conscience with a farre better minde) prolong the time of farewell, as long as he.

And so we went on together: he so old in wickednesse, that he could looke me in the face, and freely talke with me, whose life he had already contracted for: till comming into the falling of a way which ledde vs into a place, of each-side whereof men might easily keepe themselues vndiscovered, I was encompassed sodainly by a great troupe of enemies both of horse and foote, who willed me to yeeld my selfe to the Queene *Artaxia*. But they could not haue vsed worse eloquence to haue perswaded my yeelding, then that; I knowing the little good will *Artaxia* bare me. And therefore making necessitie & iustice my best sword and shield, I vsed the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am sure to the little ease of a good number, who trusting to their number more then to their valure, & valuing money higher then equitie, felt, that guiltlesnesse is not alwaies with ease oppressed. As for *Chremes*, he with drew himself, yet so guiding his wicked conceits with his hope of gaine, that he was content to be a beholder, how I should be taken to make his pray.

But I was growne so wearie, that I supported my selfe more with anger then strength, when the most excellent *Musidorus* came to my succour; who hauing followed my trace as well as he could, after he found I had left the fight with *Anaxius*, came to the niggards Castle, where he found all burned and spoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that couetous man, and now tooke the time, when the castle was left almost without garde, to come in, and leaue monuments of their malice therein: which *Musidorus* not staying either to further, or impeache, came vpon the spurre after me (because with one voice many told him, that if I were in his company, it was for no good meant vnto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I saw that cousin of mine, me thought my life was doubled, and where I before thought of a noble death, I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath *Musidorus* by him? who, what he did there for me, how manie he killed, not straunger for the number then for the straunge blowes wherewith he sent them to a well deserued death, might well delight me to speake of, but I should so hold you too long in euerie particular. But in truth, there if euer,

and euer, if euer any man, did *Musidorus* shew himself second to none in able valor.

Yet what the vnmeasurable excesse of their number would haue done in the end I know not, but the triall thereof was cut off by the chaunceable comming thither of the King of *Iberia*, that same father of the worthie *Plangus*, whom it hath pleased you sometimes to mention: who, not yeelding ouer to olde age his countrey delights, especially of hauking) was at that time (following a Merline) brought to see this iniurie offred vnto vs: and hauing great numbers of Courtiers waiting vpon him, was straight known by the souldiers that assaulted vs, to be their King, and so most of them withdrew themselves.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne constrained confession, 10 what was the motiue of this mischieuous practise; misliking much such violence should be offred in his countrey to men of our ranke, but chiefly disdaining it should be done in respect of his Niece, whom (I must confesse wrongfully) he hated, because he interpreted that her brother and she had maintrained his sonne *Plangus* against him, caused the Captaines head presently to be stricken off, and the old 15 bad *Chremes* to be hanged: though truly for my part, I earnestly laboured for his life, because I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a conclusion of his miserable life, that neither the death of his daughter, who (alas poore Gentlewoman was by chaunce slaine among his clownes, while she ouerboldly for her weake sex sought to hold them from me, nor yet his own shameful end was so much 20 in his mouth as he was led to execution, as the losse of his goods, and burning of his house: which often, with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations vpon.

This iustice thus done, and we deliuered, the King in deede in royall fort inuited vs to his Court, not farre thence: in all points entertaining vs so, as truly I must 25 euer acknowledge a beholdingnes vnto him: although the streame of it fell out not to be so sweet as the spring. For after some daies being there (curing our selues of such wounds as we had receiued, while I, causing diligent search to be made of *Anaxius*, could learne nothing, but that he was gone out of the countrey, boasting in euery place how he had made me run away) we were brought to receiue the fauour 30 of acquaintance with this Queene *Andromana*, whom the Princessse *Pamela* did in so liuely colours describe the last day, as still me thinks the figure thereof possesseth mine eyes, confirmed by the knowledge my selfe had.

And therefore I shall neede the lesse to make you know what kind of woman she was; but this onely, that first with the raines of affection, and after with the 35 verie vse of directing, she had made her selfe so absolute a maister of her husbands minde, that a while he would not, and after, he could not tell how to gouerne without being gouerned by her: but finding an ease in not vnderstanding, let loose his thoughts wholly to pleasure, entrusting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affaires. A thing that may luckily fall out to him that hath the blessing, to match 40 with some Heroicall minded Lady. But in him it was neither guided by wisdom, nor followed by Fortune, but thereby was slipt insensibly into such an estate, that he liued at her vndiscreete discretion: all his subiectes hauing by some yeares learned, so to hope for good, and feare of harme, onely from her, that it should haue needed a stronger vertue then his, to haue vnwound so deeply an entred vice. So that ei- 45 ther not struiuing (because he was contented) or contented (because he would not strue) he scarcely knew what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleased her Instruments to frame the relation.

Now

Now we being brought knowen vnto her (the time that wee spent in curing
 some very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (& acquainted we
 were sooner then our selues expected) she continually almost haunted vs, till (and it
 was not long a doing) we discouered a most violent bent of affection: and that so
 5 strangely, that we might well see, an euill minde in authoritie, dooth not onely fol-
 low the sway of the desires already within it, but frames to it selfe new desires, not
 before thought of. For, with equall ardour she affected vs both: & so did her great-
 nes disdain shamefastnesse, that she was content to acknowledge it to both. For,
 (hauing many times torne the vaile of modestie) it seemed, for a last delight, that
 10 she delighted in infamy: which often she had vsed to her husbands shame, filling
 all mens eares (but his) with his reproch; while he hoodwinkt with kindnesse) least
 of all men knew who strake him. But her first degree was, by setting forth her beau-
 ties, truly in nature not to be misliked, but as much aduanced to the eye, as abased
 to the iudgement by art) thereby to bring vs (as willingly-caught fishes) to bite at
 15 her bait. And thereto had shee that scutchion of her desires supported by certaine
 badly-diligent ministers, who often cloyed our eares with her praises, and would
 needs teach vs a way of felicitie by seeking her fauour. But when she found, that we
 were as deafe to them as dumb to her; then she listed no longer stay in the suburbs
 of her foolish desires, but directly entred vpon them; making her selfe an impudent
 20 suter, authorizing her selfe very much with making vs see that all fauour & power in
 that realme, so depended vpon her, that now (being in her hands) we were either to
 keepe, or lose our liberty, at her discretion; which yet a while she so tempted, as that
 we might rather suspect, then she threaten. But when our wounds grew so, as that
 they gaue vs leaue to trauell, & that she found we were purposed to vse all meanes
 25 we could to depart thence, she (with more & more importunatenesse) craued, which
 in all good maners was either of vs to be desired, or not granted. Truly (most faire
 & euery way excellent Lady) you would haue wondred to haue seene, how before vs
 she would confesse the contention in her owne minde between that louely (indeed
 most louely) brownnesse of *Musidorus* his face, & this colour of mine, which she (in
 30 the decejuable stile of affection) would intitle beautifull: how her eyes wandred like
 a glutton at a feast) from the one to the other; & how her words would begin halfe
 of the sentence to *Musidorus*, & end the other halfe to *Pyrocles*: not ashamed) seing
 the friendship betweene vs) to desire either of vs to be a mediator to the other; as if
 we should haue played one request at Tennis betweene vs: and often wishing that
 35 she might be the angle, where the lines of our friendship might meet; and be the
 knot which might tie our hearts together. Which proceeding of hers I do the more
 largely set before you (most deare Lady) because by the foile thereof, you may see
 the noblenesse of my desire to you, and the warrantablenesse of your fauour to me.

At that *Philoclea* smiled, with a little nod. But (said *Pyrocles*) when she perceiued
 40 no hope by suite to preuaile, then (perswaded by the rage of affection, and en-
 couraged by daring to do any thing) shee found meanes to haue vs accused to
 the King, as though wee went about some practise to ouerthrowe him in his
 owne estate. Which because of the strange successes wee had had in the King-
 domes of *Phrigia*, *Pontus*, and *Galatia*) seemed not vnlikely to him, who (but skim-
 45 ming any thing that came before him) was disciplined to leaue the through-hand-
 ling of all to his gentle wife: who forthwith caused vs to be put in prison, hauing
 (while we slept) depriued vs of our armes: a prison, indeed iniurious, because a pri-
 son, but els well testifying affection, because in al respects as comodious as a prison:

might be: and in deede so placed, as she might at all houres (not seene by many, though she cared not much how many had seene her) come vnto vs. Then fell she to sauce her desires with threatnings, so that we were in a great perplexitie, restrained to so vnworthie a bondage, and yet restrained by loue, which (I cannot tell how (in noble mindes, by a certain duty, claimes an answering. And how much that loue might moue vs, so much, and more that faultinesse of her minde removed vs; her beauty being balanced by her shamelesnesse. But that which did (as it were) tie vs in a captiuitie, was, that to grant, had bin wickedly iniurious to him, that had saued our liues: and to accuse a Lady that loued vs, of her loue vnto vs, we esteemed almost as dishonorable: and but by one of those waies we saw no likelihood of going out of that place, where the words would be iniurious to your eares, which should expresse the maner of her suite: while yet many times earnestnes died her cheekes with the colour of shamefastnesse; and wanton languishing borrowed of her eyes the down-cast looke of modestie. But we in the meane time farre from louing her, and often assuring her, that we would not so recompence her husbandes sauing of our liues; to such a ridiculous degree of trusting her, she had brought him, that she caused him send vs word, that vpon our liues, we should doo whatsoeuer she commaunded vs: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleasures were directed to the preservation of his estate. But when that made vs rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fell she to seruile entreating vs, as though force could haue bene the schoole of Loue, or that an honest courage would not rather striue against, then yeeld to iniurie. All which yet could not make vs accuse her, though it made vs almost pine away for spight, to loose any of our time in so troublesome an idlenesse.

But while we were thus full of wearinesse of what was past, and doubt of what was to follow, Loue (that I thinke in the course of my life hath a sport sometimes to poyson me with roses, sometimes to heale me with wormewood) brought forth a remedie vnto vs: which though it helped me out of that distresse, alas the conclusion was such, as I must euer while I liue, thinke it worse then a wrack, so to haue bene preserved. This King by this Queene had a sonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought vp in the hope of themselues, and alreadie acceptation of the inconstant people, as successor of his fathers crowne: wherof he was as worthy, considering his parts, as vnworthie, in respect of the wrong was thereby done against the most noble *Plangus*: whose great deserts now either forgotten, or vngatefully remembred, all men set their sailes with the fauourable winde, which blew on the fortune of this young Prince, perchaunce not in their harts, but surely not in their mouths, now giuing *Plangus* (who some yeares before was their onely champion) the poore comfort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that region, by name *Palladius*, did with vehement affection loue a yong Lady, brought vp in his fathers court, called *Zelmane*, daughter to that mischieuously unhappie Prince *Plexirtus* (of whome alreadie I haue, and sometimes must make, but neuer honorable mention) left there by her father, because of the intricate changeablenesse of his estate; he by the motherside being halfe brother to this Queene *Andromana*, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Loue (alas) doth not alwayes reflect it selfe, so fell it out that this *Zelmane* (though truly reason there was enough to loue *Palladius*) yet could not euer perswade her heart to yeeld thereunto: with that paine to *Palladius*, as they feele, that feele an vnloved loue. Yet louing indeed, and therefore constant, hee vsed still

still the intercession of diligence and faith, euer hoping, because he would not put him selfe into that hell, to be hopelesse: vntill the time of our being come, and captiued there, brought forth this ende, which truly deserues of me a further degree of sorrow then teares.

- 5 Such was there in my ill destinie, that this young Ladie *Zelmane* (like some vnwisely liberal, that more delight to giue presents, then pay debts) she chose (alas for the pitie) rather to bestowe her loue) so much vnderferued, as not desired) vpon me, then to recōpence him, whose loue (besides many other things) might seeme (euen in the court of Honour) iustly to claime it of her. But so it was (alas that so it was)
- 10 whereby it came to passe (that as nothing doth more naturally follow his cause, then care to preferue, and benefite doth follow vnfaigned affection) she felt with me, what I felt of my captiuitie, and streight laboured to redresse my paine, which was her paine: which she could do by no better meanes, then by vsing the helpe therein of *Palladius*: who (true Louer) considering what, and not why, in all her commaundements; and indeed shee concealing from him her affection (which shee intituled cōpassion,) immediatly obeyed to imploy his vttermoſt credite to relieue vs: which
- 15 though as great, as a beloued sonne with a mother, faultie otherwise, but not hardhearted toward him, yet it could not preuaile to procure vs libertie. Wherefore he sought to haue that by practise, which he could not by prayer. And so being allowed
- 20 often to visite vs (for indeed our restraints were more, or lesse, according as the ague of her passion was either in the fit or intermission) he vsed the oportunitie of a fit time thus to deliuer vs.

The time of the marying that Queenewas euery yeare, by the extreame loue of her husbād, & the seruiceable loue of the Courtiers, made notable by some publike

25 honours, which did (as it were) proclaime to the world, how deare she was to that people. Amōg other, none was either more gratefull to the beholders, or more noble in it selfe, then iusts, both with sword & launce, maintained for a seuen-night together: wherein, that Nation doth so excell, both for comelinesse and ablenesse, that from neighbor-countries they ordinarily come, some to strue, some to learne,

30 some to behold.

- This day it happened that diuers famous Knights came thither frō the Court of *Helen*, Queene of *Corinth*; a Lady, whom fame at that time was so desirous to honor, that she borrowed all mens mouthes to ioine with the sound of her Trumpet. For as her beautie hath wonne the prize frō all women, that stand in degree of comparison (for as for the two sisters of *Arcadia*, they are far beyond all conceit of comparison) so hath her gouernment bene such as hath bene no lesse beautifull to mens iudgements, then her beautie to the eye-sight. For being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to gouerne a people, in nature mutinously proud, and alwaies before so vsed to hard gouernours, as they knew not how to obey
- 40 without the sworde were drawne. Yet could she for some yeares, so cary her selfe among them, that they found cause in the delicacie of her sex, of admiration, not of contempt: & which was notable, euen in the time that many countries about her were full of wars (which for old grudges to *Corinth* were thought stil would conclude there) yet so handled she the matter, that the threatens euer smattered in the
- 45 threatners; she vsing so strange, and yet so well-succeeding a temper, that she made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by sports, learned; her Ladies by Loue, chaste. For by continuall martiall exercises without bloud, she made them perfect in that bloody art. Her sports were such as caried riches of Knowledge vpon the stream

of Delight : & such the behauiour both of her selfe and her Ladies, as builded their chastitie not vpon waiwardnesse, but choice of worthinesse : So as it seemed, that court to haue bin the mariage place of Loue & Vertue, & that her selfe was a *Diana* apparelled in the garments of *Venus*. And this which Fame only deliuered vnto me, (for yet I haue neuer seene her) I am the willinger to speake of to you, who (I know) 5 know her better, being your neere neighbour, because you may see by her example (in her selfe wife, & of others beloued) that neither folly is the cause of vehemēt loue, nor reproch the effect. For neuer (I think) was there any woman, that with more vnremouable determination gaue her selfe to the counsell of loue, after shee had once set before her mind the worthinesse of your cosin *Amphialus* ; & yet is neither her 10 wisdome doubted of, nor honor blemished. For (O God, what doth better become wisdome, then to discern what is worthy the louing? what more agreable to goodnesse, then to loue it so discerned? & what to greatnesse of hart, then to be constant in it once loued? But at that time, that loue of hers was not so publikly known, as the death of *Philoxenus* & her search of *Amphialus* hath made it : but then seemed to 15 haue such leasure to send thither diuerse choise knights of her court, because they might bring her, at least the knowledge, perchance the honor of that triūph. Wherein so they behaued themselves as for three daies they caried the prize; which being come from so far a place to disgrace her seruants, *Palladius* (who himselfe had neuer vsed armes) perswaded the Queene *Andromana* to be content (for the honor sake of 20 her court) to suffer vs two to haue our horse & armour, that he with vs might vnderake the recovery of their lost honour : which she granted; taking our oth to go no further then her sonne, nor euer to abandon him. Which she did not more for sauing him, then keeping vs: and yet not satisfied with our oth, appointed a band of horsemen to haue eye, that we should not go beyond appointed limits. We were 25 willing to gratifie the yong Prince, who (we saw) loued vs. And so the fourth day of that exercise, we came into the field : where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they shold run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field in maner of a battell, til either the strangers, or that countrie Knights wan the field.

The first that ran was a braue Knight, whose deuise was to come in, all chayned 30 with a Nymph leading him : his *Impresa* was

Against him came forth an *Iberian*, whose manner of entring was, with Bagpipes in steed of trumpets; a shepheards boy before him for a Page, and by him a dozen apparelled like shepheards for the fashion, though rich in stuffe, who caried his Launces, which though strong to giue a launcely blow indeed, yet so 35 were they coloured with hookes neere the mourne, that they pretily represented sheephooks. His owne furniture was drest ouer with wooll, so enriched with Jewels artificially placed, that one would haue thought it a mariage betweene the lowest and the highest. His *Impresa* was a Sheepe marked with pitch, with this woord *Spotted to be knowne*. And because I may tell you out his conceipt (though that were not 40 done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windowes, among whom there was one (they say) that was the *Star*, whereby his course was onely directed. The Shepherds attending vpon *PHILISIDES* went among them, and sang an eclogue; one of them answering another, while the other shepherds pulling out recorders (which posselt the place of pipes) accorded their 45 musike to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praise: I onely remember sixe verses, while hauing questioned one with the other, of their fellow-shepheards sodaine growing a man of armes, and the cause of his so doing, they thus said.

ME thought some staues he mist: if so, not much amisse.
 For where he most would hit, he euer yet did misse.
 Once said he brake a crosse; full well it so might be:
 For neuer was there man more crossely crost then he.
 But most cryed, O well broke: O foole full gaily blest:
 Where failing is a shame, and breaking is his best.

Thus I haue digrest, because his manner liked me well: But when he began to run against *Lelius*, it had neere growne (though great loue had euer bene betwixt them) to a quarrell. For *Philisides* breaking his staues with great commendation, *Lelius* (who was knowne to be second to none in the perfection of that art) ranne euer ouer his head, but so finely to the skilfull eyes, that one might well see he shewed more knowledge in missing, then others did in hitting. For with so gallant a grace his staffe came swimming close ouer the crest of the Helmet, as if he would represent the kisse, and not the stroke of *Mars*. But *Philisides* was much moued with it, while he thought *Lelius* would shew a contempt of his youth: till *Lelius*, (who therefore would satisfie him, because he was his friend) made him know, that to such bondage he was for so many courses tyed by her, whose disgraces to him were graced by her excellencie, and whose iniuries he could neuer otherwise returne, then honors.

But so by *Lelius* willing-missing was the oddes of the *Iberian* side, and continued so in the next by the excellent running of a Knight, though fostred so by the *Muses*, as many times the very rusticke people left both their delights and profits to harken to his songs, yet could he so well performe all armed sports, as if he had neuer had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wilde man; but such a wildenesse, as shewed his eye-sight had tamed him, full of withered leaues, which though they fell not, still threatned falling. His *impresa* was, a mill-horse still bound to goe in one circle; with this word, *Data fata sequutus*. But after him the *Corinthian* knights absolutely preuailed, especially a great noble man of *Corinth*, whose deuice was to come without any deuice, all in white like a new Knight, as indeed he was; but so new, as his newnes shamed most of the others long exercise. Then another from whose tent I remember a birde was made flie, with such art to carry a written embassage among the Ladies, that one might say, If a liue bird, how so taught? if a dead bird, how so made? Then he, who hidden, man and horse in a great figure liuely representing the *Phoenix*: the fire tooke so artificially, as it consumed the bird, and left him to rise as it were, out of the ashes thereof. Against whom was the fine frosen Knight, frosen in despaire; but his armour so naturally representing Ice, and all his furniture so liuely answering thereto, as yet did I neuer see any thing that pleased me better.

But the delight of those pleasing fightes, haue caried me too farre into an vnecessary discourse. Let it then suffice (most excellent Lady) that you know the *Corinthians* that morning in the exercise (as they had done the daies before) had the better; *Palladius* neither suffering vs, nor himself to take in hand the partie til the after noone; when we were to fight in troupes, not differing otherwise from earnest, but that the sharpenesse of the weapons was taken away. But in the triall *Palladius* (especially led by *Musidorus*, and somewhat aided by me) himsele truely behauing him selfe nothing like a beginner, brought the honour to rest it selfe that night on the *Iberian* side: and the next day, both morning, and after-noone being kept by

our partie. He (that saw the time fit for the deliuerie he intended) called vnto vs to follow him; which we both bound by oth, & willing by good-will, obeyed: and so the gard not daring to interrupt vs (he commaunding passage) we went after him vpon the spur to a little house in a Forrest neere by: which he thought would be the fittest resting place, till we might go further from his mothers furie, wherat he was no lesse angrie, and ashamed, then desirous to obey *Zelmae*. 5

But his mother (as I learned since) vnderstanding by the gard her sonnes conueying vs away) forgetting her greatnesse, and resigning modestie to more quiet thoughts (flewe out from her place, and cried to be accompanied, for shee her-selfe would follow vs. But what she did (being rather with vehemencie of passion, then conduct of reason) made her stumble while she ran, & by her own confusion hinder her own desires. For so impatiently she commaunded, as a good while no body knew what she commaunded; so as we had gotten so farre the start, as to be already past the confines of her kingdome before she ouertooke vs: and ouertake vs she did in the kingdome of *Bythinia*, not regarding shame, or danger of hauing entred into anothers dominions: but (hauing with her about a threescore horse-men) sheight commaunded to take vs aliue, and not to regard her sonnes threatning therein: which they attempted to do, first by speech, and then by force. But neither liking their eloquence, nor fearing their might, we esteemed few swords in a iust defence, able to resist many vniust assaulters. And so *Musidorus* incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made both me, and *Palladius*, so good way, that we had little to do to ouercome weake wrong. 10

And now had the victorie in effect without bloud, when *Palladius* (heated with the fight, and angrie with his mothers fault) so pursued our assayers, that one of them (who as I heard since had before our comming bene a speciall minion of *Andromanas*, & hated vs for hauing dispossest him of her heart) taking him to be one of vs, with a traiterous blow slewe his yong Prince: who falling downe before our eyes, whom he specially had deliuered, iudge (sweetest Lady) whether anger might not be called iustice in such a case: once, so it wrought in vs, that many of his subiects bodies we left there dead, to wait on him more faithfully to the other world. 15

All this while disdaine, strengthened by the furie of a furious loue, made *Andromana* stay to the last of the combat: and when she saw vs light down, to see what help we might do to the helplese *Palladius*, she came running madly vnto vs, then no lesse threatning, when she had no more power to hurt. But when she perceiued it was her onely sonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was so deadly, as that already his life had lost the vse of the reasonable, and almost sensible part; then onely did misfortune lay his owne ouglineesse vpon her fault, and make her see what she had done, and to what she was come: especially, finding in vs rather detestation then pittie, (considering the losse of that young Prince) and resolution presently to departe, which still she laboured to stay. But depriued of all comfort, with eyes full of death, she ranne to her sonnes dagger, and before we were aware of it (who else would haue stayed it) strake her selfe a mortall wound. But then her loue, though not her person, awaked pittie in vs, and I went to her, while *Musidorus* laboured about *Palladius*. But the wound was past the cure of a better surgeon then my selfe, so as I could but receiue some fewe of her dying words, which were cursings of her ill set affection, and wishing vnto me many crosses and mischances in my loue, when soeuer I should loue, wherein I feare, and onely feare that her praier is from aboue granted. But the noise of this fight, and issue thereof being blazed by the country people 20 25 30 35 40 45

people to some noble men thereabouts, they came thither, and finding the wrong offered vs, let vs go on our journey, we hauing recommended those royall bodies vnto them to be conueied to the King of *Iberia*. With that *Philoclea*, seeing the teares stand in his eyes with remembrance of *Paladius*, but much more of that which thereupon grew, she would needs drink a kisse from those eyes, and he sucke another from her lips; wherat she blushed, and yet kissed him againe to hide her blushing: which had almost brought *Pyrocles* into another discourse, but that she with so sweete a rigor forbad him, that he durst not rebell, though he found it a great warre to keepe that peace, but was faine to goe on in his storie: for so she absolutely bad him, and he durst not know how to disobey.

So (said he) parting from that place before the Sunne had much abased himselfe of his greatest height, we sawe sitting vpon the drie sandes) which yeelded at that time a verie hotte reflection) a faire Gentlewoman, whose gesture accused her of much sorow, and euery way shewed she cared not what paine she put her body to, since the better parte (her minde) was laide vnder so much agonie: and so was she dulled withall, that we could come so neare, as to heare her speeches, & yet she not perceiue the hearers of her lamentation. But wel we might vnderstand her at times say. Thou dost kill me with thy vnkinde falshood: and, It grieues me not to die, but it grieues me that thou art the murtherer: neither doth mine own paine so much vex me, as thy error. For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be slaine for thee, but much it torments me to be slaine by thee. Thou art vntrue, *Pamphilus*, thou art vntrue, and woe is me therefore. How oft didst thou sweare vnto me, that the Sunne should loose his light, and the rockes runne vp and downe like little kiddes, before thou wouldest falsifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy shining, and rockes runne madde for sorrow, for *Pamphilus* is false. But alas the sun keepes his light, though thy faith be darkened; the rockes stand still; though thou change like a wethercocke. O foole that I am that thought I could graspe water, and binde the winde, I might well haue known thee by others, but I would not; and rather wished to learne poison by drinking it my selfe, while my loue helped thy words to deceiue me. Well, yet I would thou hadst made a better choise when thou didst forsake thy vnfortunate *Leucippe*. But it is no matter, *Baccha* (thy new mistres) wil reuenge my wrongs. But do not *Baccha*, let *Pamphilus* liue happy though I dye.

And much more to such like phrase she spake, but that I (who had occasion to know some thing of that *Pamphilus*) stept to comfort her: and though I could not doo that, yet I got thus much knowledge of her, that this being the same *Leucippe*, to whome the vnconstant *Pamphilus* had betrothed himselfe, which had moued the other Ladies to such indignation as I tolde you: neither her worthinesse (which in trueth was great) nor his owne suffering for her (which is woont to endear affection) could fether his ficklenesse, but that before his marriage-daye appointed, he had taken to wife that *Baccha*, of whome she complained; one, that in diuers places I had heard before blazed, as the most impudently vnchaste woman of all *Asia*; and withall, of such an imperiousnesse therein, that she would not sticke to employ them whome she made unhappie with her fauour) to draw more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whome she did no lesse glorie, then a Captaine would doo, of being followed by braue Souldiers: waiwardly proud; and therefore bold, because extremely faultie: and yet hauing no good thing to redeeme both these, and other vnlovely partes, but a little beautie, disgraced with wandering eyes, and vnwaied speeches; yet had *Pamphilus* (for her) left *Leucippe*, & withall, left

his faith: *Leucippe*, of whom one looke (in a cleere iudgement) would haue bin more acceptable, then all her kindneses so prodigallie bestowed. For my selfe, the remembrance of his cruell handling *Dido*, ioyned to this, stirred me to seeke some reuenge vpon him, but that I thought, it should be a gaine to him to lose his life, being so matched: and therefore (leauing him to be punished by his owne election) we conueyed *Leucippe* to a house thereby, dedicated to *Vestal* Nunnes, where shee resolved to spend all her yeares (which her youth promised should be many) in bewailing the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong doer.

But the next morning, we (hauing struē with the Sunnes earlineffe) were scarcely beyond the prospect of the high turrets of that building, when there overtooke vs a young Gentleman, for so he seemed to vs, but indeede (sweete Ladie) it was the faire *Zelmane*, *Plexirtus* daughter; whom vnconsulting affection (vnfortunately borne to me-wards) had made borrowe so much of her naturall modestie, as to leaue her more-decent rayments, and taking occasion of *Andromanas* tumultuous pursuing vs, had apparelled her selfe like a page, with a pitifull crueltie cutting off her golden haire, leauing nothing, but the short curles, to couer that noble head, but that she ware vpon it a faire head-peece, a shield at her backe, and a launce in her hand, els disarmed. Her apparell of white, wrought vpon with broken knots, her horse, faire and lustie, which she rid so, as might shew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which she knew that she knew not how to doo: and the sweetenesse of her countenance did giue such a grace to what she did, that it did make handsome the vnhandfomnes, and make the eye force the minde to beleue, that there was a praise in that vnskilfulnesse. But she straight approached me, and with fewe words (which borrowed the helpe of her countenance to make themselues vnderstood) she desired me to accept her into my seruice; telling me she was a noble mans sonne of *Iberia*, her name *Daiphantus*, who hauing seen what I had done in that court, had stolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particularities of the maner of *Andromanas* following me, which by her I vnderstood, she hiding nothing (but her sexe) from me. And still me thought I had seene that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far distant from my memorie: but liking verie well the yong Gentleman (such I tooke her to be) admitted this *Daiphantus* about me, who well shewed there is no seruice like his, that serues because he loues. For though born of Princes blood, brought vp with tenderest educatiō, vnapt to seruice (because a woman) and full of thoughts (because in a strange estate,) yet Loue enioyned such diligence, that no apprentice, no, no bondslaue could ever be by feare more readie at all commaundements, then that yong Princessse was. How often (alas) did her eyes say vnto me, that they loued? and yet, (I not looking for such a matter) had not my concept open to vnderstand them: how often would she come creeping to me, betweene gladnesse to be neare me, & feare to offend me? Truly I remember, that then I maruailed to see her receiue my commandements with sighes, and yet do them with cheerefulnesse: soinetimes answering me in such riddles, as I then thought a childish inexperience: but since returning to my remembrance they haue come more cleere vnto my knowledge: and pardon me (onely deare Lady) that I vse many words: for her affection to me deserues of me an affectionate speech.

But in such sort did she serue me in that kingdom of *Bythinia*, for two monethes space: in which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long maintained betweene the king of *Bythinia* and his brother. For my excellent cousin, & I (diuiding our selues to either side) found meanes (after some triall we had made of our selues)

to get such credite with them, as we brought them to as great peace betweene themselves, as loue towards vs, for hauing made the peace. Which done, we entended to returne through the kingdome of *Galatia*, toward *Thrace*, to ease the care of our father and mother, who (we were sure) first with the shipwracke, and then with the
 5 other daungers we dayly past, should haue litle rest in their thoughts till they saw vs. But we were not entred into that kingdome, when by the noise of a great fight, we were guided to a pleasant vally, which like one of those Circusses, which in great Cities some where doth giue a pleasant spectacle of running horses; so of either side stretching it selfe in a narrow length was it hemd in by wooddy hilles; as if indeed Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we
 10 beheld one of the cruellest fights betweene two Knights, that euer hath adorned the most martiall storie. So as I must confesse, a while we stood bewondred, another while delighted with the rare brauerie therof; till seeing such streames of bloud, as threatned a drowning of life, we galloped toward them to part them. But we were
 15 preuented by a dozen armed knights or rather villaines, who vsing this time of their extreame feeblenesse, altogether set vpon them. But common daunger brake off particular discord, so that (though with a dying weaknesse) with a liuely courage they resisted, and by our helpe draue away, or slue those murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to take aliue the principall. But going to disarme those two
 20 excellent knights, we found with no lesse wonder to vs, then astonishment to themselves, that they were the two valiant, and indeed famous brothers, *Tydemus* and *Telenor*; whose aduenture (as afterward we made that vngracious wretch confesse) had thus fallen out.

After the noble Prince *Leonatus* had by his fathers death succeeded in the kingdome of *Galatia*, he (forgetting all former iniuries) had receiued that naughty *Plexirtus* into a straight degree of fauour, his goodnesse being as apt to be deceiued, as the others craft was to deceiue. Till by plaine prooffe finding, that the vngrateful man went about to poison him, yet would not suffer his kindnesse to be ouercome, not by iustice it selfe: but calling him to him, vsed words to this purpose. *Plexirtus* (said he) this wickednesse is found by thee; no good deedes of mine haue bene
 30 able to keepe it downe in thee: all men counsell me to take away thy life, likely to bring forth nothing, but as dangerous, as wicked effects, but I cannot find it in my heart, remembring what fathers sonne thou art: but since it is the violence of ambition, which perchaunce pulsthee from thine owne iudgement, I will see, whether the satisfying that, may quiet the ill working of thy spirits. Not farre hence is the great citie of *Trebisond*; which, with the territorie about it, aunciently pertained vnto this crowne, now vniustly possessed, and as vniustly abused by those, who haue neither title to hold it, nor vertue to rule it. To the conquest of that for thy selfe I will lend thee force, and giue thee my right: Go therefore, and
 40 with lesse vnnaturalnesse glut thy ambition there; and that done, if it be possible, learne vertue.

Plexirtus, mingling forsworne excuses with false-meant promises, gladly embraced the offer: and hastily sending backe for those two brothers (who at that time were with vs succouring the gracious Queene *Erona*) by their vertue chieflie (if not
 45 onlie) obtained the conquest of that goodlie dominion. Which indeed done by them, gaue them such an authoritie, that though he raigned, they in effect ruled, most men honouring them, because they only deserued honour; and manie, thinking therein to please *Plexirtus*, considering how much he was bound vnto them:

while they likewise (with a certaine sincere boldnesse of self-warranting friendship) accepted all openly and plainly, thinking nothing should euer by *Plexirtus* be thought too much in them, since all they were, was his.

But he who by the rules of his owne mind, could construe no other end of mens doings, but selfe-seeking) sodainly feared what they could do, and as sodainlie suspected, what they would do, and as sodainly hated them, as hauing both might, and mind to do. But dreading their power, standing so strongly in their owne valour, and others affection, he durst not take open way against them, and as hard it was to take a secret, they being so continually followed by the best, and euerie way ablest of that region, and therefore vsed this diuelish sleight (which I will tell you) not doubting (most wicked man) to turne their owne friendship toward him to their owne destruction. He (knowing that they well knew, there was no friendship betweene him and the new king of *Pontus*, neuer since he succoured *Leonatus* and vs, to his ouerthrow) gaue them to vnderstand that of late there had passed secret defiance betweene them, to meet priuately at a place appointed. Which though not so fit a thing for men of their greatnesse, yet was his honour so engaged, as he could not go backe. Yet faining to find himselfe weake by some counterfeit infirmitie, the day drawing neare, he requested each of them to go in his stead; making either of them sweare to keepe the matter secret, euen each from other, deliuering the selfe same particularities to both, but that he told *Tydemus*, the king would meet him in a blew armour; and *Telenor*, that it was a blacke armour: and with wicked subtilty (as if it had bene so appointed) caused *Tydemus* to take a blacke armour, and *Telenor* a blew; appointing them wayes how to go, so as he knew they shold not meet, till they came to the place appointed, where each had promised to keep silence, least the king should discouer it was not *Plexirtus*: and there in a wait had hee laid these murtherers, that who ouerliued the other, should by them be dispatched: he not daring trust more then those with that enterprise, and yet thinking them too few, till themselves by themselves were weakened.

This we learned chieffie, by the chiefe of those way-beaters, after the death of those two worthie brothers, whose loue was no lesse then their valour: but well we might find much therof by their pitifull lamentation, whē they knew their mismeeting, and saw each other (in despite of the surgerie we could do vnto them) striuing who should run fastest to the goale of death: each bewayling the other, and more dying in the other, then in himselfe: cursing their owne hands for doing, and their breasts for not sooner suffering: detesting their vnfortunately-spent time in hauing serued so vngratefull a Tyrant, & accusing their follie in hauing beleued, he could faithfullie loue, who did not loue faithfulnessse: withing vs to take heed, how we placed our good will vpon any other ground, then prooffe of vertue: since length of acquaintance, mutuall secrecies, nor height of benefits could bind a sauage heart; no man being good to other, that is not good in himselfe. Then (while any hope was) beseeching vs to leaue the care of him that besought, and onlie looke to the other. But when they found by themselves, and vs, no possibility, they desired to be ioyned; and so embracing & crauing that pardon each of other, which they denied to themselves, they gaue vs a most sorowfull spectacle of their death; leauing few in the world behind the, their matches in any thing, if they had soone enough knowne the ground & limits of friendship. But with woful harts we caused those bodies to be conveyed to the next town of *Bythinia*, where we learning thus much (as I haue told you) caused the wicked Historian to conclude his story with his owne wel-deserued death.

But

But then (I must tell you) I found such wofull countenances in *Daiphantus*, that I could not but much maruell (finding them continue beyond the first assault of pitie) how the case of strangers (for further I did not conceiue) could so deeply pierce. But the truth indeed is, that partly with the shame and sorow shee tooke of her fathers faultinesse, partlie with the feare, that the hate I conceiued
 5 against him, would vtterlie disgrace her in my opinion, whensoever I should know her, so vehemently perplexed her, that her faire colour decayed, and dayly and hastilie grew into the verie extreme working of sorowfulnessse: which oft I sought to learne, and helpe. But she as fearefull as louing, still concealed it; and so decaying still more and more in the excellencie of her fairenesse, but that whatsoeuer
 10 weakenesse tooke away, pitie seemed to adde: yet still she forced her self to waite on me, with such care and diligence, as might well shew had bene taught in no other schoole but Loue.

While we returning againe to embarke our selues for *Greece*, vnderstood that the
 15 mightie *Otanes* (brother to *Barzanes* slaine by *Musidorus*, in the battell of the sixe Princes) had entred vpon the kingdome of *Pontus*, partlie vpon the pretences he had to the crowne, but principally, because he wold reuenge vpon him (whom he knew we loued) the losse of his brother: thinking (as indeed he had cause) that whersoever we were, hearing of his extremitie, we would come to relieue him; in spite wher-
 20 of he doubted not to preuaile, not onely vpon the confidence of his owne vertue and power, but especiallie because he had in his companie two mighty Giants, sons to a couple, whō we slue in the same realme, they hauing bene absent at their fathers death, and now returned, willinglie entred into his seruice, hating (more then he) both vs, and that king of *Pontus*. We therefore with all speed went thitherward,
 25 but by the way this fell out, which whensoever I remember without sorow, I must forget withall, all humanitie.

Poore *Daiphantus* fell extreme sicke, yet would needs conquest he delicacie of her constitution, and force her selfe to waite on me: till one day going toward
Pontus, we met one, who in great haste went seeking for *Tydeus* and *Telenor*, whose
 30 death as yet was not knowne vnto the messenger; who (being their seruant, and knowing how dearelie they loued *Plexirtus*) brought them word, how since their departing, *Plexirtus* was in present daunger of a cruell death, if by the valiantnesse of one of the best knights of the world, he were not rescued: we enquired no further of the matter (being glad he shold now to his losse find what an vnprofitable treason
 35 it had bene vnto him, to dismember himself of two such friends) and so let the messenger parte, not sticking to make him know his maisters destruction by the falsehood of *Plexirtus*.

But the griefe of that (finding a bodie alreadie brought to the last degree of weaknesse) so ouerwhelmed the litle remnant of the spirits left in *Daiphantus*, that
 40 she fell sodainlie into deadlie fowndings; neuer comming to her selfe, but that withall she returned to make most pitifull lamentations; most straunge vnto vs, because we were farre from guessing the ground thereof. But finding her sicknesse such as began to print death in her eyes, we made all haste possible to conuey her to the next towne: but before we could lay her on a bed, both we, and she might
 45 find in her selfe, that the harbingers of ouer-hastie death had prepared his lodging in that daintie bodie, which she vndoubtedlie feeling, with a weake chearfulnessse, shewed comfort therein and then desiring vs both to come neare her, and that no bodie else might be present; with pale, and yet (euen in palenesse) louely lips; Now

or neuer, and neuer indeed, but now is it time for me, said she, to speake: & I thanke death which giues me leaue to discouer that, the suppressing whereof perchance hath bene the sharpest spurre, that hath hastened my race to this end. Know then my Lords, and especiallie you my Lord and maister *Pyrocles*, that your page *Daiphantus* is the vnfortunate *Zelmane*, who for your sake caused my (as vnfortunate) louer and cousin *Palladius*, to leaue his fathers court, and consequently, both him & my Aunt his mother, to lose their liues. For your sake my selfe haue become, of a Princessse a Page: and for your sake haue put off the apparell of a woman, and (if you iudge not more mercifully) the modestie. We were amazed at her speech, and then had (as it were) new eyes giuen vs to perceiue that, which before had bene a present stranger to our minds: for indeed forthwith we knew it to be the face of *Zelmane*, whom before we had knowne in the court of *Iberia*. And sorow and pitie laying her paine vpon me, I comforted her the best I could by the tendernesse of good will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recouerie.

But she that had inward embassadours from the tyrant that shortly would oppresse her: No, my deare maister (said she) I neither hope nor desire to liue. I know you would neuer haue loued me (and with that word she wept) nor, alas, had it bene reason you should, considering manie wayes my vnworthinesse. It sufficeth me that the strange course I haue taken, shall to your remembrance, witnesse my loue: and yet this breaking of my heart, before I would discouer my paine, will make you I hope, thinke that I was not altogether vnmodest. Thinke of me so, deare maister, and that thought shall be my life: and with that languishingly looking vpon me: And I pray you (said she) euen by these dying eyes of mine (which are only sorie to die, because they shall loose your sight) and by these polled lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the ornament of my sex, now in their short curles, the testimonie of my seruitude:) and by the seruice I haue done you (which God knowes hath bene full of loue) thinke of me after my death with kindnesse, though you cannot with loue. And whensoever ye shall make any other Ladie happy with your well placed affection, if you tell her my follie, I pray you speake of it, not with scorne, but with pitie. I assure you (deare Princessse of my life, for how could it be otherwise?) her words and her maner, with the liuely consideration of her loue, so pierced me, that though I had diuerse griefes before, yet me thought, I neuer felt till then, how much sorow enfeebleth al resolution: for I could not choose but yeeld to the weakenesse of abundant weeping; in truth with such griefe, that I could willinglie at that time haue chaunged liues with her.

But when she saw my teares, O God, said she, how largely am I recompenced for my losses? why then (said she) I may take boldnesse to make some requests vnto you. I besought her to do, vowing the performance, though my life were the price thereof. She shewed great ioy: The first, said she, is this, that you will pardon my father the displeasure you haue iustlie conceiued against him, and for this once, succour him out of the danger wherein he is: I hope he will amend: and I pray you, whensoever you remember him to be the faultie *Plexirtus*, remember withall that he is *Zelmanes* father. The second is, that when you come once into *Greece*, you will take vnto your selfe this name (though unluckie) of *Daiphantus*, and vouchsafe to be called by it: for so shall I be sure, you shall haue cause to remember me: and let it please your noble cousin to be called *Palladius*, that I do that right to that poore Prince, that his name yet may liue vpon the earth in so excellent a person: and so betweene you, I trust sometimes your unluckie page shall bee (perhaps with a sigh

high) mentioned. Lastlie, let me be buried here obscurely, not suffering my friends
 to know my fortune, till (when you are safely returned to your owne countrie) you
 cause my bones to be conueyed thither, and laid (I beseech you) in some place,
 where your selfe vouchsafe sometimes to resort. Alas, smal petitions for such a suter;
 5 which yet she so earnestlie craued, that I was faine to sweare the accomplishment.
 And then kissing me, and often desiring me not to condemne her of lightnesse, in
 mine armes she deliuered her pure soule to the purest place: leauing me as full of
 agonie, as kindnesse, pitie & sorow could make an honest heart. For I must confesse
 for true, that if my starres had not wholie referued me for you, there else perhaps I
 10 might haue loued, and (which had bene most strange) begun my loue after death:
 whereof let it be the lesse maruell, because somewhat she did resemble you: though
 as farre short of your perfection, as her selfe dying, was of her selfe flourishing: yet
 something there was, which (when I saw a picture of yours) brought againe her
 figure into my remembrance, and made my hart as apt to receiue the wound, as the
 15 power of your beautie with vnresistable force to pierce.
 But we in wofull (and yet priuate) maner burying her, performed her commaun-
 dement: and then enquiring of her fathers estate, certainly learned that he was
 presently to be succoured, or by death to passe the need of succor. Therefore we de-
 termined to deuide our selues; I, according to my vow, to helpe him, and *Musi-*
 20 *dorus* toward the King of *Pontus*, who stood in no lesse need then immediate suc-
 cour, & euen ready to depart one from the other, there came a messenger from him,
 who after some enquirie found vs, giuing vs to vnderstand, that he trusting vpon vs
 two, had appointed the combate betweene him and vs, against *Otaues* and the two
 Giants. Now the day was so accorded, as it was impossible for me both to succour
 25 *Plexirtus*, and be there, where my honour was not only so farre engaged, but (by
 the strange working of vniust fortune) I was to leaue the standing by *Musidorus*,
 whom better then my selfe I loued, to go saue him, whom for iust causes I hated.
 But my promise giuen, & giuen to *Zelmane*, and to *Zelmane* dying, preuailed more
 with me, then my friendship to *Musidorus*: though certainly I may affirme, no-
 30 thing had so great rule in my thoughts as that. But my promise caried me the easier,
 because *Musidorus* himselfe would not suffer me to breake it. And so with heauie
 minds (more carefull each of others successe, then of our owne) we parted; I to-
 ward the place, where I vnderstood *Plexirtus* was prisoner to an ancient Lord, ab-
 solutely gouerning a goodly Castle, with a large territorie about it, whereof he ac-
 35 knowledged no other soueraigne but himselfe; whose hate to *Plexirtus* grew for a
 kinsman of his, whō he maliciously had murdered, because in the time that he raig-
 ned in *Galatia*, he found him apt to practise for the restoring of his vertuous brother
Leonatus. This old knight, still thirsting for reuenge, vsed (as the way to it) a policy,
 which this occasion I will tell you, prepared for him. *Plexirtus* in his youth had ma-
 40 ried *Zelmanes* mother, who dying of that onely child-birth, he a widower, and not
 yet a king, haunted the Court of *Armenia*; where (as he was cunning to winne fa-
 uour) he obtained great good liking of *Artaxia*, which he pursued, till (being cal-
 led home by his father) he falsly got his fathers kingdome; and then neglected his
 former loue: till throwne out of that (by our means) before he was deeply rooted in
 45 it, and by and by againe placed in *Trebisond*, vnderstanding that *Artaxia* by her
 brothers death was become Queene of *Armenia*, he was hotter the euer in that pur-
 suit, which being vnderstood by this old knight, he forged such a letter, as might be
 written from *Artaxia*, entreating his present (but verie priuate) repaire thither,

giuing him faithfull promise of present mariage: a thing farre from her thought, hauing faithfullie and publicly protested, that she would neuer marie anie, but some such Prince who would giue sure prooffe, that by his means we were destroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then blind to iudge hopes) bit hastilie at the baite, and in priuate maner posted toward her, but by the way hee was met by 5 this knight, farre better accompanied, who quicklie laid hold of him, and condemned him to death, cruell enough, if any thing may be both cruell and iust. For hee caused him to be kept in a miserable prison, till a day appointed, at which time he would deliuer him to bee deuoured by a monstrous beast of most vglie shape, armed like a *Rhinoceros*, as strong as an Elephant, as fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a 10 Leopard, and as cruell as a Tigre: whom he hauing kept in a strong place, from the first youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then such a beastlie monster with a monstrous Tyrant: proclaiming yet withal, that if any so well loued him, as to venture their liues against his beast, for him, if they ouercame, he should be saued: not caring how many they were (such confidence he had in that monsters strength) 15 but especially hoping to entrap thereby the great courages of *Tydeus* and *Telephus*, whom he no lesse hated, because they had bene principall instruments of the others power.

I dare say, if *Zelmane* had knowne what daunger I should haue passed, she wold rather haue let her father perish, then me to haue bidden that aduenture. But my 20 word was past, and trulie, the hardnesse of the enterprife was not so much a bit as a spurre vnto me; knowing well, that the iourney of high honour lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thither, and taking sufficient securitie that *Plexirtus* should be deliuered if I were victorious, I vndertooke the combate: and (to make short, excellent Lady, and not to trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) 25 so was my weaknesse blessed from above, that without daungerous wounds I slue that monster, which hundreds durst not attempt: to so great admiration of many (who from a safe place might looke on) that there was order giuen, to haue the fight both by sculpture and picture, celebrated in most partes of *Asia*. And the old Noble-man so well liked me, that he loued me; only bewayling, my vertue had 30 bene employed to saue a worse monster then I killed: whom yet (according to faith giuen) he deliuered, and accompanied me to the kingdome of *Pontus*, whither I would needs in all speed go, to see whether it were possible for me (if perchance the day had bene delayed) to come to the combate: but that (before I came) had bene thus finished.

The vertuous *Leonatus* vnderstanding two so good friends of his were to be in that daunger, would perforce be one himselfe; where he did valiantly, and so did the king of *Pontus*. But the truth is, that both they being sore hurt, the incomparable *Musidorus* finished the combate by the death of both the Giants, and the taking of *Otanes* prisoner. To whom as he gaue his life, so he got a noble friend, for so he gaue 40 his word to be, and he is well knowne to thinke himselfe greater in being subiect to that, then in the greatnesse of his Principalltie.

But thither (vnderstanding of our being there) flocked great multitudes of many great persons, and euen of Princes; especially those, whom we had made beholding vnto vs: as, the Kings of *Phrygia*, *Bythinia*, with those two hurt, of *Pontus* 45 and *Galatia*, and *Otanes* the prisoner, by *Musidorus* set free; and thither came *Plexirtus* of *Trebisond*, and *Antiphilus* then king of *Lycia*; with as manie mo great Princes drawne either by our reputation, or by willingnesse to acknowledge them-

themselves obliged vnto vs, for what we had done for the others. So as in those parts of the world, I thinke, in many hundreds of yeares there was not scene so royall an assemblie: where nothing was let passe to do vs the highest honours, which such persons (who might commaund both purses and inuentions) could performe.

5 All from all sides bringing vnto vs right royall presents (which wee to auoid both vnkindnesse and importunitie, liberallie receiued) & not content therewith, would needs accept, as from vs their crownes, and acknowledge to hold them of vs: with manie other excessiue honours, which would not suffer the measure of this short leisure to describe vnto you.

10 But we quickly awearie thereof, hasted to *Greece*-ward, led thither partly with the desire of our Parents, but hastened principallie, because I vnderstood that *Anaxius* with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to seeke me, & was now come to *Peloponnesus*, where frō Court to Court he made enquirie of me, doing yet himself so noble deeds, as might hap to authorize an ill opiniō of me. We therefore suffered

51 but short delayes, desiring to take this countrie in our way, so renowned ouer the world, that no Prince could pretend height, nor begger lownesse, to barre him from the sound thereof: renowned indeed, not so much for the ancient praises attributed thereunto, as for the hauing in it *Argalus* and *Amphialus* (two knights of such rare prowesse, as we desired especially to know) and yet by farre not so much

20 for that, as without suffering of comparifon for the beautie of you and your sister, which makes all indifferent iudges, that speake thereof, account this countrie as a temple of deities. But these causes indeed mouing vs to come by this land, we embarked our selues in the next port, whither all those Princes (sauing *Antiphilus*, who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarie longer from *Erona*) conueyed vs. And

25 there found we a ship most royallie furnished by *Plexirtus*, who had made all things so proper (as well for our defence, as ease) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who seeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repentance in his eyes, friendship in his gesture, and vertue in his mouth: so that we who had promised the sweet *Zelmane* to pardon him, now not onely forgaue, but began to

30 fauor; perswading our selues with a youthfull credulity, that perchance things were not so euill as we tooke them, and as it were, desiring our owne memorie that it might be so. But so were we licensed from those Princes, trulie not without teares, especially of the vertuous *Leonatus*, who with the king of *Pontus* would haue come with vs, but that we (in respect of the ones young wife, and both their new settled

35 kingdomes) would not suffer it. Then would they haue sent whole fleetes to guard vs: but we, that desired to passe secretly into *Greece*, made them leaue that motion, when they found that more shippes then one would be displeasing vnto vs. But so committing our selues to the vncertaine discretion of the wind, we (then determining as soone as we came to *Greece*, to take the names of *Daiphantus* and *Palladius*,

40 as well for our owne promise to *Zelmane*, as because we desired to come vnkowne into *Greece*) left the *Asian* shore full of Princely persons, who euen vpon their knees recommended our safeties to the deuotion of their chiefe desires: among whom none had bene so officious (though I dare affirme, all quite contrarie to his vnfeignfulnesse) as *Plexirtus*.

45 And so hauing sailed almost two dayes, looking for nothing but when we might looke vpon the land, a graue man (whom we had scene of great trust with *Plexirtus*, and was sent as our principall guide) came vnto vs, and with a certaine kind manner mixt with shame, and repentance, began to tell vs, that he had taken such a loue

vnto vs (considering our youth and fame) that though he were a seruant and a seru-
 uant of such trust about *Plexirtus*, as that he had committed vnto him euen those se-
 crets of his heart, which abhord all other knowledge; yet he rather chose to
 reueale at this time a most pernicious counsell, then by concealing it bring to ruine
 those, whom he could not choose but honour. So went he on, and told vs, that *Ple-* 5
xirtus (in hope thereby to haue *Artaxia*, endowed with the great kingdome of *Ar-*
menia, to his wife) had giuen him order when we were neare *Greece*, to find some o-
 portunitie to murder vs, bidding him to take vs asleepe, because he had seene what
 we could do waking. Now sirs (said he) I would rather a thousand times lose my life
 then haue my remembrance (while I liued) poysoned with such a mischiefe: and 10
 therefore if it were only I, that knew herein the kings order, then should my diso-
 bedience be a warrant of your safetie. But to one more (said he) namely the Cap-
 taine of the ship, *Plexirtus* hath opened so much touching the effect of murdering
 you, though I think laying the cause rather vpon old grudge, then his hope of *Artaxia*.
 And my selfe, (before the consideration of your excellencies had drawne loue and 15
 pitie into mind) imparted it to such, as I thought fittest for such a mischiefe. There-
 fore, I wish you to stand vpon your gard, assuring you, that what I can do for your
 safetie, you shall see (if it come to the push) by me performed. We thanked him,
 as the matter indeed deserued, & from that time would no more disarme our selues,
 nor the one sleep without his friends eyes waked for him: so that it delayed the go- 20
 ing forward of their bad enterprise, while they thought it rather chaunce, then pro-
 uidence, which made vs so behaue our selues.

But when we came within halfe a dayes sayling of the shore, so that they saw it
 was speedilie, or not at all to be done. Then (& I remeber it was about the first watch
 in the night) came the Captaine and whispered the Councillour in the eare: But 25
 he (as it should seeme) dissuading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate
 from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a loud voyce sware, that if *Plexirtus*
 bad him, he would not sticke to kill God himselfe. And therewith cald his mates,
 and in the kings name willed them to take vs aliue or dead; encouraging them with
 the spoyle of vs, which he said (and indeed was true) would yeeld manie exceeding 30
 rich iewels. But the Councillour according to his promise) commanded them they
 should not commit such a villanie, protesting that he would stand betweene them
 and the kings anger therein. Wherewith the Captaine enraged: Nay (said he) then
 we must begin with this traitor himselfe: and therewith gaue him a fore blow vpon
 the head, who honestly did the best he could to reuenge himselfe. 35

But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite for mischiefe. And
 so against the Captaine we went, who straight was enuironed with most part of
 the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the trueth is, there were some, whom either
 the authoritie of the Councillour, doubt of the Kings mind, or liking of vs, made
 draw their swords of our side: so that quicklie it grew a most confused fight. For 40
 the narrownesse of the place, the darknesse of the time, and the vncertaintie in
 such a tumult how to knowe friends from foes, made the rage of swordes rather
 guide then be guided by their maisters. For my cousin and me, trulie I thinke we
 neuer performed lesse in any place, doing no other hurt then the defence of our
 selues, and succouring them who came for it, draue vs to: for not discerning per- 45
 fectlie, who were for, or against vs, we thought it lesse euill to spare a foe, then
 spoile a friend. But from the highest to the lowest part of the shippe there was no
 place left, without cries of murdering, and murdered persons. The Captaine I hapt
 awhile

a while to fight withall, but was driven to part with him, by hearing the crie of the Counsellour, who received a mortall wound, mistaken of one of his owne side. Some of the wiser would call to parley, and with peace, but while the words of peace were in their mouthes, some of their euill auditors gaue them death for their hire. So that no man almost could conceiue hope of liuing, but by being last aliue: and therefore euerie one was willing to make himselfe roome, by dispatching almost any other: so that the great number in the ship was reduced to exceeding few, when of those few the most part wearie of those troubles leapt into the boat, which was fast to the ship: but while they that were first were cutting off the rope that tied it, others came leaping in so disorderlie, that they drowned both the boate and themselves.

But while euen in that litle remnant (like the children of *Cadmus*) we continued still to slay one another, a fire, which (whether by the desperate malice of some, or intention to separate, or accidentallie while all things were cast vp and downe) it should seeme had taken a good while before, but neuer heeded of vs, (who onely thought to preserue or reuenge) now violentlie burst out in many places, & began to maister the principall parts of the ship. Then necessitie made vs see, that a common enemy sets at one a ciuil warre: for that litle al we were (as if we had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) straight went to resist that furious enemy by all art and labour: but it was too late; for already it did embrace and deuour from the sterne to the waste of the ship: so as labouring in vaine, we were driven to get vp to the prow of the ship, by the worke of nature seeking to preserue life as long as we could: while truly it was a straunge and vglie sight, to see so huge a fire, as it quicklie grew to be in the sea, and in the night, as if it had come to light vs to death. And by and by it had burned off the mast, which all this while had proudly borne the saile (the wind, as might seeme, delighted to carie fire and bloud in his mouth) but now it fell ouer boord, and the fire growing nearer vs, it was not onely terrible in respect of what we were to attend, but insupportable through the heat of it.

So that we were constrained to bide it no longer, but disarming and stripping our selues, and laying our selues vpon such things, as we thought might helpe our swimming to the land (too farre for our owne strength to beare vs) my cousin and I threw our selues into the Sea. But I had swomme a verie litle way, when I felt (by reason of a wound I had) that I should not be able to bide the trauell, and therefore seeing the mast (whose tackling had bene burnt off) flote cleare from the ship, I swam vnto it, and getting on it, I found mine owne sword, which by chaunce, when I threw it away (caught by a peece of canuas) had hung to the mast. I was glad, because I loued it well; but gladder, when I saw at the other end the Captaine of the ship and of all this mischiefe; who hauing a long pike, belike had borne himselfe vp with that, til he had set himselfe vpon the mast. But when I perceiued him, Villaine said I, dost thou thinke to ouerliue so manie honest men, whom thy falshood hath brought to destruction? With that bestriding the mast, I gat by litle and litle towards him, after such a maner as boyes are wont (if euer you saw that sport) when they ride the wilde mare. And he perceiuing my intention, like a fellow that had much more courage then honestie, set himselfe to resist: but I had in short space gotten within him, and (giuing him a sound blow) sent him to feed fishes. But there my self remained, vntill by Pyrates I was taken vp, & among them againe taken prisoner, and brought into *Laconia*.

But what (said *Philoclea*) became of your cousin *Musidorus*? Lost, said *Pyrocles*.

Ah my *Pyrocles*, sayd *Philoclea*, I am glad I haue taken you. I perceiue you louers do not alwayes say truly: as though I knew not your cousin *Dorus* the shepheard? Life of my desires (said *Pyrocles*) what is mine, euen to my soule is yours: but the secret of my friend is not mine. But if you know so much, then I may trulie say, he is lost, since he is no more his owne. But I perceiue, your noble sister & you are great friends, and well doth it become you so to be. But go forward deare *Pyrocles*, I long to heare out till your meeting me: for there to me-ward is the best part of your storie. Ah sweet *Philoclea* (said *Pyrocles*) do you thinke I can thinke so precious leisure as this well spent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke (thinke you) to reade a tale vpon? Is my loue quiet enough to be an historian? Deare Princeesse, be gracious vnto me. And then he faine would haue remembred to haue forgot himselfe. But she with a sweetly disobeying grace, desired him that her desire (once for euer) might serue, that no spot might disgrace that loue, which shortlie she hoped should be to the world warrantable. Faine he would not haue heard, till she threatned anger: and then the poore louer durst not, because he durst not. Nay, I pray thee, deare *Pyrocles* (said she) let me haue my storie. Sweet Princeesse (said he) giue my thoughts a little respite: and if it please you, since this time must so be spoiled, yet it shall suffer the lesse harme, if you vouchsafe to bestow your voyce, & let me know, how the good Queene *Erona* was betrayed into such daunger, and why *Plangus* sought me. For indeed I should pitie greatly any mischaunce fallen to that Princeesse. I will, said *Philoclea* smiling, so you giue me your word, your hands shall be quiet auditours. They shall, sayd he, because subiect. Then began she to speake, but with so pretie and delightfull a maiesty, when she set her countenance to tell the matter, that *Pyrocles* could not chuse but rebell so far as to kisse her. She would haue puld her head away, and speake, but while she spake he kist, and it seemed he fed vpon her words: but she gat away. How will you haue your discourse (said she) without you let my lips alone? He yeilded & took her hand. On this (said he) will I reuenge my wrong: and so began to make much of that hand, when her tale, and his delight were interrupted by *Miso*: who taking her time, while *Basilus* backe was turned, came vnto them; and told *Philoclea*, she deserued she knew what, for leauing her mother, being euill at ease, to keep companie with strangers. But *Philoclea* telling her, that she was there by her fathers commandement, she went away muttering, that though her backe and her shoulders, and her necke were broken, yet as long as her tongue would wag, it should do her errand to her mother: and so went vp to *Gynecia*, who was at that time miserable vexed with this maner of dreame. It seemed vnto her to be in a place full of thornes, which so molested her, as she could neither abide standing still, nor tread safelie going forward. In this case she thought *Zelmane*, being vpon a faire hill, delightful to the eye, & easie in apparance, called her thither: whither with much anguish being come, *Zelmane* was vanished, & she found nothing but a dead body like vnto her husband, which seeming at the first with a strange smell to infect her, as she was readie likewise within a while to die, the dead bodie she thought tooke her in his armes, and said, *Gynecia*, leaue all, for here is thy onlie rest.

With that she awaked, crying, very loud, *Zelmane*, *Zelmane*. But remembring her selfe, and seeing *Basilus* by, (her guiltie conscience more suspecting, then being suspected, she turned her call, & called for *Philoclea*. *Miso* forthwith like a valiant shrew (looking at *Basilus*, as though she would speake though she died for it) told *Gynecia*, that her daughter had bene a whole houre together in secret talke with *Zelmane*: And (sayes she) for my part I could not be heard, (your daughters are brought vp in

in such awe) though I told her of your pleasure sufficiently. *Gynecia*, as if she had heard her last doome pronounced against her, with a side looke and changed countenance, O my Lord (said she) what meane you to suffer these young folkes together. *Basilus* (that aymed nothing at the marke of her suspition) smilingly tooke her
 5 in his armes; sweet wife, said he, I thanke you for your care of your child: but they must be youthes of other mettall then *Zelmane*, that can endaunger her. O but; cried *Gynecia*, and therewith she stayed: for then indeed she did suffer a right conflict betwixt the force of loue, and rage of ieaousie. Many times was she about to satisfy the spite of her mind, & tell *Basilus*, how she knew *Zelmane* to be far otherwise the
 10 the outward appearance. But those many times were all put backe by the manifold obiections of her vehement loue. Faine she would haue bard her daughters hap, but loth she was to cut off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene set vpon a wager of quicke rising, as weake as she was, she gat vp; though *Basilus* (with a kindnesse flowing only from the fountaine of vnkindnesse, being indeed desirous to win
 15 his daughter as much time as might be) was loth to suffer it, swearing he saw sicknesse in her face, and therefore was loth she should aduenture the ayre.

But the great and wretched Lady *Gynecia*, possessed with those diuels of Loue and Ieaousie, did rid her selfe from her tedious husband: and taking no body with her going toward them; O Ieaousie, said she, the phrensie of wise folkes, the wel-
 20 wishing spite, and vnkind carefullnesse, the selfe-punishment for others fault, and selfe-miserie in others happinesse, the cousin of enuie, daughter of loue, and mother of hate, how couldest thou so quietly get thee a seat in the vnquiet heart of *Gynecia*, *Gynecia* (said she sighing) thought wise, and once vertuous? Alas it is thy breeders power which plants thee there: it is the flaming agonie of affection, that
 25 works the chilling accessse of thy feuer, in such sort, that nature giues place; the growing of my daughter seemes the decay of my selfe; the blessings of a mother turne to the curses of a competitor; and the faire face of *Philoclea* appeares more horrible in my sight then the image of death. Then remembered she this song, which she thought tooke a right measure of her present mind.

30
 With two strange fires of equall heat possess,
 The one of Loue, the other Ieaousie,
 Both still do worke, in neither find I rest:
 For both, alas, their strengths together tie:
 35 The one aloft doth hold, the other hie.
 Loue wakes the ieaous eye least thence it moves:
 The ieaous eye, the more it lookes, it loues.

40
 These fires increase: in these I daylie burne:
 They feed on me, and with my wings do flie:
 My louely ioyes to dolefull ashes turne:
 Their flames mount vp, my powers prostrate lie:
 They liue in force, I quite consumed die.
 45 One vvonder yet farre passeth my conceat.
 The fewell small: how be the fires so great?

But her vnleasured thoughts ran not ouer the ten first words; but going with a pace not so much too fast for her body, as slow for her mind; she found them together,

who after *Misos* departure, had left their tale, and determined what to say to *Basilina*. But full abashed was poore *Philoclea* (whose conscience now began to know cause of blushing) for first salutation, receiuing an eye from her mother, full of the same disdainfull scorne, which *Pallas* shewed to poore *Arachne*, that durst contend with her for the prize of well weauing: yet did the force of loue so much rule her, that though for *Zelmanes* sake she did detest her, yet for *Zelmanes* sake she vsed no harder words to her, then to bid her go home, and accompany her solitary father.

Then began she to display to *Zelma*ne the storehouse of her deadly desires, when suddenly the confused rumor of a mutinous multitude gaue iust occasion to *Zelma*ne to breake off any such conference (for well shee found, they were not friendly voices they heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conueniently they could towards the lodge. Yet before they could winne the lodge by twentie paces, they were ouertaken by an vnruely sort of clownes, and other rebels, which like a violent floud, were caried, they themselues knew not whither. But assoone as they came within perfect discerning these Ladies, like enraged beastes, without respect of their estates, or pity of their sexe, they began to runne against them, as right villaines, thinking ability to doo hurt, to be a great aduancement: yet so many as they were, so many almost were their minds, all knit together onely in madnesse. Some cried, Take; some, Kill; some, Saue: but euen they that cried saue, ran for company with them that meant to kill. Euery one commaunded, none obeyed, hee onely seemed chiefe Captaine, that was most ragefull.

*Zelma*ne (whose vertuous courage was euer awake) drew out her sword, which vpon those il-armed churles giuing as many wounds as blowes, & as many deathes almost as wounds (lightning courage, and thundring smart vpon them) kept them at a bay, while the two Ladies got themselues into the lodge: out of the which *Basilina* (hauing put on an armour long vntried) came to proue his authoritie among his subiects, or at least, to aduerture his life with his deare mistresse, to whom he brought a shield, while the Ladies tréblingly attended the issue of this dangerous aduventure. But *Zelma*ne made them perceiue the ods betweene an Eagle and a Kite, with such a nimble stayednesse, and such an assured nimblesse, that while one was running backe for feare, his fellow had her sword in his guts.

And by and by was both her heart and helpe well encreased by the comming of *Dorus*, who hauing beene making of hurdles for his maisters sheepe, heard the horrible cries of this madde multitude; and hauing streight represented before the eyes of his carefull loue, the perill wherein the soule of his soule might bee, hee went to *Pamelas* lodge, but found her in a caue hard by, with *Mopsa* and *Dametis*, who at that time would not haue opened the entrie to his father. And therefore leauing them there (as in a place safe, both for being strong, and vnknowne) he ranne as the noise guided him. But when he saw his friend in such danger among them, anger and contempt (asking no counsell but of courage) made him runne among them, with no other weapon but his sheephooke, and with that ouerthrowing one of the villaines, tooke away a two-hand sword from him, and withall, helpt him from euer being ashamed of loosing it. Then lifting vp his braue head, and flashing terror into their faces, he made armes and legs go complaine to the earth, how euill their maisters had kept them. Yet the multitude still growing, and the very killing wearying them (fearing, least in long fight they shold be conquered with conquering) they drew backe towards the lodge; but drew backe in such sort, that still their terror went forward: like a valiant mastiffe, whom when his maister pulles backe by the taile frō the

the beare (with whom he hath already interchanged a hatefull imbracemēt) though his pace be backward, his gesture is forward, his teeth and eyes threatning more in the retiring, then they did in the aduancing: so guided they themselues homeward, neuer stepping steppe backward, but that they proued themselues maisters of the ground where they stept.

5 Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellow, a tayler by occupation, who fetching his courage onely from their going backe, began to bow his knees, and very fencer-like to draw neare to *Zelmane*. But as he came within her distance, turning his sword very nicely about his crowne, *Basilus*, with a side blow, strake off his nose. He (being a suiter to a seamsters daughter, and therefore not a litle grieved for such a disgrace) stouped downe, because he had heard, that if it were fresh put to, it would cleaue on againe. But as his hand was on the ground to bring his nose to his head, *Zelmane* with a blow, sent his head to his nose. That saw a butcher, a butcherly chuffe indeed (who that day was sworne brother to him in a cup of wine) and lifted vp a great leauer, calling *Zelmane* all the vile names of a butcherly eloquence. But
 15 she (letting slippe the blow of the leauer) hitte him so surely vpon the side of his face, that she left nothing but the nether iawe, where the tongue still wagged, as willing to say more, if his maisters remembrance had serued. O (sayd a miller that was halfe dronke) see the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, ran with a pitch-fork at *Dorus*: but the nimbleness of the wine caried his head so fast, that it made it
 20 ouer-runne his feete, so that he fell withall, iust betweene the legs of *Dorus*: who setting his foote on his necke (though he offered two milche kine, and foure fat hogs for his life) thrust his sword quite through, from one eare to the other, which tooke it very vnkindlie, to feele such newes before they heard of them, in stead of hearing, to be put to such feeling. But *Dorus* (leauing the miller to vomit his soule out in
 25 wine and bloud) with his two-hand sword strake off another quite by the waste, who the night before had dreamed he was growne a couple, and (interpreting it that he should be married) had bragd of his dreame that morning among his neighbours. But that blow astonished quite a poore painter, who stood by with a pike in his hāds. This painter was to counterfeit the skirmish betweene the *Centaures* and *Lapithes*,
 30 and had bin very desirous to see some notable wounds, to be able the more fluely to expresse them; and this morning (being caried by the streame of this company) the foolish fellow was euen delighted to see the effect of blowes. But this last (hapning neare him) so amazed him, that he stood stocke still, while *Dorus* (with a turne of his sword) strake off both his hands. And so the painter returned, well skilled in wounds
 35 but with neuer a hand to performe his skill.

In this maner they recovered the lodge, and gaue the rebels a face of wood of the outside. But they then (though no more furious, yet more couragious when they saw no resister) went about with pickaxe to the wall, & fire to the gate, to get themselues entrance. Then did the two Ladies mixe feare with loue, especially *Philoclea*, who
 40 euer caught hold of *Zelmane*, so (by the follie of loue) hindering the succour which she desired. But *Zelmane* seeing no way of defence, nor time to deliberate (the number of those villaines still encreasing, and their madnesse still increasing with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an vnused boldnesse, and with danger to auoide daunger: and therefore opened againe the gate, and (*Dorus* and *Basilus* standing ready for her defence) she issued
 45 againe among them. The blowes she had dealt before (though all in generall were hastie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them

so dainly ouer-neere her, so that she had time to get vp to the iudgement-seate of the Prince, which (according to the guise of that countrie) was before the court gate. There she paused a while, making signe with her hand vnto them, and withall, speaking aloud, that she had som thing to say vnto the, that wold please the. But she was answered a while with nothing but shouts and cries; and some beginning to throw stones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a yong farmer (who might do most among the countrie sort, and was caught in a litle affection towards *Zelmane*) hoping by this kindnesse to haue some good of her, desired them, if they were honest men, to heare the woman speake. Fie fellowes, fie, (said he) what will all the maides in our towne say, if so many tall men shall be afraide to heare a faire wench? I sweare vnto you by no little ones, I had rather giue my teeme of oxen, then we should shew our selues so vnciuil wights. Besides, I tell you true, I haue heard it of old men counted wisdom, to heare much, and say little. His sententious speech so preuailed, that the most part began to listen. Then she, with such efficacie of gracefulness, and such a quiet magnanimitie represented in her face in this vttermost perill, as the more the barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks vpon her, in this sort began vnto them.

It is no small comfort vnto me (said she) hauing to speake something vnto you for your own behoofes, to finde that I haue to deale with such a people, who shew indeede in themselues the right nature of valure, which as it leaues no violence vnto attempted, while the choller is nourished with resistance; so when the subiect of their wrath, doth of it self vnlooked for offer it selfe into their hands, it makes them at leat take a pause before they determine crueltie. Now then first (before I come to the principall matter) haue I to say vnto you; that your Prince *Basilus* himselfe in person is within this Lodge, and was one of the three, whom a few of you went about to fight withall: (and this she said, not doubting but they knew it well inough; but because she would haue them imagine, that the Prince might thinke that they did not know it) by him am I sent vnto you, as from a Prince to his well approued subiects, nay as from a father to beloued children, to know what it is that hath bred iust quarrell among you, or who they be that haue any way wronged you? what it is with which you are displeased, or of which you are desirous? This he requires: and in deed (for he knowes your faithfulness) he commaunds you presently to set downe, and to choose among your selues some one, who may relate your griefes or demaunds vnto him.

This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince) asswaged well their furie, and many of them consented (especially the yong farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demaunds that he might haue *Zelmane* for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieues, neuer Bees made such a confused humming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of imposts: the countrey fellows laying out of commons: some would haue the Prince keepe his Court in one place, some in another. All cried out to haue new councillors: but whē they should thinke of any new, they liked them as well as any other, that they could remember, especially they would haue the treasure so looked vnto, as that he should neuer need to take any more subsidies. At length they fell to direct contrarieties. For the Artisans, they would haue corne & wine set at a lower price, & bound to be kept so still: the plowmē, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The countrimē demanded that euery man might be free in the chief townes: that could not the Burgesses like of. The peasants would haue al the Gentlemē destroyed, the Citizens (especially such

such as Cookes, Barbers, and those other that liued most on Gentlemen) would but haue them reformed. And of ech side were like diuisions, one neighbourhood beginning to finde fault with another. But no confusion was greater then of particular mens likings & dislikings: one dispraising such a one, whom another praised, & demanding such a one to be punished, whom the other would haue exalted. No lesse ado was there about choosing him, who should be their spokes-man. The finer sort of Burgesses, as Marchants, Prentises, and Clothworkers, because of their riches, disdaining the baser occupations, and they because of their number as much disdaining them: all they scorning the countymens ignorance, & the countrymen suspecting as much their cunning: So that *Zelmane* (finding that their vnited rage was now growne, not only to a diuiding, but to a crossing one of another, and that the mislike growne among themselves did well allay the heat against her) made tokens againe vnto them (as though she tooke great care of their well doing, and were afraid of their falling out) that she would speake vnto them. They now growne ialous one of another (the stay hauing ingendred diuision, and diuision hauing manifested their weaknes) were willing enough to heare, the most part struing to shew themselves willinge then their fellowes: which *Zelmane* (by the acquaintance she had had with such kind of humors) soone perceiuing, with an angerlesse brauery, & an vnabashed mildnesse, in this maner spake vnto them.

20 An vnused thing it is, and I thinke no heretofore scene, *o Arcadians*, that a woman should giue publike counsell to men, a stranger to the country people, and that lastly in such a presence by a priuate person, the regal throne should be possessed. But the strangenesse of your action makes that vsed for vertue, which your violent necessitie impleth. For certainly, a woman may well speake to such men, who haue forgotten all manlike gouernment: a stranger may with reason instruct such subiects, that neglect due points of subiection: and is it maruaile this place is entred into by another, since your owne Prince (after thirtie yeares gouernment) dare not shew his face vnto his faithfull people? Heare therefore, *o Arcadians*, and be ashamed: against whom hath this zealous rage bin stirred? whither haue bene bent these manifold weapōs of yours? In this quiet harmles lodge there be harbourd no *Argians* your ancient enemies, nor *Lacōnians* your now feared neighbours. Here be neither hard landlords, nor biting vsurers. Here lodge none, but such, as either you haue great cause to loue, or no cause to hate: here being none, besides your Prince, Princessse, & their children, but my selfe. Is it I then, *o Arcadians*, against whom your anger is armed? Am I the mark of your vehement quarell? if it be so, that innocencie shal not be a stop for fury; if it be so, that the law of hospitalitie (so long & holily obserued among you) may not defend a straunger fled to your armes for succour: if in fine it be so, that so many valiant mens courages can be enflamed to the mischief of one silly woman; I refuse not to make my life a sacrifice to your wrath. Exercise in me your indignation, so it go no further, I am content to pay the great fauours I haue receiued among you, with my life, not ill deseruing I present it here vnto you, *o Arcadians*, if that may satisfie you; rather thē you (called ouer the world the wise & quiet *Arcadians*) shold be so vaine, as to attēpt that alone, which all the rest of your country will abhor; then you shold shew your selues so vngratefull, as to forget the fruite of so many years peaceable gouernment; or so vnnatural, as not to haue with the holy name of your natural Prince, any furie ouer-mastred. For such a hellish madnesse (I know) did neuer enter into your hearts, as to attempt anie thing against his person; which no successor, though neuer so hatefull, will euer leaue (for his owne

fake) vnreuenged. Neither can your wonted valour be turned to such a basenesse, as in steed of a Prince, deliuered vnto you by so many royal auncestors, to take the tyrannous yoke of your fellow subiect, in whom the innate meanes will bring forth rauenous couetousnesse, and the newnesse of his estate, suspectful crueltie. I imagin, what could your enemies more wish vnto you, then to see your owne estate with your owne hands vndermined? O what would your fore-fathers say, if they liued at this time, and saw their of-spring defacing such an excellent principallitie, which they with much labour and bloud so wisely haue established? Do you thinke them fooles, that saw you should not enioy your vines, your cattell, no not your wiues and children, without gouernment; and that there could be no gouernment without a Magistrate, and no Magistrate without obedience, and no obedience where every one vpon his owne priuate passion, may interpret the doings of the rulers? Let your wits make your present example a lesson to you. What sweetnesse (in good faith) find you in your present condition? what choise of choise finde you, if you had lost *Basilus*? vnder whose ensigne would you go, if your enemies should inuade you? If you cannot agree vpon one to speake for you, how will you agree vpon one to fight for you? But with this feare of I cannot tell what, one is troubled, and with that passed wrong another is grieved. And I pray you did the Sunne euer bring you a fruitfull haruest, but that it was more hottie then pleasant? Haue any of you children, that be not sometimes cumbersome? Haue any of you fathers, that be not sometime wearishe? What, shall we curse the Sunne, hate our children, or disobey our fathers? But what need I vse these words, since I see in your countenances (now vertuously settled) nothing els but loue and dutie to him, by whom for your onely sakes the gouernment is embraced. For all what is done, he doth not onely pardon you, but thanke you; iudging the action by the mindes, and not the mindes by the action. Your griefes, and desires, whatsoeuer, and whensoeuer you list, he will consider of, and to his consideration it is reason you should refer them. So then, to conclude; the vncertaintie of his estate made you take armes; now you see him wel, with the same loue lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I must confesse ouer-vehement affection: the only continuance might proue a wickednesse. But it is not so, I see verie well, you began with zeale, and will end with reuerence.

The action *Zelmane* vsed, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her gestures being such, that as her words did paint out her minde, so they serued as a shadow, to make the picture more liuely and sensible, with the sweete cleernesse of her voice, rising and falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in such an admirable person, whose incomparable valour they had well felt, whose beautie did pierce through the thicke dulnesse of their senses, gaue such a way vnto her speach through the rugged wildernesse of their imaginations, who (besides they were stricken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubtles out of leasure, that in steed of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a confused muttring, whether her saying were to be followed, betwixt feare to pursue, and lothnesse to leaue: most of them could haue bene content, it had neuer bene begun, but how to end it (each afraide of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far easier to tie then to loose knots. But *Zelmane* thinking it no euill way in such mutinies, to giue the mutinous some occasion of such seruice, as they might thinke (in their owne iudgement) would counteruaile their trespassse, withall, to take the

the more assured possession of their minds, which she feared might begin to wauer, Loiall *Arcadians* (said she) now do I offer vnto you the manifesting of your duties: all those that haue taken armes for the Princes safetie, let them turne their backs to the gate, with their weapōs bent against such as would hurt his sacred person. O weake trust of the many-headed multitude, whom inconstancie only doth guide to wel doing: who can set confidence there, where cōpany takes away shame, and ech may lay the fault on his fellow? So said a crafty fellow amōg the, named *Clinias*, to himself, when he saw the word no sooner out of *Zelmanes* mouth, but that there were some shouts of ioy with, God saue *Basilus*, & diuers of them with much iollity growne to be his guard, that but little before meant to be his murderers.

This *Clinias* in his youth had bene a scholler so farre, as to learne rather wordes then maners, and of words rather plentie then order; and oft had vsed to be an actor in Tragedies, where he had learned, besides a slidingnesse of language, acquaintance with many passions and to frame his face to beare the figure of them: long vsed to the eyes and eares of men, and to reckon no fault, but shamefastnesse, in nature, a most notable Coward, and yet more strangely then rarely venturous in priuie practises.

This fellow was become of neere trust to *Cecropia*; *Amphialus* his mother, so that he was priuy to al the mischieuous deuises, wherewith she went about to ruine *Basilus* and his children, for the aduancing of her sonne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his loue to be doing, taught him in any euill to be secret; and had by his mistresse bene vsed (euer since the strange retiring of *Basilus*) to whisper rumours into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnesse in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that set them in the vprore (though quite without the cōsēt of *Amphialus*, who would not for all the Kingdōs of the world so haue aduentured the life of *Philoclea*.) But now perceiuing the flood of their furie began to ebbe, he thought it policie to take the first of the tide, so that no man cried lower then he vpon *Basilus*. And some of the lustiest rebels nor yet agreeing to the rest, he caused two or three of his mates that were at his commaundement to lift him vp, and then as if he had had a prologue to vtter, he began with a nice grauitie to demaund audience. But few attending what he said, with vehement gesture, as if he would teare the starres from the skies, he fell to crying out so lowde, that not onely *Zelmane*, but *Basilus* might heare him. O vnhappy men, more mad then the Giants that would haue plucked *Iupiter* out of heauen, how long shall this rage continue? Why do you not all throw downe your weapons, & submit your selues to our good Prince, or good *Basilus*, the *Pelops* of wisdom, and *Minos* of all good government? when will you begin to belecue me, and other honest & faithful subiects, that haue done all we could to stop your furie

The farmer that loued *Zelmane* could abide him no longer. For as at the first he was willing to speake of conditions, hoping to haue gotten great souerainties, and among the rest *Zelmane*: so now perceiuing, that the people, once any thing down the hill from their furie, would neuer stay til they came to the bottome of absolute yeelding, and so that he should be nearer feares of punishment, then hopes of such aduancement, he was one of them that stood most against the agreement: and to begin withall, disdaining this fellow should play the preacher, who had bin one of the chiefeest make-bates, strake him a great wound vpon the face with his sword. The cowardly wretch fell downe, crying for succour, and (scrambling through the legs of them that were about him) gat to the throne, where *Zelmane* tooke him, and

comforted him, bleeding for that was past, and quaking for feare of more.

But as soone as that blow was giuen (as if *Æolus* had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle, ech one killing him that was next, for feare he should do as much to him. For being diuided in minds and not diuided in companies, they that would yeeld to *Basilus* were intermingled with them that would not yeeld. These men thinking their ruine stood vpon it; those men to get fauour of their Prince, conuerted their vngracious motion into their owne bowels, and by a true iudgement grew their owne punishers. None was sooner killed then those that had bene leaders in the disobedience: who by being so, had taught them, that they did leade disobedience to the same leaders. And many times it fell out that they killed them that were of their owne faction, anger whetting, and doubt hastening their fingers. But then came downe *Zelma*; and *Basilus* with *Dorus* issued, and somtimes seeking to draw together those of their party, somtimes laying indifferently among them, made such hauocke (among the rest *Zelma* striking the farmer to the hart with her sword, as before she had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary side were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods vpon the frontiers; where feeding wildly, and drinking only water, they were disciplined for their drunken riots; many of them being slaine in the chase, about a score onely escaping. But when these late rebels, now souldiers, were returned from the chase, *Basilus* calling them togither, partly for policy sake, but principally because *Zelma* before had spoken it (which was to him more then a diuine ordinance) he pronounced their generall pardon, willing them to returne to their houses, and thereafter be more circumspect in their proceedings: which they did most of them with sharp marks of their folly. But imagining *Clinias* to be one of the chiefe that had bred this good alteration, he gaue him particular thanks, and withall willed him to make him know this frenzie had entred into the people.

Clinias purposing indeede to tell him the truth of all, sauing what did touch himselfe, or *Cecropia*, first dipping his hand in the blood of his wound, Now by this blood (said he) which is more deare to me then al the rest that is in my body, since it is spent for your safety: this tong (perchance vnfortunate, but neuer false) shall not now begin to lie vnto my Prince, of me most beloued. Then stretching out his hād, and making vehement countenances the vsers to his speeches, in such maner of tearmes recounted this accident. Yesterday (said he) being your birth-day, in the goodly greene two mile hence before the citie of *Enispsus*, to do honour to the day, were a foure or fise thousand people (of al conditiōs, as I think) gathered together, spending all the day in dancings & other exercises: & when night came, vnder tents and bowes making great cheare, and meaning to obserue a wassaling watch all that night for your sake. *Bacchus* (the learned say) was begot with thunder: I thinke, that made him euer since so full of stur & debate. *Bacchus* indeed it was which sounded the first trumpet to this rude Alarum. For that barbarous opinion being generally among them, to think with vice to do honor, & with actiuitie in beastlinesse to shew abundance of loue, made most of them seeke to shew the depth of their affectiō in the depth of their draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (hauing spēt al the night, & some peece of the morning in such reuelling) & imboldned by your absented maner of liuing, there was no matter their eares had euer heard of that grew not to be a subiect of their winie conference. I speake it by prooffe: for I take witness of the Gods (who neuer leaue periuries unpunished) that I oftē cried out against their impudencie, & (when that would not serue) stopt mine eares, because I would not be

be partaker of their blasphemies, til with buffets they forced me to haue mine eares
 and eies defiled. Publike affaires were mingled with priuat grudges, neither was any
 man thought of wit, that did not pretende some cause of millike. Rayling was coun-
 ted the fruite of freedom, and saying nothing had his vttermoſt praiſe in igno-
 5 rance. At the length, your ſacred perſon (alas) why did I liue to heare it? alas howe
 do I breath to vtter it? But your commandement doth not only enioyn obedience,
 but giue me force: your ſacred perſon (I ſay) ſet to be their table-talk: a proud word
 ſwelling in their ſtomacks, & diſdainful reproches againſt ſo great a greatneſſe, hauing
 put on the ſhew of greatneſſe in their little minds: til at length the very vnbrided
 10 uſe of wordes hauing increaſed fire in their mindes (which God wot thought
 their knowledge notable, becauſe they had at all no knowledge to condemne their
 owne want of knowledge) they deſcended (O neuer to be forgotten preſumption)
 to a direct miſlike of your liuing from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to
 remember their far-fetched conſtructions. But the ſumme was, you diſdained them:
 15 and what were the pompes of your eſtate, if their armes maintained you not? VWho
 would call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of them of wret-
 ched eſtates, and worſe mindes (whoſe fortunes change could not impaire) began
 to ſay, that your gouernement was to be looked into; how the great treaſures (you
 had leuiued among them) had bene ſpent; why none but great men and gentlemen
 20 could be admitted into counſell, that the commons (for ſooth) were too plaine hea-
 ded to ſay their opinions: but yet their blood and ſweat muſt maintaine all. VWho
 could tell whether you were not betraied in this place, where you liued? nay whe-
 ther you did liue or go? Therefore that it was time to come and ſee; and if you were
 here, to know (if *Arcadia* were growne lothſome in your ſight) why you did not rid
 25 your ſelfe of the trouble? There would not want thoſe that would take ſo faire a
 cumber in good parte. Since the Countrey was theirs, and the gouernement an ad-
 herent to the countrey, why ſhould they not conſider of the one as well as inhabite
 the other? Nay rather (ſaid they) let vs begin that, which all *Arcadia* will followe.
 Let vs deliuer our Prince from daunger of practiſes, and our ſelues from want of a
 30 Prince. Let vs do that, which all the reſt thinke. Let it be ſaid, that we onely are not
 aſtoniſhed with vaine titles, which haue their force but in our force. Laſtly, to haue
 ſaid and heard ſo much, was as dangerous, as to haue attempted: and to attempt
 they had the glorious name of libertie with the. Theſe words, being ſpoken (like a
 furious ſtorme) preſently carried away their well inclined braines. What I, and ſome
 35 other of the honeſter ſort could do, was no more then if with a puffe of breath, one
 ſhould go about to make a ſaile go againſt a mightie winde: or, with one hand, ſtay
 the ruine of a mightie wall. So generall grewe this madneſſe among them, there
 needed no drumme, where each man cryed, each ſpake to other that ſpake as faſt to
 him, and the diſagreeing ſound of ſo many voices was the chiefe token of their vn-
 40 meete agreement. Thus was their banquet turned to a battaile, their winie mirthes
 to bloudie rages, and the happie prayers for your life to monſtrous threatning of
 your eſtate; the ſolemnizing your birth-day, tended to haue bene the cauſe of your
 funerals. But as a drunken rage hath (beſides his wickedneſſe) that follie, that the
 more it ſeekes to hurt, the leſſe it conſiders how to be able to hurt: they neuer way-
 45 ed how to arme themſelues but tooke vp euery thing for a weapon, that furie offered
 to their hands. Many ſwordes, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitch-
 forkes and rakes, conuerting husbandrie to ſouldierie, ſome caught hold of ſpittes
 (things ſeruiceable for life) to be the instruments of death. And there was ſome

such one, who held the same pot wherein he dranke to your health, to vse it (as he could) to your mischief. Thus armed, thus gouerned forcing the vnwilling, and hartening the willing, adding furie to furie, and encreasing rage with running, they came headlong toward this lodge: no man (I dare say) resolued in his owne heart, what was the vttermoſt he would doo when he came hither. But as mischief is of such nature, that it cannot stand but with strengthning one euill by an other, and so multiplie in it self, till it come to the highest, and then fall with his owne weight: so to their mindes (once passed the boundes of obedience) more and more wickednesse opened it selfe, so that they who first pretended to preferue you, then to reforme you, (I speake it in my conscience, and with a bleeding hart) now thought no safetie for them, without murdering you. So as if the Goddes (who preferue you for the preferuation of *Arcadia*) had not shewed their miraculous power, and that they had not vsed for instruments, both your owne valour (not fit to be spoken of by so meane a mouth as mine) and some (I must confesse) honest minds, (whom alas why should I mention, since what we did, reached not to the hundred part of our duty?) our handes (I tremble to think of it) had destroyed all that, for which we haue cause to reioyce that we are *Arcadians*.

With that the fellow did wring his hands, and wrang out teares: so as *Basilus*, that was not the sharpest piercer into masked minds, tooke a good liking to him; and so much the more as he had tickled him with praise in the hearing of his mistres. And therefore pitying his wound, willed him to get him home, and looke well vnto it, & make the best search he could, to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for which he should be well rewarded. But before he went away, certaine of the shepheards being come (for that day was appointed for their pastorals) he sent one of them to *Philanax*, and another to other principall noble-men, and cities thereabouts, to make through-inquirie of this vprore, and withall, to place such garrisons in all the townes and villages neere vnto him, that he might thereafter keepe his solitarie lodge in more securitie, vpon the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, hauing them in a readinesse for him.

This, *Clinias* (hauing his care one way when his eye was an other) had perceiued & therefore hasted away, with mind to tell *Cecropia*, that she was to take some speedie resolution, or els it were daunger those examinations would both discouer, and ruine her: and so went his way, leauing that little companie with embracements, and praising of *Zelmanes* excellent proceeding, to shew, that no decking sets foorth any thing so much, as affection. For as, while she stoode at the discretion of those vndiscreete rebelles, euery angry countenance any of them made, seemed a knife layde vpon their owne throates, so vnspeakable was now their ioy, that they sawe (besides her safetie and their owne) the same wrought, and safely wrought by her meanes, in whom they had placed all their delights. What examples *Greece* could euer alledge of witte and fortitude, were set in the ranke of trifles, being compared to this action.

But as they were in the midst of those vnfained ceremonies, a Gitterne, il-played on, accompanied with a hoarse voice (who seemed to sing mauer the Muses, and to be merie in spite of Fortune) made them looke the way of the ill-noysed song. The song was this.

A *Full cure with hate to heale:*
A *bloody helpe with blood to saue:*

*A foolish thing with fooles to deale:
Let him be bobd that bobs will haue.
But who by meanes of wisdom he
Hath sau'd his charge? it is euē I.*

*Let others deck their pride with skarres,
And of their wounds make braue lame shewes:
First let them die, then passe the starres,
VVhen rotten Fame will tell their blowes.*

*But eye from blade, and eare from crye:
VVho hath sau'd all? it is euē I.*

They had soone found it was *Dametas*, who came with no lesse lifted vp countenance, then if he had passed ouer the bellies of all his enimies: so wise a point he
15 thought he had performed, in vsing the naturall strength of the caue. But neuer was it his doing to come so soone thence, till the coast were more assuredly cleare: for it was a rule with him, that after a great storme there euer fall a fewe drops before it be fully finished. But *Pamela* (who had now experienced how much care doth sollicite a Louers heart) vsed this occasion of going to her parents & sister, indeed aswel
20 for that cause, as being vnquiet, til her eye might be assured how her shepheard had gone through the daunger. But *Basilus* with the sight of *Pamela* (of whom almost his head otherwife occupied, had left the wonted remembrance) was sodainly stricken into a deuout kind of admiration, remembring the oracle, which (according to the fauning humour of false hope) he interpreted now his own to his own best, and
25 with the willing blindness of affection (because his minde ran wholly vpon *Zelma-ne*) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

But as he was deeply thinking of the matter, one of the shepheards told him, that *Philanax* was already come with an hundred horse in his cōpany. For hauing by chaunce rid not farre off the litle desert, he had heard of this vprore, and so was
30 come vpon the spurre (gathering a company of Gentlemen as fast as he could) to the succour of his Master. *Basilus* was glad of it; but not willing to haue him, nor any other of the Noble men, see his Mistresse) he himselfe went out of the Lodge, and so giuing order vnto him of placing garrisons, and examining these matters; and *Philanax* with humble earnestnesse beginning to entreat him to leaue off this
35 solitarie course (which alreadie had bene so daungerous vnto him,) Well (said *Basilus*) it may be ere long I will condiscend vnto your desire. In the meane time, take you the best order you can to keepe me safe in my solitarinesse. But (said he) do you remember, how earnestly you wrote vnto me, that I should not be moued by that Oracles authoritie, which brought me to this resolution? Full well Sir (answered
40 *Philanax*) for though it pleased you not as then to let me know, what the Oracles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceipt) one degree of reputation, it sufficed me to know, it was but an Oracle, which led you frō your owne course. Wel (said *Basilus*) I will now tell you the wordes; which before I thought not good to do; because when all the euents fall out (as some alreadie haue done) I may charge
45 you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this sort.

*Thy elder care shall from thy carefull face
By princely meane be stolne, and yet not lost.*

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKE S

*Thy yonger shall with Natures blisse embrace
 And vnconth loue, which Nature hateth most.
 Both they themselues vnto such two shall wed,
 VVho at thy beer, as at a barre, shall plead;
 VVhy thee (a liuing man) they had made dead.
 In thine owne seat a forraine state shall sit.
 And ere that all these blowes thy head do hit,
 Thou, with thy wife, aduilty shall commit.*

For you forsooth (said he) when I told you, that some supernaturall cause sent me 10
 strange visions, which being confirmed with presagious chaunces, I had gone to
Delphos, & there receiued this answer, you replied to me, that the only supernatu-
 rall causes were the humors of my body, which bred such melancholy dreames; and
 that both they framed a mind full of cōceits, apt to make presages of things, which
 in themselues were meerly chaunceable: and withall as I saie, you remember what 15
 you wrote vnto me, touching authoritie of the Oracle: but now I haue some nota-
 ble triall of the truth thereof, which hereafter I will more largely cōmunicate vnto
 you. Only now, know that the thing I most feared is already performed; I mean that
 a forraine state should possesse my throne. For that hath bene done by *Zelmane*, but
 not as I feared, to my ruine, but to my preseruatiō. But when he had once named 20
Zelmane, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clock of his praises run on in
 such sort, that (*Philanax* found) was more exquisite then the onely admiration of
 vertue breedeth: which his faithfull hart inwardly repining at, made him shrinke a-
 way as soone as he could, to go about the other matters of importance, which *Ba-*
silius had enioyned vnto him.

Basilius returned into the Lodge, thus by him selfe construing the oracle, that in 25
 that he said, his elder care should by Princely meane be stolne away from him, and
 yet not lost, it was now perfourmed, since *Zelmane* had as it were robd from him
 the care of his first begotten child, yet was it not lost, since in his hart the ground
 of it remained. That his yonger should with Natures blisse embrace the loue of 30
Zelmane, because he had so commaunded her for his sake to doo; yet should it be
 with as much hate of Nature, for being so hatefull an opposite to the ieaiousie he
 thought her mother had of him. The sitting in his seate he deemed by her alreadie
 performed: but that which most comforted him, was his interpretation of the a-
 dulerie, which he thought he should commit with *Zelmane*, whom afterwarde he 35
 should haue to his wife. The point of his daughters mariage, because it threatened
 his death withall, he determined to preuent with keeping them (while he liued) vn-
 married. But hauing as he thought, gotten thus much vnderstanding of the Oracle,
 he determined for three daies after to perfourme certaine rites to *Apollo*: and euen
 then began with his wife and daughters to sing this Hymne, by them yearely vsed. 40

Apollo great, whose beames the greater world do light,
 And in our little world do cleare our inward sight,
 VVhich euer shine, though hid from earth by earthly shade,
 VVhose lights do euer line, but in our darknesse fade;
 Thou God, whose youth was deckt with spoile of Phythons skin:
 (So humble knowledge can throw downe the snakish sinne)

Latonas

Latonus sonne, whose birth in paine and trauaile long
 Doth teach, to learne the good what trauailes do belong:
 In trauaile of our life (a short but tedious space)
 While brickehoure glasse runnes guide thou our panning pace:
 5 Giue vs foresightfull mindes: giue vs minds to obay
 What foresight tels; our thoughts vpon thy knowledge stay.
 Let so our fruits grow vp that nature be maintaine:
 But so our harts keepe down, with vice they be not staine.
 Let this assured hold our iudgements ouertake,
 10 That nothing winnes the heauen, but what doth earth forsake.

As soone as he had ended his deuotion (all the priuiledged shepherds being now
 come) knowing well inough he might lay all his care vpon *Philanax*, he was willing
 to sweeten the tast of this passed tumult, with some rural pastimes. For which while
 15 the shepherds prepared themselves in their best manner, *Basilus* tooke his daugh-
 ter *Philoclea* aside, and with such hast, as if his eares hunted for words, desired to
 know how she had found *Zelmae*. She humbly answered him, according to the a-
 greement betwixt them, that thus much for her sake *Zelmae* was content to des-
 cend from her former resolution, as to heare him, whensoever he would speak; & fur-
 20 ther then that (she said) as *Zelmae* had not graunted, so she neither did, nor euer
 would desire. *Basilus* kist her with more then fatherly thanks, and straight (like a
 hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine haue vsed the benefite of that
 graunt, in laying his sicknesse before his only phyfition. But *Zelmae* (that had not
 yet fully determined with her selfe, how to beare her selfe toward him) made him
 25 in a few words vnderstand, that the time in respect of the company was vnfit for such
 a parley, and therefore to keepe his braines the busier, letting him vnderstand what
 she had learned of his daughters, touching *Eronas* distresse (whom in her trauaile she
 had knowne, and bene greatly beholding to) she desired him to finish the rest, for
 so far as *Plangus* had told him; Because she said (and she said truly) she was full of care
 30 for that Ladie, whose desert (only except an ouer-base choise) was nothing agree-
 able to misfortune. *Basilus* glad that she would command him any thing, but more
 glad, that in excusing the vnfitness of that time, she argued an intention, to graunt
 a fitter, obeyed her in this manner.

Madam (said he) it is verie true, that since yeares enabled mee to iudge what is,
 35 or is not to be pitied. I neuer saw any thing that more moued me to iustifie a vehe-
 ment compassion in my selfe, then the estate of that Prince, whom strong against all
 his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceiue you haue heard) yet true
 and noble loue had so pulled downe, as to lie vnder sorrow for another. In so much
 as I could not temper my long idle pen in that subiect, which I perceiue you haue
 40 seene. But then to leaue that vnrepeated, which I find my daughters haue told you:
 It may please you to vnderstand, since it pleaseth you to demand, that *Antiphilus*
 being crowned, and so left by the famous Princes *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles* (led thence
 by the challenge of *Anaxius*, who is now in these prouinces of Greece, making a dis-
 honorable enquirie after that excellent prince *Pyrocles* already perished) *Antiphilus*
 45 (I say) being crowned, and deliuered from the presence of those two, whose ver-
 tues (while they were present, good schoolmasters) suppressed his vanities, he had
 not strength of mind enough in him to make long delay of discovering what maner
 of man hee was. But streight like one caried vp to so hie a place, that hee looseth the

discerning of the ground ouer which he is; so was his mind lifted so far beyond the leuell of his owne discourse, that remembring onely that himselfe was in the high seate of a King, he could not perceiue that he was a king of reasonable creatures, who would quickly scorne follies, and repine at iniuries. But imagining no so true propertie of souereigntie, as to do what he listed, and to list what soeuer pleased his fantasie, he quickly made his kingdome a Teniscourt, where his subiects should be the balles, not in truth cruelly, but licenciously abusing them, presuming so far vpon himselfe, that what he did was liked of euery bodie: nay, that his disgraces were fauours, & all because he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceiue the bounds of great matters (suddenly borne into an vnknowne Ocean of absolute power) he was swayed withall (he knew not how) as euery winde of passiōs puffed him. Where-
to nothing helped him better, then that poysonous sugar of flatterie: which some vsed, out of the innate basenesse of their hart, straight like dogges fawning vpon the greatest; others secretly hating him, and disdainning his great rising so suddenly, so vnderferuedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him onely to his ouerthrow; like the bird that carries the shel-fish high, to breake him the easier with his fall. But his minde (being an apt matter to receiue what forme their amplifying speeches would lay vpon it) daunced so pretie a musick to their false measure, that he thought himselfe the wisest, the worthiest, and best beloued, that euer gaue honor to a royall title. And being but obscurely borne, he had found out vnblushing pedegrees, that made him not only of the blood royall, but true heire though vniustly dispossessed by *Eronas* auncestors, & like the foolish birde, that when it so hides the head that it sees not it selfe, thinks no bodie else sees it: so did he imagine, that no bodie knewe his basenesse, while he himselfe turned his eyes from it.

Then vainenesse (a meager friend to gratefulnesse) brought him so to despise *Erona*, as of whome he had receiued no benefit, that within half a yeares mariage he began to pretend barrennesse: & making first an vnlawfull law of hauing no wiues then one, he still keeping *Erona*, vnder-hand, by messages sought *Artaxia*, who no lesse hating him, then louing (as vnluckie a choise) the naughtie King *Plexirtus*, yet to bring to passe what shee purposed, was content to traine him into false hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of *Armenia*, & had made that but the foundation of more & more monarchies; as if fortune had only gotten eyes to cherish him. In which time a great assembly of most part of all the Princes of *Asia* being to do honour to the neuer sufficiently praised *Pyrocles* & *Musidorus*, he would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to haue bin yong-mastered among those great estates, as he was among his abusing vnderlings. But so many valorous Princes, indeed far neerer to disdain him then otherwise, he was quickly (as standing vpon no true ground, inwardly) out of countenance with himselfe, till his seldom-comfortlesse flatterers (perswading him, it was enuie and feare of his expected greatnesse) made him hast away from that company, and without further delay appointed the meeting with *Artaxia*; so incredibly blinded with the ouer-bright shining of his royaltie, that he could thinke such a Queene would be content to be ioyned-patent with an other to haue such an husband. Poore *Erona* to all this obeyed, either vehemencie of affection making her stoop to so ouerbare a seruitude, or astonished with an vnlooked for fortune, dull to any behoofefull resolution, or (as many times it falles out euen in great harts when they can accuse none but themselues) desperatly bent to maintaine it. For so went she on in that way of her loue, that (poore Lady) to be beyond

beyond all other examples of ill set affection, she was brought to write to *Artaxia*, that she was content; for the publike good, to be a second wife, and yeeld the first place to her; nay to extoll him, and euen woo *Artaxia* for him.

But *Artaxia* (mortally hating them both for her brothers sake) was content to hide her hate, till she had time to shew it: and pretending that all her grudge was against the two paragons of vertue, *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles*, euen met them halfe way in excusing her brothers murther, as not being principall actors; & of the other side, driuen to what they did by the euer-pardonable necessitie: and so well handled the matter, as though she promised nothing, yet *Antiphilus* promised himselfe all that she would haue him thinke. And so a solemne enteruiew was appointed: But (as the Poets say) *Hymen* had not there his saffron-coloured coat. For *Artaxia* laying men secretly (& easily they might be secret, since *Antiphilus* thought she ouer-ran him in loue) when he came euen ready to embrace her (shewing rather a countenance of accepting then offering) they came forth, and (hauing much aduantage both in number, valure, and forepreparation) put all his company to the sword, but such as could flie away. As for *Antiphilus* she caused him and *Erona* both to be put in yrons, halting back toward her brothers tombe, vpon which she meant to sacrifice them; making the loue of her brother stand betweene her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature she was alienated.

But great diuersitie in them two quicklie discovered it selfe for the bearing of that affliction: for *Antiphilus* that had no greatnesse but outward, that taken away, was ready to fall faster then calamitie could thrust him; with fruitlesse begging of life (where reason might well assure him his death was resolued) and weake bemoaning his fortune, to giue his enemies a most pleasing musike, with manie promises and protestations, to as litle purpose, as from a litle mind. But *Erona* sad indeed, yet like one rather vsed, then new fallen to sadnesse (as who had the ioyes of her heart already broken) seemed rather to welcome then to shun that end of miserie, speaking litle, but what she spake was for *Antiphilus*, remembring his guiltlesnesse, being at that time prisoner to *Tiridates*, when the valiant Princes shue him: to the disgrace of men, shewing that there are women both more wise to iudge what is to be expected, and more constant to beare it when it is happened.

But her wit endeared by her youth, her affliction by her birth, and her sadnesse by her beautie, made this noble Prince *Plangus*, who (neuer almost from his cousin *Artaxia*) was now present at *Eronas* taking, to perceiue the shape of louelinesse more perfectlie in woe, then in ioyfulness (as in a picture which receiues greater life by the darkenesse of shadowes, then by more glittering colours) and seeing to like, and liking to loue, and louing straight to feele the most incident effects of loue, to serue and preferue. So borne by the hastie tide of short leasure, he did hastily deliuer together his affection, and affectionate care. But she (as if he had spoken of a small matter, when he mentioned her life, to which he had not leasure to attend) desired him if he loued her, to shew it, in finding some way to saue *Antiphilus*. For her, she found the world but a wearisome stage vnto her, where she played a part against her will: and therefore besought him, not to cast his loue in so vnfruitful a place, as could not loue it self: but for a testimonie of constancie, & a futableness to his word, to do so much comfort to her mind, as that for her sake *Antiphilus* were saued. He told me how much he argued against her tendring him, who had so vngratefully betrayed her, and foolishlie cast away himselfe. But perceiuing she did not onlie bend her verie good wits to speake for him against herself,

but when such a cause could be allied to no reason, yet loue would needes make it selfe a cause, and barre her rather from hearing, then yeeld that he should yeeld to such arguments: he likewise in whom the power of Loue (as they say of spirits) was subiect to the loue in her, with griefe consented, and (though backwardly) was diligent to labor the helpe of *Antiphilus*: a man whom he not only hated, as a traytor to *Erona*, but enuied as a possessor of *Erona*. Yet Loue sware, his hart, in spite of his hart, should make him become a seruant to his riuall. And so did he, seeking all the meanes of perswading *Artaxia*, which the authority of so neare, and so vertuous a kinsman could giue vnto him. But she to whom the eloquence of hatred had giuen reuenge the face of delight, reiected al such motiōs; but rather the more closely imprisoning them in her chiefe city, where she kept them with intention at the birth-day of *Tiridates* (which was very neare) to execute *Antiphilus*, & at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeare after) to vse the same rigor towards *Erona*. *Plangus* much griued (because much louing) attempted the humors of the *Lycians*, to see, whether they would come in with forces to succor their Princeesse. But there the next inheritor to the crown (with the true play that is vsed in the game of kingdomes) had no sooner his mistresse in captiuiity, but he had vsurped her place, and making her odious to her people, because of the vnfit election she had made, had so left no hope there: but which is worse, had sent to *Artaxia*, perswading the iusticing her, because that vniustice might giue his title the name of iustice. Wanting that way, *Plangus* practised with some deare friends of his, to saue *Antiphilus* out of prison, whose day because it was much nearer then *Eronas*, and that he well found, she had twisted her life vpon the same threed with his, he determined first to get him out of prison: and to that end hauing prepared all matters as well as in such case he could, where *Artaxia* had set many of *Tiridates* old seruants to haue well-marking eyes, he conferred with *Antiphilus*, as (by the authority he had) he found meanes to do; & agreed with him of the time & maner, how he should by the death of some of his iaylors escape. But all being well ordered, and *Plangus* willingly putting himselfe into the greatest danger, *Antiphilus* (who, like a bladder, sweld ready to breake, while it was full of the wind of prosperity, that being out, was so abiected, as apt to be trod on by euery body) when it came to the point, that with some hazard, he might be in apparant likelihood to auoid the vttermost harme, his hart fainted, and (weake foole, neither hoping, nor fearing as he should) gat a conceipt, that with bewraying this practise, he might obtaine pardon: and therefore, euen a little before *Plangus* should haue come vnto him, opened the whole practise to him that had the charge, with vn-pitied teares idely protesting, he had rather die by *Artaxias* commandement, then against her will escape: yet begging life vpon any the hardest, and wretchedest conditions that she would lay vpon him. His keeper prouided accordingly, so that whē *Plangus* came, he was like, himselfe to haue bin entrapped: but that finding (with a luckie in-sight) that it was discouered, he retired; and (calling his friends about him) stood vpon his gard, as he had good cause. For, *Artaxia* (accounting him most vngatefull, considering that her brother and she had not only preserued him against the malice of his father, but euer vsed him much liker his birth, then his fortune) sent forces to apprehend him. But he among the martiall men had gotten so great loue, that he could not only keepe himselfe from her malice, but worke in their minds a compassion of *Eronas* aduersity.

But for the succour of *Antiphilus* he could get no body to ioyne with him, the cōtempt of him hauing not bene able to qualifie the hatred; so that *Artaxia* might easilie

5 easily vpon him perfourme her will; which was (at the humble suite of all the wo-
men of that citie) to deliuer him to their censure, who mortallie hating him for
hauing made a law of *polygamie*, after many tortures, forst him to throw himselfe
10 from a high Pyramis, which was built ouer *Tiridates* tombe, and so to end his
5 false-hearted life, which had planted no strong thought in him, but that he could be
vnkinde.

10 But *Plangus* well perceiuing that *Artaxia* stayed only for the appointed day, that
the faire *Eronas* bodie (consumed to ashes shold make a notorious testimonie, how
deepely her brothers death was engrauen in her breast, he assembled good num-
15 bers of friends, whom his vertue (though a stranger) had tied vnto him, by force
to giue her libertie. Contrariwise, *Artaxia*, to whom Anger gaue more courage
then her sex did feare, vsed her regall authoritie (the most she could) to suppress
that sedition, & haue her will: which (she thought) is the most princelie thing that
15 may be. But *Plangus*, who indeed (as all men witnesse) is one of the best Captaines
(both for policie and valour) that are trayned in the schoole of *Mars*, in a conflict
ouerthrew *Artaxias* power, though of farre greater number: and there tooke pri-
soner a base sonne of her brothers, whom she dearly affected, & then sent her word
that he shold run the same race of fortune (whatsoeuer it was) that *Erona* did: and
20 happie was that threatning for her; for else *Artaxia* had hastened the day of her
30 death, in respect of those tumults.

But now (some principall Noblemen of that countrie interposing themselves)
it was agreed, that all persons else fully pardoned, and all prisoners (except *Erona*)
deliuered, she should be put into the hands of a principall Nobleman, who had a
castle of great strength, vpon oath, that if by the day two yeare from *Tiridates* death,
25 *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* did not in person combat, and ouercome two knights, who
she appointed to maintaine her quarell against *Erona* & them, of hauing by treason
destroyed her brother, that then *Erona* shold be that same day burned to ashes: but
if they came, and had the victorie, she should be deliuered; but vpon no occasion,
neither freed, nor executed till that day. And hereto of both sides, all tooke solemne
30 oath, and so the peace was concluded; they of *Plangus* partie forcing him to agree,
though he himselfe the sooner condescended, knowing the curtesie of those two
excellent Princes, not to refuse so noble a quarrell, and their power such, as two
more (like the other two) were not able to resist. But *Artaxia* was more, and vpon
better ground, pleased with this action; for she had euen newly receiued newes frō
35 *Plexirtus*, that vpon the sea he had caused them both to perishe, & therefore she held
her selfe sure of the match.

But poore *Plangus* knew not so much, and therefore seeing his partie (as most
times it fallies out in like case) hungrie of any conditions of peace, accepted them;
and then obtained leaue of the Lord, that indifferentlie kept her, to visite *Erona*,
40 whom he found full of desperate sorow, not suffering neither his vnworthinesse, nor
his wrongs, nor his death (which is the naturall conclusion of all worldlie acts) ei-
ther to couer with forgetfulnesse, or diminish with consideration, the affection she
had borne him: but euen glorying in affliction, & shunning all comfort, she seemed
to haue no delight, but in making her self the picture of miserie. So that when *Plan-*
45 *gus* came to her, she fell in deadlie traunces, as if in him she had seene the death of
Antiphilus, because he had not succoured him: and yet (her vertue struing) she
did at one time acknowledge her selfe bound, and professe her selfe iniured; in steed
of allowing the conclusion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he wisht

her to do) crauing nothing but some speedie death to follow her in spite of iust hate) beloued *Antiphilus*.

So that *Plangus* hauing nothing but a rauisht kisse from her hand at their parting, went away toward *Greece*, whitherward he vnderstood the Princes were embarked. But by the way it was his fortune to intercept letters, written by *Artaxia* to *Plexirtus*: wherein she signified her accepting him to her husband, whom she had euer fauoured, so much the rather, as he had perfourmed the conditions of her marriage, in bringing to their deserued end her greatest enemies: withall, thanking the sea, in such tearmes as he might well perceiue it was by some treason wrought in *Plexirtus* ship. Whereupon (to make more diligent search) he tooke ship himselfe 10 and came into *Laconia*, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that such a ship was indeed with fight and fire perished, none (almost) escaping. But for *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, it was assuredly determined that they were cast away: for the name of such Princes (especially in *Greece*) would quicklie else haue bene a large witnesse to the cōtrarie. Full of grieve with that, for the losse of such, who left the world poore 15 of perfection: but more sorie for *Eronas* sake, who now by them could not be relieved. A new aduertisement from *Armenia* ouertooke him, which multiplied the force of his anguish. It was a message from the Nobleman who had *Erona* in ward, giuing him to vnderstād, that since his departure, *Artaxia* (vsing the benfit of time) had besieged him in his Castle, demanding present deliuerie of her, whom yer 20 for his faith giuen, he would not, before the day appointed, if possiblie he could resist, which he foresaw, long he should not do for want of victuall, which he had not so wisely prouided, because he trusted vpon the generall oath taken for two yeares space: and therefore willed him to make haste to his succour, and come with no small forces; for all they that were of his side in *Armenia* were consumed, and *Ar-* 25 *taxia* had encreased her might by marriage of *Plexirtus*, who now crowned king there, stickt not to glorie in the murder of *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, as hauing iust cause thereto, in respect of the deaths of his sister *Andromana*, her son his nephew, and his owne daughter *Zelmane*, all whose losse he vniustly charged them withall; and now openly stickt not to confesse, what a reuenge his wit had brought foorth. 30 *Plangus* much astonished herewith, bethought him selfe what to do: for to returne to *Armenia* was vaine, since his friendes there were vtterly ouerthrowne. Then thought he of going to his father; but he had alreadie (euen since the death of his stepmother, and brother) attempted the recouering of his fauour, and all in vaine. For they that had before ioyned with *Andromana* to do him the wrong, thought 35 now no life for them if he returned, and therefore kept him still (with new forged suspitions) odious to his father. So that *Plangus* reseruing that for a worke of longer time, then the sauing of *Erona* could beare, determinied to go to the mightie and good king *Euarchus*: who lately hauing (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered his enemies, but established good gouernement in their countries, he hoped he might haue present succour of him, both for the iustnesse of the cause, and reuenge of his childrens death, by so hainous a treason murdered. Therefore with diligence he went to him, and by the way (passing through my countrey) it was my hap to find him, the most ouerthrowne man with grieve, that euer I hope to see againe. For still it seemed he had *Erona* at a stake before his eyes; such an apprehension he had taken of her daunger; which in despite of all the comfort I could giue him, he powred out in such lamentations, that I was moued not to let him passe 40 till he had made full declaration, which by peeces my daughters & I haue deliuered

deliuered vnto you. Faine he would haue had succour of my selfe, but the course of my life being otherwise bent, I onely accompanied him with some that might safely guide him to the great *Euarchus*: for my part hauing had some of his speeches to feelingly in my memorie, that at an idle time (as I told you) I set them downe dialogue wise, in such maner as you haue seene. And thus excellent Lady, I haue obeyed you in this storie, wherein if it well please you to consider what is the strange power of Loue, and what is due to his authoritie, you shall exercise therein the true noblenesse of your iudgement, and do the more right to the vnfortunate Historian. *Zelmane* (sighing for *Eronas* sake, yet inwardly comforted in that she assured her selfe, *Euarchus* would not spare to take in hand the iust deliuering of her, ioyned with the iust reuenge of his childrens losse) hauing now what she desired of *Basilus*, to auoyd his further discourses of affection, encouraged the shepheards to begin, whom she saw already ready for them.

The second Eclogues.

THE rude tumult of the *Enispians* gaue occasion to the honest shepheards to begin their Pastorals this day with a daunce, which they called the skirmish betwixt Reason and Passion. For seuen shepheards (which were named the reasonable shepheards) ioyned themselues, foure of them making a square, and the other two going a litle wide of either side, like wings for the maine battell, & the seuenth man formost, like the forlorne hope, to begin the skirmish. In like order came out the seuen appassioned shepheards, all keeping the pace of their foot by their voice and sundry conforred instruments they held in their armes. And first, the formost of the Reasonable side began to sing:

Reason. Thou rebell wile, come, to thy maister yeeld.

And the other that met with him answered:

Passion. No, Tyrant, no; mine, mine shall be the field.

R. Can Reason then a Tyrant counted be?

P. If Reason will, that Passions be not free.

R. But Reason will, that Reason gouerne most.

P. And Passion will, that Passion rule the roost.

R. Your vwill is vwill, but Reason reason is.

P. VVill hath his will, when Reasons will doth misse.

R. VVhom Passion leads vnto his death is bent.

P. And let him die, so that he die content.

R. By nature you to Reason faith haue sworne.

P. Not so, but fellow-like together borne.

R. VVho Passion doth ensue, liues in annoy.

P. VVho Passion doth forsake, liues voyd of ioy.

R. Passion is blinde, and treads an vnknowne trace.

P. Reason hath eyes to see his owne ill case.

Then as they approched nearer, the two of Reasons side, as if they shot at the other, thus sang:

R. Dare Passions then abide in Reasons light?

P. And is not Reason dim with Passions might?

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

- R. *O foolish thing, which glorie doth destroy.*
 P. *O glorious title of a foolish toy.*
 R. *VWeaknesse you are, dare you vvith our strength fight?*
 P. *Because our weaknesse weakeneth all your might.*
 R. *O sacred Reason, helpe our vertuous toyles.*
 P. *O Passion, passe on feeble Reasons spoyles.*
 R. *VVe with our selues abide a daylie strife.*
 P. *VVe gladly vse the sweetnesse of our life.*
 R. *But yet our strife sure peace in end doth breed.*
 P. *VVe now haue peace, your peace we do not need.*

Then did the two square battailes meete, and in steed of fighting embrace one another, singing thus:

- R. *VVe are too strong: but Reason seeks no blood.*
 P. *Who be too weake, do faine they be too good.*
 R. *Though we cannot orecome, our cause is iust.*
 P. *Let vs orecome, and let vs be vniust.*
 R. *Yet Passions yeeld at length to Reasons stroke.*
 P. *What shall we win by taking Reasons yoke.*
 R. *The ioyes you haue shall be made permanent.*
 P. *But so we shall with grieve learne to repent.*
 R. *Repent indeed, but that shall be your blisse.*
 P. *How know we that, since present ioyes we misse?*
 R. *You know it not: of Reason therefore know it.*
 P. *No Reason yet had ener skill to shew it.*
 R. *Then let vs both to heauenlie rules giue place.*
 P. *Which Passions kill, and Reason do deface.*

Then embraced they one another, and came to the king, who framed his pray-
 ses of them according to *Zelmanes* liking; whose vnrestrained parts, the mind & eye
 had their free course to the delicate *Philoclea*, whose looke was not short in wel re-
 quiring it, although she knew it was a hatefull sight to her iecalous mother. But *Di-*
cus (that had in this time taken a great liking of *Dorus*, for the good parts he found
 about his age in him) had a delight to taste the fruits of his wit, though in a subiect
 which he himselfe most of all other despised: and so entred to speech with him in the
 maner of this following Eclogue.

Dicus. Dorus.

Dicus. Dorus, tell me, vvhere is thy wonted motion,
 To make these woods resound thy lamentation?
 Thy Saint is dead, or dead is thy deuotion,
 For vvho doth hold his loue in estimation,
 To vvittnesse that he thinks his thoughts delicious,
 Thinkes to make each thing badge of his sweet passion.

Dorus. But what doth make thee Dicus, so suspicions.

of

Of my due faith, which needs must be immutable?
 VVho others vertue doubt, themselves are vicious,
 Not so; although my mettals were most mutable,
 Her beames haue wrought therein most faire impression,
 To such a force some change were nothing sutable.

Dicus. The heart well set doth neuer shunne confession:
 If noble be thy bandes, make them notorious:
 Silence doth seeme the maske of base oppression.
 VVho glories in his loue, doth make Loue glorious:
 But who doth feare, or bideth muet wilfully,
 Shewes guilty heart doth deeme his state opprobrious.
 Thou then, that fram'st both wordes and voice most skilfully,
 Yeelde to our eares a sweete and sound relation,
 If Loue tooke thee by force, or caught thee guilefully.

Dorus. If sunnie beames shame heau'nly habitation,
 If thre-leau'd grasse seeme to the sheepe vsauorie,
 Then base and sowre is Loues most high vocation.
 Or if sheepes cries can helpe the Sunnes owne brauerie,
 Then may I hope, my pipe may haue abilitie,
 To helpe her praise, who decks me in her slauerie.
 No, no: no words ennoble selfe nobilitie,
 As for your doubts, her voice was it deceiued me,
 Her eye the force beyond all possibilitie.

Dicus. Thy words well voyc'd, well grac'd had almost heaued me,
 Quite from my selfe to loue Loues contemplation;
 Till of these thoughts thy sodaine end bereaued me,
 Goe on therefore, and tell vs by what fashion
 In thy owne prooffe he gets so straunge possession,
 And how posselt he strengthens his invasion.

Dorus. Sight is his roote, in thought is his progression,
 His childhood wonder, prentizship assention,
 His youth delight, his age the soules oppression,
 Doubt is his sleepe, he waketh in inuention,
 Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefullnesse,
 Beautie his booke, his play louer dissention:
 His eyes are curious search, but vaild with warefullnesse
 His wings desire oft clipt with desperation.
 Largeesse his hands could neuer skill of sparefullnesse
 But how he doth by might, or by perswasion
 To conquire, and his conquest how to ratifie,
 Experience doubts, and schooles hold disputation.

Dicus. But so thy sheepe may thy good wishes satisfie
 VVith large encrease, and wooll of fine perfection.

*So she thy loue, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,
As thou wilt giue our soules a deare refectiō,
By telling how she was, how now she framed is
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infectiō.*

Dorus. *Blest be the name, wherewith my mistres named is:
Whose wounds are salues, whose yokes please more then pleasure doth:
Her staines are beames; vertue the fault she blamed is,
The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treasure doth.
All numbring artes her endlesse graces number not:
Time, place, life, wit, scarcely her rare gifts measure doth.
Is she in rage? so is the Sunne in sommer hot,
Yet haruest brings. Dost she, alas! absent her selfe?
The Sunne is hid; his kindly shadowes cumber not.
But when to giue some grace she doth content her selfe,
O then it shines, then are the heauens distributed,
And Venus seemes, to make up her, she spent herselfe.
Thus then (I say) my mischiefs haue contributed
A greater good by her diuine refectiō,
My harmes to me, my blisse to her attributed.
Thus she is fam'd: her eyes are my direction,
Her loue my life, her anger my destruction:
Lastly what so she is, that's my protection.*

Dicus. *Thy safetie sure is wrapped in destruction,
For that construction thine own words do beare.
A man to feare a womans moodie eye,
Makes Reason lie a slaue to seruile sense,
A weake defence where weaknesse is thy force:
So is remorse in follie dearly bought.*

Dorus. *If I had thought to heare blasphemous words,
My breast to swords, my soule to hell haue sold
I rather would, then thus mine eares defile
With words so vile, which viler breath doth breed.
O heards take heed; for I a wolfe haue found,
Who hunting round the strongest for to kill,
His breast doth fill with eare of others woe,
And laden so pulls downe pull'd downe: stroyes,
O shepheards boyes, eschue these tongues of venome,
Which do enuename both the soule and senses.
Our best defenses are to flie these adders.
O tongues like ladders made to clime dishonour,
Who iudge that honour, which hath scope to slaunder!*

Dicus. *Dorus you wander farre in great reproches,
So Loue encroches on your charmed reason,
But it is season for to end our singing.*

Such

Such anger (bringing : as for me, my fancie
 In sicke mans frenzie rather takes compassion,
 Then rage for rage : rather my wish I send to thee,
 Thou soone may haue some helpe, or chaunge of passion :
 She oft her lookes, the starres her fauour bend to thee,
 Fortune store, Nature health, Loue graunt perswasions.
 A quiet mind none but thy selfe can lend to thee,
 Thus I commend to thee all our former Loue.

10 Dorus. Well do I proue, error lies oft in Zeale,
 Yet it is zeale, though error, of true heart.
 Nought could impart such heats to friendly mind,
 But for to find thy words did her disgrace,
 Whose onely face the litle heauen is,
 15 Which who doth misse, his eyes are but delusions,
 Barr'd from their chiefeſt obieſt of delightfulneſſe,
 Throwne on this earth, the Chaos of confusions;
 As for thy wiſh, to my enraged ſpitefulneſſe,
 The louely blow, with rare reward, my prayer is
 20 Thou maiſt loue her, that I may ſee thy ſightfulneſſe.
 The quiet mind (whereof my ſelfe empaire is,
 As thou doeſt thinke) ſhould moſt of all diſquiet me
 without her loue, then any mind who fairer is,
 25 Her only cure from ſurſet woes can diet me:
 She holds the ballance of my contentation:
 Her cleare eyes, nought elſe in ſtormes can quiet me.
 Nay rather then my eaſe diſcontentation
 Should breed to her, let me for aye deieſted be
 30 From any ioy, which might her grieve occaſion.
 Wiſh ſo ſweet plagues my happie harmes infected be:
 Paine wiſs me die, yet will of death I mortifie:
 For though life irkes, in life my lones protected be,
 Thus for each change my changeleſſe heart I fortifie.

35 When they had ended to the good pleaſing of the aſſiſtants, eſpecially of Zelma-
 ne, who neuer forgot to giue due commendations to her friend Dorus, Baſilius cal-
 led for Lamon to end his diſcourſe of Strephon & Klaius, wherewith the other day he
 marked Zelmane to haue bene exceedingly delighted. But him ſickenefſe had ſtayed
 40 taking vpon them the two friendly riuals names, to preſent Baſilius with ſome other
 of their complaints Eclogue-wiſe, and firſt with this double Seſtine.

Strephon. Klaius.

45 Strephon. Te Gote-heard Gods, that loue the graſſie mountaines,
 Te Nymphs that haunt the ſprings in pleaſant vallies,
 Te Satyrs ioy'd with free and quiet forreſts,
 Vouchſafe your ſilent cares to plaining muſike,

THE COUNTESSSE OF PEMBROKES

*Which to my woes giue still an earlie morning,
And drawes the dolor on till wearie euening.*

Klaius. *O Mercurie, foregoer to the euening,
O heauenly huntresse of the sauage mountaines,
O louely starre, entitled of the morning,
Vvhile that my voice doth fill these wofull vallies,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to plaining musike,
Which oft hath Echo tyr'd in secret forrests.*

Strephon. *I that was once free burgesse of the forrests,
where shade from Sunne, and sports I sought at euening,
I that was once esteem'd for pleasant musike,
Am banisht now among the monstrou mountaines
Of huge despaire, and foule afflictions vallies,
Am growne a shrich-owle to my selfe each morning.*

Klaius. *I that was once delighted euerie morning,
Hunting the wild inhabiteurs of forrests:
I that was once the musike of these vallies,
So darkened am, that all my day is euening,
Hart broken so, that molehilles seeme high mountaines,
And fill the vales with cries in steed of musike.*

Strephon. *Long since alas, my deadlie swannish musike,
Hath made it selfe a crier of the morning,
And hath with wailing strength clim'd highest mountaines:
Long since my thoughts more deserts be then forrests:
Long since I see my ioyes come to their euening,
And state throwne downe to onertroden vallies.*

Klaius. *Long since the happie dwellers of these vallies,
Haue pray'd me leaue my straunge exclaiming musike,
which troubles their dayes worke, and ioyes of euening:
Long since I hate the night, more hate the morning:
Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forrests,
And make me wish my selfe laid vnder mountaines.*

Strephon. *Me seemes I see the high and statelie mountaines,
Transforme themselues to low deiected vallies:
Me seemes I heare in these ill chaunged forrests,
The Nightringales do learne of Owles their musike:
Me seemes I feele the comfort of the morning,
Turn'd to the mortall serene of an euening.*

Klaius. *Me seemes I see a filthy cloudy euening,
As soone as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines:
Me seemes I feele a noysome sent, the morning*

vvhen

*When I doo smell the flowers of these vallies:
It seemes I heare, when I doo heare sweete musicke,
The dreadfull cries of murthered men in forrests.*

5 Strephon *I wish to fire the trees of all those forrests,
I giue the Sunne a last farewell each euening,
I curse the fiding finders out of musicke:
With enuie I doo hate the lostie mountaines;
And with dispite despise the humble vallies;
I doo detest night, euening, day, and morning.*

10 Klaius. *Curse to my selfe my praier is, the morning;
My fire is more then can be made with forrests;
My state more base, then are the basest vallies.
I wish no euening more to see, each euening;
Shamed I hate my selfe in sight of mount aines,
And stoppe mine eares, lest I grow mad with musicke.*

20 Strephon *For she whose parts maintaine a perfect musicke,
Whose beautie shin'de more then the blushing morning,
Who much did passe in state the stately mountaines,
In streightnesse past the Cedars of the forrests,
Hath cast me wretch into eternall euening,
By taking her two Sunnes from these darke vallies.*

25 Klaius. *For she, to whome compar'd, the Alps are vallies,
She, whose least word brings fro the spears their musick,
At whose approch the Sunne rose in the euening,
Who where she went bare in her forehead morning,
Is gone, is gone, from these our spoyle'd forrests,
Turning to desarts our best pastur'd mountaines.*

30 Strephon *These mountaines witnesse shall, so shal these vallies,
These forrests eke, made wretched by our musicke,*

35 Klaius. *Our morning hymne is this, and song at euening.*

But, as though all this had bin but the taking of a taste of their wailings, Strephon againe begā this Dizaine, which was answered vnto him in that kind of verse which is called the crowne.

40 Strephon. Klaius.

45 Strephon *I loy in grieve, and doo detest all ioyes:
Despise delight am tyr'd with thought of ease:
I turne my minde to all formes of annoyes,
And with the change of them my fancie please,
I studie that which may me most displease,
And in despite of that displeasures might,*

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Embrace that most, that most my soule destroyes,
Blinded with beams, fell darkenesse is my sight:
Dwell in my ruines, feede with sucking smart
I thinke from me, not from my woes to part.*

*Klaius. I thinke from me, not from my woes to part,
And loath this time, call'd life, may thinke, that life
Nature to me for torment did impart;
Thinke, my hard haps haue blunted deaths sharpe knife,
Not sparing me, in whom his workes be rife:
And thinking this, think nature, life, and death
Place Sorowes triumph on my conquerd heart,
VVhereto I yeeld, and seeke none other breath,
But from the sent of some infectious graue:
Nor of my fortune ought, but mischiefe craue.*

*Strephon Nor of my fortune ought but mischiefe craue,
And seeke to nourish that, which now containes
All what I am: if I my selfe will saue,
Then must I saue, what in me chiefly raines,
VVhich is the hatefull web of sorowes paines.
Sorow then cherish me, for I am sorow:
No being now, but sorow I can haue:
Then decke me as thine owne; thy helpe I borrow,
Since thou my riches art, and that thou hast
Enough to make a fertill mind lie waste.*

*Klaius. Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste,
Is that huge storme, which powres it selfe on me:
Harlestones of teares, of sight a monstrous blast,
Thunders of cries; lightnings my wilde lookes be,
The darkened heau'n my soule, which nought can see,
The flying sprits which trees by rootes vp teare,
Be those despaires which haue my hopes quite wast.
The difference is; all folke those stormes forbear,
But I cannot; who then my selfe should flie,
So close vnto my selfe my wrackes do lie.*

*Strephon So close vnto my selfe my wrackes doo lie,
But cause, effect, beginning, and the ende
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?
My ship, my selfe, whose course to lowe doth bende,
Sore beaten doth her mast of comfort spend:
Her cable, Reason, breakes from anchor, Hope:
Fancie her tackling, torne away doth flie:
Ruine, the winde, hath blowne her from her scope:
Bruised with waues of Cares, but broken is
On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse.*

On

Klaius. On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse,
 I long do plowe with plough of deepe desire:
 The seede Fast meaning is, no truth to misse:
 I harrow it with Thoughts, which all conspire
 Faouour to make my chiefe and only hire.
 But, woe is me, the yeare is gone about,
 And now I faine would reape, I reape but this
 Hatefully growne, Absence new sprong out.
 So that I see, although my sight empaire,
 Vaine is their paine, who labour in despaire.

Strephon Vaine is their paine, who labour in despaire:
 For so did I, when with my angle VVill,
 I sought to catch the fish Torpedo faire.
 Ew'n then Despaire did Hope already kill:
 Yet fancie would perforce employ his skill,
 And this hath got; the catcher now is caught,
 Lam'd with the angle, which it selfe did beare,
 And vnto death, quite drown'd in dolours, brought
 To death, as then disguis'd in her faire face.
 Thus, thus, alas, I had my losse in chase.

Klaius. Thus, thus alas, I had my losse in chase,
 VVhen first that crowned Basiliske I knewe,
 VVhose foote steps I with kisses oft did trace,
 Till by such hap, as I must euer rue,
 Mine eyes did light vpon her shining hue,
 And hers on me, astonisht with that sight.
 Since then my hart did loose his wonted place,
 Infect'd so with her sweet poysons might,
 That, leauing me for dead, to her it went:
 But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent.

Strephon But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent,
 Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me,
 Yet liuing still in her, while her beames lent
 Such vitall sparke, that her mine eyes might see.
 But now those liuing lights absented be,
 Full dead before, I now to dust should fall,
 But that eternall paines my soule haue hent,
 And keepe it still within this body thrall:
 That thus I must, while in this death I dwell,
 In earthly fetters feeble a lasting hell.

Klaius. In earthly fetters feeble a lasting hell
 Alas I doo; from which to finde release,
 I would the earth, I would the beauens sell,
 But vaine it is to thinke these paines should cease.

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.

O faire, bonely faire, from thee alas,

These foule, most foule, defastres to me fell;

Since thou from me (ô me) O Sanne didst passe.

Therefore esteeming all good blessings toyes,

I ioy in grieve, and do detest all ioyes.

Strephon. *I ioy in grieve, and do detest all ioyes,*

But now an end, (ô Klaius) now an end:

For euen the hearbes our hatefull musike stroyes,

And from our burning breath the trees do bend.

So well were these wailefull cōplaints accorded to the passions of all the princelie hearers, while euery one made what he heard of another the ballance of his own fortune, that they stood a long while stricken in a sad and silent cōsideration of them. Which the old Geron no more marking then condemning in them, desirous to set forth what counsels the wisdom of age had laid vp in store against such fancies (as he thought) follies of youth, yet so as it might not appeare that his words respected them, bending himselfe to a young shepheard named *Philisides*, (who neither had daunced nor sung with them, and had all this time laine vpon the ground at the foot of a *Cypresse* tree, leaning vpon his elbow with so deepe a melancholie that his senses caried to his mind no delight from any of their obiects) he strake him vpon the shoulder with a right old mans grace, that will seeme liuelier then his age will afford him. And thus began vnto him his Elogue.

Geron. *Philisides.*

Geron.

*V*P, vp *Philisides*, let sorowes go,
Who yeelds to woe, doth but increase his smart.
Do not thy heart, to plaintfull custome bring,
But let vs sing, sweet tunes do passions ease,
An old man heare, who would thy fancies raise.

Philisides.

Who minds to please the mind drown'd in annoyes
With outward ioyes, which inlie cannot sinke,
As well may thinke with oyle to coole the fire:
Or with desire to make such foe a frend,
Who doth his soule to endlesse malice bend.

Geron.

Tet sure an end to each thing time doth giue,
Though wwoes now line, at length thy wwoes must die:
Then vertue trie, if she can worke in thee
That which we see in manie time hath wrought,
And weakest hearts to constant temper brought.

Philisides.

Who euer taught a skillesse man to teach,
Or stop a breach, that neuer Cannon saw?
Sweet vertues law barres not a causefull mone.

Time

*Time shall in one my life and sorrowes end,
And me perchaunce your constant temper lend.*

Geron. *What can amend where physicke is refused?
The wits abuse with will no counsaile take.
Yet for my sake discouer vs thy grieve.
Oft comes reliefe when most we seeme in trap.
The starres thy state, fortune may change thy hap.*

Philifides *If fortunes lappe became my dwelling place,
And all the starres conspired to my good,
Still were I one, this still should be my case,
Ruines relique, cares web, and sorrowes foode:
Since she faire fierce to such a state me calles,
Whose wit the starres, whose fortune fortune thralls.*

Geron. *Alas what fals are false unto thy minde?
That there where thou confest thy mischief lyes,
Thy wit dost use still still more harmes to finde.
Whom wit makes vaine, or blinded with his eyes,
What counsell can preuaile, or light giue light?
Since all his force against himselfe he tries.
Then each conceit that enters in his sight,
Is made, forsooth, a Iurate of his woes,
Earth, sea, ayre, fire, heau'n, hell, and gastly sprite.
Then cries to sencelesse things, which neither knowes
What ayleth thee, and if they knew thy minde
Would scorne in man (their king) such feeble show's.
Rebell, Rebell, in golden fetters binde
This tyrann Loue; or rather do suppress
Those rebell thoughts which are thy slaues by kinde.
Let not a glittering name thy fancie dresse
In painted clothes, because they call it loue.
There is no hate that can thee more oppresse.
Begin (and halfe the worke is done) to proue
By rising up, upon thy selfe to stand.
And thinke she is a she, that doth thee moue.
He water plowes, and soweth in the sand,
And hopes the flickring winde with net to hold,
Who hath his hopes laid upon womans hand.
What man is he that hath his freedome sold?
Is he a manlike man, that doth not know man
Hath power that Sex with bridle to withhold?
A fickle Sex, and true in trust to no man,
A seruant Sex, soone proud if they be coi'd:
And to conlude, thy mistresse is a woman.*

Philifides *O gods, how long this old foole hath annoy'd*

My wearied cares! O gods yet graunt me this,
 That soone the world of his false tong be void.
 O noble age who place their onely blisse
 In being heard vntill the hearer dye
 Vttring a serpents mind with serpents hisse. 5
 Then who will heare a well autorisde lye,
 (And patience hath) let him goe learne of him
 VVhat swarmes of vertues did in his youth flye
 Such hartes of brasse, wise heads, and garments trim
 VVere in his dayes: which heard one nothing heares, 10
 If from his words the falshood he do skim.
 And herein most their folly vaine appeares,
 That since they still alledge, When they were yong:
 It shewes they fetch their wit from youthfull yeares
 Like beast for sacrifice, where saue the tong 15
 And belly nought is left, such sure is he,
 This life-dead man in this old dungeon slong.
 Olde houses are throwne downe for new we see:
 The oldest Rammes are culled from the flocke:
 No man doth wish his horse should aged bee. 20
 The ancient oke well makes a fired blocke:
 Old men them selues, doe loue yong wiues to choose:
 Only fond youth admires a rotten stocke.
 VVho once a white long beard, well handle does,
 (As his beard him, not he his beard did beare) 25
 Though cradle witted, must not honour loose.
 Oh when will men leaue off to iudge by haire;
 And thinke them olde, that haue the oldest mind,
 VVish vertue fraught and full of holy feare! 30

Geron. If that thy face were hid, or I were blind,
 I yet should know a yong man speaketh now,
 Such wandring reasons in that speech I find,
 He is a beast, that beastes use wil allow
 For prooffe of man, who sprung of heau'nly fire 35
 Hath strongest soule, when most his raynes do bowe.
 But fondlings fond, know not your owne desire
 Loth to dye yong, and then you must be old,
 Fondly blame that to which your selues aspire.
 But this light choller that doth make you bold, 40
 Rather to wrong then vnto iust defence,
 Is past with me, my blood is waxed cold.
 Thy words, though full of malapert offence,
 I way them not, but still will thee aduise.
 How thou from foolish loue maist purge thy sense. 45
 First thinke they erre, that thinke them gayly wise,
 VVho well can set a passion out to shew:
 Such sight haue they that see with goggling eyes.

Passion

Passion beares high when puffing wit doth blow,
 But is indeed a toy, if not a toy,
 True cause of euils; and cause of canselesse woe.
 If once thou maist that fancie glosse destroy
 Within thy selfe, thou soone wilt be ashamed,
 To be a player of thine owne annoy.
 Then let thy mind with better bookes be tamed.
 Seek to espie her faults as well as praise,
 And let thine eyes to other sportes be framed.
 In hunting fearefull beasts, do spend some dayes,
 Or catch the birds with pitfals, or with lyme,
 Or traine the foxe that traines so craftie layes.
 Lie but to sleepe, and in the earlie prime
 Seeke skill of herbes in hilles, haunt brookes neare night,
 And trie with bayt how fish will bite sometime.
 Gograft againe, and seeke to graft them right,
 Those pleasant plants, those sweet and fruitfull trees,
 Which both the pallate, and the eyes delight.
 Cherish the hives of wisely painefull Bees:
 Let speciall care vpon thy flocke be staid,
 Such active mind but seldome passion sees.

Philisides. Hath any man heard what this old man said?
 Truly not I, who did my thoughts engage,
 Where all my paines one looke of her hath paid.

Geron was euen out of countenance, finding the words he thought were so wise,
 winne so litle reputation at this young mans hands; and therefore sometimes loo-
 king vpon an old acquaintance of his called *Mastix*, one of the repiningst fellows
 in the world, and that beheld no body but with a mind of dislike (saying still the
 world was amisse, but how it should be amended he knew not) sometimes casting
 his eyes to the ground, euen ashamed to see his gray haire despised, at last he spied
 his two dogges, whereof the elder was called *Melampus*, and the younger *Lalaps*,
 (indeed the iewels he euer had with him) one brawling with another; which oc-
 casion he tooke to restore himself to his countenance, and rating *Melampus*, he be-
 gan to speake to his dogs, as if in them a man should find more obedience then in
 vnbridled young men.

Geron. Mastix.

Geron. Downe, downe *Melampus*, what? your fellow bite?
 I set you ore the flocke I dearelye lone,
 Them to defend, not with your selues to fight.
 Do you not thinke this will the vvolues remoue
 From former feare, they had of your good minds,
 When they shall such denided weaknesse prone?
 What if *Lalaps* a better morsell find
 Then you earst knew? rather take part with him

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

*Then iarle: lo, lo, euen these how enuie blindes,
And then Lælaps let not pride make thee brim;
Because thou hast thy fellow ouergone,
But thanke the cause, thou seest, where he is dim.
Here Lælaps, here, indeede a gainst the foen
Of my good sheepe, thou neuer trew's time tooke:
Be as thou art, but be with mine as one.*

*For though Melampus like a wolfe do looke,
(For age doth make him of a woluish hew)
Yet haue I seene when well a wolfe he shooke.
Foule that I am, that with my dogges speake grewe.
Come neere good Mastix, tis now full tway score
Of yeares (alas) since I good Mastix knew.
Thou heardst euen now a yong man (neb me sore,
Because I red him, as I would my son.*

Youth will haue will: Age must to age therefore.

*Mastix. VVhat maruell if in youth such faults be done,
Since that we see our saddest Shepheards out
VVho haue their lesson so long time begonne?
Quickly secure, and easilie in doubt,
Either a slepe be all if nought assaile,
Or all abroade if but a Cubb start out.
VVe shepherds are like them that vnder saile
Doe speake high words, when all the coast is cleare,
Yet to a passenger will bonnet vaile.
I con thee thanke to whom thy dogges be deare,
But commonly like cures we them entreate,
Sane when greate need of them perforce appeare.
Then him we kisse, whom late before we beate
VVith such intemperance, that each way grows
Hate of the first, contempt of latter feate,
And such discord twixt greatest shepheards flowes,
That sport it is to see vvith how great arte,
By iustice worke they their owne faults disclose:
Like busie boyes, to vvim their tutors heart,
One saith, he mockes; the other saith, he playes,
The third his lesson mist, till all do smart.
As for the rest, how shepheards spend their dayes,
At blow-point, hotcooles, or else at keeles,
While, Let vs passe our time each shepheard sayes.
So small account of time the shepheard feeles,
And doth not feele, that life is nought but time,
And when that time is past, death holdes his beeles.
To age thus do they draw their youthfull prime,
Knowing no more, then vvhat poore tryall shoves,
As fish sure tryall hath of muddie slime.
This paterne good, vnto our children goes,
For vvhat they see their parents loue or hate,*

Their

*Their first taught sence prefers to teachers blows.
These cocklings cockred we bewaile too late,
VVhen that we see our offspring gaily bent,
VVomen man-wood, & men effeminate.*

5 Geron. *Fy man, fy man, what words hath thy toung lent?
Yet thou art mickle warse then ere was I,
Thy too much zeale, I feare thy braine hath spent,
VVe oft are angrier, with the feeble flie
10 For businesse, where it pertaines him not,
Then with the poisonous todes that quiet lie.
I pray thee what hath ere the Parret got,
And yet they say he talkes in great mens bowers?
A Cage (guilded perchance) is all his lot,
15 VVho of his tongue the lickour gladly powrs,
A good foole call'd with paine. perhaps may be,
Euen for that shall suffer mightie Lowers.
Let swannes example siker scrue for thee,
VVho once all birdes, in sweetely singing past,
20 But now to silence turn'd his minstrelsie.
For he would sing, but others were defaste;
The peacockes pride, the pyes pild flattery,
Cormorants glutt. Kites spoile, king fishers waste.
The Falcons fiercenesse, Sparrowes letchery,
25 The Cockows shame, the Gooses good intent,
Euen turtle toucht he with hypocrisie.
And worse of other more, till by assent
Of all the birdes, but namely those were grieued,
Of fowles there called was a parliament.
30 There was the fixan of dignitie deprived,
And statute made he neuer should haue voice,
Since when I thinke he hath in silence lined.
I warne thee therefore (since thou maist haue choice)
Let not thy toung become a fiery match,
35 No sword so bytes as that euill toole annoyes.
Let our vnpartiall eyes a litle watch
Our owne demeane, and soone we wonder shall,
That hunting faultes, our selues we did not catch.
Into our mindes let vs a litle fall,
40 And we shall find more spots then Leopards skin.
Then who makes vs such iudges ouer all?
But farewell now, thy fault is no great sinne,
Come, come my curres, tis late I will goe in.*

45 And away with his doggs straight he went, as if he would be sure to haue the last worde: all the assemblie laughing at the lustinesse of the old fellowe who departed muttering to himselfe he had scene more in his daies then twentie of them. But

Basilus, who neuer before had heard *Philisides* (though having seldome failed to be at these metings) desired him he would begin some Eclogue with some other of the shepheards according to the accustomed guise. *Philisides* though very vnwilling, at the Kings cōmaundement offred to sing with *Thyrsis*. But he directly refused him, seeing, he should within few dayes be married to the faire *Kala*, & since he had gotten his desire he would sing no more. Then the king willed *Philisides* to declare the discourse of his own fortunes vnknowē to them as being a stranger in that countrie; but he prayed the king to pardon him, the time being farre too ioyfull to suffer the rehearfall of his miseries. But to satisfie *Basilus* some way, he began an Eclogue betwixt himselfe and the *Echo*, framing his voice so in those desert places as what wordes he would haue the *Echo* replie vnto, those he would sing higher then the rest; and so kindly framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it, which with these hexameters in the following order he vttered.

Philisides.

Echo.

15

*Faire Rocks, goodly riuers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace? Peace.
Peace? what barrs me my tongue? who is it that comes me so ny? I.*

Oh! I do know what guest I haue met; it is Echo. 't is Echo.

VVell met Echo, approach: then tell me thy will too. I will too.

20

Echo, what do I get yelding my sprite to my grieues? Grieues.

VVhat medicine may I finde for a grieve that drawes me to death? Death.

O poisonous medecin! what worse to me can be then it? It.

In what state was I then, when I tooke this deadly disease? Ease.

And what manner a mind which had to that humor a vaine? Vaine.

25

Hath not Reason enough vehemence the desire to reprove? Prone.

Oft proue I: but what salue, when Reason seeks to be gone? One.

Oh! what is it? what is it that may be a salue to my Loue? Loue.

VVhat do louers seeke for, long seeking for to enioy? Ioy.

What be the ioyes which for to enioy they went to the paines? Paines.

30

Then to an earnest Loue what doth best victorie lend? Ende.

End? but I can neuer end, lone will not gine me the leaue? Leauē.

How be the minds dispos'd that can not tast thy physick? Sick.

Yet say againe thy aduise for th' euils that I told thee? I told thee.

Doth th' infected wretch, of his harme th' extremitie know? No.

But if he know not his harms what guides hath he whilst he be blind? Blind.

35

VVhat blind guides can he haue that leanes to fancie? A fancy.

Can fancies want eyes, or be fall that steppeth aloft? Of.

VVhat causes first made these torments on me to light? Light.

Can then a cause be so light that forceth a man to go die? Tea.

40

Yet tell what light thing I had in me to draw me to die? Eye.

Eysight made me to yeeld, but what first pierst to my eies? Eies.

Eies hurters, eies hurt: but what from them to me falles? Falles.

But when I first did fall, what brought most fall to my hart? Art.

Art? what can be that art that thou dost meane by thy speche? Speche.

45

VVhat be the fruits of speaking art? what growes by the words? VVords.

O much more then words: those words seru'd more me to blesse. Lesse.

Oh

Oh when shall I be knowne, where most to be knowne I do long? Long.
 Long be thy woes for such newes, but how reck's she my thoughts? Oughts.
 Then then what do I gaine, since vnto her will I do winde? VVinde.
 VVinde, tempests, & stormes, yet in ende what giues she desire? Ire.
 Silly reward! yet among women hath she of vertue the most. Most.
 VVhat great name may I giue to so heau'nly a woman? A woe-man.
 wo, but seemes to me ioy, that agrees to my thought so. I thought so.
 Thinke so, for of my desired blisse it is only the course. Curse.
 Curs'd be thy selfe for cursing that which leades me to ioies. Toies.
 VVhat be the sweet creatures where lowly demands be not heard? Hard.
 VVhat makes them be vnkind? speake for th' hast narrowly pryde? Pride.
 VVhence can pride come there, since springs of beautie he thence? Thence.
 Horrible is this blasphemy vnto the most holy. O lie.
 Thou list false Echo, their minds as vertue be iust, Iust.
 Mock'st thou those Diamonds which only be matcht by the gods? Ods.
 Ods? what an ods is there since them to the heau'ns I preferre? Erre.
 Tell yet againe me the names of these faire form'd to do euils. Denils.
 Denils: if in hell such denils do abide, to the hells I do go. Go.

20 *Philisides* was commended for the placing of his Echo, but little did he regard
 their praises, who had set the foundation of his honour there, where he was most
 despised: and therefore returning againe to the traine of his desolate pensiueneffe,
 25 *Zelmanes* seeing no bodie offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrained conceits
 did now burst out of prison: she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to no-
 thing, but to *Philocleas* cares, threw downe the burden of her minde in *Anacreons*
 kinde of verses.

My muse what ailes this ardour
 To blase my onely secrets?

30 Alas it is no glory
 To sing mine owne decayd state.
 Alas it is no comfort,
 To speake without an answer.
 35 Alas it is no wisdom
 To shew the wound without cure.

My muse what ailes this ardour?
 Mine eyes be dym, my lyms shake,
 My voice is boarse, my throte sterche,
 40 My tong to this my rooffe cleaues,
 My fancy amaze, my thought dull'd,
 My hart doth ake, my life faints,
 My soule beginnes to take leaue.
 So great a passion all feele,
 45 To thinke a soare so deadly
 I should so rashly rip vp.

My muse what ailes this ardour?
 If that to sing thou art bent,
 Go sing the fall of old Thebes,
 The vvarres of ougly Centaures,
 The life, the death of Hector;
 So may the song be famous,
 Or if to lone thou art bent,
 Recount the rape of Europe,
 Adonis end, Venus net,
 The sleepe kisse the Moone stale:
 So may thy song be pleasant.

My muse what ailes this ardour?
 To blase my only secrets?
 Wherein do only flourish
 The sorie fruits of anguish.
 The song thereof a last will,
 The tunes be cryes, the words plaints,
 The singer is the songs theame,

*VVherein no eare can haue ioy,
Nor eye receiue due obiect
Ne pleasure here, ne fame get.*

*My muse what ail's this ardonr?
Alas she saith I am thine,
So are thy pains my pains too.
Thy heated hart my seat is
wherein I burne thy breath is
My voice, too hot to keepe in,
Besides lo here the author
Of all thy harmes: Lo here she,*

*That only can redresse thee,
Of her will I demaund help.*

*My muse I yeeld, my muse sing,
But all thy song herein knit,
The life we lead is all loue:
The loue we hold is all death,
Nor ought I craue to feede life,
Nor ought I seeke to shun death,
But onely that my goddesse
My life my death do count hers.*

Basilus when shee had fully ended her song, fell prostrate vpon the ground, and thanked the Gods they had preferued his life so long, as to heare the very musicke they themselues vsed, in an earthly body. And thē with like grace to *Zelma* neuer left intreating her, til she had (taking a *Lyra* *Basilus* helde for her) song these *Phalenciaikes*:

*Reason, tell me thy mind, if here be reason
In this strange violence, to make resistance.
VVhere sweet graces erect the stately banner
Of vertues regiment, shining in harnesse
Of fortunes Diademes, by beauty mustred,
Say then Reason; I say, what is thy counsell?*

*Her loose haire be the shot, the brest the pikes be,
Skorts each motion is, the hands be horsmen,
Her lips are the riches the warres to maintaine,
VVhere well couched abides a coffer of pearle
Her legges carriage is of all the sweet campe:
Say then Reason; I say, what is thy counsell?*

*Her cannons be her eyes, mine eyes the walls be,
VVhich at first voly gaue too open entrie,
Nor ramper did abide; my braine was vp blowne,
Vndermin'd with a speech the piercer of thoughts.
Thus weakned by my selfe, no help remaineth:
Say then Reason; I say, what is thy counsell?*

*And now fame the herald of her true honour,
Doth proclaime with a sound made all by mens mounths,
That nature soueraine of earthly dwellers,
Commands all creatures, to yeeld obeysance
Vnder this, this her owne, her only dearling.
Say then Reason; I say, what is thy counsell?*

Reason sighes, but in end he thus doth answer.

Nonghts

*Nought can reason auail in heavenly matters.
 Thus natures Diamond receiue thy conquest,
 Thus pure pearle, I do yeeld my senses and soule.
 Thus sweete paine, I do yeeld, what ere I can yeeld,
 Reason looke to thy selfe, I serue a goddesse.*

Dorus had long he thought kept silence from saying somewhat which might tend to the glorie of her in whom all glorie to his seeming was included, but now he brake it, singing these verses called *Asclepiadikes*.

*O sweet woods the delight of solitarinesse!
 O how much I do like your solitarinesse!
 Where mans mind hath a freed consideration
 Of goodnesse to receiue louely direction.
 Where senses do beholde th' order of heau'nly hoste,
 And wise thoughts do behold what the creator is:
 Contemplation here holdeth his only seate:
 Bounded with no limits, borne with a wing of hope
 Clymes euen vnto the starres, Nature is vnder it.
 Nought disturbs thy quiet, all to thy seruice yeelds,
 Each sight draws on a thought, thought mother of science,
 Sweet bird's kindly do graunt harmony vnto thee,
 Faire trees shade is enough fortification,
 Nor danger to thy selfe if be not in thy selfe.*

*O sweete woods the delight of solitarinesse!
 O how much I do like your solitarinesse!
 Here nor treason is hid, vailed in innocence,
 Nor enuies snake eye, finds any harbor here,
 Nor flatterers venomous insinuations,
 Nor comming humorists pudled opinions,
 Nor courteous ruine of proffered vsury,
 Nor time pratted away, cradle of ignorance,
 Nor causelesse dutie, nor comber of arrogance,
 Nor trifling title of vanitie dazleth vs,
 Nor golden manacles, stand for a paradise,
 Here wrongs name is unheard: slander a monster is,
 Keepe thy sprite from abuse, here no abuse doth haunt.
 What man grafts in a tree disimulation?*

*O sweete woods the delight of solitarinesse!
 O how well I do like your solitarinesse!
 Yet deare soile, if a soule clos'd in a mansion
 As sweete as violets, faire as a lilly is,
 Streight as Cedar, a voice staines the Cannary birds,
 whose shade safely doth hold, danger auoideth her:
 Such wisdom, that in her liues speculation:*

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Such goodnesse that in her simplicitie triumphs:
 Where enuies snaky eye, winketh or els dyeth,
 Slander wants a pretext, flattery gone beyond:
 Oh! if such a one haue bent, to a lonely life,
 Her steps glad we receiue, glad we receiue her eys.
 And thinke not she doth hurt our solitarinesse,
 For such company decks such solitarinesse.

The other Shepheards were offering themselves to haue continued the sports, but the night had so quietlie spent the most part of her selfe among them, that the king for that time licēsed thē. And so bringing *Zelma* to her lodging, who would much rather haue done the same for *Philoclea*, of all sides they went to counterfet a sleepe in their bed, for a true one there agonies could not aforde them. Yet there they lay (so might they be most solitarie for the food of their thoughts) till it was neere noone the next day, after which *Basilus* was to continue his *Apollo* deuotions, and the other to meditate vpon their priuate desires.

The end of the second Eclogues.

THE





THE THIRD BOOKE OF THE
COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.

(.)

His last dayes daunger, hauing made *Pamelas* loue discern
what a losse it should haue suffered if *Dorus* had bene destroyed,
bred such tendernesse of kindnesse in her toward him, that she
could no longer keep loue frō looking out through her eyes,
and going forth in her words; whom before as a close priso-
ner she had to her heart onely committed; so as finding not
onely by his speaches and letters, but by the pitifull oration of
a languishing behaiour, and the easilie disciphered character of a sorowfull face,
that Despaire began now to threaten him destructiō, she grew content both to pitie
him, & let him see she pitied him, as wel by making her own beautiful beames to
thaw away the former ycinnesse of her behaiour, as by entertaining his discourses
(whensoever he did vse them) in the third person of *Musidorus*; to so farre a degree,
that in the end she said, that if she had bene the Princesse whom that disguised
Prince had vertuouslie loued, she would haue requited his faith with faithfull affe-
ction: finding in her heart, that nothing could so hartily loue as vertue: with many
mo words to the same sence of noble fauour, and chaste plainnesse. Which when
at the first it made that expected blisse shine vpon *Dorus*; he was like one frozen with
extremitie of cold, ouer-hastilie brought to a great fire, rather oppressed then re-
lieued with such a lightning of felicitie. But after the strength of nature had made
him able to feele the sweetnesse of ioyfulnessse, that againe being a child of Passion,
and neuer acquainted with mediocritie, could not set bounds vpon his happinesse
nor be content to giue desire a kingdome, but that it must be an vnlimited monar-
chie. So that the ground he stood vpon being ouer-high in happinesse, and slip-
perie through affection, he could not hold himselfe from falling into such an error,
which with sighes blew all comfort out of his breast, & washt away all chearfulnessse,
of his cheare with teares. For this fauour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging
his desire, and Desire considering nothing but oportunitie: one time (*Mopsa* being
called away by her mother, and he left alone with *Pamela*) the sudden occasion cal-
led Loue, and that neuer staid to aske Reasons leaue, but made the too-much lo-
uing *Dorus* take her in his armes, offering to kisse her, and as it were, to establish a
trophee of his victorie. But she, as if she had bene readie to drinke a wine of ex-
cellent taste and colour, which sodainely she perceiued had poyson in it, so did
she put him away from her: looking first vp to heauen, as amazed to find her selfe

so beguiled in him; then laying the cruell punishment vpon him of angrie Loue, & lowring beautie, shewing disdaine, & a despising disdaine, Away (said she) vnwor-thie man to loue, or to be loued. Assure thy selfe, I hate my selfe for being so decei-ued; iudge then what I do thee for deceiuing me. Let me see thee no more, the on-ly fall of my iudgement, and staine of my conscience. With that she called *Mopsa*, 5
not staying for any answer (which was no other but a flood of teares) which shee seemed not to marke (much lesse to pitie) and chid her for hauing so left her alone.

It was not a sorow, but it was euen a death, which then laid hold of *Dorus*: which certainlie at that instant wold haue killed him, but that the feare to tarie longer in her presence (contrary to her commandement) gaue him life to cary himselfe away 10
from her sight, and to run into the woods, where throwing himselfe downe at the foot of a tree, he did not fall to lamentation (for that proceeded of pitying) or grie-uing for himselfe (which he did no way) but to curses of his life, as one that dete-sted himselfe. For finding himselfe not only unhappie, but unhappie after being fallen frō all happinesse: & to be fallen frō all happinesse, not by any misconceiuing, 15
but by his owne fault, and his fault to be done to no other but to *Pamela*; he did not tender his owne estate, but despised it; greedily drawing into his mind, all conceits which might more and more torment him. And so remained he two dayes in the woods, disdayning to giue his body food, or his mind comfort, louing in himselfe nothing, but the loue of her. And indeed that loue onely straued with the furie of 20
his anguish, telling it, that if it destroyed *Dorus*, it should also destroy the image of her that liued in *Dorus*: and when the thought of that was crept in vnto him, it began to winne of him some compassion to the shrine of that image, and to bewaile not for himselfe (whō he hated) but that so notable a loue shold perish. Then began he onlie so farre to wish his owne good, as that *Pamela* might pardon him the fault, 25
though not the punishment: and the vttermoſt height he aspired vnto, was, that after his death she might yet pitie his errour, and know that it proceeded of loue, and not of boldnesse. That conceit found such friendship in his thoughts, that at last he yeelded since he was banished her presence, to seeke some means by writing to shew his sorow and testifie his repentance. Therefore getting him the necessary 30
instruments of writing, he thought best to counterfeite his hand (fearing that as al-readie she knew his, she would cast it away as soone as she saw it) and to put it in verse, hoping that would draw her on to reade the more, chusing the *Elegiac* as fit- test for mourning. But neuer pen did more quakingly performe his office; neuer was paper more double moistened with inke and teares; neuer words more slowly ma- 35
ried together, and neuer the Muses more tired then now with changes and rechan- ges of his deuises: fearing how to end, before he had resolued how to begin, mi- trusting each word, condemning each sentence. This word was not significant, that word was too plaine: this would not be conceiued, the other would be ill concei- ued: here sorow was not enough expressed, there he seemed too much for his own 40
sake to be sorie: this sentence rather shewed arte then passion; that sentence rather foolishly passionate, then forcible mouing. At last, marring with mending, and putting out better then he left, he made an end of it; and being ended, was diuers times readie to teare it; till his reason assuring him; the more he studied, the worſe it grew, he folded it vp, deuoutlie inuoking good acceptation vnto it; and watching 45
his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner (sauing *Mopsa*) to the other Lodge, stole vp into *Pamelas* chamber, and in her standish (which first hee kissed; and craued of it a safe and friendly keeping) left it there, to be seen at her next vsing her

her inke (himselfe returning againe to be true prisoner to desperate sorow) leauing her standish vpon her beds head, to giue her the more occasion to marke it: which also fell out.

For she finding it at her after-noonne returne, in another place then she left it, opened it. But when she saw the letter, her heart gaue her from whence it came. And therefore clapping it to againe, she went away from it, as if it had bene a contagious garment of an infected person: and yet was not long away, but that she wished she had read it, though she were loth to reade it. Shall I (saide she) second his boldnesse so farre, as to reade his presumptuous letters? And yet (saith she) he sees me not now to grow the bolder thereby: & how can I tell whether they be presumptuous? The paper came from him, and therefore not worthy to be receiued? and yet the paper, she thought, was not guiltie. At last she concluded, it were not much amisse to looke it ouer, that she might out of his words picke some further quarell against him. Then she opened it, and threw it away, and tooke it vp againe, till (ere she were aware) her eyes would needes reade it, containing this matter,

VNto a caitife wretch, whom long affliction holdeth,
and now fullie beleeueth to be quite perished;
Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the last monument of his anguish,
O you (alas so I find) cause of his onlie ruine.
Dread not a whit (O goodlie cruell) that pitie may enter
into thy heart by the sight of this Epistle I send:
And so refuse to behold of these strange wounds the recitall,
least it might th'allure home thy selfe to returne,
(Vnto thy selfe I do meane those graces dwell so vwith in thee,
gratefultnesse, sweetnesse, holie loue, hartie regard)
Such thing cannot I seeke (Despaire hath giu'n me my answere:
Despaire most tragicall clause to a deaallie request)
Such thing cannot be hope, that knowes thy determinate hardnesse,
hard like a rich Marbell: hard, but a faire Diamond.
Can those eyes that of eyes drownd in most hartie flowing teares,
(teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorse;
Can those eyes now yeeld to the kind conceit of a sorow,
which inke onlie relates, but ne laments, ne replies?
Ah, that, that I do I not conceiue (though that to my blisse were)
More then Nestors yeares, more then a kings Diademe.
Ah, that that I do not conceiue, to the heauen when a mouse climes
then may I hope & achieue grace of a heauenlie Tiger.
But, but alas, like a man condemn'd doth craue to be heard/speake,
Not that he hopes for amends of the desaster he feelles,
But finding th'approch of death with an intyre relenting,
giues an adieu to the world, as to his only delight:
Right so my boiling heart, enflam'd with fire of a faire eye,
bubling out doth breath signes of his huzie dolours:
Now that he finds to what end his life, and lone be reserued,
and that he thence must part, where to liue onlie he liu'd.
O faire, O fairest, are such thy triumphes to thy fairenesse?
can death beautie become? must I be such monument?

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Must I be only the marke, shall prooue that vertue is angrie?
 shall prooue that fiercenesse can with a white Dove abide?
 Shall to the world appeare that faith and lone be rewarded
 with mortall disdain, bent to vnendly reuenge?
 Vnto reuenge? O sweet, on a wretch wilt thou be reuenged
 shall such high Planetstend to the losse of a worme?
 And to reuenge who do bend, vould in that kind be reuenged,
 as th' offence was done, and go beyond if he can.
 All my offence was lone: with lone then must I be chastned:
 and with more, by the lawes that to reuenge do belong.
 If that lone be a fault, more fault in you to be louely:
 Lone neuer had me opprest, but that I saw to be lou'd.
 You be the cause that I lou'd: what Reason blameth a shadow,
 that with a body 't goes? since by a body it is.
 If that Lone you did hate, you should your beauty haue hidden:
 you should those faire eyes haue with a veile couered.
 But foole, foole that I am, those eyes would shine fro a darke caue.
 what veiles then do preuaile, but to a more miracle?
 Or those golden lockes, those locks which locke me to bondage,
 torne you should disperse vnto the blasts of a wind.
 But foole, foole that I am, tho I had but a haire of her head found
 eu'n as I am, so I should vnto that haire be a thrall.
 Or with faire hands-nayls (o hand which nailes me to this death)
 you should haue your face (since Lone is ill) blemished.
 O wretch, what do I say? should that faire face be defaced?
 should my too-much sight cause so true a Sun to be lost?
 First let Cimmerian darknesse be my onl' habitation:
 first be mine eyes puld out, first be my braine perished;
 Ere that I should consent to do so excesiue a damage
 vnto the earth, by the hurt of this her heauenly iewell.
 O not, but such lone you say you could haue afforded,
 as might learne Temp'rance void of a rages euent.
 O sweet simplicitie: from whence should Lone be so learned?
 vnto Cupid that boy shall a Pedante be found?
 Well: but faultie I was: Reason to my Passion yeilded,
 Passion vnto my rage, Rage to a hastie reuenge.
 But what's this for a fault, for which such faith be abolisht,
 such faith, so stainelesse, inuiolate, violent?
 Shall I not? o may I not thus yet refresh the remembrance,
 what sweet ioyes I had once, and what a place I did hold?
 Shall I not once obiekt, that you, you graunted a fauour
 vnto the man, whom now such miseries you award?
 Bend your thoughts to the deare sweet words which thē to me giu'n were:
 thinke what a world is now, thinke who hath altered her heart.
 What? was I then worthy such good, now unworthy such euill?
 now fled, then cherished? then so nie, now so remote?
 Did not a rosed breath, from lips more rosie proceeding,
 say, that I well should find in what a care I was had?

with

*With much more: now what do I find, but Care to abhorre me,
 Care that I sinke in grieve, Care that I liue banished?
 And banished do I liue, nor now will seeke a reuiewe,
 since so she will, whose will is to me more then a law.
 If then a man in most ill case may giue you a farewell:
 farewell, long farewell, all my wo, all my delight.*

What this would haue wrought in her, shee her selfe could not tell: for, before
 her reason could moderate the disputation betweene Fauour and Faultinesse,
 her sister, and *Miso*, called her downe to entertaine *Zelmae*, who was come
 to visite the two sisters; about whō, as about two Poles the skie of Beautie was tur-
 ned: while *Gynecia* wearied her bed with her melancholie sicknesse, & made *Misos*
 shrewdnesse (who like a sprite, set to keepe a treasure, bard *Zelmae* from anie fur-
 ther conference) to be the Lieutenant of her iealousie: both she and her husband
 driuing *Zelmae* to such a straight of resolution, either of impossible graunting, or
 dangerous refusing, as the best escape she had, was (as much as she could) to a-
 uoyd their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the vprore (*Basilus*
 being with his sicke wife, conferring vpon such examinations, as *Philanax*, & other
 of his noblemen had made of this late sedition, all touching *Cecropia* with vehement
 suspicion of giuing either flame or fewell vnto it) *Zelmae* came with her body, to
 finde her mind, which was gone long before her, and had gotten his seat in *Philo-
 clea*: who now with a bashfull chearefulnesse (as though she were ashamed, that
 she could not choose but be glad) ioyned with her sister, in making much of *Zel-
 mae*.

And so as they sate deuising how to giue more feathers to the wings of Time,
 there came to the lodge dore sixe maids, all in one liuery of scarlet peticotes, which
 were tuckt vp almost to their knees, the peticotes themselues being in many places
 garnished with leaues, their legs naked, sauing that about the anckles they had litle
 blacke silke laces, vpō which did hang a few siluer bells: like which they had a litle a-
 boue their elbowes vpon their bare arms. Vpō their haire they ware garlands of ro-
 ses & gilliflowers; and the haire was so drest, as that came againe about the garlāds,
 enterchāging a mutuall couering: so as it was doubtfull, whether the haire drest the
 garlāds, or the garlands drest the haire. Their breasts liberal to the eye; the face of the
 foremost of thē, in excellency faire; & of the rest louelie, if not beautifull: & beau-
 tifull might haue bene, if they had not suffered greedy *Phæbus*, ouer-often, & hard,
 to kisse them. Their countenances full of a gracefull grauitie; so as the gesture
 matcht with the apparell, it might seeme a wanton modestie, & an enticing sober-
 nesse. Each of thē had an instrumēt of musike in their hands, which consorting their
 well pleasing tunes, did charge each eare with vsensiblenesse, that did not lend it
 selfe vnto them. The musike entring alone into the Lodge, the Ladies were all desi-
 rous to see frō whence so pleasant a guest was come: & therefore went out together;
 where before they could take the paines to doubt, much lesse to aske the question of
 their qualitie, the fairest of them (with a gay, but yet discreet demeanor) in this sort
 spake vnto them. Most excellent Ladies, (whose excellencies haue power to make
 cities enuie these woods, and solitarinesse to be accounted the sweetest companie)
 vouchsafe our message your gracious hearing, which as it comes frō loue, so comes
 it from louelie persons. The Maides of all this coast of *Arcadia*, vnderstanding the
 often accesse that certaine shepheards of these quarters, are allowed to haue in this

forbidden place; and that their rurall sports are not disdained of you, haue bin stirred vp with emulation to thē, & affection to you, to bring forth something, which might as well breed your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnesse of their intention, and the hurtleinesse of their sex shall excuse the breach of the commandement in cōming to this place vsent for, they chose out vs, to inuite both 5 your princelie parents, and your selues, to a place in the woods about halfe a mile hence: where they haue provided some such sports, as they trust your gracious acceptations will interpret to be delightfull. We haue bene at the other Lodge, but finding thē there busied in waightier affaires, our trust is, that you yet will nor deny the shining of your eyes vpō vs. The Ladies stood in some doubt whether they shold 10 go or not, least *Basilus* might be angrie withall. But *Miso* (that had bene at none of the Pastorals, and had a great desire to lead her old fences abroad to some pleasure) told them plainly, they should nor will nor choose, but go thither, and make the honest country people know, that they were not so squeamish as folkes thought of thē. The Ladies glad to be warranted by her authoritie; with a smiling humblenesse 15 obeyed her: *Pamela* only casting a seeking looke, whether she could see *Dorus* (who poore wretch, wandred halfe mad for sorow in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was griued for his absence, hauing given the wound to him through her owne hart. But so the three Ladies & *Miso* went with those six *Nymphes*, conquering the length of the way with the force of musike, lea- 20 uing onlie *Mopsa* behind, who disgraced weeping with her countenance, because her mother would not suffer her to shew her new scoured face among thē. But the place appointed (as they thought) met them halfe in their way, so well were they pleased with the sweet tunes & pretie conuersation of their inuiters. There found they in the midst of the thickest part of the wood, a litle square place, not burthened with 25 trees, but with a boord couered, and beautified with the pleasantest fruits, that sunburnd *Autumne* could deliuer vnto thē. The maids besought the Ladies to sit downe & tast of the swelling grapes, which seemed great with child of *Bacchus*: and of the diuerse coloured plums, which gaue the eye a pleasant tast before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not shew to scorne their prouision, but eat and dranke 30 litle of their coole wine, which seemed to laugh for ioy to come to such lips.

But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the comming forth of such deuises as were prepared for them, there rusht out of the woods twenty armed men, who round about enuironed them, and laying hold of *Zelma* before she could draw her sword, and taking it from her, put hoods over the heades 35 of all foure, and so muffled, by force set them on horseback and caried them away; the sisters in vaine crying for succour, while *Zelmanes* heart was rent in peeces with rage of the iniurie, and disdaine of her fortune. But when they had caried them a foure or fiue mile further, they left *Miso* with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hand and foot, so to take her fortune: and brought the three Ladies (by that time 40 the night seemed with her silence to conspire to their treason) to a Castle about ten mile from the Lodges: where they were faine to take a boate which waited for them: for the Castle stood in the midst of a great lake vppon a high rocke, where partlie by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men esteemed impregnable. But at thē Castle gate their faces were discouered, and there were met with a 45 great number of torches, after whom the sisters knew their Aunt in law *Cecropia*. But that sight increased the deadly terrour of the Princesses, looking for nothing but death, since they were in the power of the wicked *Cecropia*: who yet came vnto thē,

making curtesie the outside of mischiefe, & desiring them not to be discomforted: for they were in a place dedicated to their seruice, *Philoclea* (with a looke where Loue shined through the mist of Feare) besought her to be good vnto them, hauing neuer deserued euill of her. But *Pamela*s high heart disdained humblenesse to iniury, Aunt
 5 (sayd she) what you haue determined of vs I pray you do it speedily: for my part I looke for no seruice, where I find violence.

But *Cecropia* (vsing no more words with them) conueyed them all three to seuerall lodgings (*Zelmanes* heart so swelling with spite, that she could not bring forth a word) and so left them: first taking from them their kniues, because they should do
 10 themselves no hurt, before she had determined of them: and then giuing such order that they wanted nothing but liberty, and comfort, she went to her sonne, who yet kept his bed, because of his wound he had receiued of *Zelmae*, and told him, whom now he had in his power. *Amphialus* was but euen then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortall fame, both of courage and curtesie, when
 15 he met with the Princeesses, and was hurt by *Zelmae*, so as he was vtterly ignorant of all his mothers wicked deuises, to which he would neuer haue consented, being (like a rose out of a brier) an excellent sonne of an euill mother: and now when hee heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had seene the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore desired his mother that she would tell him the whole discourse, how all
 20 these matters had happened, Sonne (sayd she) I will doo it willingly, and since all is done for you, I will hide nothing from you. And howsoeuer I might be ashamed to tell it strangers, who would thinke it wickednesse, yet what is done for your sake (how euill soeuer to others) to you is vertue. To begin then euen with the beginning, this doting foole *Basilus* that now raignes, hauing liued vnmarried till he was
 25 nigh threescore yeares old (and in all his speeches affirming, and in all his doings assuring, that he neuer would marrie) made all the eyes of this country to be bent vpon your father, his onelie brother (but younger by thirtie yeares) as vpon the vndoubted successour: being indeed a man worthie to reigne, thinking nothing enough for himselfe: where this goose (you see) puts downe his head, before there bee anie
 30 thing neere to touch him. So that he holding place and estimation as heire of *Arcadia*, obtained me of my father the King of *Argos*, his brother helping to the conclusion, with protesting his bachelorly intention: for else you may be sure the King of *Argos*, nor his daughter would haue suffered their Royall bloud to bee stained with the base name of subiection. So that I came into this country as apparant Princeesse
 35 thereof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this country. My port and pompe did well become a King of *Argos* daughter: in my presence their tongues were turned into eares, and their eares were captiues vnto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Maiesty, & happy was he or she, on whom I would suffer the beames thereof to fall. Did I go to Church? it seemed the very Goddess
 40 waited for me, their deuotions not being solemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to see any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it selfe: for to it was the concourse; one thrusting vpon another, who might shew himselfe most diligent and seruiceable towards me: my sleepes were inquired after, and my wakings neuer vn-
 45 saluted: the very gate of my house full of principall persons, who were glad, if their presents had receiued a gratefull acceptation. And in this felicitie wert thou borne, the very earth submitting it selfe vnto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; & to that passe had my husbands vertue (by my good helpe) within short time brought it, with a plot we layd, as we should not haue needed to haue waited the tedious

worke of a naturall end of *Basilius*; when the heauens (I thinke enuying my great felicity) then stopt thy fathers breath, when he breathed nothing but power and souerainty. Yet did not thy orphaney, or my widdowhood, depriue vs of the delightfull prospect, which the hill of honour doth yeeld, while expectation of thy succession did bind dependencies vnto vs.

But before (my sonne) thou wert come to the age to feele the sweetenesse of authoritie, this beast (whom I can neuer name with patience) falsely and foolishly married this *Gynecia*, then a young gyrl, and brought her to sit aboue me in al feasts to turne her shoulder to me-ward in all our solemnities. It is certaine, it is not so great a spite to be surmounted by strangers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke then what my mind was, since withall there is no question: The fall is greater from the first to the second, then from the second to the vndermost. The rage did swell in my heart, so much the more as it were faine to be suppressed in silence, and disguised with humblenesse. But aboue all the rest, the grieue of grieues was, when with these two daughters (now thy prisoners) she cut off all hope of thy succession. It was a tedious thing to me; that my eyes should looke lower then any bodies, that (my selfe being by) anothers voyce then mine, should be more respected. But it was insupportable vnto me, to thinke that not only I, but thou shouldst spend all thy time in such misery, and that the Sun should see my eldest son lesse then a Prince. And though I had bin a Sainct I could not choose, finding the change this change of fortune bred vnto me, for now from the multitude of followers, silence grew to be at my gate, & absence in my presence. The guesse of my mind could preuaile more before, then now many of my earnest requests. And thou (my deare sonne) by the fickle multitude no more then an ordinary person (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (remembering that in all miseries weeping becomes fooles, and practise wise folks) haue tried diuers meanes to pull vs out of the mire of subiection. And though many times fortune failed me, yet did I neuer faile my selfe. Wild beastes I kept in a caue hard by the lodges, which I caused by night to be fed in the place of their pastorals, I as then living in my house hard by the place, and against the houre they were to meete (hauing kept the beastes without meate) then let them loose, knowing that they would seeke their foode there, and deuoure what they found. But blind Fortune hating sharpe-sighted inuentions, made them vnluckily to be killed. After I vsed my seruant *Clinias* to stir a notable tumult of countrie people: but those loutes were too grosse instruments for delicate conceits. Now lastly, finding *Philanax* his examinations grow dangerous, I thought to play double or quit; and with a sleight I vsed of my fine-witted wench *Artesia*, with other maides of mine, would haue sent these goodly inheritrixes of *Arcadia*, to haue pleaded their cause before *Pluto*, but that ouer-fortunatly for the, you made me know the last day how vehemently this childish passion of loue doth torment you. Therefore I haue brought them vnto you, yet wishing rather hate then loue in you. For hate often begetteth victory; Loue commonly is the instrument of subiection. It is true, that I wold also by the same practise haue entrapped the parents, but my maids failed of it, not daring to tary long about it. But this sufficeth, since (these being taken away) you are the vndoubted inheritor, and *Basilius* will not long ouer-lieue this losse.

O mother (sayd *Amphialus*) speake not of doing them hurt, no more then to mine eyes, or my hart, or if I haue any thing more deare then eyes, or hart vnto me. Let others find what sweetnesse they will in euer fearing, because they are euer feared: for my part, I will thinke my selfe highly intituled, if I may be once by *philoclea* accepted for

for a seruant. Well (sayd *Cecropia*) I would I had borne you of my mind, as well as of my body: then should you not haue suncke vnder these base weaknesse. But since you haue tied your thoughts in so wilfull a knot, it is happie my policy hath brought matters to such a passe, as you may both enioy affection, and vpon that build your soueraignty. Alas (sayd *Amphialus*) my hart would faine yeeld you thanks for setting me in the way of felicity, but that feare killes the in me, before they are fully borne. For if *Philoclea* be displeased, how can I be pleased? if she count it vnkindnesse, shall I giue tokens of kindnesse? perchance she condemnes me of this action, and shall I triumph? perchance she drownes now the beauties I loue with sorrowfull teares, and where is then my reioycing? You haue reason (sayd *Cecropia* with a fained grauity) I will therefore send her away presently, that her contentment may be recovered. No good mother (sayd *Amphialus*) since she is here, I would not for my life constraîne presence, but rather would I die then consent to absence. Pretie intricate follies (sayd *Cecropia*) but get you vp, and see how you can preuaile with her, while I go to the other sister. For after we shall haue our hands full to defend our selues, if *Basilus* hap to besiege vs. But remembring her selfe, she turned back and asked him what he would haue done with *Zelmane*, since now he might be reuenged of his hurt. Nothing but honorably, answered *Amphialus*, hauing deserued no other of me, especially being (as I heare) greatly cherished of *Philoclea*: & therefore I could wish they were lodged together. O no (sayd *Cecropia*) company confirms resolutions, & loneliness breeds a wearines of ones thoughts, & so a sooner consenting to reasonable profers.

But *Amphialus* (taking off his mother *Philoclea*'s kniues, which he kept as a relique, since she had worne the) gat vp, and calling for his richest apparell, nothing seemed sumptuous inough for his mistresses eyes: and that which was costly, he feared were not dainty: and though the inuention were delicate, he misdoubted the making. As carefull he was too of the colour; least if gay, he might seem to glory in his iniury, & her wrong; if mourning, it might strike some euil presage vnto her of her fortune. At length he took a garmēt more rich then glaring, the ground being black veluet, richly embrodered with great pearle, and precious stones, but they set so among certaine tusses of cipres, that the cipres was like black clouds, through which the stars might yeeld a dark luster. About his neck he ware a brode & gorgeous coller; whereof the peeces enterchāgeably answering; the one was of diamōds & pearle, set with a white enamell, so as by the cunning of the workman it seemed like a shining ice, and the other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierie gliftring, which he thought pictured the two passions of Feare & Desire, wherein he was enchained. His hurt (not yet fully well) made him a litle halt, but he straue to giue the best grace hee could vnto his halting.

And in that fort he went to *Philoclea*'s chamber: whom hee found (because her chamber was ouer-lightsome) sitting of that side of her bedde which was from the window; which did cast such a shaddow vpon her, as a good Painter would bestow vpon *Venus*, when vnder the trees she bewailed the murder of *Adonis*: her hands and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her shoulder leaning to her beds head, and ouer her head a scarfe, which did eclipse almost halfe her eyes, which vnder it fixed their beames vpon the wall by, with so steddie a maner, as if in that place they might well chaunge, but not mend their obiekt: and so remayned they a good while after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor she perceiuing him, till that (a little varying her thoughts something quickening her senses) she heard him as he happened to stirre his vpper

garment: and perceiuing him, rose vp, with a demeanure, where in the booke of Beauty there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindnesse was blotted out, & Anger was neuer there.

But *Amphialus* that had entrusted his memory with long and forcible speeces, found it so locked vp in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the beseeching her to take what was done in good part, and to assure her selfe there was nothing but honour meant vnto her person. But she making no other aunswere, but letting her hands fall one from the other, which before were ioyned (with eyes something cast aside, and a silent sigh) gaue him to vnderstand, that considering his dooings, she thought his speech as full of incongruities, as her answere would be void of purpose: whereupon he kneeling downe, and kissing her hand (which she suffered with a countenance witnessing captiuitie, but not kindnesse) he besought her to haue pity of him, whose loue went beyond the bounds of conceit, much more of vttering: that in her hands the ballance of his life or death did stand; whereto the least motion of hers would serue to determine, she being indeede the mistresse of his life, and he her eternall slaue; and with true vehemency besought her that he might heare her speake, whereupon she suffered her sweete breath to turne it selfe into these kind of words.

Alas cousin (sayd shee) what shall my tongue bee able to doo, which is in-fourmed by the eares one way, and by the eyes another? You call for pittie, and vse crueltie; you say, you loue me, and yet doe the effects of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my hands, but you haue brought me to so neare a degree to death, as when you will, you may lay death vpon me: so that while you saie, I am mistresse of your life, I am not mistresse of mine owne. You entitle your selfe my slaue, but I am sure I am yours. If then violence, iniurie, terror, and de- priving of that which is more deare then life it selfe, libertie, be fit orators for affection, you may expect that I will be easily perswaded. But if the nearenesse of our kindred breede any remorse in you, or there be any such thing in you, which you call loue toward me, then let not my fortune be disgraced with the name of imprisonment: let not my heart waste it selfe by being vexed with feeling euill, and fearing worse. Let not me be a cause of my parents wofull destruction; but restore me to my selfe; and so doing I shall account I haue receiued my selfe of you. And what I say for my selfe, I say for my deare sister, and my friend *Zelmane*: for I desire no wel-being, without they may bee partakers. With that her teares rained downe from her heauenly eyes, and seemed to water the sweete and beautifull flowers of her face.

But *Amphialus* was like the poore woman, who louing a tame Doe she had, aboute all earthly things, hauing long played withall, and made it feede at her hand and lappe, is constrained at length by famine (all her flocke being spent, and she fallen into extreame pouertie) to kill the Deare, to sustaine her life. Many a pitifull looke doth she cast vpon it, and many a time doth she drawe backe her hand before she can giue the stroke. For euen so *Amphialus* by a hunger-starued affection, was compelled to offer this iniury, and yet the same affection made him with a tormenting grieue, thinke vkindnesse in himselfe, that hee could find in his heart any way to restraine her freedome. But at length, neither able to graunt, nor denie, hee thus answered her. Deare Lady (sayd he) I will not say vnto you (how iustly foeuer I may do it) that I am neither author, nor accessary vnto this your withholding. For since I do not redresse it, I am as faulty as if I had begun it. But this I

prote

protest vnto you (and this protestation of mine, let the heauens heare, and if I lie, let them answer me with a deadly thunderbolt) that in my soule I wish I had neuer seene the light, or rather, that I had neuer had a father to beget such a child, then that by my means those eyes should ouerflow their owne beauties, then by my means the skie of your vertue should be ouercrowded with sorrow. But woe is me, most excellent Lady, I find my selfe most willing to obey you: neither truely do mine eares receiue the least word you speake, with any lesse reuerence, then as absolute, and vnresistable commandements. But alas, that tyrant Loue (which now possesseth the hold of all my life and reason) will no way suffer it. It is Loue, it is Loue, not I, which disobey you. What then shall I say? but that I, who am readie to lie vnder your feete, to venture, nay to loose my life at your least commandement: I am not the stay of your freedome, but Loue, Loue, which ties you in your owne knots. It is you your selfe, that imprison your selfe: it is your beauty which makes these castle walles embrace you: it is your owne eyes, which reflect vpon themselues this iniury.

Then is there no other remedy, but that you some way vouchsafe to satisfie this Loues vehemency; which (since it grew in your selfe) without question you shall find it (far more then I) tractable.

But with these words *Philoclea* fell to so extreme a quaking, and her liuely whitenesse did degenerate to such a deadly palenesse, that *Amphialus* teared some dangerous traunce: so that taking her hand, and feeling that it (which was wont to bee one of the chiefe firebrands of *Cupid*) had all the sence of it wrapt vp in coldnesse, he began humbly to beseech her to put away all feare, and to assure her selfe vpon the vow hee made thereof vnto God, and her selfe, that the vttermost forces hee would euer employ to conquer her affection, should bee Desire, and Desert. That promise brought *Philoclea* againe to her selfe, so that slowly lifting vp her eyes vpon him, with a countenance euer courteous, but then languishing, she told him, that he should do well to do so, if indeede he had euer tasted what true loue was: for that where now she did beare him good will, she should (if he tooke any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: assuring him withall, that though his mother had taken away her kniues, yet the house of death had so many dores, as she would easily flie into it, if euer she found her honour endangered.

Amphialus hauing the cold ashes of Care cast vpon the coales of Desire, leauing some of his mothers Gentlewomen to waite vpon *Philoclea*, himselfe indeede a prisoner to his prisoner, and making all his authoritie to bee but a footestoolle to Humblenesse, went from her to his mother. To whom with words which Affection endited, but Amazement vttered, hee deliuered what had passed betweene him and *Philoclea*: beseeching her to trie what her perswasions could doo with her, while he gaue order for all such things as were necessary against such forces, as he looked dayly *Basilius* would bring before his castle. His mother bad him quiet himselfe, for she doubted not to take fit times. But that the best way was first to let her owne Passion a litle tire it selfe.

So they calling *Clinias*, and some other of their counsell, aduised vpon their present affaires. First, he dispatched priuate letters to all those principall Lords & gentlemen of the country, whom he thought either alliance, or friendship to himselfe might draw; with speciall motions from the generall consideration of duetie: not omitting all such, whom either youthfull age, or youthlike minds did fill with vnlimited desires: besides such, whom any discontentment made hungry of change,

or an ouer-spended want, made want a ciuill war: to each (according to the counsell of his mother) conforming himselfe after their humors. To his friends, friendliness; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the displeased, reuenge; to the greedy, spoile: wrapping their hopes with such cunning, as they rather seemed giuen ouer vnto them as partakers: then promises sprong of necessity. Then sent he to his mothers brother, the king of *Argos*: but he was as then so ouer-laid with war himselfe, as from thence he could attend small succour.

But because he knew how violently rumors do blow the failes of popular iudgements, and how few there be that can discern betweene truth and truthlikenesse, betweene shewes and substance; he caused a iustification of this his action to be written, whereof were sowed abroad many copies, which with some glosses of probability, might hide indeede the foulness of his treason; and from true commonplaces, fetch downe most false applications. For, beginning how much the duetie which is owed to the countrie, goes beyond all other dueties, since in it selfe it containes them all, and that for the respect thereof, not onely all tender respects of kinred, or whatsoeuer other friendshippes, are to be laide aside, but that euen long held opinions (rather builded vpon a secret of gouernement, then any ground of truth) are to be forsaken. He fell by degrees to shew, that since the end whereto any thing is directed, is euer to be of more noble reckning, then the thing thereto directed: that therefore, the weale-publike was more to be regarded, then any person or magistrate that thereunto was ordained. The feeling consideration whereof, had moued him (though as neare of kinne to *Basilus* as could be, yet) to set principally before his eyes, the good estate of so many thousands, ouer whom *Basilus* reigned: rather then so to hoodwinke himselfe with affection, as to suffer the realme to runne to manifest ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to those who being subalterne magistrates and officers of the crowne, were to bee employed as from the Prince, so for the people; and of all other, especially himselfe, who being descended of the Royall race, and next heire male. Nature had no sooner opened his eyes, but that the soyle whereupon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnesse: which as from his childhood he had euer caried; so now finding that his vnckle had not only giuen ouer all care of gouernment, but had put it into the hands of *Philanax* (a man neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his corrupt, proude, and partiall dealing, liked of any) but beside, had set his daughters (in whom the whole estate, as next heires thereunto, had no lesse interest then himselfe) in so vnfit and il-guarded a place, as it was not onely dangerous for their persons, but (if they should be conueied to any forraine country) to the whole common-wealth pernicious: that therefore he had brought them into this strong castle of his, which way, if it might seeme strange, they were to consider, that new necessities require new remedies: but there they should be serued and honored as belonged to their greatnesse, vntil by the generall assembly of the estates, it should be determined how they should to their best (both priuate, and publike) aduantage be matched; vowing all faith & duty both to the father and children, neuer by him to be violated. But if in the meane time, before the estates could be assembled, he should be assailed, he wold then for his own defence take armes: desiring al, that either rendred the dangerous case of their country, or in their harts loued iustice, to defend him in this iust action. And if the Prince should command them otherwise, yet to know, that therein he was no more to be obeied, then if he should call for poison to hurt himselfe withall: since all that was done, was done for his seruice, howsoeuer he might
(seduced

(seduced by *Philanax*) interprete of it: he protesting, that whatsoever he should do for his owne defence, should be against *Philanax*, and no way against *Basilus*.

To this effect, amplified with arguments and examples, and painted with rhetorical colours, did hee sow abroad many discourses: which as they preuailed with some of more quicke then sound conceipt, to run his fortune with him; so in many did it breed a coolenesse, to deale violently against him, & a false-minded neutrality to expect the issue. But besides the wayes he vsed to weaken the aduerse party, he omitted nothing for the strengthening of his owne. The chiefe trust whereof (because he wanted men to keepe the field) he reposed in the surety of his castle; which at least would win him much time, the mother of many mutations. To that therefore he bent both his outward and inward eyes, striuing to make Art striue with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification should be most beholding. The seat Nature bestowed, but Art gaue the building: which as his rocky hardnesse would not yeelde to vndermining force, so to open assaults he tooke counsell of skill, how to make all approaches, if not impossible, yet difficult; as well at the foote of the castell, as round about the lake, to giue vnquiet lodgings to them, whom onely enmity would make neighbours. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as well simple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting instruments of mischief to places, whence the mischief might be most liberally bestowed. Neither was his smallest care for victuals, as well for the prouiding that which should suffice, both in store and goodnesse, as in well preferuing it, and wary distributing it, both in quantity & quality; spending that first which would keepe least.

But wherein he sharpened his wits to the piercingest point, was touching his men (knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & maister-spring (as it were) which makes all the rest to stir; and that therefore in the Art of man stood the quintessence, and ruling skill of all prosperous gouernment, either peaceable, or military) hee chose in number as many as without pestring (and so daunger of infection) his victuall would serue for two yeare to maintaine; all of able bodies, and some few of able minds to direct, not seeking many commaunders, but contenting himselfe, that the multitude should haue obeying wittes, euery one knowing whom hee should commaund, and whom he should obey, the place where, and the matter wherein; distributing each office as neare as he could, to the disposition of the person that should exercise it: knowing no loue, daunger, nor discipline can suddenly alter an habite in nature. Therefore would he not employ the still man to a shifting practise, nor the liberall man to be a dispenser of his victuals, nor the kind-hearted man to be a punisher: but would exercise their vertues in sorts, where they might be profitable, employing his chiefe care to know them all particularly, & thoroughly, regarding also the constitution of their bodies; some being able better to abide watching, some hunger, some labour, making his benefit of each hability, & not forcing beyond power. Time to euery thing by iust proportion he allotted, and as well in that, as in euery thing else, no small error winckt at, least greater should be animated. Euen of vices he made his profit, making the cowardly *Clinias* to haue care of the watch, which he knew his owne feare would make him very wakefully performe. And before the siege began, he himselfe caused rumors to be sowed, and libels to be spread against himselfe, fuller of malice, then witty perswasion: partly to know those that would be apt to stumble at such motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller band; but principally, because in necessitie they should not know when any such things were in earnest attempted, whether it were, or not of his owne

invention. But euen then before the enemies face came neare to breed any terrour) did he exercise his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had presently presented his most hideous presence: himselfe rather instructing by example, then precept; being neither more sparing in trauell, nor spending in diet, then the meanest souldier: his hand and body disdaining no base matters, nor shrinking from the heauy.

The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he sighed; and when others rested, he crost his armes. For Loue passing thorow the pikes of Daunger, and tumbling it selfe in the dust of Labour, yet still made him remember his sweete desire, and beautifull image. Often when he had begun to commaund one, somewhat before halfe the sentence were ended, his inward guest did so entertaine him, that hee would breake it off, and a pretty while after end it, when hee had (to the maruell of the standers by) sent himselfe in to talke with his owne thoughts. Sometimes when his hand was lifted vp to do something, as if with the sight of *Gorgons* head he had bene suddenly turned into a stone, so would he there abide with his eyes planted, and hand lifted, till at length, comming to the vse of himselfe, he would looke about whether any had perceiued him; then would he accuse, and in himselfe condemne all those wits, that durst affirme Idlenesse to be the well-spring of Loue. O, would he say, all you that affect the title of wisdome, by vngratefull scorning the ornaments of Nature, am I now piping in a shadow? or doo slouthfull feathers now enwrap me? Is not hate before me, and doubt behind me? Is not daunger of the one side, and shame of the other? And doo I not stand vpon paine, and trauell, and yet ouer all, my affection triumphes? The more I stirre about vrgent affaires, the more me thinks the very stirring breeds a breath to blow the coales of my loue: the more I exercise my thoughts, the more they encrease the appetite of my desires. O sweete *Philoclea* (with that he would cast vp his eyes wherein some water did appeare, as if they would wash themselues against they should see her) thy heauenly face is my *Astronomie*; thy sweete vertue, my sweete *Philosophie*: let me profit therein, and farewell all other cogitations. But alas, my mind misgiues me, for your planets beare a contrary aspect vnto me. Woe, woe is me they threaten my destruction: and whom do they threaten this destruction? euen him that loues them; and by what meanes will they destroy, but by louing them? O deare (though killing) eyes, shall death head his darte with the gold of *Cupids* arrow? Shall death take his aime from the rest of Beauty? O beloved (though hating *Philoclea*, how if thou beest mercifull, hath cruelty stolne into thee? Or how if thou beest cruel, doth cruelty looke more beautifull then euer mercy did? Or alas, is it my destiny that makes Mercie cruell: like an euill vessell which turnes sweet licour to sower-nesse; so when thy grace fals vpon me, my wretched constitution makes it become fiercenesse. Thus would he exercise his eloquence, when she could not heare him, and be dumbe-stricken, when her presence gaue him fit occasion of speaking: so that his wit could find out no other refuge, but the comfort and counsell of his mother, desiring her (whose thoughts were vnperplexed) to vse for his sake the most preuailling maners of intercession.

She seeing her sonnes safety depend thereon (though her pride much disdained the name of a desirer) tooke the charge vpon her, not doubting the easie conquest of an vnexpert virgin, who had already with subtiltie and impudencie begun to vndermine a monarchy. Therefore, weighing *Philocleas* resolutions by the counterpease of her owne youthfull thoughts, which shee then called to mind, shee doubted

doubted not at least to make *Philoclea* receiue the poyson distilled in sweet liquour, which she with little disguising had drunke vp thirstily. Therefore she went softly to *Philoclea*'s chamber, and peeping through the side of the doore, then being a little open, she saw *Philoclea* sitting lowe vpon a cushion, in such a giuen-ouer manner, that one would haue thought, silence, solitarinesse, and melancholie were come there, ynder the ensigne of mishap, to conquere delight, & drine him from his naturall seate of beautie: her teares came dropping down like raine in Sunshine, and she not taking heede to wipe the teares, they hong vpon her cheekes, & lips, as vpon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dressing of her haire & apparell, she might see neither a carefull art, nor an arte of carelesnesse, but euen left to a neglected chaunce, which yet could no more vnperfect her perfections, then a Die any way cast, could loose his squarenesse.

Cecropia (stirred with no other pitie, but for her sonne) came in, and haling kindnesse into her countenance, What ayles this sweet Ladie, (said she) will you marre so good eyes with weeping? shall teares take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of *Arcadia* wish for, and the men long after? Fie of this peeuish sadnesse; in sooth it is vntimely for your age. Looke vpon your owne bodie, and see whether it deserue to pine away with sorrow: see whether you will haue these hands (with that shee tooke one of her hands and kissing it, looked vpon it as if she were enamoured with it) fade from their whitenesse, which makes one desire to touch them; and their softnesse, which reboundes againe a desire to looke on them, and become drie, leane and yellow, and make euerie bodie wonder at the change, and say, that sure you had vsed some arte before, which now you had left? for if the beauties had beene naturall, they would neuer so soone haue beene blemished. Take a glasse, and see whether these teares become your eyes: although I must confesse, those eyes are able to make teares comely. Alas Madame (answered *Philoclea*) I know not whether my teares become mine eyes, but I am sure mine eyes thus beteaured, become my fortune. Your fortune (sayd *Cecropia*) if she could see to attire her selfe, would put on her best raiments. For I see, and I see it with griefe, and (to tell you true) vnkindnesse: you misconster euery thing, that only for your sake is attempted. You thinke you are offended, and are indeede defended: you esteeme your selfe a prisoner, and are in truth a mistresse: you feare hate, and shall find loue. And truly, I had a thing to say to you, but it is no matter, since I find you are so obstinately melancholy, as that you woo his fellowship: I will spare my paines, and hold my peace: and so staied indeede, thinking *Philoclea* would haue had a female inquisitiuenesse of the matter. But she, who rather wished to vnknow what she knew, then to burthen her hart with more hopeles knowledge, only desired her to haue pity of her, and if indeede she did meane her no hurt, then to graunt her liberty: for else the very griefe and feare, would proue her vnappointed executioners. For that (sayd *Cecropia*) belecue me vpon the faith of a kings daughter, you shall be free, so soone as your freedome may be free of mortall danger, being brought hither for no other cause, but to preuent such mischiefes as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed to winne me to haue care of you, euen as of mine owne daughter, then lend your eares vnto me, and let not your mind arme it selfe with a wilfulnesse to be flexible to nothing. But if I speake reason, let Reason haue his due reward, perswasion. Then sweete neece (sayd she) I pray you presuppose, that now, euen in the midst of your agonies, which you paint vnto your selfe most horrible, wishing with sighes, and praying with vowes, for a soone and safe deliuerie. Imagine

neece (I say) that some heavenly spirit should appeare vnto you, and bid you fol-
 low him through the doore, that goes into the garden, assuring you, that you should
 thereby returne to your deare mother, and what other delights focuer your minde-
 steemes delights: would you (sweet neece) would you refuse to follow him, and say,
 that if he led you not through the chiefe gate, you would not enioy your ouer-de- 5
 sired liberty? Would you not drinke the wine you thirst for, without it were in such
 a glasse, as you especially fancied? tell me (deare neece) but I will answere for you,
 because I know your reason & wit is such, as must needs cōclude, that such nicenesse
 can no more be in you, to disgrace such a mind, then disgracefulnesse can haue any
 place in so faultlesse a beauty. Your wisdom would assuredly determin, how the mark 10
 were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you shor. If this be so, and
 thus sure (my deare neece) it is, then (I pray you) imagine, that I am that same good
 Angel, who grieuing in your griefe, and in truth not able to suffer, that bitter sighs
 should be sent forth with so sweete a breath, am come to leade you, not only to your
 desired, and imagined happinesse, but to a true & essentiall happinesse; not only to li- 15
 berty, but to liberty with commandement. The way I will shew you (which if it be
 not the gate builded hitherto in your priuate choise, yet shall it be a doore to bring
 you through a garden of pleasures, as sweet as this life can bring foorth; nay rather,
 which makes this life to be a life: (My sonne) let it be no blemish to him that I name
 him my son, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no small kings 20
 daughter) my sonne (I say) farre passing the neernesse of his kinred, with neernesse
 of good-will, and struing to match your matchlesse beauty with a matchlesse affe-
 ction, doth by me present vnto you the full enioying of your liberty, so as with this
 gift you will accept a greater, which is, this castell, with all the rest which you know
 he hath, in honourable quantitie; and will cōfirme his gift, and your receipt of both, 25
 with accepting him to be yours. I might say much both for the person and the mat-
 ter; but who will crie out the Sun shines? It is so manifest a profit vnto you, as the
 meanest iudgement must straight apprehend it: so farre is it from the sharpnesse of
 yours, thereof to be ignorant. Therefore (sweete neece) let your gratefulnesse be my
 intercession, and your gentlenesse my eloquence, and let me cary comfort to a hart 30
 which greatly needes it. *Philoclea* looked vpon her, and cast downe her eye againe.
 Aunt (sayd she) I would I could be so much a mistresse of my owne mind, as to yeeld
 to my cousins vertuous request: for so I construe of it. But my hart is already set (and
 staying a while on that word, she brought foorth afterwards) to leade a virgins life
 to my death: for such a vow I haue in my selfe deuoutly made. The heauens pre- 35
 uent such a mischief (sayd *Cecropia*.) A vow, quoth you? no, no, my deare neece,
 Nature, when you were first borne, vowed you a woman, and as she made you child
 of a mother, so to do your best to be mother of a child: she gaue you beautie to
 moue loue; she gaue you wit to know loue; she gaue you an excellent body to re-
 ward loue: which kind of liberall rewarding is crowned with an vnspeakable felici- 40
 tie. For this, as it bindeth the receiuer, so it makes happy the bestower: this doth not
 impouerish, but enrich the giuer. O the sweet name of a mother: O the comfort of
 comforts, to see your children grow vp, in whom you are (as it were) eternized: if
 you could conceiue what a hart-tickling ioy it is to see your owne little ones, with
 a full loue come running to your lap, & like little models of your selfe, still cary you 45
 about them, you wold thinke vnkindnesse in your owne thoughts, that euer they did
 rebel against the mean vnto it. But perchance I set this blessednes before your eyes,
 as Captaines do victorie before their souldiers, to which they must come through
 manie

many paines, grieues & dangers. No, I am cōtent you shrinke frō this my counsell, if the way to come vnto it, be not most of all pleasant. I know not (answered the sweet *Philoclea*, fearing least silence would offend for fullennesse) what contentment you speake of: but I am sure the best you can make of it (which is mariage) is a burdensome yoke. Ah, deare necce (sayd *Cecropia*) how much you are deceived? A yoke indeed we all beare, layd vpō vs in our creation, which by mariage is not increased but thus far eased, that you haue a yokefellow to help to draw through the cloddy cumbers of this world. O widow-nights, beare witnessse with me of the difference. How often alas do I embrace the orphan-side of my bed, which was wont to be imprinted by the body of my deare husband, and with teares acknowledge, that I now enjoy such a liberty as the banished mā hath; who may, if he list, wāder ouer the world, but is for euer restrained frō his most delightful home: that I haue now such a liberty as the seeled doue hath, which being first depriued of eyes, is then by the falconer cast off? For beleue me, necce, beleue me, mās experiēce is womās best eye-sight. Haue you euer seene a pure Rosewater kept in a cristall glasse? how fine it looks? how sweet it smells, while that beautifull glasse imprisons it? Breake the prison, and let the water take his owne course, doth it not imbrace dust, and loose all his former sweetnesse, & fairenesse? Truly so are we, if we haue not the stay, rather then the restraint of Christalline mariage. My hart melts to thinke of the sweet comforts, I in that happy time receiued, when I had neuer cause to care, but the care was doubled: when I neuer reioyced, but that I saw my ioy shine in anothers eyes. What shal I say of the free delight, which the hart might imbrace, without the accusing of the inward conscience, or feare of outward shame? and is a solitary life as good as this? then can one string make as good musicke as a consort: then can one colour set forth a beautie. But it may be, the generall consideration of mariage doth not so much mislike you, as the applying of it to him. He is my son, I must confesse, I see him with a mothers eyes, which if they doo not much deceiue me, he is no such one, ouer whom Contempt may make any iust challenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in it selfe should carie all comelinesse, nobilitie, and riches, he loues you; and he loues you, who is beloued of others. Drive not away his affection (sweete Lady) and make no other Lady hereafter proudly bragge, that she hath robbed you of so faithfull & notable a seruant. *Philoclea* heard some peeces of her speeches, no otherwise then one doth when a tedious pratler combers the hearing of a delightfull musicke. For her thoughts had left her eares in that captiuitie, and conueyed themselves to behold (with such eyes as imagination could lend them) the estate of her *Zelmane*: for whom how well she thought many of those sayings might haue bin vsed with a far more gratefull acceptation. Therefore listning not to dispute in a matter whereof her selfe was resolued, & desired not to enforme the other, she only told her, that whilest she was so captiued, she could not conceiue of any such perswasions (though neuer so reasonable) any otherwise, then as constraints: and as constraints must needs euen in nature abhor them, which at her liberty, in their own force of reason, might more preuaile with her: and so faine wold haue returned the strength of *Cecropias* perswasions, to haue procured freedome.

But neither her wittie words in anemie, nor those words, made more then eloquent with passions through such lippes, could preuaile in *Cecropia*, no more then her perswasions could winne *Philoclea* to disauowe her former vow, or to leaue the prisoner *Zelmane*, for the commaunding *Amphialus*. So that both sides being desirous, and neither graunters, they brake off conference. *Cecropia* sucking vp more

and more spite out of her deniall, which yet for her sonnes sake, she disguised with a visard of kindnesse, leauing no office vnperfourmed, which might either witnesse, or endear her sonnes affection. Whatsoever could be imagined likely to please her, was with liberall diligence perfourmed: Musickes at her window, and especially such Musickes, as might (with dolefull embassage) call the mind to thinke of sorrow, and thinke of it with sweetnesse; with ditties so sensibly expressing *Amphialus* case, that euery word seemed to be but a diuersifying of the name of *Amphialus*. Daily presents, as it were oblations, to pacifie an angrie Deitie, sent vnto her: wherein, if the workmanship of the forme, had striuen with the sumptuousnesse of the matter, as much did the inuention in the application, contend to haue the chiefe excellencie: for they were as so many stories of his disgraces, and her perfections; where the richnesse did inuite the eyes, the fashion did entertaine the eyes, and the deuice did teach the eyes, the present miserie of the presenter himselfe awfully seruiceable: which was the more notable, as his authority was manifest. And for the bondage wherein she liued, all meanes vsed to make knowne, that if it were a bondage, it was a bondage onely knit in loue-knots: but in hart already vnderstanding no language but one. The Musicke wrought indeede a dolefulnesse, but it was a dolefulnesse to be in his power: the dittie intended for *Amphialus*, she translated to *Zelmae*: the presents seemed so many tedious clogs of a thrall'd obligation: and his seruice, the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobrate (as she thought) vnto her, her vnworthie estate: that euen he that did her seruice, had authoritie of commanding her, onely construing her seruitude in his owne nature, esteeming it a right, and a right better seruitude: so that all their shots (how well soeuer leuelled) being carried awrie from the marke, by the storme of her dislike, the Prince *Amphialus* affectionately languished, and *Cecropia* spitefully cunning, disdained at the barrennesse of their successe.

Which willingly *Cecropia* would haue reuenged, but that she saw, her hurt could not be deuied from her sonnes mischiefe: wherefore, she bethought her selfe to attempt *Pamela*, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if she might be won, that her sons thoughts would rather rest on a beautifull gratefulnessse, then still be tormented with a disdaining beauty. Therefore, giuing new courage to her wicked inuentions, and vsing the more industry, because she had mist in this, and taking euen precepts of preuailing in *Pamela*, by her sayling in *Philoclea*, she went to her chamber, and (according to her owne vngracious method of subtile proceeding) stood listning at the dore, because that out of the circumstance of her present behauiour, there might kindly arise a fit beginning of her intended discourse.

And so she might perceiue that *Pamela* did walke vp & downe, full of deep (though patient) thoughts. For her looke & countenance was serled, her pace soft and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture, or violent motion: till at length (as it were) awaking, & strengthning her selfe, Well (sayd she) yet this is the best, and of this I am sure, that howsoever they wrong me, they cannot ouer-maister God. No darknes blinds his eyes, no gayle bars him out. To whom then else shold I flie, but to him for succor? And therewith kneeling down, euen where she stood, she thus said: O al-seeing Light, & eternall Life of all things, to whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist, or so small, that it is contemned: looke vpon my misery with thine eye of mercy, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportion of deliuerance vnto me, as to thee shall seeme most conuenient. Let not iniurie, O Lord, triumph ouer me, and let my faults by thy hand bee corrected, and make not mine

vniust

vnjust enemy the minister of thy Iustice. But yet, my God, if in thy wisdome, this be the aptest chastisement for my vnexcusable folly; if this low bondage bee fittest for my ouer-high desires; if the pride of my not-inough humble hart, be thus to be broken, ô Lord, I yeeld vnto thy will, and ioyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt haue me suffer. Onely thus much let me craue of thee (let my crauing, ô Lord, be accepted of thee, since euen that proceedes from thee) let me craue, euen by the noblest title, which in my greatest affliction I may giue my selfe, that I am thy creature, and by thy goodnesse (which is thy selfe) that thou wilt suffer some beame of thy Maiesty so to shine into my mind, that it may stil depend cōfidently vpon thee. Let calamity be the exercise, but not the ouerthrow of my vertue: let their power preuaile, but preuaile not to destructiō: let my greatnes be their pray: let my pain be the sweetnes of their reuenge: let them (if so it seeme good vnto thee) vex me with more and more punishment. But, ô Lord, let neuer their wickednesse haue such a hand, but that I may cary a pure mind in a pure body. (And pausing a while) And ô most gracious Lord (sayd she) what euer become of me, preferue the vertuous *Musidorus*.

The other part *Cecropia* might well heare, but this latter prayer for *Musidorus*, her hart held it, as so iewel-like a treasure, that it would scarce trust her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, sent to heauen, from so heavenly a creature, with such a frequent grace, as if Deuotion had borrowed her body, to make of it selfe a most beautifull representation; with her eyes so listd to the skie-ward, that one would haue thought they had begun to flie thitherward, to take their place among their fellow starres; her naked hands raising vp their whole length, and as it were kissing one another, as if the right had bene the picture of *Zeale*, and the left, of *Humblenesse*, which both vnited themselues to make their suites more acceptable. Lastly, all her senses being rather tokens then instruments of her inward motions, altogether had so strange a working power, that euen the hard-harted wickednesse of *Cecropia*, if it found not a loue of that goodnesse, yet it felt an abashment at that goodnesse, and if she had not a kindly remorse, yet had she an yrksome accusation of her owne naughtinesse, so that she was put from the bias of her fore-intended lesson. For well she found there was no way at that time to take that mind; but with some, at least, image of Vertue, and what the figure thereof was, her hart knew not.

Yet did she prodigally spend her vttermost eloquence, leauing no argument vnproued, which might with any force inuade her excellent iudgement: the iustnes of the request being, but for marriage; the worthinesse of the suiter: then her owne present fortune, which should not only haue amendment, but felicity: besides falsely making her beleue, that her sister would thinke her selfe happy, if now she might haue his loue which before she contemned: and obliquely touching, what daunger it should be for her, if her sonne should accept *Philoclea* in marriage, and so match the next heire apparant, she being in his power: yet plentifully periuring how extreamely her sonne loued her, and excusing the little shewes he made of it, with the duetifull respect he bare vnto her, and taking vpon her selfe that she restrained him, since she found she could set no limits to his passions. And as she did to *Philoclea*, so did she to her, with the tribute of gifts, seeke to bring her mind into seruitude: and all other meanes, that might either establish a beholdingnes, or at least awake a kindnesse; doing it so, as by reason of their imprisonment, one sister knew not how the other was wooed, but each might thinke, that only she was sought. But if *Philoclea* with sweete and humble dealing did auoide their assaults, she with the Maiesty of Vertue did beate them off.

But this day their speech was the sooner broken of, by reason that he, who stood as watch vpon the top of the keep, did not only see a great dust arise (which the earth sent vp, as if it would striue to haue clowdes as wel as the aire) but might spie sometimes, especially when the dust (wherin the naked wind did apparell it self) was caried a side from them, the shining of armour; like flashing of lightning, wherewith the clowdes did seeme to be with child; which the Sun guilding with his beames, it gaue a sight delightfull to any, but to them that were to abide the terrour. But the watch gaue a quicke Alarum to the soldiers within, who practise already hauing prepared, began each, with vnabashed harts or at least countenances, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which was allotted vnto them.

Only *Clinias* and *Amphialus* did exceede the bounds of mediocrity: the one in his naturall coldnesse of cowardise, the other in heate of courage. For *Clinias* (who was bold only in busie whisperings, and euen in that whisperingnesse rather indeede confident in his cunning, that it should not bee bewraied, then any way bold, if euer it should bee bewrayed) now that the enemy gaue a dreadfull aspect vnto the castle, his eyes saw no terror, nor eare heard any martiall sound, but that they multiplied the hideousnesse of it to his mated mind. Before their comming he had many times felt a dreadfull expectation, but yet his mind (that was willing to ease it selfe of the burden of feare) did somtime faine vnto it selfe possibility of let; as the death of *Basilus*, the discord of the nobility, and (when other cause fayled him) the nature of chaunce serued as a cause vnto him: and sometimes the hearing other men speake valiantly, and the quietnesse of his vnassailed senses, would make himselfe belecue, that he durst doo something. But now, that present daunger did display it selfe vnto his eye, and that a daungerous dooing must be the onely meane to preuent the danger of suffering, one that had marked him would haue iudged, that his eyes would haue run into him, and his soule out of him; so ynkindly did either take a sent of danger. He thought the lake was too shallow, and the walles too thin: he misdoubted each mans treason, and coniectured euery possibility of misfortune, not only fore-casting likely perils, but such as all the planets together could scarcely haue conspired: and already began to arme himselfe, though it was determined he should tary within doores; and while he armed himself, imagined in what part of the vault he would hide himselfe, if the enemies wonne the castle. Desirous he was, that euery body should do valiantly, but himselfe; and therefore was afraid to shew his feare, but for very feare would haue hid his feare; least it should discomfort others: but the more he sought to disguise it, the more the vsfuitablenesse of a weak broken voice to high braue words, and of a pale shaking countenance to a gesture of animating did discover him.

But quite contrarily *Amphialus*, who before the enemies came, was careful, providently diligent, & not sometimes with out doubting of the issue; now the nearer danger approached (like the light of a glow-worme) the lesse still it seemed: and now his courage began to boile in choler, and with such impatience to desire to powre out both vpon the enemy, that he issued presently into certaine boates he had of purpose and carying with him some choise men, went to the fortresse he had vpon the edge of the lake, which hee thought would be the first thing, that the enemy would attempt, because it was a passage, which commanding all that side of the country, and being lost would stop victuall, or other supply, that might be brought into the castle, & in that fortresse hauing some force of horsemen, he issued out with two hundred horse, & fiue hundred footmen, embushed his footmen in the falling of a hill, which

was

was ouer shadowed with a wood, he with his horfmen went a quarter of a mile further; afide hand of which he might perceiue the many troupes of the enemy, who came but to take view where beft to encampe themfelues.

But as if the fight of the enemy had bene a Magnes ftone to his courage, he could not contraine himfelfe, but fhewing his face to the enemy, and his backe to his fouldiers, vfed that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one, and perfwading helpe of the other. Who faithfully following an example of fuch authority, they made the earth to grone vnder their furious burden, and the enemies to begin to be angry with them, whom in particular they knew not. Among whom
 10 there was a young man, youngeft brother to *Philanax*, whose face as yet did not bewray his fex, with fo much as fhew of haire; of a mind hauing no limits of hope, not knowing why to feare; full of iollity in conuerfation, and lately growne a Louer. His name was *Agenor*, of all that army the moft beautifull: who hauing ridden in sportfull conuerfation among the foremoft, all armed fauing that his beauer was
 15 vp, to haue his breath in more freedome, feeing *Amphialus* come a pretty way before his cōpany, neither ftaying the commandement of the Captaine, nor recking whether his face were armed, or no, fet furs to his horfe, and with youthfull brauery cafting his ftaffe about his head, put it then in his reft, as carefull of comely carying it, as if the marke had beene but a Ring, and the lookers on Ladies. But *Amphialus*
 20 launce was already come to the laft of his defcending line, and began to make the full point of death againft the head of this young Gentleman, when *Amphialus* perceiuing his youth and beauty, Compassion fo rebated the edge of Choller, that hee fpared that faire nakedneffe, and let his ftaffe fall to *Agenors* vampalet: fo as both with braue breaking fhould hurtlelie haue performed that match, but that the pittileffe
 25 launce of *Amphialus* (angry with being broken) with an vn lucky counterbuffe full of vnfparring fplinters, lighted vpon that face farre fitter for the combats of *Venus*; giuing not onely a fudden, but a fowle death, leauing fcarcely any tokens of his former beauty: but his hands abandoning the reynes, and his thighes the faddle, hee fell fideward from the horfe. Which fight comming to *Leontius*, a deare friend of
 30 his, who in vaine had lamentably cried vnto him to ftay, when he faw him begin his careere, it was hard to fay, whether pittie of the one, or reuenge againft the other, held as then the foueraigntie in his paffions. But while he directed his eye to his friend, and his hinde to his enemy, fo wronglie-conforted a power could not refift the ready minded force of *Amphialus*: who perceiuing his il-directed direction
 35 againft him, fo payd him his debt before it was lent, that he alfo fell to the earth, onely happy that one place, and one time, did finifh both their loues and liues together.

But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either fide: where after the terrible falutation of warlike noyse, the shaking of hands was with sharpe weapon:
 40 fome launces according to the mettall they met, and skill of the guider, did ftaine themfelues in bloud; fome flew vp in peeces, as if they would threaten heauen, becaufe they fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the Prince of weapons) the fword, or by fome heauy mafe, or biting axe; which hunting ftill the weakeft chafe, fought euer to light there, where finalleft refiftance might worfe preuent mifchiefe. The clafhing of armour, and crufhing of ftauies; the iuftling of bodies, the refounding of blowes, was the firft part of that ill agreeing muficke, which was beautified with the griflineffe of wounds, the rifing of duft; the hideous falles and grones of the dying. The very horfes angrie in their maifters

anger, with loue and obedience brought forth the effects of hate and resistance, and with minds of seruitude, did as if they affected glory. Some lay dead vnder their dead maisters, whom vnknightly wounds had vniustly punished for a faithfull duty. Some lay vpon their Lords by like accidents, and in death, had the honour to be borne by them, whom in life they had borne. Some hauing lost their commanding burthens, ranne scattered about the field, abashed with the madnesse of mankind. The earth it selfe (wont to be a buriall of men) was now (as it were) buried with men: so was the face thereof hidden with dead bodies, to whom Death had come masked in diuerse manners. In one place lay disinherited heades, dispossessed of their naturall seignories: in another, whole bodies to see to, but that their harts wont to be bound all ouer so close, were now with deadly violence opened: in others, fowler deaths had ouglily displayed their trayling guts. There lay armes, whose fingers yet moued, as if they would feele for him that made them feele: and legges, which contrary to common reason, by being discharged of their burden, were growne heauier. But no sword payed so large a tribute of soules to the eternall Kingdome, as that of *Amphialus*, who like a Tigre, from whom a company of Woolues did seeke to rauish a new gotten pray; so he (remembering they came to take away *Philoclea*) did labour to make valure, strength, choller and hatred, to answer the proportion of his loue, which was infinite.

There died of his hands the old knight *Æschylus*, who though by yeares might well haue bene allowed to vse rather the exercises of wisdom, then of courage; yet hauing a lusty body and a merry hart, he euer tooke the summons of Time in iest, or else it had so creepingly stolen vpon him, that he had heard scarcely the noise of his feete, and therefore was as fresh in apparell, and as forward in enterprises, as a farre yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certaine prophecie had bene told him, that he should die in the armes of his sonne, and therefore feared the lesse the arme of an enemy. But now when *Amphialus* sword was passed through his throate, he thought himselfe abused; but that before he died, his sonne, indeede seeing his father begin to fall, held him vp in his armes, till a pitilesse souldier of the other side, with a mace brained him, making father and son become twinnes in the neuer againe dying birth. As for *Drialus*, *Memnon*, *Nisus* and *Policrates*; the first hsd his eyes cut out so, as he could not see to bid the neare following death welcome: the second had met with the same Prophet that old *Æschylus* had, and hauing found many of his speeches true, beleued this to, that hee should neuer bee killed, but by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant then he against an enemy, no man more suspicious of his friends: so as he seemed to sleep in security, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a battell, when he began to sleepe, such gards hee would set about his person; yet mistrusting those verie gards least they would murder him. But now *Amphialus* helped to vnridle his doubts; for he ouerthrowing him from his horse, his owne companions comming with a fresh supply, pressed him to death. *Nisus* grasping with *Amphialus*, was with a short dagger slaine. And for *Policrates*, while he shunned as much as he could, keeping only his place for feare of punishment, *Amphialus* with a memorable blow strake off his head, where, with the conuulsions of death setting his spurres to his horse, he gaue so braue a charge vpon the enemy, as it grew a proverbe, that *Policrates* was onely valiant after his head was off. But no man escaped so well his hands as *Phibalus* did: for he hauing long loued *Philoclea*, though for the meannesse of his estate he neuer durst reueale it, now knowing *Amphialus*, setting the edge of a riual vpon the

the sword of an enemy, he held strong fight with him. But *Amphialus* had already in the daungerouſeſt places diſarmed him, and was liſting vp his ſword to ſend him away from himſelfe, when he thinking indeede to die, ô *Philoclea* (ſayd he) yet this ioyes mee, that I die for thy ſake. The name of *Philoclea* firſt ſtaied his ſword, and when he heard him out, though he abhord him much worſe then before, yet could he not vouchſafe him the honour of dying for *Philoclea*, but turned his ſword another way, doing him no hurt for ouer-much hatred. But what good did that to poore *Phebilus*, if eſcaping valiant hand, he was ſlaine by baſe ſouldier, who ſeeing him ſo diſarmed, thruſt him through?

10 But thus with the well-followed valure of *Amphialus* were the other almoſt ouerthrowne, when *Philanax* (who was the marſhall of the army) came in, with new force reſtoring the almoſt decayed courage of his ſouldiers. For crying to them (and asking them whether their backes or their armes were better fighters) he himſelfe thruſt into the preſſe, and making force and furie waite vpon diſcretion and gouernement, he might ſeeme a braue Lion, who taught his yong Lionets, how in-taking of a pray, to ioyne courage with cunning. Then Fortune (as if ſhe had made chaces inow of the one ſide of that bloudy Teniſcourt) went of the other ſide the line, making as many fall downe of *Amphialus* followers, as before had done of *Philanax*, they looſing the ground, as faſt as before they had won it, onely leauing
20 them to keepe it, who had loſt themſelues in keeping it. Then thoſe that had killed, inherited the lot of thoſe that had beene killed; and cruell deaths made them lie quietly together, who moſt in their liues had ſought to diſquiet each other; and many of thoſe firſt ouerthrowne, had the comfort to ſee the murderers ouerrun them to *Charons* ferrie.

25 *Codrus*, *Cteſiphon*, and *Milo*, loſt their liues vpon *Philanax* his ſword: but no bodies caſe was more pitied, then of a young eſquire of *Amphialus*, called *Iſmenus*, who neuer abandoning his maiſter, and making his tender age aſpire to actes of the ſtrongeſt manhood, in this time that his ſide was put to the worſt, and that *Amphialus* his valure was the onely ſtay of them from deliuering themſelues ouer to a ſhamefull flight, hee ſawe his maiſters horſe killed vnder him.
30 Whereupon, asking no aduiſe of no thought, but of faithfulneſſe and courage, hee preſently lighted from his owne horſe, and with the helpe of ſome choiſe and faithfull ſeruants, gat his maiſter vp. But in the multitude that came of either ſide, ſome to ſuccour, ſome to ſaue *Amphialus*, hee came vnder the hand
35 of *Philanax*: and the youth perceiuing hee was the man that did moſt hurt to his partie (deſirous euen to change his life for glorie) ſtrake at him, as hee rode by him, and gaue him a hurt vpon the leg, that made *Philanax* turne towards him; but ſeeing him ſo young, and of a moſt louelie preſence, he rather tooke pittie of him; meaning to take him priſoner, and then to giue him to his brother *Agenor* to bee
40 his companion, becauſe they were not much vnlke, neither in yeares, nor countenance. But as hee looked downe vpon him with that thought, he ſpied where his brother lay dead, and his friend *Leontius* by him, euen almoſt vnder the ſquiers feete. Then ſorrowing not onely his owne ſorrow, but the paſt-comfort ſorrow which he fore-knew his mother would take (who with many teares, and miſgiuing ſighs had ſuffred him to go with his elder brother *Philanax*) blotted out all figures
45 of pittie out of his mind, and putting forth his horſe (while *Iſmenus* doubled two or three more valiant, then well ſet blowes) ſaying to himſelfe. Let other mothers bewaile & vntimely death as well as mine: he thruſt him through. And the boy fierce,

though beautifull; and beautifull, though dying, not able to keepe his failing feete, fell downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his fortune, and as long as he could resisting death, which might seeme vnwilling to; so long he was in taking away his yong struggling soule.

Philanax himselfe could haue wished the blow vngiuen, when he saw him fall like a faire apple, which some vncurteous body (breaking his bow) should throw downe before it were ripe. But the case of his brother made him forget both that, & himselfe: so as ouerhastily pressing vpon the retiring enemies, he was (ere he was aware) further engaged then his owne souldiers could relieue him; where being ouerthrowne by *Amphialus*, *Amphialus* glad of him, kept head against his enemies while some of his men caried away *Philanax*.

But *Philanax*-his men as if with the losse of *Philanax* they had lost the fountaine of their valure, had their courages so dried vp in feare; that they began to set honour at their backs, and to vse the vertue of patience in an vntimely time: when into the presse comes (as hard as his horse, more affraide of the spurre, then the sworde could cary him) a Knight in armour as darke as blacknesse could make it, followed by none, and adorned by nothing; so farre without authority that hee was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him such authority, that though they of whose side he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was fit to obey him: and while he was followed by the valiantest, hee made way for the vilest. For, taking part with the besiegers, he made the *Amphialians* bloud serue for a caparison to his horse, and a decking to his armour. His arme no oftner gaue blowes, then the blowes gaue wounds, then the wounds gaue deathes: so terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknesse more forcible then his force, and his iudgement more quicke then his quicknesse. For though his sworde went faster then eye-sight could follow it, yet his owne iudgement went still before it. There dyed of his hand, *Sarpedon*, *Plissonax*, *Strophilus*, and *Hippolitus*, men of great prooffe in warres, and who had that day vndertaken the gard of *Amphialus*. But while they fought to saue him, they lost the fortresses that Nature had placed them in. Then flew he *Megalus*, who was a litle before proude, to see himself stained in the bloud of his enemies: but when his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then felt, that cruelty doth neuer enioy a good cheape glory. After him sent he *Palemon* who had that day vowed (with foolish brauery) to be the death of ten: and nine already he had killed, and was careful to performe his (almost performed) vow, when the blacke knight helpt him to make vp the tenth himselfe.

And now the often-changing Fortune beganne also to chaunge the hew of the battels. For at the first, though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt so brauelie with rich furniture, guilt swords, shining armours, pleasant pensils, that the eye with delight had scarce leasure to be affraide: But now all vniuersally defiled with dust, bloud, broken armour, mangled bodies, tooke away the maske, and sette forth Horror in his owne horrible manner. But neither could daunger be dreadfull to *Amphialus* his vndismayable courage, nor yet seeme ougly to him, whose truely-affected minde, did still paint it ouer with the beauty of *Philoclea*. And therefore hee, rather enflamed then troubled with the increase of daungers, and glad to find a worthy subiect to exercise his courage, sought out this new knight, whom he might easily find: for he, like a wanton rich man, that throwes downe his neighbours houses, to make himselfe the better prospect, so had his sworde made him so spacious a roome, that *Amphialus* had more cause to wonder at the

the finding, then labour for the seeking: which, if it stirred hate in him, to see how much harme he did to the one side, it prouoked as much emulation in him, to perceiue how much good he did to the other side. Therefore, they approaching one to the other, as in two beautifull folkes, Loue naturally stirres a desire of ioyning, so in their two courages Hate stirred a desire of triall. Then began there a combat betweene them, worthy to haue had more large listes, and more quiet beholders: for with the spurre of Courage, and the bitte of Respect, each so guided himselfe, that one might well see, the desire to ouercome, made them not forget how to ouercome: in such time and proportion they did employ their blowes, that none of *Ceres* seruants could more cunningly place his flaile: while the left foote spurre set forward his owne horse, the right set backward the contrary horse, euen sometimes by the aduantage of the enemies legge, while the left hand (like him that held the sterne) guided the horses obedient courage: All done in such order, that it might seeme, the mind was a right Prince indeede, who sent wise and diligent Lieutenants into each of those well gouerned partes. But the more they fought, the more they desired to fight; and the more they sinarted, the lesse they felte the smarte: and now were like to make a quicke prooffe, to whom Fortune or Valour would seeme most friendly, when in comes an olde Gouverneur of *Amphialus*, alwayes a good Knight, and carefull of his charge; who giuing a fore wound to the Blacke Knights thigh, while hee thought not of him, with another blow slewe his horse vnder him. *Amphialus* cried to him, that hee dishonoured him: You say well (answered the olde Knight) to stand now like a priuate souldier, setting your credit vpon particular fighting, while you may see *Basilus* with all his hoste, his getting betweene you and your towne. He looked that way, and found that true indeede, that the enemy was beginning to encompasse him about, and stoppe his returne: and therefore causing the retreate to be sounded, his Gouverneur ledde his men homeward, while hee kept himselfe still hindmost, as if hee had stood at the gate of a fluse, to let the streame goe, with such proportion, as should seeme good vnto him: and with so manfull discretion perfourmed it, that (though with losse of many of his men) he returned in himselfe safe, and content, that his enemies had felte, how sharpe the sworde could bite of *Philocleas* Louer. The other partie being sorie for the losse of *Philanax*, was yet sorier when the Blacke Knight could not bee found. For he hauing gotten a horse, whom his dying maister had bequeathed to the word, finding himselfe sore hurt, and not desirous to be knowne, had in the time of the enemies retiring, retired away also: his thigh not bleeding blood so fast, as his heart bledde reuenge. But *Basilus* hauing attempted in vaine to barre the safe returne of *Amphialus*, encamped himselfe as strongly as he could, while he (to his griefe) might heare the ioy was made in the towne by his owne subiect, that he had that day sped no better. For *Amphialus* (being well beloued of that people) when they saw him not vanquished, they esteemed him as victorious, his youth setting a flourishing shew vpon his worthinesse, and his great nobility ennobling his dangers.

But the first thing *Amphialus* did, being returned, was to visite *Philocleas*, and first presuming to cause his dreame to be song vnto her (which he had seen the night before he fell in loue with her) making a fine boy he had, accord the pretty dolefulnesse vnto it. The song was this:

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Now was our heau'nly vault deprived of the light
 With Sunnes depart: and now the darknesse of the night
 Did light those beamy stars which greater light did darke:
 Now each thing that enioy'd that fire quickning sparke
 (VVhich life is cald) were mou'd their spirits to repose,
 And wanting vse of eyes, their eyes began to close:
 A silence sweet each vvhere vvith one consent embraste
 (A musique sweete to one in carefull musing plaste)
 And mother earth, now clad in mourning vvveedes, did breath
 A dull desire to kisse the image of our death:
 When I, disgraced vvretch, not vvretched then, did giue
 My senses such reliefe, as they which quiet liue,
 Whose braines broile not in woes, nor breasts with beatings ake,
 Which natures praise are wont in safest home to take.
 Far from my thoughts vvvas ought, vvhereto their minds aspire,
 VVho vnder courtly pompes do hatch a base desire.
 Free all my powers vvvere from those captiuing snares,
 VVhich heau'nly purest gifts defile the muddy cares.
 Ne could my soule it selfe accuse of such a faulte,
 As tender conscience might with furious pangs assault.
 But like the feeble flower (vvwhose stalke cannot sustaine
 His vvweighty top) his top downward doth drooping leane:
 Or as the silly bird in vvell acquainted nest
 Doth hide his head vvith cares but only how vv to rest:
 So I in simple course, and vmentangled mind
 Did suffer drowsie lids mine eyes then cleare to blind;
 And laying downe my head, did natures rule obserue,
 Which senses vp doth shut the senses to preserue.
 They first their vse forgot, then fancies lost their force,
 Till deadly sleepe at length possest my lining coarse.
 A liuing coarse I lay: but ah, my vvakefull mind
 (Which made of heau'nly stufte no mortall change doth blind)
 Fle vv vp vvith freer vvings of fleshly bondage free;
 And hauing plaste my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.
 Me thought, nay sure I vvvas, I vvvas in fairest vvood
 Of Samothea land; a land vvwhich vvhilom stood,
 An honour to the world, vvwhile Honour vvvas their end,
 And vvwhile their line of yeares they did in vertue spend.
 But there I vvvas, and there my calmie thoughts I fed
 On Natures sweete repast, as healthfull senses led.
 Her gifts my study vvvas, her beauties vvvere my sport:
 My worke her vvorkes to know, her dwelling my resort.
 Those lamps of heau'nly fire to fixed motion bound,
 The euer-turning spheres, the neuer-mouing ground;
 VVhat essence dest'nie hath; if fortune be or no,
 Whence our immortall soules to mortall earth do stow:
 What life it is, and how that all these liues do gather,
 VVith outward makers force, or like an inward father.

Such

Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and straind my single minn,
 Then void of neerer cares, the depth of things to find;
 When lo with hugest noise (such noise a tower makes
 When it blowne downe with wind a fall of ruine takes)
 (Or such a noise it was, as highest thunders send,
 Or cannons thunder-like, all shot together, lend)
 The Moone a sunder rent; whereout with sudden fall
 (More swift then falcons stoope to feeding Falconers call)
 There came a chariot faire by dones and sparrows guided,
 Whose stormelike course staid not till hard by me it bided.
 I wretch astonisht was, and thought the deathfull doome
 Of heauen, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.
 But streight there issued forth two Ladies (Ladies sure
 They seemd to me) on whom did wait a Virgin pure.
 Strange were the Ladies weedes; yet more unfit then strange.
 The first with cloth's tuckt up as Nymphes in woods do range;
 Tuckt up euen with the knees, with bow and arrowes prest:
 Her right arme naked was, discovered was her breast.
 But heauy was her pace, and such a meagre cheere,
 As litle hunting mind (God knowes) did there appeere.
 The other had with art (more then our women know,
 As stufte meant for the sale set out to glaring show)
 A wanton womans face, and with curld knots had twin'd
 Her haire, which by the helpe of painters cunning, shin'd.
 When I such guests did see come out of such a house,
 The mountaines great with child I thought brought forth a mouse.
 But walking forth, the first thus to the second sayd,
 Venus come on: sayd she, Diane you are obeyd.
 Those names abasht me much, when those great names I heard:
 Although their fame (me seemd) from truth had greatly iard.
 As I thus musing stood, Diana cald to her
 The waiting Nymph, a Nymph that did excell as farre.
 All things that earst I saw, as orient pearles exceede
 That which their mother hight, or else their silly seede.
 Indeed a perfect hew, indeed a sweet consent
 Of all those Graces gifts the heauens haue euer lent.
 And so she was attir'd, as one that did not prize
 Too much her peerelesse parts, nor yet could them despise.
 But cald, she came apace; a pace wherein did moue
 The band of beauties all, the litle world of Loue.
 And bending humbled eyes (o eyes the Sunne of sight)
 She waited mistresse will: who thus disclos'd her spright,
 Sweet Mira mine (quoth she) the pleasure of my mind,
 In whom of all my rules the perfect prooffe I find,
 To only thee thou seest we graunt this speciall grace
 Vs to attend, in this most priuate time and place.
 Be silent therefore now, and so be silent still
 Of that thou seest: close vp in secret knot thy will.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*She answer'd was with looke, and well perform'd behest:
 And Mira I admirde: her shape sonke in my brest.
 But thus with irefull eyes, and face that shooke with spite
 Diana did begin. What mou'd me to inuite
 Your presence (sister deare) first to my Moony spheare,
 And hither now, vouchsafe to take with willing care.
 I know full well you know, what discord long hath raignd
 Betwixt vs two; how much that discord foule hath stain'd
 Both our estates, while each the other did depraue,
 Prooffe speakes too much to vs that feeling triall haue.
 Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defac'd:
 Our offrings spoil'd, our priests from priesthood are displac'd.
 Is this the fruite of strife? those thousand Churches hie,
 Those thousand altars faire now in the dust to lie?
 In mortall minds our mindes but planets names preserue:
 No knees once bowed, forsooth, for them they say we serue.
 Are we their seruants growne? no doubt a noble staie:
 Celestiall powers to wormes, Loues children serue to clay.
 But such they say we be: this praise our discord bred,
 While we for mutuall spite, a strining passion fed.
 But let vs wiser be; and what foule discord brake,
 So much more strong againe let fastest concord make.
 Our yeares do it require: you see we both do feele
 The weakning worke of times for euer whirling wheele.
 Although we be diuine, our graundfire Saturne is
 With ages force decay'd, yet once the heauen was his.
 And now before we seeke by wise Apollos skill,
 Our young yeares to renew (for so he sayth he will)
 Let vs a perfect peace betweene vs two resolve:
 Which least the ruinous want of gouernment dissolue,
 Let one the Princeesse be, to her the other yeeld:
 For vaine equality is but Contentions field.
 And let her haue the gifts that should in both remaine:
 In her let beauty both, and chaſtneſſe fully raigne.
 So as if I preuaile, you giue your gifts to me:
 If you, on you I lay what in my office be.
 Now resteth only this, which of vs two is she,
 To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.
 For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a you!h
 (She beckned vnto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,
 Who may this doubt discerne: for better, wit, then lot
 Recommeth vs: in vs fortune determines not.
 This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)
 To worthiest let him giue, when both he hath beheld:
 And be it as he sayth, Venus was glad to heare
 Such proffer made, which she well shew'd with smiling cheere.
 As though she were the same, as when by Paris doome
 She had chiefe Goddesses in beauty overcome.*

And

And smirklly thus gan say, I neuer sought debate
 Diana deare, my mind to loue and not to hate
 VV as euer apt: but you my pastimes did despise,
 I neuer spited you, but thought you ouerwise.
 Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:
 And so most ready am this meane of peace to trie.
 And let him be our iudge: the lad doth please me well.
 Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell
 (For both together spake, each loth to be behinde)
 That they by solemne oath their Deities would binde,
 To stand vnto my will: their will they made me know.
 I that was first agast, vwhen first I saw their shou,
 Now bolder waxt, waxt proude, that I such sway must beare:
 For neare acquaintance doth diminish reuerent feare.
 And hauing bound them fast by Styx, they should obay
 To all what I decreede, did thus my verdict say.
 How ill both you can rule, well hath your discord taught:
 Ne yet for ought I see, your beauties merit ought.
 To yonder Nimph therefore (to Mira I did point)
 The crowne aboue you both for euer I appoint.
 I would haue spoken out: but out they both did cry,
 Fie, fie, what haue we done? vngodly rebell fie.
 But now we needes must yeelde, to that our oathes require.
 Tet thou shalt not go free (quoth Venus) such a fire.
 Her beauty kindle shall within thy foolish minde,
 That thou full oft shalt wish thy iudging eyes were blind.
 Nay then (Diana sayd) the chastnesse I will giue,
 In ashes of despaire (though burnt) shall make thee liue.
 Nay thou (sayd both) shalt see such beames shine in her face,
 That thou shalt neuer dare seeke helpe of wretched case.
 And with that cursed curse away to heauen they fled,
 First hauing all their gifts vpon faire Mira spread.
 The rest I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd,
 And found with deadly feare that all my sinewes shak'd.
 VV as it a dreame? O dreame, how hast thou wrought in me,
 That I things erst vnseene should first in dreaming see?
 And thou O traytour Sleepe, made for to be our rest,
 How hast thou framde the paine wherewith I am oppress?
 O coward Cupid thus doost thou thy honour keepe,
 Vnarme (alas) vnwarn'd to take a man asleepe?

Laying not onely the conquests, but the heart of the conquerour at her feete. ***
 But shee receiuing him after her wonted sorrowfull (but otherwise vnmoued)
 manner, it made him thinke, his good successe was but as a pleasant monument
 of a dolefull buriall: Ioy it selfe seeming bitter vnto him, since it agreed not to
 her taste.

Therefore, still crauing his mothers helpe to perswade her, hee himselfe sent for
 Philanax vnto him, whom hee had not onely long hated, but now had his hate

greatly encreased by the death of his Squire *Ismenius*. Besides he had made him as one of the chiefe causes that mooued him to this rebellion, and therefore was enclined (to colour the better his action, and the more to embrew the handes of his accomplices by making them guiltie of such a trespasse) in some formall sort to cause him to be executed: being also greatly egged thereunto by his mother, and some other, who long had hated *Philanax*, only because he was more worthy, then they to be loued.

But while that deliberation was handled, according rather to the humour then the reason of each speaker, *Philoclea* comming to knowledge of the har plight wherein *Philanax* stood, she desired one of the gentlewomen appointed to waite 10 vpon her, to go in her name, and beseech *Amphialus*, that if the loue of her had any power of perswasion in his mind, he would lay no further punishment, then imprisonment vpon *Philanax*. This message was deliuered euen as *Philanax* was entring to the presence of *Amphialus*, comming (according to the warning was giuen him) to receiue a iudgement of death. But when he with manfull resolution attended the 15 fruite of such a tyrannicall sentence, thinking it wrong, but no harme to him that should die in so good a cause; *Amphialus* turned quite the fourme of his pretended speech, and yeelded him humble thanks, that by his meanes he had come to that happines, as to receiue a commandement of his Lady: and therefore he willingly gaue him liberty to returne in safety whither he would, quitting him, not only of 20 all former grudge, but assuring him that he would be willing to do him any friendship and seruice: only desiring thus much of him, that he would let him know the discourse and intent of *Basilus* his proceeding.

Truely my Lord (answered *Philanax*) if there were any such knowne to mee, secret in my maisters counsell, as that the reuealing thereof might hinder his good 25 successe, I should loath the keeping of my bloud, with the losse of my faith, and would thinke the iust name of a traytor a hard purchase of a few yeares liuing. But since it is so, that my maister hath indeede no way of priuie practise, but meanes openly and forcibly to deale against you, I will not sticke in few words to make your required declaration. Then told he him in what a maze of a mazement, both *Basilus* 30 and *Gynecia* were, when they mist their children and *Zelmane*. Sometimes apt to suspect some practise of *Zelmane*, because she was a stranger; somtimes doubting some reliques of the late mutiny, which doubt was rather increased, then any way satisfied, by *Miso*: who (being found, almost dead for hunger, by certaine countrey people) brought home word, with what cunning they were trayned out, and with what vio- 35 lence they were caried away. But that within a few dayes they came to knowledge where they were, by *Amphialus* his own letters sent abroad to procure confederates in his attempts. That *Basilus* his purpose was neuer to leaue the siege of this towne, till he had taken it, and reuenged the iniury done vnto him. That he meant rather to win it by time, and famine, then by force of assault: knowing how valiant men he had 40 to deale withall in the towne: that he had sent order, that supplies of souldiers, pioneers, and all things else necessary, should dayly be brought vnto him: so as, my Lord (sayd *Philanax*) let me now, hauing receiued my life by your grace, let me giue you your life and honour by my counsell; protesting vnto you, that I cannot chuse but loue you, being my maister his nephew; and that I wish you well in all causes but 45 this. You know his nature is as apt to forgiue, as his power is able to conquer. Your fault passed is excusable, in that loue perswaded, and youth was perswaded. Do not vrge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather seeke to obtaine that constantlie by
seene

curtesie, which you can neuer assuredly enioy by violence. One might easily haue seene in the cheare of *Amphialus*, that disdainfull choller would faine haue made the answer for him, but the remembrance of *Philoclea* serued for forcible barriers betweene anger, and angry effects: so as he sayd no more, but that he would not put him to the trouble to giue him any further counsell: but that hee might returne, if he listed, presently. *Philanax* glad to receiue an vncorrupted liberty, humbly accepted his fauourable conuoy out of the towne; and so departed, not visiting the Princesses, thinking it might be offensive to *Amphialus*, and no way fruitfull to them who were no way but by force to be reskued.

- 10 The poore Ladies indeede, not suffered either to meete together, or to haue conference with any other, but such as *Cecropia* had already framed to sing all their songs to her tune, she herselfe omitting no day, and catching hold of euery occasion to moue forward her sonnes desire, and remoue their owne resolutions: vsing the same arguments to the one sister, as to the other; determining that whom she could
- 15 winne first, the other should (without her sonnes knowledge) by poyson be made away. But though the reasons were the same to both, yet the handling was diuerse, according as she saw their humours to prepare a more or lesse aptnesse of apprehension. This day hauing vsed long speech to *Philoclea*, amplifying not a litle the great dutifulnesse her sonne had shewed in deliuering *Philanax*: of whom she could get no
- 20 answer, but a silence sealed vp in vertue, and so sweetly graced, as that in one instant it caried with it both resistance, and humblenesse: *Cecropia* threatning in her selfe to run a more rugged race with her, went to her sister *Pamela*, who that day hauing wearied her selfe with reading, and with the height of her hart disdainning to keepe companie with any of the Gentlewomen appointed to attend her, whom she accounted
- 25 her iaylors, was working vpon a purse certaineroses and lillies, as by the finenesse of the worke, one might see she had borrowed her wits of the sorow that then owed the, and lent them wholly to that exercise. For the flowers she had wrought, caried such life in the, that the cunningest painter might haue learned of her needle: which with so prety a maner made his careers to & fro through the cloth, as if the needle it self
- 30 wold haue bin loth to haue gone frōward such a mistresse, but that it hoped to return thitherward very quickly againe: the cloth looking with many eyes vpon her, and lovingly embracing the wounds she gaue it: the sheares also were at hand to behead the silke, that was growne too short. And if at any time she put her mouth to bite it off, it semed, that where she had bin long in making of a rose with her hands, she wold
- 35 in an instant make roses with her lips; as the lillies seemed to haue their whitenesse, rather of the hand that made them, the of the matter wherof they were made; & that they grew thereby the Suns of her eyes, and were refreshed by the most indiscōfort comfortable ayre, which an vnwares sigh might bestow vpon them. But the colours for the ground were so well chosen, neither sullenly darke, nor glaringly lightsome,
- 40 and so well proportioned, as that, though much cunning were in it, yet it was but to serue for an ornament of the principal worke; that it was not without maruell to see, how a mind which could cast a carelesse semblant vpon the greatest conflicts of Fortune, could command it selfe to take care for so small matters. Neither had shee neglected the daintie dressing of her selfe: but as if it had bin her mariage time to
- 45 Affliction, she rather seemed, to remember her owne worthinesse then the vnworthinesse of her husband. For well one might perceiue she had not reiected the counsell of a glasse, & that her hands had pleased themselues, in paying the tribute of vn-deceiuing skill, to so high perfections of nature.

The sight whereof so diuerse from her sister (who rather suffered sorrow to dresse it selfe in her beauty, then that she would bestow any entertainment of so vn-welcome a guest, made *Cecropia* take a sudden assurednesse of hope, that she should obtaine somewhat of *Pamela*: thinking (according to the squaring out of her owne good nature) that beautie, carefully set forth, would soone proue a signe of an vnrefusing harborough. Animated wherewith, she sate downe by *Pamela*, and taking the purse, and with affected curiositie looking vpon the worke, Full happie is he (sayd she) at least if hee knew his owne happinesse, to whom a purse in this manner, and by this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he shall haue cause to account it, not as a purse for treasure, but as a treasure it selfe, worthie to bee pursed vp in the 10 purse of his owne hart. And thinke you so indeede (sayd *Pamela* halfe smiling) I promise you I wrought it, but to make some tedious houres belecue, that I thought not of them: for else I valued it, but euen as a verie purse. It is the right nature (sayd *Cecropia*) of Beauty, to worke vnwitting effects of wonder. Truly (sayd *Pamela*) I neuer thought till now, that this outward glasse, intituled Beautie, which it pleaseth 15 you to lay to my (as I thinke) vnguiltie charge, was but a pleasant mixture of naturall colours, delightfull to the eye, as musicke is to the eare, without any further consequence: since it is a thing, which not onely beastes haue; but euen stones and trees many of them do greatly excell in it. That other things (answered *Cecropia*) haue some portion of it, takes not away the excellencie of it, where indeede it doth 20 excell: since we see, that euen those beasts, trees, and stones, are in the name of Beauty onely highly praised. But that the beauty of humaine persons be beyond all other things, there is great likelihood of reason; since to them onely is giuen the iudgement to discerne Beautie; and among reasonable wights, as it seemes, that our sexe hath the preheminance, so that in that preheminance, Nature counteruailes al other 25 liberalities, wherein she may bee thought to haue dealte more fauourably toward mankind. How do men crowne (thinke you) themselues with glorie, for hauing either by force brought others to yeeld to their mind, or with long studie, and premeditated orations, perswaded what they would haue perswaded; and see, a faire woman shall not onely commaund without authority, but perswade without spea- 30 king. She shall not neede to procure attention, for their owne eyes will chaine their eares vnto it. Men venture liues to conquire; she conqueres liues without venturing. She is serued, and obeyed, which is the most notable, not because the lawes so commaund it, but because they become lawes themselues to obey her; not for her parents sake, but for her owne sake. She need not dispute, whether to gouerne by Feare 35 or Loue, since without her thinking thereof, their loue will bring forth feare, and their feare will fortifie their loue: and shee neede not seeke offensiuie, or defensiuie force, since her only lippes may stand for ten thousand shields, and ten thousand vneuitable shot goe from her eyes. Beautie, Beautie (deere Neece) is the crowne of the feminine greatnesse; which gift, on whom soeuer the heauens (there- 40 in most niggardly) do bestow, without question, she is bound to vse it to the noble purpose, for which it is created: not onely winning, but preseruing; since that indeede is the right happinesse, which is not onely in it selfe happy, but can also deriue the happines to another. Certainly Aunt (sayd *Pamela*) I feare me you will make me not only think my selfe fairer then euer I did, but think my fairenes a matter of greater valew then heretofore I could imagine it. For I euer (till now) conceiued these conquests you speake of, rather to proceed from the weakenesse of the conquered, then from the strength of the conquering power: as they say, the Cranes ouerthrow whole 45

whole battels of *Pygmies*, not so much of their Cranish courage, as because the other are *Pygmies*, and that we see, yong babes thinke babies of wonderfull excellency, and yet the babies are but babies. But since your elder yeres, & abler iudgement, find Beauty to be worthy of so incomparable estimation, certainly me thinks it ought to be held in dearenesse, according to the excellency, and (no more then wee would do of things which we account precious) euer to suffer it to be defiled.

Defiled? (sayd *Cecropia*) Mary God forbid that my speech should tend to any such purpose, as should deserue so foule a title. My meaning is to ioyne your beauty to loue; your youth to delight. For truly, as colours should be as good as nothing if there were no eyes to behold them: so is Beauty nothing, without the eye of Loue behold it: and therefore, so far is it from defiling it, that it is the only honoring of it, the only preserving of it: for Beauty goes away, deuoured by Time, but where remains it euer flourishing, but in the hart of a true louer? And such a one (if euer there were any) is my son: whose loue is so subiected vnto you, that rather the breed any offence vnto you, it will not delight it selfe in beholding you. There is no effect of his loue (answered *Pamela*) better pleaseth me then that: but as I haue often answered you, so, resolutely I say vnto you, that he must get my parents consent, and then he shall know further of my mind; for, without that, I know I shold offend God. O sweet youth (sayd *Cecropia*) how vntimely subiect it is to deuotion? No, no sweete neece, let vs old folks thinke of such precise considerations; do you enioy the heauen of your age, whereof you are sure: and like good householders, which spend those things that will not be kept, so do you pleasantly enioy that, which else will bring an ouer-late repentance, when your glasse shall accuse you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you see how the spring-time is full of flowers, decking it selfe with them, and not aspiring to the fruits of *Autumn*? what lesson is that vnto you but that in the April of your age, you shold be like *April*: Let not some of them for whom already the graue gapeth, and perhaps enuy the felicity in you, which themselues cannot enioy, perswade you to loose the hold of occasion; while it may not only be take, but offers, nay sues to be taken: which if it be not now taken, will neuer hereafter be ouertaken. Your selfe know, how your father hath refused all offers made by the greatest Princes about you, & will you suffer your beauty to be hidden in the wrinkles of his peeuiish thoughts? If he be peeuiish (said *Pamela*) yet is he my father, & how beautifull so euer I be, I am his daughter: so as God claimes at my hands obedience, and makes me no iudge of his imperfections.

These often replies vpon conscience in *Pamela*; made *Cecropia* thinke, that there was no righter way for her, then as she had (in her opinion) set her in liking of Beauty, with perswasion not to suffer it to be void of purpose, so if she could make her lesse feeling of those heavenly conceipts, that then she might easily wind her to her crooked bias. Therefore, employing the vttermost of her mischieuous wit, and speaking the more earnestly, because she spake as she thought, she thus dealt with her. Deare neece, or rather, deare daughter, if my affection and wish might preuaile therein, how much doth it increase (trow you) the earnest desire I haue of this blessed match, to see these vertues of yours knit fast with such zeale of Deuotion (indeede the best bond) which the most politicke wits haue found, to hold mans wit in well doing? For, as children must first by feare be induced to know that, which after (when they do know) they are most glad of: So are these bug-bears of opinions brought by great Clearks into the world, to serue as shewelles to keepe them from those faults, whereto else the vanitie of the world, and weakenesse of

senses might pull them. But in you (Neece) whose excellency is such, as it neede not to be held vp by the staffe of vulgar opinions, I would not you should loue Vertue seruilly, for feare of I know not what, which you see not: but euen for the good effects of vertue which you see. Feare, and indeede, foolish feare, and fearefull ignorance, was the first inuenter of those conceits. For, when they heard it thunder, not knowing the naturall cause, they thought there was some angry body about, that spake so loude: and euer the lesse they did perceiue, the more they did conceiue. Wherof they knew no cause that grew straight a miracle: foolish folkes, not marking that the alterations be but vpon particular accidents, the vniuersality being alwayes one. Yesterday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the same footsteps of his foregoers: so as it is manifest inough, that all things follow but the course of their owne nature, sauing onely Man, who while by the pregnancie of his imagination he strives to things supernaturall, meane-while he looseth his owne naturall felicity. Be wise, and that wisdom shall be a God vnto thee; be contented, and that is thy heauen: for else to thinke that those powers (if there be any such) about are moued either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chafe at the folly of our actions; carries as much reason as if flies should thinke, that men take great care which of them hums sweetest, and which of them flies nimblest.

She would haue spoken further to haue enlarged and confirmed her discourse: when *Pamela* (whose cheekes were died in the beautifullest graine of vertuous anger, with eyes which glistered forth beames of disdain) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked woman) peace, vnworthy to breath, that doest not acknowledge the breath-giuer; most vnworthy to haue a tongue, which speakest against him, through whom thou speakest: keepe your affection to your selfe, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You say yesterday was as to day. O foolish woman, and most miserably foolish, since wit makes you foolish, What doth that argue, but that there is a constancie in the euerlasting gouernour? Would you haue an inconstant God, since we count a man foolish that is inconstant? He is not seene you say, and would you thinke him a God, who might bee seene by so wicked eyes, as yours? which yet might see enough if they were not like such, who for sport sake willingly hood-winke themselues to receiue blowes the easier. But though I speake to you without any hope of fruite in so rotten a heart, and there be nobody else here to iudge of my speeches, yet be thou my witnesse, o captiuitie, that my eares shal not be willingly guiltie of my Creators blasphemie. You say, because we know not the causes of things; therefore feare was the mother of superstition: nay, because we know that each effect hath a cause, that hath engendred a true and liuely deuotion. For this goodly worke of which we are, & in which we liue, hath not his being by Chance; on which opinion it is beyond meruaile by what Chance any braine could stumble. For if it be eternall (as you would seeme to conceiue of it,) Eternity & Chance are things vn-sufferable together. For that is chanceable which happeneth; and if it happen, there was a time before it happened, when it might haue not happened; or else it did not happen; and so if chanceable, not eternall. And as absurd it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was deriued from Chaunce: for Chaunce could neuer make all things of nothing: and if therewere substances before, which by chance should meete to make vp this worke, thereon followes another bottomlesse pitte of absurdities. For then those substances must needes haue bin from euer, and so eternall: and that eternall causes should bring forth chanceable effects, is as sensible, as that the Sunne should bee the author of darkenesse. Againe, if it were chance-

chanceable, then was it not necessarie; whereby you take away all consequents. But we see in all things, in some respect or other, necessitie of consequence: therefore in reason we must needs know that the causes were necessary.

Lastly Chaunce is variable, or else it is not to be called Chaunce: but we see this
 5 worke is steady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed those peeces of this All, the heauie parts would haue gone infinitely downward, the light infinitely vpward, and soneuer haue met to haue made vp his goodly bodie. For before there was a heauen, or a earth, there was neither a heauen to stay the height of the ring, nor an earth, which (in respect of the round walles of heauen) should become
 10 a center. Lastly, perfect order, perfect beautie, perfect constancie, if these be the children of Chaunce, let wisdome be counted the roote of wickednesse. But you will say it is so by nature, as much as if you sayd, it is so, because it is so: if you meane of many natures cōspiring together, as in a popular gouernemēt to establish this faire estate; as if the Elementish and ethereall parts should in their towne-house set
 15 downe the bounds of each ones office; then consider what followes: that there must needs haue bene a wisdome which made them concurre: for their natures being absolute contrarie, in nature rather would haue sought each others ruine, then haue serued as well consorted parts to such an vnexpressable harmonie. For that contrary things should meete to make vp a perfection without a force and Wisdome aboue
 20 their powers, is absolutely impossible; vnlesse you will flie to that hissed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirme, that one vniuersall Nature (which hath bene for euer) is the knitting together of these many parts to such an excellent vnitie. If you meane a Nature of wisdom, goodnesse, and prouidence, which knowes what it doth, then say you that, which I seeke of you, and cannot conclude those
 25 blasphemies, with which you defiled your mouth, & mine eares. But if you meane a Nature, as we speake of the fire, which goeth vpward, it knowes not why: and of the name of the sea which in ebbing and flowing seemes to obserue so iust a daunce and yet vnderstands no musicke, it is but still the same absurditie superscribed with another title. For this word, one, being attributed to that which is All, is but one
 30 mingling of many, and many ones; as in a lesse matter, when we say one kingdome which containes many citties; or one cittie which containes many persons, wherein the vnder ones (if there be not a superiour power and wisdome) cannot by nature regard to any preferuation but of themselves: no more we see they do, since the water willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; so farre are they from a
 35 conspired vnitie: but that a right heavenly Nature indeed, as it were vnnaturing them, doth so bridle them.

Againe, it is as absurd in nature, that from an vnitie many contraries should proceed still kept in an vnitie: as that from the number of contrarieties an vnitie should arise. I say still, if you banish both a singularitie, and pluralitie of iudgement from a-
 40 mong them, then (if so earthly a mind can lift it selfe vp so high) do but conceiue, how a thing whereto you giue the highest, and most excellent kind of being (which is eternitie) can be of a base & vilest degree of being, and next to a not-being; which is so to be, as not to enioy his owne being? I will not here call all your senses to witness which can heare, nor see nothing, which yeeldes not most euident euidence of
 45 the vspeakeablenesse of that Wisdome: each thing being directed to an ende, and an end of preferuation: so proper effects of iudgement, as speaking and laughing are of mankind.

But what mad furie can euer so inueagle any conceipt, as to see our mortall and

corruptible felues to haue a reason, and that this vniuersalitie (whereof we are but the least peeces) should be vtterly deuoid thereof? as if one should say, that ones foote might be wise, and himselfe foolish. This heard I once alledged against such a godlesse mind as yours, who being driuen to acknowledge this beastly absurditie, that our bodies should be better then the whole world, if it had the knowledge, 5 whereof the other were voide; he sought (not able to answer directly) to shiift it off in this sort: that if that reason were true, then must it follow also, that the world must haue in it a spirit, that could write and reade too, and be learned; since that was in vs commendable: wretched foole, not considering that Bookes be but supplies of defects; and so are prayfed, because they helpe our want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which needes no recording of opinions to con- 10 firme his knowledge, no more then the Sunne wants waxe to bee the fewell of his glorious lightfulnessse. This world therefore cannot otherwise consist but by a mind of Wisedome, which gouerns it, which whether you will allow to be the Creator thereof, as vndoubtedly he is, or the soule and gouernour thereof, most cer- 15 taine it is that whether he gouerne all, or make all, his power is aboue either his creatures, or his gouernement. And if his power bee aboue all things, then consequently it must needes be infinite, since there is nothing aboue it to limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, must needes be boundlesse, and infinite: if his power bee infinite, then likewise must his knowledge bee infinite: for else there should be an infinite proportion of power which hee should not know how to vse; the vnensiblenesse whereof I thinke euen you can conceiue: and if infinite, then must nothing, no not the estate of fies (which you with so vnflauerie scorne did iest at) be vnknowne vnto him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bound- 20 ded, and so not infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then must needes his goodnesse and iustice march in the same ranke: for infinitenesse of power, and knowledge, without like measure of goodnesse, must necessarily bring forth destru- ction and ruine, and not ornament and preservation. Since then there is a God, and an all-knowing God, so as he sees into the darkest of all naturall secretes, which is the heart of Man; and sees therein the deepest dissembled thoughts, nay 30 sees the thoughts before they be thought: since he is iust to exercise his might, and mightie to performe his iustice, assure thy selfe, most wicked woman (that hast so plaguily a corrupted mind, as thou canst not keepe thy sickenesse to thy selfe, but must most wickedly infect others) assure thy selfe, I say (for what I say dependes of euerlasting and vnremoueable causes) that the time will come, when thou shalt 35 know that power by feeling it, when thou shalt see his wisdome in the manifesting thy ougly shamefulnessse, and shalt only perceiue him to haue bene a Creator in thy destruction.

Thus she sayd, thus she ended, with so faire a maiestie of vnconquered vertue, that captiuitie might seeme to haue authoritie ouer tyrannie: so fowly was the fil- 40 thinessse of impietie discouered by the shining of her vnstayned goodnesse, so farre, as either *Cecropia* saw indeed, or else the guilty amazement of a selfe-accusing conscience, made her eyes vntrue iudges of their naturall obiect, that there was a light more then humaine, which gaue a lustre to her perfections. But *Cecropia*, like a Batte (which though it haue eyes to discerne that there is a Sunne, yet hath so e- 45 uill eyes, that it cannot delight in the Sunne) found a trueth, but could not loue it. But as great persons are wont to make the wrong they haue done, to be a cause to doo the more wrong, her knowledge rose to no higher point, but to enuie a worthier,

worthier, and her will was no otherwise bent, but the more to hate, the more shee found her enemy provided against her. Yet all the while she spake (though with eyes cast like a horse that would strike at the stirrop, and with colour which blushed through yellowness) she sate rather still then quiet, and after her speech rather
 5 muttered, then replied: for the warre of wickedness in her selfe, brought forth disdainfull pride to resist cunning dissimulation; so as, saying little more vnto her, but that she should haue leysure inough better to bethinke her selfe; she went away repining, but not repenting: condemning greatly (as she thought her sons over-feeble humbleness, and purposing to egge him forward to a course of violence. For her
 10 selfe, determining to deale with neither of them both any more in maner of a suter: for what maiestie of vertue did in the one, that did silent humbleness in the other. But finding her son over-apt to lay both condemnation, and execution of sorrow vpon himselfe, she sought to mitigate his mind with feigned delays of comfort, who (hauing this inward ouerthrow in himselfe) was the more vexed, that he could not
 15 utter the rage thereof vpon his outward enemies.

For *Basilus* taught by the last dayes triall, what dangerous effects chosen courages can bring forth, rather vsed the spade, then the sword; or the sword, but to defend the spade; girding about the whole towne with trenches; which beginning a good way off from the towne, with a number of well directed Pioners, he still caryed be-
 20 fore him till they came to a neere distance, where he builded Fortes, one answering the other, in such sort, as it was a pretie consideration in the discipline of war, to see building vsed for the instrument of ruine, and the assayer entrenched as if he were besieged. But many fallies did *Amphialus* make to hinder their working. But they (exercising more melancholie, then choller in their resolution) made him find,
 25 that if by the aduantage of the place, few are able to defend themselves from many, that many must needes haue power (making themselves strong in feate) to repell few, referring the reuenge rather to the end, then a present requitall. Yet oftentimes they dealt some blowes in light skirmishes, each side hauing a strong retiring place, and rather fighting with many alarums, to vex the enemy, then for any hope of
 30 great successe.

Which euery way was a tedious comber to the impatient courage of *Amphialus*: till the fame of this warre, bringing thither diuerse, both strangers, and subjects, as well of Princely, as noble houses, the gallant *Phalantus*, who refrained his sportful delights as then, to serue *Basilus* (whom he honoured for receiued honors)
 35 when he had spent some time in considering the *Arcadian* manner in marching, encamping, and fighting, and had learned in what points of gouernement, and obedience their discipline differed from others, and so had satisfied his mind in the knowledges, both for the cutting off the enemies helpes, and furnishing ones selfe, which *Basilus* orders could deliuer vnto him, his young spirits (wearie of wanting cause to
 40 be wearie) desired to keepe his valure in knowledge, by some priuate acte, since the publike policy restrained him; the rather, because his old mistresse *Artesia* might see, whom she had so lightly forsaken: and therefore demanding and obtaining leaue of *Basilus*; he caused a Heralde to be furnished with apparell of his office, and tokens of a peaceable message, and so sent him to the gate of the towne to de-
 45 maund audience of *Amphialus*: who vnderstanding thereof, caused him both safely and courteously to bee brought into his presence: who making lowly reuerence vnto him, presented his Letters, desiring *Amphialus*, that whatsoeuer they contayned, hee would consider that hee was onely the bearer, and not the

inditer. *Amphialus* with noble gentlenesse assured him both by honourable speeches, and a demeanure which answered for him, that his reuenge, whensoever, should fort vnto it selfe a higher subiect. But opening the letters, he found them to speake in this maner.

P*halantius* of *Corinth*, to *Amphialus* of *Arcadia*, sendeth the greeting of a hate-⁵
 lesse enimie. The liking of martiall matters without any mislike of your person,
 hath brought me rather to the companie, then to the mind of your besiegers:
 where languishing in idlenesse, I desire to refresh my mind with some exercise of
 armes, which might make knowne the doers, with delight of the beholders. There-¹⁰
 fore, if there be any Gentleman in your Towne, that either for the loue of Honour,
 or honour of his Loue, will armed on horsebacke, with Launce, and sword, winne
 another, or loose himselfe, to be a prisoner at discretion of the conquerour, I will
 to morrow morning by Sunne-rising, with a trumpet and a Squire onely, attend
 him in like order furnished. The place I thinke fittest, the Iland within the Lake,¹⁵
 because it standes so well in the view of your Castell, as that the Ladies may haue
 the pleasure of seeing the combat: which though it be within the commaundement
 of your Castell, I desire no better security, then the promise I make to my selfe of
 your vertue. I attend your aunswere, and wish you such successe as may be to your
 honour, rather in yeelding to that which is iust, then in maintayning wrong by²⁰
 violence.

A*mphialus* read it with cheerefull countenance, & thinking but a little with him-
 selfe, called for inke and paper, and wrote this answer.

A*mphialus* of *Arcadia*, to *Phalantius* of *Corinth*, wisheth all his owne wishes, sa-²⁵
 uing those which may be hurtfull to another. The matter of your letters so fit
 for a worthy mind, and the maner so futable to the noblenesse of the matter giue me
 cause to thinke how happy I might account my selfe, if I could get such a friend,
 who esteeme it no small happinesse to haue met with so noble an enimie. Your³⁰
 challenge shall be aunswered, and both time, place, and weapon accepted. For your
 securitie from any treacherie (hauing no hostage worthie to counteruaile you) take
 my word, which I steeme aboue all respects. Prepare therefore your armes to fight,
 but not your hart to malice; since true valure needes no other whetstone, then de-
 sire of honour.³⁵

HAuing writte and sealed his letter, he deliuered it to the Herauld, and with-
 all tooke a faire chaine from off his owne necke, and gaue it him. And so
 with safe conuoy sent him away from out his Citie: and he being gone, *Amphialus*
 shewed vnto his mother, and some other of his chiefe Counsellours, what he had⁴⁰
 receiued, and how hee had aunswered: telling them withall, that hee was deter-
 mined to aunswere the challenge in his owne person. His mother with prayers
 authorized by motherly commaundement; his olde gouernour with perswasions
 mingled with reprehensions (that hee would rather affect the glorie of a priuate
 fighter, then of a wise Generall) *Clinias* with falling downe at his feete, and be-⁴⁵
 seeching him to remember, that all their liues depended vpon his safetie, sought
 all to dissuade him. But *Amphialus* (whose heart was enflamed with courage,
 and courage enflamed with affection) made an imperious resolution cutte off
 the

the tediousnesse of replies, giuing them in charge, what they shold do vpon all occasions, and particularly to deliuer the Ladies, if otherwise then well happened vnto him: onely desiring his mother, that she would bring *Philoclea* to a window, whence she might with ease perfectly discern the combat. And so, as soone as the morning began to draw dew from the fairest greenes to wash her face withall, against the approach of the burning Sunne, he went to his stable, where himselfe chose out a horse, whom (though he was neere twentie yeare old) he preferred for a peece of sure seruice, before a great number of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dappled thicke with blacke spots; his forehead marked with a white star, to which, in all his bodie there was no part sutable, but the left foote before; his mane and taile blacke, and thicke, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnesse. He caused him to be trimmed with a sumptuous saddle of tawnie, and gold ennamell, enriched with precious stones: his furniture was made into the fashion of the branches of a tree, from which the leaues were falling: and so artificially were the leaues made, that as the horse moued, it seemed indeed that the leaues wagged, as when the wind plaies with them; & being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did beare the straw-coloured liuerie of ruine. His armour was also of tawnie and gold, but formed into the figures of flames darkened, as when they newly brake the prison of a smokie fornace. In his shield hee had painted the *Torpedo* fish. And so appointed, he caused himselfe, with his trumpet and squire (whom hee had taken since the death of *Ismenus*) to be ferried ouer into the Iland: a place well chosen for such a purpose. For, it was so plaine, as there was scarcely any bush, or hillocke, either to vneleuell, or shadow it: of length and breadth enough, to trie the vttermost both of Launce and sword, and the one end of it facing the Castle, the other extending it selfe toward the campe, and no access to it, but by water: there could no secret treachery be wrought, and for manifest violence, either side might haue time inough to succour their party.

But there he found *Phalantus*, already waiting for him vpon a horse, milke white, but that vpon his shoulder and withers, he was freckned with red staines, as when a few strawberies are scattered into a dish of creame. He had caused his mane and taile to be died in carnation; his reynes were vine branches, which ingendring one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bit, there, for the bosse, brought forth a cluster of grapes, by the workeman made so liuely, that it seemed, as the horse champed on his bit, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to see the grapes so neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, so artificially made, as it seemed the horse stood in the shadow of the vine, so pretily were clusters of rubie grapes dispersed among the trappers which embraced his sides. His armour was blew, like the heauen, which a Sun did with his rayes (proportionately deliuered) guild in most places. His shield was beautified with this deuice; A greyhound, which ouerrunning his fellow, and taking the hare, yet hurts it not when it takes it. The word was, *The glory, not the pray.*

But as soone as *Amphialus* landed, he sent his squire to *Phalantus*, to tell him, that there was the Knight, ready to know whether hee had any thing to say to him. *Phalantus* answered, that his answere now must bee in the language of launces; and so each attended the warning of the trumpets, which were to sound at the appointment of foure iudges, who with consideration of the same, had deuided the ground. *Phalantus* his horse young, and feeling the youth of his maister, stood coruetting, which being well gouerned by *Phalantus*, gaue such a glittering grace, as when the

Sunne in a cleare day shines vpon a wauiing water. *Amphialus*-horse stood pawing
 vpon the ground, with his further foote before, as if he would for his maisters cause
 begin to make himselfe angry: till the trumpet sounding together, Together they
 set spurres to their horses, together tooke their Launces from their tighes, conuey-
 ed them vp into their rests together, together let them sinke downward; so as it was
 a delectable sight, in a dangerous effect; and a pleasant consideration, that there was
 so perfect agreement, in so mortall disagreement: like a musicke made of cunning
 discords. But their horses keeping an euen line their masters had skilfully allotted
 vnto them, passed one by another without encountring, although either might feelee
 the angry breath of other. But the staues being come to a iust descent, but euen 10
 when the marke was ready to meet them, *Amphialus* was runne through the vam-
 plate, and vnder the arme: so as the staffe appearing behind him, it seemed to the be-
 holders he had bene in danger. But he strake *Phalantus* iust vpon the gorget, so as he
 battred the lamms thereof, and made his head almost touch the backe of his horse.
 But either side hauing stayed the spur, and vsed the bit to stop ther horses fury, ca- 15
 sting away the troncheons of their staues, & drawing their swords, they attended the
 second summons of the death-threatening trumpeter, which quickly followed; and
 they assoone making their horses aunswer their hands, with a gentle gallop, set one
 toward the other, til being come in the nearenesse of litle more then a staues length.
Amphialus trusting more to the strength, then to the nimblenesse of his horse, put 20
 him forth with speedie violence, and making his head ioyne to the others flanke,
 guiding his blow with discretion, and strengthening it with the course of his horse,
 strake *Phalantus* vpon the head, in such sort, that his feeling sense did both dazell his
 sight, and astonish his hearing. But *Phalantus* (not accustomed to be vngratefull to
 such benefits) strake him vpon the side of his face, with such force, that he thought 25
 his iaw had bene cut asunder: though the faithfulnessse of his armour indeede gar-
 ded him from further damage. And so remained they awhile, rather angry with
 fighting, then fighting for anger, till *Amphialus*-his horse, leaning hard vpon the o-
 ther, and winning ground, the other horse feeling himselfe prest, began to rise a lit-
 tle before, as hee was wont to do in his coruet: which aduantage *Amphialus* tak- 30
 ing, set forward his owne horse with the further spurre, so as *Phalantus*-his horse
 came ouer with his maister vnder him. Which *Amphialus* seeing, lighted, with
 intention to helpe *Phalantus*. But his horse that had faulted, rather with vntimely
 art, then want of force, gat vp from burdning his burden, so as *Phalantus* (in the
 fall hauing gotten his feet free off the stirrop) could (though something bruiſed) 35
 arise, and seeing *Amphialus* neere him, he asked him, Whether he had giuen him any
 helpe in remouing his horse. *Amphialus* sayd No. Truly sayd *Phalantus*, I asked it,
 because I would not willingly haue fought with him, that had had my life in his mer-
 cy. But now (sayd *Phalantus*) before we proceede further, let me know who you are,
 because neuer yet did any man bring me to the like fortune. *Amphialus* listning to 40
 keepe himselfe vnknowne, told him he was a Gentleman, to whom *Amphialus* that
 day had giuen armour and horse to trie his valour, hauing neuer before bene in any
 combat worthy remembrance. Ah (sayd *Phalantus* in a rage) And must I be the ex-
 ercise of your prentif-age? and with that, choler, tooke away either the bruse, or the
 feeling of the bruse, so as he entred afresh into the combat, & boiling into his armes
 the disdaine of his hart, strake so thicke vpon *Amphialus*, as if euery blow would faine 45
 haue bene foremost. But *Amphialus* (that many like trials had taught, great spending
 to leaue small remnants) let passe the storme with strong wards, and nimble auoy-
 dings:

things: till seeing his time fit, both for distance and nakednesse, he strake him so cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gentleman fell downe withall in a fowne.

But *Amphialus*, pittying approued valour, made precious by naturall curtesie, went to him, & taking off his head-peece to giue him aire, the yong Knight (disdaining to buy life with yeelding) bad him vse his fortune: for he was resolu'd neuer to yeeld. No more you shall (sayd *Amphialus*) if it be not to my request, that you will account your selfe to haue great interest in me. *Phalantus* more ouercome by his kindnesse, then by his fortune, desired yet once againe to know his name, who in his first beginning had shewed such furie in his force, and yet such stay in his furie. *Amphialus*, then named himselfe, telling him withall, he wold thinke his name much bettred, if it might be honored by the title of his friend. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his mind, when he knew his mishap should be excused by the renowned valour of the other. And so promising each to other assurednesse of good will, *Phalantus* (of whom *Amphialus* would haue no other raunsome, but his word of friendship) was conueyed into the campe, where he would but litle remaine among the enemies of *Amphialus*: but went to seeke his aduentures other-where.

As for *Amphialus*, he was receiued with triumph into the Castle; although one might see by his eyes (humbly lifted vp to the window where *Philoclea* stood) that he was rather suppliant, then victorious: which occasion *Cecropia* taking (who as then stood by *Philoclea*, and had lately left *Pamela* in another roome, whence also she might see the combat) Sweet Lady (sayd she) now you may see, whether you haue cause to loue my son, who then lies vnder your feete, when he stands vpon the necke of his brauest enemies. Alas sayd *Philoclea*, a simple seruice to me, me thinks it is, to haue those, who come to succour me, destroyed: If it be my duty to call it loue, be it so: but the effects it brings forth, I confesse I account hatefull. *Cecropia* grew so angry with this vnkind answer, that she could not abstaine from telling her, that shee was like them that could not sleepe, when they were softly layed: but that if her son would follow her counsell, he should take another course with her: and so flang a way from her.

Yet (knowing the desperate melancholy of *Amphialus* in like cases) framed to him a very thankfull message, powdring it with some hope-giuing phrases; which were of such ioy to *Amphialus*, that he (though against publike respect, and importunity of dissuaders) presently caused it to bee made knowne to the campe, that whatsoeuer Knight would trie the like fortune as *Phalantus* did; he should in like sort be answered: so as diuers of the valiantest, partly of themselues, partly at the instigation of *Basilus*, attempted the combat with him: and according to euery ones humour, so were the causes of the challenge grounded: one laying treason to his charge; another preferring himselfe in the worthinesse to serue *Philoclea*, a third, exalting some Ladies beautie beyond either of the sisters; a fourth, laying disgraces to loue it selfe, naming it the bewitcher of the witte, the rebell to Reason, the betrayer of resolution, the defiler of thoughts, the vnderminer of magnanimitie, the flatterer of vice, the slaue to weakenesse, the infection of youth, the madnesse of age, the curse of life, and reproch of death; a fifth, disdaining to cast at lesse then at all, would make the cause of his quarrell the causers of loue, and proclaime his blasphemies against womankind; that namely that sexe was the ouersight of Nature, the disgrace of reasonablenesse, the obstinate cowards, the slaue-borne tyrants, the shops of vanities, the guilded wether-cocks, in whom

conscience is but peeuishnesse, chastity waywardnesse, and gratefulnesse a miracle. But all these challenges (how well so euer ended) were so well answered, that some by death taught others, though past learning themselves; & some by yeelding gaue themselves the lie for hauing blasphemed; to the great griefe of *Basilus*, so to see his Rebell preuaile, and in his owne sight to crowne himselfe with deserued honour.

Whereupon thirsting for reuenge, and else not hoping to preuaile, the best of his campe being already ouerthrowne; he sent a messenger to *Argalus* in whose approved courage and force, he had (and had cause) to haue great confidence; with a letter; requiring him to take this quarrell in hand, from which hee had hitherto spared him in respect of his late mariage. But now his honour, and (as he esteemed it) felicity standing vpon it, hee could no longer forbear to chalenge of him his faithfull seruice.

The messenger made speede, and found *Argalus* at a castle of his owne, sitting in a parler with the faire *Parthenia*, he reading in a booke the stories of *Hercules*, she by him, as to heare him reade; but while his eyes looked on the booke, shee looked on his eyes, and sometimes staying him, with some pretty question, not so much to bee resolved of the doubt; as to giue him occasion to looke vpon her. A happy couple, he ioying in her, she ioying in her selfe, but in her selfe, because shee enioyed him: both encreased their riches by giuing to each other; each making one life double, because they made a double life one; where desire neuer wanted satisfaction, nor satisfaction euer bred facietie; he ruling, because she would obey: or rather because she would obey, she therein ruling.

But when the messenger came in with letters in his hand, and haist in his countenance, though she knew not what to feare, yet she feared, because she knew not; but she rose, and went aside, while he deliuered his letters and message; yet a far off she looked, now at the messenger, and then at her husband: the same feare, which made her loth to haue cause of feare, yet making her seeke cause to nourish her feare. And well she found there was some serious matter; for her husbands countenance figured some resolution betweene lothnesse and necessitie: and once his eye cast vpon her, and finding hers vpon him, he blushed; and she blushed, because hee blushed, and yet streight grew pale, because she knew not why he had blushed. But when he had read, and heard, and dispatched away the messenger (like a man in whom Honour could not be rocked asleepe by affection) with promise quickly to follow; hee came to *Parthenia*, and as sorie as might be for parting, and yet more sorie for her sorrow, he gaue her the letter to reade. She with fearefull slownesse tooke it, & with fearefull quicknesse read it; and hauing read it, *Ah my Argalus* (sayd she) and haue you made such haist to answere? and are you so soone resolved to leaue me? But hee discoursing vnto her, how much it imported his honour (which since it was deare to him, he knew it would be deare vnto her) her reason ouerclouded with sorrow, suffered her not presently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and sighes; which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to giue order for his present departure.

But by that time he was armed and ready to go, she had recouered a litle strength of spirit againe, and comming out, and seeing him armed, and wanting nothing for his departure but her fearewell, she ran to him, tooke him by the arme, and kneeling downe without regard, who either heard her speech, or saw her demeanour, *My Argalus*, my *Argalus* (sayd she) do not thus forsake me. Remēber, alas, Remember that I haue interest in you, which I wil neuer yeeld shalbe thus aduentured. Your valour is already

already sufficiently knowne: sufficiently haue you already done for your country: ennow, ennow there are besides you to loose lesse worthie liues. Voe is me, what shall become of me, if you thus abandon mee? Then was it time for you to follow these aduentures, when you aduentured no body but your selfe, and were no bodies
 5 but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or neuer, I claime mine owne; mine you are, and without me you can vndertake no danger: and will you endanger *Parthenia*? *Parthenia* shall be in the battell of your fight: *Parthenia* shall smart in your paine and your blood must be bled by *Pharthenia*. Deare *Parthenia* (sayd he) this is the first time, that euer you resisted my will: I thanke you for it; but perseuer not in it;
 10 and let not the teares of those most beloued eyes be a presage vnto me of that, which you wold not shold happen. I shall liue doubte not: for so great a blessing, as you are was not giuen vnto me, so soone to be depriued of it. Looke for me therefore shortly, and victorious; and prepare a ioyfull welcome, and I will wish for no other triumph. She answered not, but stood as it were thunder-stricken with amazement: for
 15 true Loue made obedience stand vp against all other passions. But when he tooke her in his armes, and sought to print his heart in her sweete lippes, she fell in a sound, so as he was faine to leaue her to her Gentlewomen: and caried away by the tyrannie of Honour, though with many a backe-cast looke, and hartie grone, went to the campe. Where vnderstanding the notable victories of *Amphialus* he thought to
 20 giue him some daies respite of rest, because he would not haue his victory disgraced by the others wearinesse. In which dayes, he sought by all meanes (hauing leaue to parly with him) to dissuade him from his enterprise: and then imparting his mind to *Basilus*, because he found *Amphialus* was inflexible, wrote his desie vnto him in this manner.

25
 Right famous *Amphialus*, if my perswasion in reason, or prayer in good will, might preuaile with you, you should by better meanes bee like to obtaine your desire. You should make many braue enemies become your faithfull seruants, and make your honour flie vp to heauen, being caried vp by both the wings of valure
 30 and iustice; whereof now it wants the latter. But since my suite, nor counsell can get no place in you, disdain not to receiue a mortall challenge, from a man so far inferior vnto you in vertue, as that I do not so much mislike of the deede, as I haue the doer in admiration. Prepare therefore your selfe, according to the noble manner you haue vsed, and thinke not lightly of neuer so weake an arme, which strikes with the
 35 sword of iustice,

To this he quickly receiued this answer.

40
 Much more famous *Argalus*, I whom neuer threatnings could make afraide, am now terrified by your noble curtesie. For well I knowe, from what height of vertue it doth proceed, and what cause I haue to doubt such vertue bent to my ruine: but Loue, which iustifieth the vniustice you lay vnto me, doth also animate me against all dangers, since I come full of him by whom your selfe haue bin (if I be not
 45 deceiued) sometimes conquered. I will therefore attend your appearance in the Ile, carying this aduantage with me, that as it shall be a singular honour if I get the victorie, so there can be no dishonour in being ouercome by *Argalus*.

The challenge thus denounced, and accepted, *Argalus* was armed in a white armour, which was all guilded ouer with knots of womans haire, which came downe from the crest of his head-peece, & spread it selfe in rich quantity ouer all his armor:

his furniture was cut out into the fashion of an Eagle, whereof the beake (made into a rich icwell) was fastened to the saddle, the taile couered the crooper of the horse, and the wings serued for trappers; which falling of each side, as the horse stirred, the bird seemed to flie. His petrell and raines, were embrodered with feathers suitable vnto it: vpon his right arme he wore a sleeue, which his deare *Parthenia* had made for him, to be wore in iustes, in the time that successe was vngratefull to their well-deserued loue: it was full of bleeding harts, though neuer intended to any bloody enterprise. In his shield (as his own deuice) he had two Palme-trees, neere one another, with a word signifying, *In that sort flourishing*. His horse was of a fire forrell, with blacke feete, and backe list on his back, who with open nostrils breathed war, before he could see an enemy: and now vp with one leg, and then with another, seemed to complaine of Nature, that she had made him any whit earthie. 10

But he had scarcely vewed the ground of the Iland, and considered the aduantages (if any were) thereof, before the Castell boate had deliuered *Amphialus*, in all points provided to giue a hard entertainment. And then sending each to other their Squires in honourable maner, to know whether they should attend any further ceremonye; the trumpets sounding, the horses with smooth running, the staues with vnshaked motion, obediently performed their cholericke commandements. But when they drew neere, *Argalus* horse being hot, prest in with his head: which *Amphialus* perceiuing, knowing if he gaue him his side, it should be to his disaduantage, prest in also with him, so as both the horses and men met shoulder to shoulder, so as the horses (hurt as much with the striking, as being stricken) tumbled downe to the earth, dangerously to their maisters, but that they by strength nimble, and by vse skilfull, in the falling shunned the harme of the fall, and without more respite, drew out their swords with a gallant brauerie, each striuing to shew himselfe the lesse endamaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had now nothing else to trust to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that *Amphialus* was the sooner vp, but *Argalus* had his sword out the sooner: and then fell they to the cruellest combat, that any present eye had seene. Their swords first, like Canons, battering downe the wals of their armour, making breaches almost in euery place for troupes of wounds to enter. Among the rest, *Argalus* gaue a great wound to *Amphialus* disarmed face; though part of the force of it *Amphialus* warded vpon his shield, and withall (first casting his eye vp to *Philocleas* Window, as if he had fetched his courage thence) feyning to intend the same sort of blow, turned his sword, and with a mightie reuerse, gaue a cruell wound to the right arme of *Argalus*, the vnfaithfull armour yeelding to the swords strong guided sharpnesse. But though the blood accused the hurt of *Argalus*, yet would he in no action of his confesse it: but keeping himselfe in a lower ward, stood watching with timely thrustes to repaire his losse, which quickly he did. For *Amphialus* (following his fawning fortune) layd on so thicke vpon *Argalus*, that his shield had almost fallen peece-meale to the earth, when *Argalus* comming in with his right foot, and somthing stowping to come vnder his armour, thrust him into the belly dangerously, and mortally it would haue beene, but that with the blow before, *Amphialus* had ouer stricken himselfe so, as he fell side-ward downe, and with falling saued himselfe from ruine. The sword by that meanes slipping aside, and not piercing more deeply. *Argalus* seeing him fall, threatening with voyce and sword, bad him yeeld. But he striuing without aunswere to rise, *Argalus* strake with all his might vpon his head. But his hurt arme not able to master so sound a force, let the sword fall so, as *Amphialus*, though astonished with the 40

the blow, could arise: which *Argalus* considering, ranne in to grasp with him, and so closed together; falling so to the ground, now one getting aboue, and then the other; at length, both wearie of so vnlovely embracements, with a descending consent gate vp, and went to their swords: but happened each of his enemies: where
 5 *Argalus* finding his foes sword garnished in his blood, his hart rase with the same sword to reuenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his mind was euill wayted-on by his lamed force, so as he receiued still more & more wounds which made all his armour seeme to blush, that it had defended his maister no better. But *Amphialus* perceiuing it, and waying the small hatefulnessse of their quarrell,
 10 with the worthinesse of the Knight, desired him to take pittie of himselfe. But *Argalus*, the more repining, the more he found himselfe in disaduantage, filling his veines with spite in stead of blood, and making courage arise against faintnesse (like a Candel, which a little before it goes out, giues then the greatest blaze) so did he vnite all his force, that casting away the little remnant of his shield, and taking his sword
 15 in both hands, he stroke such a notable blow, that he cleft his shield armour, and arme almost to the bone.

But then *Amphialus* forgot all ceremonies, & with cruell blowes made more of his best blood succeed the rest; till his hand being stayed by his eare, his eare filled with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his sight to an excellent faire Lady, who came running
 20 as fast as she could, and yet because she could not as fast as she would, she sent her lamentable voyce before her. and being come, and being knowne to them both, to be the beautifull *Parthenia* (who had that night dreamed she saw her husband in such estate, as she then found him, which made her make such hast thither) they both maruailed. But *Parthenia* ran betweene them (feare of loue making her forget
 25 the feare of Nature) and then fell downe at their feete, determining so to part them, till she could get breath to sigh out her dolefull speeches: and when her breath (which running had spent, & dismayednesse made slow to returne) had by fobbes gotten into her sorrow-closed breast, for a while she could say nothing, but, ô wretched eyes of mine, ô wailefull sight, ô day of darkenesse: at length turning her eyes
 30 (wherein sorrow swamme) to *Amphialus*, My Lord (sayd she) it is sayd you loue; in the power of that loue, I beseech you to leaue off this combat, as euer your heart may find comfort in his affection, euen for her sake, I craue it: or if you be mortally determined, be so pitifull vnto me, as first to kill me, that I may not see the death of *Argalus*. *Amphialus* was about to haue answered, when *Argalus*, vexed with his Fortune, but most vexed that she should see him in that fortune. Ah *Parthenia* (sayd he)
 35 neuer till now vnwelcome vnto me, do you come to get my life by request? And cannot *Argalus* liue but by request? Is that a life? With that he went a side, for feare of hurting her, & wold haue begun the combat afresh. But *Amphialus* not only cõiured by that which held the Monarchie of his mind, but euen in his noble hart melting with
 40 cõpassion at so passionate a sight, desired him to withhold his hãds, for that he shold strike one, who sought his fauour; & would not make resistance. A notable example of the wonderfull effects of Vertue, where the conquerour sought for friendship of the conquered, and the conquered would not pardon the conquerour: both indeed being of that mind to loue each other for accepting, but not for giuing mercie, and
 45 neither affected to ouer-lieue a dishonour: so that *Argalus* not so much striuing with *Amphialus* (for if he had had him in the like sort, in like sort he would haue dealt with him) as labouring against his owne power (which he chiefly despised) set himselfe forward, stretching his strength to the vttermost. But the fire of that strife,

blowne with his inward rage, boyled out his blood in such abundance, that hee was driuen to rest him vpon the pommell of his sword : and then each thing beginning to turne round in the daunce of Death before his eyes, his sight both dazzled and dimmed, till (thinking to sit downe) he fell in a sound, *Parthenia*, and *Amphialus* both hastily went vnto him : *Amphialus* tooke off his helmet, and *Parthenia* laid his head in her lap, tearing off her linnē sleeues & partlet, to serue about his wounds : to bind which, she tooke off her hair lace, and would haue cut off her faire haire her selfe, but that the squires and iudges came in with fitter things for the purpose : while she bewayled her selfe with so lamentable sweetnesse, as was inough to haue taught sorrow to the gladdest thoughts, and haue engraued it in the minds of hardest mettall. 10

O *Parthenia*, no more *Parthenia* (sayd she) What art thou? what see'st thou? how is thy blisse in a moment fallen? how art thou, euen now before all Ladies the example of perfect happinesse, and now the gasing stocke of endlesse miserie? O God, what hath bene my desert to be thus punished? or if such haue bene my desert, why was I not in my selfe punished? O wandering life, to what wilderness wouldst thou lead me? But Sorrow, I hope thou art sharp inough to saue my labour from other remedies. *Argalus*, *Argalus*, I will follow thee, I will follow thee. 15

But with that *Argalus* came out of his sound, and lifting vp his languishing eyes (which a painefull rest, and iron sleepe did seeke to locke vp) seeing her, in whom (euen dying) hee liued, and himselfe seated in so beloued a place, it seemed a little cheerefull blood came vp to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almost dead, if some breath a little reuine it: and forcing vp (the best he could) his feeble voyce, My deare, my better halfe (sayd hee) I find I must now leaue thee: and by that sweete hand, and faire eyes of thine I sweare, that Death brings nothing with it to grieue me, but that I must leaue thee, and cannot remaine to answere part of thy infinit deserts, with being some comfort vnto thee. But since so it pleaseth him, whose wisdom and goodnesse guideth all, put they confidence in him, and one day we shall blessedly meet againe, neuer to depart: meane while liue happily, deare *Parthenia*, and I perswade my selfe, it will encrease the blessednesse of my soule, so to see thee. Loue well the remembrance of thy louing, and truly louing, *Argalus*: and let not (with that word he sighed) this disgrace of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hadst an vnworthy husband. They could scarcely vnderstand the last words: for Death began to seaze himselfe of his heart, neither could *Parthenia* make answer, so full was her breast of anguish. But while the other sought to stanch his remedilesse wounds, she with her kisses made him happie: for his last breath was deliuered into her mouth. 35

But when indeede she found his ghost was gone, then Sorrow lost the witte of vtterance, and grew ragefull, and madde, so that shee tare her beautifull face, and rent her haire, as though they could serue for nothing, since *Argalus* was gone; till *Amphialus* (so moued with pittie of that sight, as that he honoured his aduersaries death with teares) caused her (with the helpe of her women that came with her partly by force, to be conueyed into the boat, with the dead body of *Argalus*, from which she would not depart. And being come of the other side, there she was receiued by *Basilus* himselfe, with all the funerall pompe of militarie discipline, trayling all their Ensignes vpon the ground, making these warlike instruments sound dolefull notes, and *Basilus* (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in his face) sought to perswade some ease into *Parthenias* mind: but all was as easfull to her, as the hand- 45

handling of fore wounds: all the honour done, being to her but the triumph of her ruine, she finding no comfort, but in desperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate her selfe, if euer shee should find ease thereof. And well might she heare as she past through the Campe, the great prayes spoken of her husband, which all were recordes of her losse. But the more excellent he was (being indeed accounted second to none in all Greece) the more did the breath of those praises, beare vp the wings of *Amphialus*-his fame: to whom yet (such was his case) that Trophe vpon Trophe, still did but build vp the monument of his thraldome; hee euer finding himselfe in such fauour of *Philoclea*, that she was most absent, when he
 10 was present with her; and euer foriest, when hee had best successe: which would haue made him renounce all comfort, but that his mother, with diuersity of deuises, kept vp his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward discomfort, he was like to haue bin ouertaken with a notable treason, the beginning wherof (though meere-
 15 ly ridiculous) had like to haue brought forth vnto him a weeping effect.

Among other that attended *Basilus* in this expedition, *Dametas* was one; whether to be present with him, or absent from *Miso*: once, certaine it was without any mind to make his sword cursed by any widow. Now being in the campe, while each talke seemed iniurious, which did not acknowledge some duety to the fame of *Amphialus*,
 20 it fell out somtimes in cōmunication, that as the speech of heauen doth often beget the mentiō of hell, so the admirable prowesse of *Amphialus* (by a cōtrary) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardise of *Clinias*: in so much, as it grew almost to a proverbe, *As very a coward, as Clinias*. Describing him in such sort, that in the end, *Dametas* began to thinke with himselfe, that if he made a chalenge vnto him, hee
 25 would neuer answer it; and that then he should greatly encrease the fauourable conceite of *Basilus*. This fancie of his he vttered to a yong Gentleman, that waited vpon *Philanax*, in whose friendship he had especiall confidence, because he haunted his company, laughing often merily at his speeches, and not a little extolling the goodly dotes of *Mopsa*. The yong Gentleman as glad as if he had found a Hare
 30 sitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with *philanax*, and then (for feare the humour should quaille in him) wrote a challenge himselfe for *Dametas*, and brought it to him. But when *Dametas* read it, putting his head on his shoulder, and somewhat smiling; he sayd, it was prettie indeed; but that it had not a loftie stile enough: and so would needes indite it in this sort.

35
O *Clinias, thou Clinias, the wickedest worme that euer went vpon two legs; the very frutter of fraud, and seethnig pot of iniquitie: I Dametas, chiefe gouernour of all the royall cattell, and also of Pamela (whom thy Maister most perniciously hath suggested out of my dominion) do desie thee, in a mortall affray from the bodkin to the pike upward.*
 40 *VVhich if thou doost presume to take in hand, I will out of that superfluous bodie of thine make thy soule to be euacuated.*

The yong Gentleman seemed dumbe-stricken with admiration, and presently tooke vpon him to bee the bearer thereof, while the heate of the fit lasted, and ha-
 45 uing gotten leaue of *Basilus* (euery body helping on, to ease his mind ouercharged with melancholy) hee went into the towne according to the manner before time vsed, and in the presence of *Amphialus* deliuered this letter to *Clinias*; desiring to haue an answer, which might be fit for his reputation. *Clinias* opened it, read

it; and in the reading, his blood not daring to be in so dangerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it selfe more inwardly: and his very words (as if they were a-fraide of blowes) came very slowly out of his mouth: but, aswell as his panting breath would vtter it, he bad him tell the lowte that sent him, that hee disdained to haue any thing to do with him. But *Amphialus*, perceiuing the matter, tooke him aside, and very earnestly dealt with him not to shame himselfe; *Amphialus* only desirous to bring it to passe to make some sport to *Philoclea*, but not being able to perswade with him, *Amphialus* licenced the Gentleman, telling him, that by next morning he should haue answer.

The yong Gentleman (sory he had sped no better) returned to *Dametas*, who had fetched many a sower-breathed sigh, for feare *Clinias* would accept the challenge. But when he perceiued by his trusty messenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no disposition in him to accept it; then lo, *Dametas* began to speake his lowd voyce, to looke big, to march vp and downe, and in his march to lift his legges higher then he was wont, swearing by no meane deuotions, that the walles should not keepe the coward from him, but he would fetch him out of his cunnie-berrie: & then was hotter then euer to prouide himselfe of horse and armour, saying, hee would go to the lland brauely addoubed, and shew himselfe to his charge *Pamela*. To this purpose many willing hands were about him, letting him haue reynes, pettrel, with the rest of the furniture, and very braue bases; but all comming from diuerse houses, neither in colour nor fashion, shewing any kinred one with another; but that liked *Dametas* the better: for that he thought would argue, that he was maister of many braue furnitures. Then gaue he order to a painter for his deuise; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewfed from it, a sword with a great number of armes and legges cut off; and lastly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes and bookes. Neither did he sticke to tell the secrete of his intent, which was, that hee had left off the plough, to do such bloody deedes with his sword, as many inke-hornes and bookes should be employed about the historifying of them: and being asked, why he set no word vnto it, he said, that was indeed like the painter, that sayeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and there is the Hare: and with that he laughed so perfectly, as was great consolation to the beholders. Yet remembring, that *Miso* would not take it well at his returne, if he forgot his duety to her, he caused in a border about to be written:

Miso mine owne pigsnie, thou shalt heare newes of Dametas.

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill fauoured impatiencie he waited, vntill the next morning, that he might make a muster of himselfe in the lland; often asking them that very diligently wayted vpon him, whether it were not pittie, that such a coward as *Clinias*, should set his runaway feette vpon the face of the earth?

But as he was by diuerse principall yong Gentlemen, to his no small glory, lifted vp on horsebacke, comes me a page of *Amphialus*, who with humble smiling reuerence deliuered a letter vnto him from *Clinias*: whom *Amphialus* had brought to this, first with perswasions (that for certaine, if he did accept the combat, *Dametas* would neuer dare to appeare, and that then the honour should be his) but principally threatning him, that if he refused it, he would turne him out of the town to be put to death for a traytor by *Basilins*: so as the present feare (euer to a coward most

most terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full vnwillingly, vndertake the other feare, wherein he had some shew of hope, that *Dametas* might hap either to be sicke, or not to haue the courage to performe the matter. But when *Dametas* heard the name of *Clinias*, very aptly suspecting what the matter might be,

5 he bad the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he told him, of reading letters. But *Dametas*-is friend, first perswading him, that for certaine it was some submission, tooke vpon him so much boldnesse, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this sort.

10 **F**ill thy driuell, unworthy to haue thy name set in any letter by a souldiers hand written: could thy wretched heart thinke it was timorousnesse, that made *Clinias* suspend a while his answer: No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ram, which goes backe to returne with the greater force. Know therefore that thou shalt no sooner appeare (appeare now if thou darest) I say thou shalt no sooner appeare in the Iland (o happy thou, if thou do not appeare)

15 but that I will come vpon thee with all my force, and cut thee in peces (marke, what I say) ioynt after ioynt, to the eternall terrour of all presumptuous villaynes. Therefore looke what thou doost: for I tell thee, horrible smart, and paine shall be thy lot, if thou wilt needs be so foolish (I hauing giuen thee no such cause) as to meete with me.

20 The terrible words *Clinias* vsed, hoping they would giue a cooling to the heate of *Dametas*-is courage: and so indeed they did, that he did grone to heare the thundring of those threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, *Dametas* told them, that in his opinion he thought this answer came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and disarme himselfe: especially confide-

25 ring, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they (hauling him now on horsebacke) led him vnto the ferry, and so into the Iland; the clashing of his owne armour striking miserable feare into him, and in his mind thinking great vnkindnesse in his friend, that he had brought him to a matter so contrary to his complexion. There stayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came with him

30 teaching him how to vse his sword and Launce, while he cast his eye about, to see which way he might run away, cursing all Ilands for being euill situated) whē *Clinias* with a braue sound of trumpets landed at the other ende: who came all the way debating with himselfe, what he had deserued of *Amphialus* to drive him to those inconueniences. Sometimes his witte made him bethinke himselfe what was best to

35 be done: but feare did so corrupt his witte, that whatsoever he thought was best, he still found daunger therein; fearefulnesse (contrarie to all other vices) making him thinke the better of another, the worse he found himselfe, rather imagining in himselfe, what words he would vse (if he were ouercome) to get his life of *Dametas*, then how to ouercome, whereof hee could thinke with no patience. But

40 oftentimes looking to the earth pitifully complayning, that a man of such sufficiencie (as he thought himselfe) should in his best yeares be swallowed vp by so base an element. Faine he would haue prayed, but he had not hart inough to haue confidence in prayer, the glittering of the armour, and sounding of the trumpets giuing such an assault to the weake-breach of his false senses, that hee grewe from

45 the degree of feare to an amazement, not almost to know what he did; till two iudges (chosen for the purpose) making the trumpets cease, and taking the oath of those champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, set them at wonted distance, one from the other.

Then the trumpets sounding, *Dametas* horse (vsed to such causes) when hee thought least of the matter, started out so lustily, that *Dametas* was iogd blacke with head and body, and pulling withall his bridle-hand, the horse (that was tender of mouth) made halfe a stop, and fell to bounding, so that *Dametas* threw away his Launce, and with both his hands held by the pummell: the horse, halfe running, 5 halfe leaping, till he met with *Clinias*: who fearing he should misse his rest, had put his staffe therein before he began his careere: neither would he then haue begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that stood behind) strake on his horse, who running swiftly, the wind tooke such hold of his staffe, that it crost quite ouer his breast, and in that fort gaue a flat bastonado to *Dametas*: who, halfe out of his saddle, 10 went neere to his old occupation of digging the earth, but with the crest of his helmet. *Clinias* when he was past him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing least *Dametas* were at his backe turned with a wide turne; and seeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or neuer, to treade him vnder his horses feete; and withall (if he could) hurt him with his Launce, which had not broken, the encounter was so easy. But putting forth his horse, what with the falling of the staffe too low be- 15 fore the legs of the horse, & the comming vpon *Dametas*, who was then scrambling vp, the horse fell ouer and ouer, and lay vpon *Clinias*. Which *Dametas* (who was gotten vp) perceiuing, drew out his sword, prying which way he might best come to kill *Clinias* behind. But the horse that lay vpon him, kept such a pawing with his feete, 20 that *Dametas* durst not approach, but very leysurely; so as the horse (being lustie) gat vp, & withall fel to strike, and leape, that *Dametas* started backe a good way, and gaue *Clinias* time to rise, but so bruised in body, and broken in heart, that he meant to yeeld himselfe to mercy: and with that intent drew out his sword, intending when he came nearer, to present the pommell of it to *Dametas*. But *Dametas*, when he saw 25 him come with his sword drawne, nothing conceiuing of any such intent, went back as fast as his backe and heeles could leade him. But as *Clinias* found that, he began to thinke a possibility in the victory, and therefore followed with the cruell haft of a preuailing coward; laying vpon *Dametas*, who did nothing but cry out to him to hold his hand: sometimes that he was dead, sometimes that he would complaine to *Basilus*: but still bare the blowes vngratefully, going backe, till at length he came in- 30 to the water with one of his feete.

But then a new feare of drowning tooke him, so that not daring to go backe, nor to deliberat (the blowes still so lighted on him) nor to yeeld (because of the cruell threatnings of *Clinias*) feare being come to the extremity, fell to a madnesse of de- 35 spaire: so that (winking as hard as euer he could) he began to deale some blowes, and his arme (being vsed to a flaile in his youth) layd them on so thicke, that *Clinias* now began with lamentable eyes to see his owne blood come out in many places, and before he had lost halfe an ounce, finding in himselfe that he fainted, cried out aloud to *Dametas*, that he yeelded. Throw away thy sword then (sayd *Dametas*) and I 40 will saue thee; but still laying on, as fast as he could. *Clinias* straight obeyed, & humbly craued mercy, telling him, his sword was gone. Then *Dametas* first opened his eyes, and seeing him indeed vnweaponed, made him stand a good way off from it; and then willed him to lie downe vpon the earth as flat as he could. *Clinias* obeyed; and *Dametas* (who neuer could thinke himselfe safe, till *Clinias* were dead) began to 45 thinke with himselfe, that if he strake at him with his sword, if he did not kill him at the first blow, that then *Clinias* might happe to arise, and reuenge himselfe. Therefore he thought best to kneele downe vpon him, and with a great whittle hee had (hauing

hauing difarmed his head) to cut his throate, which he had vsed so with Calues, as he had no small dexteritie in it. But while he fought for his knife, which vnder his armour he could not well find out, and that *Clinias* lay with so sleepish a quietnesse, as it he would haue beene glad to haue his throate cut for feare of more paine, the Iudges came in, and tooke *Dametas* from off him, telling him he did against the law of Armes, hauing promised life, if he threw away his sword. *Dametas* was loath to consent, till they sware, they would not suffer him to fight any more, when he was vp: and then more forced, then perswaded, he let him rise, crowing ouer him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this combat of cowards being finished, *Dametas* was with much mirth and melody receiued into the campe as victorious, neuer a Page there failing to waite vpon this Triumph.

But *Clinias* though he wanted hart to preuent shame, yet he wanted not wit to feele shame; not so much repining at it for the abhorring of shame, as for the discomforts that to them that are shamed, ensue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to his practise, and a pulling on of iniuries, when men needed not care, how they vsed him. Infomuch, that *Clinias* (finding himselfe the scorning-stocke of euery company) fell with repining to hate the cause thereof; and hate in a cowards hart, could set it selfe no other limites, but death. Which purpose was wellegged on by representing vnto himselfe, what danger he lately was in; which still kept no lesse ougly figure in his mind, then when it was present: and quickly (euen in his dissembling countenance) might be discerned a concealed grudge. For though he forced in himselfe a farre more diligent officiousnesse toward *Amphialus*, then euer before, yet a leering eye vpon the one side at him, a countenance still framed to smiling before him (how little cause soeuer there was of smiling) and grombling behind him, at any of his commandements, with an vncertaine manner of behaviour: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet slowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well haue blazed, what armes his false hart bare. But despised: because of his cowardlinesse, and not marked, because despised, he had the freer scope of practise. Which he did the more desperately enter into, because the daily dangers *Amphialus* did submitte himselfe vnto, made *Clinias* assuredly looke for his ouerthrow, and for his owne consequently, if he did not redeeme his former treason to *Basilus*, with a more treasonable falshood toward *Amphialus*. His chiefe care therefore was, to find out among all sorts of the *Amphialians*, whom either like feare, tediousnesse of the siege, or discontentment of some vnsatisfied ambition would make apt to dig in the same mine that he did: and some already of welthy weary folkes, and vnconstant youths (who had not found such sudden successe as they had promised themselves) he had made stoupe to his lure. But of none he made so good accout as of *Artesia*, sister to the late slaine *Ismenus*, & the chiefe of the fixe maides, who had trained out the Princesses to their banket of miserie: so much did the sharpnesse of her wit counteruaile (as he thought) any other defects of her sex: for she had vndertaken that dangerous practise by the perswasion of *Cecropia*, who assured her that the two Princesses should be made away; and then *Amphialus* would marry her: which she was the apter to beleue, by some false perswasion her glasse had giuen her of her owne incomparable excellencies, and by the great fauour she knew he bare to her brother *Ismenus*, which (like a self-flattering woman) she conceiued was done for her sake. But when she had atchieued her attempt, & that she found the Princesses were so far from their intended death, as that the one of the was like to be her soueraigne,

and that neither her seruice had won of *Amphilas* much more then ordinary fauors, nor her ouer large offering her selfe to a mind otherwise owed, had obtained a looked-for acceptation; disdaine to be disdained spire of a frustrate hope, and perchance vnquenched lust-growne rage, made her vnquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice: which was increased by the death of her brother, whom she iudged neither succoured against *Philanax*, nor reuenged vpon *Philanax*. But all these coles were well blowne by the company she especially kept with *Zelmane* all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence vncheerfull to the mourning *Philoclea*, and condemned of the hie harted *Pamela*, she spent her time most with *Zelmane*. Who though at the first hardly brooking the instrument of their miserie, learning cunning in the schoole of aduersitie, in time framed her selfe to yeeld her acceptable entertainment. For *Zelmane*, when shee had by that vnexpected mischiefe her body imprisoned, he valure ouer maistred, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her loue eclipsed; assured of euil, fearing worse, able to know *Philocleas* misfortune, & not able to succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnesse of her hart could descend to sorow, but rather rose boyling vp in spite and disdaine; Reason hardly making Courage belecue, that it was distressed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so would her looks shoote out threatening vpon them. But the setters of seruitude (growing heauier with wearing) made her feeble her case, and the little preuailing of repining: & then grieve gate a seate in her softned mind, making sweetnesse of passed comforts by due title claime teares of present discomforts: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as little as any body, yet to be able to waile as much as any body; solitarie Sorrow, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of *Philoclea* graued in the glasse windowes, and by the foolish idolatrie of affection, no sooner written, then adored; and no sooner adored, then pitied: all the wonted praises (she was wont to giue vnto her) being now but figures of rhetorike to amplify the iniuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she would often make inuective declamations, methodized only by raging sorrow.

But when *Artesia* did insinuate her selfe into her acquaintance, she gaue the government of her courage to wit, and was content to familiarize her selfe with her: so much the rather, as that she perceiued in her certaine flaws of ill-concealed discontentment. In somuch that whē *Zelmane* wold sweeten her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes in neuer forgetting well-intended seruices, & inuoking the iustice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wrongfully hidden, & somtimes with a kind vnkindnes, charging *Artesia* that she had bin abused to abuse so worthy persons: *Artesia* (though falsly) would protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, neuer meaning other matter then recreation: & yet withal (by alleaging how vngratefully she was dealt with) it was easie to be seene, it was the vnrewarding, and not the euill employing her seruice, which grieved her. But *Zelmane* (vsing her own bias to bowle neer the mistresse of her own thoughts) was content to lend her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her desert, if willingly she would deliuer, whom vnwillingly shee had imprisoned; leauing no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter reuenge. So that *Artesia* (pusht forward by *Clinias* and drawne onward by *Zelmane*) bound her selfe to that practise; wherein *Zelmane* (for her part) desired no more, but to haue armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting therewith to performe any thing, how impossible soeuer, which longing Loue can perswade, and inuincible Valour dare promise.

But

But *Clinias* (whose faith could neuer comprehend the misteries of courage) perswaded *Artesia* while he by corruption had drawne the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemy: that she should impoyson *Amphialus*, which she might the easier do, because she her selfe had vsed to make the broaths, when *Amphialus* (either wearied or wounded) did vse such diet. And all things already were ready to bee put in execution, when they thought best to breake the matter with the two excellent sisters, not doubting of their consent in a thing so behoofefull to themselues: their reasons being, that the Princesses knowing their seruice, might be sure to preferue them from the fury of the entring souldiers: whereof *Clinias* (euen so) could scarcely be sufficiently certaine: and with-
 10 all, making them priuie to their action, to bind them afterwards to a promised gratefulnesse towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knew them to be alone, *Clinias* to *Philoclea*, and *Artesia* to *Pamela*: and *Clinias*, with no fewe words, did set forth what an exploite was intended for her seruice. But *Philoclea*
 15 (in whose cleere mind treason could find no hiding place) told him, that she would be glad, if he could perswade her cosin to deliuer her, and that she would neuer forget his seruice therein: but that she desired him to lay downe any such way of mischief, for that (for her part) she would rather yeeld to perpetuall imprisonment, then consent to the destroying her cosin, who (she knew) loued her, though wronged her. This vnlooked for answer amazed *Clinias*, so that he had no other remedy
 20 in his mind, but to kneele downe to *Philoclea*, and beseech her to keepe it secret, considering that the intention was for her seruice: and vowing (since she misliked it) to proceed no further therein, she comforted him with promise of silence, which she perfourmed.

But that little auayled: for *Artesia* hauing in like sort opened this device to *Pamela*, she (in whose mind Vertue gouerned with the scepter of Knowledge) hating so horrible a wickednesse, and streight iudging what was fit to doo; Wicked woman (sayd she) whose vnrepenting heart can find no way to amend treason, but by treason: now the time is come, that thy wretched wiles haue caught thy selfe
 30 in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods dispose of me as shall please them; but sure it shall be no such way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to liberty. This she spake something with a lowder voyce then she was wont to vse, so as *Cecropia* heard the noise; who was (sooner then *Artesia* imagined she would) come vp, to bring *Pamela* to a window, where she might see a notable skirmish happened in the
 35 Campe, as she thought, among themselues: and being a cunning fisher in troubled waters, streight found by their voyces and gestures, there was some matter of consequence, which she desired *Pamela* to tell her. Aske of her (sayd *Pamela*) and learne to know, that who do falshood to their superiours, teach falshood to their inferiours. More she would not say. But *Cecropia* taking away the each-way guilty *Artesia*, with
 40 feare of torture, gat of her the whole practise: so as *Zelmane* was the more closely imprisoned, and *Clinias* (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for *Artesia*, she was but lockt vp in her chamber, *Amphialus* not consenting (for the loue he bare to *Isimenes*) that further punishment should be layd vpon her.

But the noise they heard in the campe, was occasion of the famous Prince *Anaxius*, nephew to the Gyant *Euardes* whom *Pyrocles* slue: A Prince, of body exceedingly strong in armes so skillfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excell him; of courage that knew not howe to feare: parts worthie praise, if they had not beene

guided by pride, and followed by vniustice. For by a strange composition of mind, there was no man more tenderly sensible in any thing offered to himselfe, which in the farthest-fet construction, might be wrested to the name of wrong; no man, that in his owne actions could worse distinguish betweene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abstaine from a *Thraso*-like boasting, and yet (so vnluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would neuer boast more then he would accomplish: falsly accounting an vnflexible anger, a couragious constancie: esteeming feare, and astonishment, righte causes of admiration, then Loue and Honour. This man had foure sundrie times fought with *Amphialus*, but *Mars* had bene so vnpartiall an arbiter, that neither side gatte aduantage of the other. But in the end it happened, that *Anaxius* found *Amphialus* (vnknowne) in a great danger, and saued his life: whereupon (louing his owne benefit) began to fauour him, so much the more as thinking so well of himselfe, he could not choose but like him, whom he found a match for himselfe: which at last grew to as much friendship towards him, as could by a proud heart be conceiued. So as in this trauell (seeking *Pyrocles* to be reuenged of his vncles death) hearing of this sieg, neuer taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whose will was his God, and his hand his lawe, taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferiour to himselfe in martiall matters) and two hundred chosen horsemen (with whom hee thought himselfe able to conquere the world) yet commaunding the rest of his forces to follow, he himselfe vpon such an vnexpected suddennesse entred in vpon the backe of *Basilus*, that many with great vnkindnesse tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were so mured. There, if euer, did he make knowne the wonderfullnesse of his force. But the valiant, and faithfull *Philanax*, with well gouerned speed made such head against him, as would haue shewed, how soone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eye of Wisedom: but that *Amphialus* at the same time issued out, and winning with an abundance of courage one of the sconses, which *Basilus* had builded, made way for his friend *Anaxius* with great losse of both sides, but especially of the *Basilians*; such notable monuments had those two swords especially left of their Maisters redoubted worthinesse.

There with the respect fit to his estate, the honour due to his worthinesse, and the kindnesse which accompanies friendship (made fast by enterchaunged benefits) did *Amphialus* enforce himselfe (as much as in a besieged towne he could) to make *Anaxius* know, that his succour was not so needefull, as his presence gratefull. For causing the streetes and houses of the towne to witnesse his welcome (making both souldiers and Magistrates in their countenances to shew their gladnesse of him) hee led him to his mother, whom hee besought to entertaine him with no lesse loue and kindnesse, then as one, who once had saued her sonnes life, and now came to saue both life and honour. Tush (sayd *Anaxius*, speaking alowde, looking vpon his brothers) I am onely sorie there are not halfe a dozen Kings more about you: that what *Anaxius* can do, might be the better manifested. His brothers smiled, as thogh he had ouer-modestly spoken farre vnderneath the pitch of his power. Then was he disarmed at the earnest request of *Amphialus*: for *Anaxius* boiled with desire to issue out vpon the enemies, perswading himselfe, that the Sun should not be set, before he had ouerthrowne them. And hauing reposed himselfe, *Amphialus* asked him, whether he would visite the yong Princesses. But *Anaxius* whispered him in the eare: In trueth (sayd hee) deare friend *Amphialus*, though I am none of those, that loue to speake of themselues, I neuer came yet in companie of Ladies, but that they fell in loue

loue with me. And I that in my hart scorne them as a peeuish paltry sexe, not wor-
 thie to communicate with my vertues, would not doo you the wrong: since (as I
 heare) you do debase your selfe so much as to affect them. The curteous *Amphialus*
 could haue beene angry with him for those words; but knowing his humour, suffe-
 red him to daunce to his owne musicke: and gaue himselfe to entertaine both him
 5 and his brothers, with as cheerefull a manner, as could issue from a mind whom vn-
 luckie loue had filled with melancholie. For to *Anaxius* he yeelded the direction of
 all. He gaue the watchword, and if any grace were graunted, the meanes were to
 be made to *Anaxius*. And that night when supper was ended, wherein *Amphialus*
 10 would needes himselfe waite vpon him, he caused in Boates vpon the Lake an ex-
 cellent musicke to be ordered: which, though *Anaxius* might conceiue was for his
 honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to conuey it to the eares of the be-
 loured *Philoclea*.

The musicke was of Cornets, whereof one aunswering the other, with a sweete
 15 emulation, striuing for the glorie of musicke, and striking vpon the smooth face of
 the quiet Lake, was then deliuered vp to the castle walles, which with a proude re-
 uerberation, spreading it into the aire; it seemed before the harmonie came to the
 eare, that it had enriched it selfe in trauaile, the nature of those places adding melo-
 die to that melodious instrument. And when a while that instrument had made a
 20 braue proclamation to all vnpossessed mindes of attention, an excellent consort
 streight followed of fīue Violles, and as many voyces; which all being but Oratours
 of their maisters passions, bestowed this song vpon her, that thought vpon ano-
 ther matter.

25 **T**He Fire to see my wrongs for anger burneth:
 The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:
 The Sea to ebbe for grieve his flowing turneth:
 The Earth with pittie dul his center keepeth:
 Fame is with wonder blazed:
 30 Time runnes away for sorrow:
 Place standeth still amazed,
 To see my night of euils, which hath no morrow.
 Alas all only she no pittie taketh
 To know my miseries, but chaste and cruell
 35 My fall her glory maketh;
 Yet still her eyes giue to my flames their fuell,
 Fire, burne me quite till sense of burning leaue me:
 Aire, let me draw thy breath no more in anguish:
 Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereaue me:
 40 Earth, take this earth wherein my spirits languish.
 Fame, say I was not borne:
 Time, hast my dying hower:
 Place, see my graue vptorne:
 Fire, aire, sea, earth, fame, time, place shew your power,
 45 Alas from all their helpes I am exiled:
 For hers am I, and Death feares her displeasure.
 Fie Death thou art beguiled:
 Though I be hers, she makes of me no treasure.

But *Anaxius* (seeming awearie before it was ended) told *Amphialus*, that for his part he liked no musick, but the neighing of horses, the sound of trumpets, and the cries of yeelding persons: and therefore desired, that the next morning they should issue vpon the same place, where they had entred that day, not doubting to make them quickly awearie of being the besiegers of *Anaxius*. *Amphialus*, who had no whit lesse courage, though nothing blowne vp with pride, willingly condescended, & so the next morning (giuing false alarum to the other side of the campe) *Amphialus* at *Anaxius* earnest request, staying within the towne to see it garded, *Anaxius* and his brethre, *Lycurgus*, and *Zoilus*, sallied out with the best chosen men. But *Basilus* (hauing bin the last day somewhat vnprovided) now had better fortified the overthrowne scones; and so well had prepared euery thing for defence, that it was impossible for any valour from within, to preuaile. Yet things were performed by *Anaxius* beyond the credite of the credulous. For thrise (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he set vp his banner vpon the rampire of the enemy: though thrise againe by the multitude, and aduantage of the place, but especially by the comming of three valiant Knights, he were driuen downe againe. Numbers there were that day, whose deaths and ouerthrowes were excused by the well knowne sword of *Anaxius*: but the rest, by the length of time & iniury of Historians, haue bin wrapped vp in darke forgetfulness: only *Tressennius* is spoken of, because when all abandoned the place, he only made head to *Anaxius*; till hauing lost one of his legs, yet not lost the hart of fighting, *Lycurgus* (second brother to *Anaxius*) cruellie murdered him; *Anaxius* himselfe disdayning any further to deale with him,

But so far had *Anaxius* at the third time preuailed, that now the *Basilians* began to let their courage descend to their feete, *Basilus*, & *Philanax* in vaine struiuing with reuerence of authority to bridle the flight of astonishment, and to teach Feare discretion: so that *Amphialus*, seeing Victory shew such a flattering countenance to him, came out with all his force; hoping that day to end the siege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the sudden comming to the other side of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other in greene, and the third by his blacke armour and deuice streight knowne to be the notable Knight, who the first day had giuen Fortune so short a stoppe with his notable deedes and fighting hand to hand the deemed inuincible *Amphialus*. For the very cowards no sooner saw him, but as borrowing some of his spirit, they went like young Eagles to the pray, vnder the wing of their damme. For the three aduenturers, not content to keepe them from their rampire, leapt downe among them, and entered into a braue combate with the three valiant brothers. But to whether side Fortune would haue bene partiall, could not be determined. For the *Basilians*, lightened with the beames of these strangers valure, followed so thicke, that the *Amphialians* were glad with some hast to retire to the walles-ward: though *Anaxius* neither reason, feare nor example, could make him assuage the furie of his fight: vntill one of the *Basilians* (vnworthy to haue his name registred, since hee did it cowardly, sideward, when he least looked that way) almost cut off one of his legges: so as he fell downe, blaspheming heauen, that all the influences thereof had power to ouerthrow him, and there death would haue seized of his proud hart, but that *Amphialus* tooke in hand the blacke knight, while some of his souldiers conueied away *Anaxius*, so requiring life for life vnto him.

And for the loue and example of *Amphialus*, the fight began to enter into a new fitte of heate: when *Basilus* (that thought inough to bee done for that day) caused

retraite

retraite to be founded; fearing least his men following ouer-earnestly, might be the losse of those excellent Knights whom he desired to know. The knights as soone as they heard the retraite (though they were eagerly set, knowing that courage without discipline is nearer beastlinesse then manhood) drew backe their swords, though
 5 hungrie of more blood; especially the blacke knight, who knowing *Amphialus* could not refraine to tell him, that this was the second time he escaped out of his hands, but that he would shortly bring him a bill of all the former accounts. *Amphialus*, seeing it fit to retire also (most of his people being hurt, both in bodies and harts) withdrew himselfe, with so well seated a resolution, that it was as far from anger, as from
 10 dismayednesse; answering no other to the blacke knights threats, but that when hee brought him his account, he should find a good pay-maister.

The fight being ceassed, and each side withdrawne within their strengths, *Basilus* sent *Philanax* to entertaine the strange knights, and to bring them vnto him, that he might acknowledge what honor was due to their vertue. But they excused theselues,
 15 desiring to be knowne first by their deeds, before their names should accuse their vnworthinesse: and though the other replied according as they deserued, yet (finding that vnwelcome curtesie is a degree of iniury) he suffered them to retire theselues to a tent of their owne without the campe, where they kept themselves secret: *Philanax* himselfe being called away to another strange knight; strange not only by the
 20 vnlookedfornesse of his comming, but by the strange maner of his comming.

For he had before him foure damosels, & so many behind him, all vpon palfrayes and all apparelled in mourning weeds; each of them a seruant of each side, with like liueries of sorrow. Himselfe in an armour, all painted ouer with such a cunning of shadow, that it represented a gaping sepulcher, the furniture of his horse was all of
 25 Cypresse braunches: wherewith in olde time they were wont to dresse graues. His Bases (which he ware so long, as they came almost to his ankle) were embrodered onely with blacke wormes, which seemed to cawle vp and downe, as ready already to deuoure him. In his shield for *Impresa*, he had a beautifull child, but hauing two heads; whereon the one shewed, that it was already dead: the other aliue, but
 30 in that case, necessarily looking for death. The word was, *No way to be rid from death, but by death.*

This Knight of the tombe (for so the souldiers termed him) sent to *Basilus* to demaund leaue to send in a damosell into the towne, to call out *Amphialus*, according as before time some others had done. Which being graunted (as glad any
 35 would vndertake the charge, which no bodie else in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damosell went in, & hauing with teares sobbed out a braue challenge to *Amphialus*, from the knight of the Tombe, *Amphialus*, honourably entertaining the Gentlewoman and desiring to know the knights name (which the dolefull Gentlewoman would not discouer) accepted the challenge, onely desiring the Gen-
 40 tlewoman to say thus much to the straunge knight from him, that if his mind were like to his title, there were more cause of affinity, then enemie betweene them. And therefore presently (according as he was wont) as soone as he perceiued the knight of the Tombe, with his Damosels and Iudge, was come into the Iland, hee also went ouer in accustomed maner: and yet for the curtesie of his nature, desired
 45 to speake with him.

But the Knight of the Tombe, with silence, and drawing his horse backe, shewed no will to heare, nor speake: but with Launce on thigh, made him knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other end of the Career, whence wayting the start of the

vnknowne Knight, he likewise made his spurres claime haste of his horse. But when his staffe was in his rest, comming downe to meete with the Knight, now verie neere him, he perceiued the Knight had mist his rest: wherefore the curteous *Amphialus* would not let his Launce descend, but with a gallant grace, ran ouer the head of his therein friendedemie: and hauing stopped his horse, and with the turning of him, blessed his sight with the Vindow where hee thought *Philoclea* might stand, he perceiued the knight had lighted from his horse, and throwne away his staffe, angrie with his misfortune, as of hauing mist his rest, and drawne his sword to make that supply his fellowes fault. He also lighted, and drew his sword, esteeming victorie with aduantage, rather robbed then purchased: and so the other comming eagerly toward him; he with his shield out, and sword aloft, with more brauerie then anger, drew vnto him; and straight made their swords speake for them a pretie-while with equall fiercenesse. But *Amphialus* (to whom the earth brought foorth few matches) hauing both much more skill to choose the places, and more force to worke vpon the chosen, had already made many windowes in his armour for death to come in at; when in the noblenesse of his nature abhorring to make the punishment ouergo the offence, he stept a little backe, and withall, Sir knight (said he) you may easily see, that it pleaseth God to fauour my cause; employ your valour against them that with you hurt: for my part, I haue not deserued hate of you. Thou lyest false traytor, sayd the other, with an angry, but weake voyce. But *Amphialus*, in whom abused kindnesse became spitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (sayd he) onely couragious in discourtesie; thou shalt soone see whether thy tongue hath betrayed the hart, or no: and with that redoubling his blowes, gaue him a great wound vpon his necke, and closing with him ouerthrew him, & in the fall thrust him mortally into the body: and with that went to pul off his helmet, with intention to make him giue himselfe the lie, for hauing so sayd, or to cut off his head.

But the head-peece was no sooner off, but that there fell about the shoulders of the ouercome knight the treasure of faire golden haire, which with the face (soone knowne by the badge of excellency) witnessed that it was *Parthenia*, the vnfortunate-lic vertuous wife of *Argalus*; her beauty then euen in despite of the passed sorrow, or comming death, assuring all beholders, that it was nothing short of perfection. For her exceeding faire eyes, hauing with continuall weeping gotten a litle rednesse about them; her roundy sweetly swelling lips a litle trembling, as though they kissed their neighbor death; in her cheeks the whitenesse striuing by litle & litle to get vpō the rosinesse of them, her necke, a neck indeed of Alablaster, displaying the wound, which with most daintie bloud laboured to drowne his owne beauties; so as here was a riuier of purest red, there an lland of perfittest white, each giuing lustre to the other; with the sweete countenance (God knowes) full of an vnaffected languishing: though these things to a grossly conceiuing sense might seeme disgraces, yet indeed were they but apparelling beautie in a new fashion, which all looked-vpon thorough the spectacles of pittie, did euen encrease the lines of her naturall fairenes, so as *Amphialus* was astonished with grieve, compassion, and shame, detesting his fortune, that made him vnfortunate in victory.

Therefore, putting off his headpeece and gauntlet, kneeling downe vnto her, and with teares testifying his sorrow, he offred his (by himselfe accursed) hands to helpe her: protesting his life and power to be ready to doe her honour. But *Parthenia* (who had inward messengers of the desired deathes approach) looking vpon him and streight turning away her feeble sight, as from a delightlesse obiect, drawing out

out her words, which her breath (loath to depart from so sweet a body) did faintly deliuer, Sir (sayd she) I pray you (if praiers haue place in enemies) to let my maides take my body vntouched by you: the only honour I now desire by your meanes, is, that I haue no honor of you. *Argalus* made no such bargaine with you, that the hands which killed him, should helpe me. I haue of them (and I do not only pardon you, but thanke you for it) the seruice which I desired. There rests nothing now, but that I go liue with him, since whose death I haue done nothing but die. Then pawling, and a litle fainting, and againe comming to her selfe, ô sweete life, well come (sayd she) now feele I the bands vntied of the cruell death, which so long hath held me. And ô life, ô death, answer for mee, that my thoughts haue not so much as in a dreame tasted any comfort; since they were depriued of *Argalus*. I come, my *Argalus*, I come: And, ô God hide my faults in thy mercies, and graunt (as I feele thou dost graunt) that in thy eternall loue, we may loue each other eternally. And this ô Lord: But there *Atropos* cut off her sentence: for with that, casting vp both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble soule departed (one might well assure himselfe) to heauen, which lift the body in so heauenly a demeanure.

But *Amphialus* (with a hart oppressed with griefe, because of her request) withdrew himselfe, but the Iudges, as full of pity, had bene all this while disarming her, and her gentlewomen with lamentable cries, labouring to stanch the remediless wounds: and a while she was dead before they perceiued it; death being able to diuide the soule, but not the beauty from that body. But when the infallible tokens of death assured them of their losse, one of the women would haue killed her selfe, but that the squire of *Amphialus* perceiuing, by force held her. Others that had as strong passion, though weaker resolution, fell to cast dust vpon their heads, to teare their garments: all falling vpon the earth & crying vpon their sweet mistres; as if their cries could perswade the soule to leaue the celestiall happinesse, to come againe into the elements of sorrow: one time calling to remembrance her vertue, chastnesse, sweetnesse, goodnes to them: another time accursing theselues, that they had obeyed her, they hauing bene deceiued by her words, who assured them, that it was reuealed vnto her, that she should haue her harts desire in the battell against *Amphialus*, which they wrongly vnderstood. Then kissing her cold hands and feete, wearie of the world, since she was gone, who was their world, the verie heauens seemed with a cloudie countenance, to loure at the losse, and Fame it selfe (though by nature glad to tell such rare accidents, yet) could not choose but deliuer it in lamentable accents, & in such sort went it quickly all ouer the Campe: & as if the aire had bene infected with sorrow, no hart was so hard, but was as subiect to that contagion; the rarenesse of the accident, matching together (the rarely matched together) pittie with admiration, *Basilus* himselfe came forth, and brought the faire *Gynecia* with him, who was come into the campe vnder colour of visiting her husband, & hearing of her daughters: but indeed *Zelmane* was the Sainct, to which her pilgrimage was intended: cursing, enuying, blessing, and in her hart kissing the walles which imprisoned her. but both they with *Philanax*, & the rest of the principall Nobility, went out, to make Honour triumph ouer Death, conueying that excellent body (whereto *Basilus* himselfe would needs lend his shoulder) to a Church a mile from the Campe, where the valiant *Argalus* lay intombed; recommending to that sepulcher the blessed reliques of faithfull and vertuous Loue, giuing order for the making of the marbie images, to represent them, and each way enriching the tombe; vpon which, *Basilus* himselfe caused this Epitaph to be written.

The Epitaph.

His being was in her alone:
And he not being, she was none.

*They ioy'd one ioy, one grieve they grieu'd,
One loue they lou'd, one life they liu'd.
The hand was one, one was the sword
That did his death, her death afford.*

*As all the rest, so now the stone
That tombes the two, is iustly one.*

ARGALVS & PARTHENIA.

Then with eyes full of teares, and mouthes full of her praises, returned they to the campe, with more and more hate against *Amphialus*: who (poore Gentleman) had therefore greater portion of woe then any of them. For that courteous heart, which would haue griued but to haue heard the like aduenture, was rent with remem-
 bering himselfe to be the author: so that his wisdome could not so far temper his passion, but that he tooke his sword, counted the best in the world (which with much bloud he had once conquered of a mighty Giant) and brake it into many peeces (which afterwards he had good cause to repent) saying, that neither it was worthy to serue the noble exercise of chiuallrie, nor any other worthy to feele that sword, which had stroken so excellent a Lady: and withall, banishing all cheerefulnesse of his countenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his bed, not so much to rest his restless mind, as to auoid all company, the sight wherof was tedious vnto him. And then melancholy (only rich in vnfortunate remembrances) brought before him all the mishaps, with which his life had wrestled: taking this, not onely as a confirming of the former, but a presage of following miserie; and to his heart (already ouercome by sorrowfulnesse) euen trifling misfortunes came, to fill vp the rolle of a griued memorie, labouring only his wits to pierce farther & farther into his owne wretche dnesse. So as all that night (in despite of darknesse) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the delight began to restore to each boy his colour, then with curtaines bard he himselfe from the enioying of it: neither willing to feele the comfort of the day, nor the ease of the night: vntill his mother (who neuer knew what loue meant, but onely to himward) came to his bed side, and beginning with louing earnestnesse to lay a kind chiding vpon him, because he wold suffer the weaknesse of sorrow, to conquer the strength of his vertues; he did with a broken peece-meale speech (as if the tempest of passion vnorderly blew out his words) remember the mishaps of his youth, the euils he had bene cause of, his rebelling with shame, & that

that shame increased with shamefull accidents, the deaths of *Philoxenus* & *Parthenia*, wherein he found himselfe hated of the euer-ruling powers, but especially (and so especially, as the rest seemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall loue to *Philoclea*: to whom he had so gouerned himselfe, as one that could neither conquer, nor yeeld; being of the one side a slaue, and of the other iaylor: and withall, almost vpbaying vnto his mother the little successe of her large hoping promises, he in effect finding *Philoclea* nothing mollified, and now himselfe so cast downe, as hee thought him vnworthy of better. But his mother (as she had plentifull cause) making him see, that of his other griefes there was litle or no fault in himselfe, and therefore there ought to be litle or no grieve in him; when she came to the head of the fore, indeed seeing that she could no longer patch vp her former promises (he taking a desperat deafnesse to all delaying hopes) she confest plainly, that she could preuaile nothing; but the fault was his owne, who had marred the yong Girle by seeking to haue that by praier, which hee should haue taken by authoritie. That as it were an absurd cunning to make hie ladders to go in a plaine way; so was it an vntimely and foolish flattery, there to beseech, where one might commaund, puffing them vp by being besought, with such a selfe-pride of superiority, that it was not (forsooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (sayd *Amphialus*) how well I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors? assure your selfe, mother, I will sooner pull out these eyes, the they shall looke vpon the heauenly *Philoclea*, but as vpō a heauen, whence they haue their light, and to which they are subiect, if they wil powre downe any influences of cōfort, o happy I: but if by the sacrifice of a faithfull hart, they will not be called vnto me, let me languish, and wither with languishing, and grieve with withering, but neuer so much as repine with neuer so much grieuing. Mother, o Mother, lust may well be a tyrant but true loue where it is indeed, it is a seruant. Accursed more then I am, may I be, if euer I did approach her, but that I freezed as much in a fearefull reuerence, as I burned in a vehement desire. Did euer mans eye looke thorough loue vpon the maiesty of vertue, shining through beautie, but that he became (as it well became him) a captiue; and is it the stile of a captiue to write, *Our will and pleasure*?

Tush, tush sonne (said *Cecropia*) if you say you loue, but withall you feare; you feare least you should offend; Offend? and how know you, that you should offend? because she doth denie; Denie? now by my truth, if your sadnesse wold let me laugh, I could laugh hartily, to see that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negatiue in a womans mouth. My sonne, beleue me, a woman, speaking of women: a louers modesty among vs is much more praised, then liked: or if we like it, so well we like it, that for marring of his modestie, he shal neuer proceed further. Each vertue hath his time: if you commaund your souldier to march for most, & he for curtesie put others before him, would you praise his modesty? loue is your generall: he bids you dare: and will *Amphialus* be a dastard? Let examples serue: do you thinke *Theseus* should euer haue gotten *Antiope* with fighting and crossing his armes? he rauished her, and rauished her that was an *Amazon*, and therefore had gotten a habite of stoutnesse about the nature of a woman; but hauing rauished her, he got a child of her. And I say no more, but that (they say) is not gotten with out consent of both sides. *Iole* had her owne father killed by *Hercules*, and her selfe rauished, by force rauished, and yet ere long this rauished, and vnfathered Lady could sportfully put on the Lions skin vpon her owne faire shoulders, and play with the club with her owne delicat hands: so easily had she pardoned the rauisher, that she could not but delight in those weapons of rauishing.

But aboue all, marke *Helen* daughter to *Iupiter*, who could neuer brooke her manerly-wooing *Menelaus*, but disdained his humblenesse, and lothed his softnes. But so well she could like the force of enforcing *Paris*, that for him she could abide what might be abidden. But what? *Menelaus* takes hart, he recouers her by force, by force carries her home, by force inioyes her; and she, who wold neuer like him for seruice-ablesnes, euer after loued him for violence. For what can be more agreeable, then vpon force to lay the fault of desire, & in one instant to ioyne a deare delight with a iust excuse or rather the true cause is (pardon me o woman-kind for reuealing to mine own son the truth of this mistery) we thinke there wants fire, where we find no sparkles at least of fury. Truly I haue known a great Lady, long sought by most great, most wise, most beautiful, most valiat persons; neuer won, because they did ouer-superstitiously sollicite her: the same Lady brought vnder by another, inferiour to all the in all those qualities, only because he could vse that imperious maisterfulnes, which nature giues to men aboue women. For indeede (son, I confesse vnto you) in our very creation we are seruants: and who prayseth his seruants shall neuer be well obeyed: but as a ready horse streight yeelds, when he finds one that will haue him yeeld, the same fals to bounds when he feeles a fearful horsman. Awake thy spirits (good *Amphialus*) and assure thy selfe, that though she refuseth, she refuseth but to endeere the obtaining. If she weepe, and chide, and protest, before it be gotten, she can but weepe, and chide, and protest, when it is gotten. Thinke, she wold not striue, but that she meanes to trie thy force: and my *Amphialus*, know thy selfe a man, and shew thy selfe a man; and (beleue me vpon my word) a woman is a woman.

Amphialus was about to answer her, when a Gentleman of his made him vnderstand, that there was a messenger come, who had brought a letter vnto him from out of the campe: whoin he presently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this:

TO thee *Amphialus* of *Arcadia*, the forsaken Knight wisheth health, and courage, that by my hand thou maiest receiue punishment for thy treason, according to thine own offer, which wickedly occasioned, thou hast proudly begun, and accursedly maintained. I will presently (if thy mind faint thee not for his owne guiltinesse) meete thee in thy Island in such oracr, as hath by the former beene used: or if thou likest not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine own reasonable choise in any of them: so as thou do perfourme the substance. Make me such answer as may shew that thou hast some taste of honour: and so I leaue thee, to liue till I meete thee.

Amphialus read it, and with a deepe sigh (according to the humour of inward affliction) seemed euen to condemne himselfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howsoeuer the dulnesse of Melancholy would haue languishingly yeelded thereunto, his Courage (vnused to such iniuries) desired helpe of Anger to make him this answer.

Forsaken Knight, though your namelesse challenge might carry in it selfe excuse for a man of my birth & estate yet herein set your hart at rest, you shall not be forsaken. I wil without stay answer you in the wonted maner, and come both armed in your foolish threatnings, and yet the more fearelesse, expecting weake blowes, where I find so strong words. You shall not therefore long attend me in the Island, before prooffe teach you, that of my life you haue made your selfe too large a promise. In the meane time, Farewell.

This

This being written, and delivered, the messenger told him that his Lord would (if he liked the same) bring two Knights with him to be his Patrons. Which *Amphialus* accepted, and withall shaking off (with resolution) his mothers importunate dissuasions, he furnished himselfe for the fight, but not in his wonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inside outward) he would needes appeare all in blacke; his decking both for himselfe, and horse, being cut out into the fashion of very rags: yet all so daintily ioyned together with precious stones, as it was a braue raggednesse, and a rich pouertie: and so cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that he had giuen it a rustie shew, and yet so, as any man might perceiue was by art, & not negligence; carying at one instant a disgraced handsonnesse, and a new oldnesse. In his shield he bare for his deuise, a Night, by an excellent painter excellently painted, with a Sunne with a shadow, and vpon the shadow with a speech signifying, that it *only* was *barrd from inioying that, whereof it had his life: or, From whose I am, banished.* In his crest he caried *Philocleas* kniues, the only token of his forced fauour.

So past he ouer into the Iland, taking with him the two brothers of *Anaxius*; where hee found the forsaken Knight, attired in his owne liuerie, as blacke as sorrow it selfe could see it selfe in the blackest glasse: his ornaments of the same hew, but formed into the figure of Rauens, which seemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were snakes, which finely wrapping themselues one within the other, their heads came together to the cheekes and bosses of the bit, where they might seeme to bite at the horse, and the horse (as he champte the bit) to bite at them, and that the white foame was ingendred by the poysonous furie of the combat. His *Impresa* was a *Catoblepa* which so long lies dead, as the Moone (where-to it hath so naturall a sympathie) wants her light. The word signified that *The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beast wanted the Moones light.* He had in his headpeece, a whippe, to witnesse a selfe-punishing repentance. Their very horses were cole-blacke too, not hauing so much as one starre to giue light to their night of blackenesse: so as one would haue thought they had bene the two sonnes of Sorrow, and were come thither to fight for their birth-right in that sorie inheritance.

Which alliance of passions so moued *Amphialus* (already tender minded by the afflictions of Loue) that without staffe or sword drawne, he trotted fairely to the forsaken Knight, willing to haue put off this combat, to which his melancholy hart did (more then euer in like occasion) misgiue him: and therefore saluting him, Good Knight (sayd he) because we are men, and should know reason why we doo things; tell me the cause, that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Because I affirme (answered the forsaken Knight) that thou dost most rebellious iniurie to those Ladies, to whom all men owe seruice. You shall not fight with me (sayd *Amphialus*) vpon the quarrell: for I confesse the same too: but it proceeds from their owne beaurie, to inforce Loue to offer this force. I maintaine then (sayd the forsaken Knight) that thou art not worthie so to loue. And that confesse I too (sayd *Amphialus*) since the world is not so richly blessed, as to bring forth any thing worthy thereof. But no more vnworthy then any other, since in none can be a more worthy loue. Yes, more vnworthy then my selfe (sayd the forsaken Knight) for though I deserue contempt, thou deseruest both contempt, and hatred.

But *Amphialus* by that thinking (though wrongly, each indeede mistaking other) that he was his riual, forgot all mind of reconciliation, and hauing all his thoughts

bound vp in choller, neuer staying either iudge, trumpet, or his owne lance, drew out his sword, and saying, Thou lyest false villaine vnto him; his words and blowes came so quicke together, as the one seemed a lightning of the others thunder. But he found no barren ground of such seede: for it yeelded him his owne with such encrease, that though Reason and Amazement go rarely together, yet the most reasonable eyes that saw it, found reason to be amazed at the fury of their combat. Neuer game of death betted played; neuer fury set it selfe forth in greater brauery. The curteous *Vulcan*, when he wrought at his more curteous wifes request *Aeneas* an armour, made not his hammer beget a greater sound, then the swords of those noble Knights did, they needed no fire to their forge, for they made the fire to shine at the meeting of their swords, and armours, each side fetching still new spirit from the castle window, and carefull of keeping their sight that way as a matter of greater consideration in their combat, then either the aduantage of Sunne or wind: which Sunne and wind (if the astonished eyes of the beholders were not by the astonishment deceiued) did both stand still to be beholders of this rare match. For neither could their amazed eyes discerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of wind stirred, as if either for feare it would not come among such blowes, or with delight had his eyes so busie, as it had forgot to open his mouth. This fight being the more cruell, since both Loue and Hatred conspired to sharpen their humours, that hard it was to say, whether Loue with one trumpet, or Hatred with another, gaue the lowder alarum to their courages. Spite, rage, disdaine, shame, reuenge, came waiting vpon Hatred: of the other side came with loue-longing Desire, both inuincible Hope, and fearelesse Despaire, with riuallike Iealousie, which (although brought vp within doores in the schoole of *Cupid*) would shew themselues no lesse forward, then the other dustie band of *Mars*, to make themselues notable in the notableness of this combat. Of either side Confidence, vnacquainted with Losse, but assuring trust to ouercome, and good experience how to ouercome: now seconding their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horses, to winne ground of the enemy; now vnlooked-for parting one from the other, to winne aduantage by an aduantageous returne. But force against force, skill against skill, so enterchangeably encountred, that it was not easie to determine, whether enterprising, or preuenting came former: both, sometimes at one instant, doing and suffering wrong, and choller no lesse rising of the doing, then of the suffering. But as the fire, the more fuell is put to it, the more hungrie still it is to deuoure more: so the more they strake, the more vnſatisfied they were with striking. Their verie armour by peecemeale fell away from them: and yet their flesh abode the wounds constantly, as though it were lesse sensible of smart, then the senslesse armour: their blood in most places stayning their blacke colour, as if it would giue a more liuely colour of mourning, then blacke can do. And so a long space they fought, while neither vertue nor fortune seemed partiall of either side: which so tormented the vnquiet hart of *Amphialus*, that he resolved to see a quicke end: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding strength to his blow, he strake in such wise vpon the side of the others head, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: so as he was quite from himselfe, casting his armes abroad, and readie to fall downe; his sword likewise went out of his hand; but that being fast by a chaine to his arme, he could not loose. And *Amphialus* vsed the fauour of occasion, redoubling his blowes: but the horse (weary to be beaten, as well as the maister) carried his maister away, till he came vnto himself. But then who could haue scene him, might

might well haue discerned shame in his cheekes, and reuenge in his eyes: so as setting his teeth together with rage, he came running vpon *Amphialus*, reaching out his arme, which had gathered vp the sword, meaning with that blow to haue cleaued *Amphialus* in two. But *Amphialus* seeing the blow comming, shunned it with nimble turning his horse aside; wherewith the forsaken Knight ouer-strake himselfe
5 so, as almost he came downe with his owne strength. But the more hungrie of his purpose, the more he was bard the food of it: disdaining the resistance, both of force and fortune, he returned vpon the spurre againe, and ranne with such violence vpon *Amphialus*, that his horse with the force of the shooke rose vp before, almost ouerturned: which *Amphialus* perceiuing, with rayne and spurre put forth his
10 horse; and withall gaue a mightie blow in the descent of his horse, vpon the shoulder of the forsaken Knight; from whence sliding, it fell vpon the necke of his horse, so as horse and man fell to the ground: but he was scarce downe before he was vp on his feete againe, with braue gesture shewing rising of courage, in the falling of fortune. But the curteous *Amphialus* excused himselfe, for hauing (against his will)
15 kild his horse. Excuse thy selfe for viler faults (answered the forsaken Knight) and vse this poore aduantage the best thou canst; for thou shalt quickly finde thou hast neede of more. Thy folly (sayd *Amphialus*) shall not make me forget my selfe: and therewith (trotting a little aside) alighted from his horse, because he would not
20 haue fortune come to claime any part of the victory. Which curteous act would haue mollified the noble heart of the forsaken Knight, if any other had done it, besides the Iaylor of his mistresse: but that was a sufficient defeazaunce for the firmeft bond of good nature; and therefore he was no sooner alighted, but that he ranne vnto him, reentring into as cruell a fight, as eye did euer see, or thought
25 could reasonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weake words to be able to expresse it. For what they had done on horsebacke, was but as a morsell to keepe their stomackes in appetite, in comparison of that, which now (being themselues) they did. Nor euer glutton by the change of daintie diet could be brought to fresh feeding (when he might haue bene satisfied before) with more earnestnesse, then those
30 (by the change of their manner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any else would haue thought they had had their fill already. *Amphialus* being the taller man, for the most part stood with his right legge before; his shield at the vttermost length of his arme; his sword hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But when he strake, which came so thick, as if euerie blow would striue to be foremost, his arme seemed
35 still a postillion of death. The forsaken Knight shewed with like skill, vnlike gesture, keeping himselfe in continuall motion, proportioning the distance betweene them to any thing that *Amphialus* attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conueighed his hand; and since nature had made him something the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not striue with nature: shunning rather then warding his
40 blowes; like a cunning mastiffe, who knowes the sharpnes of the horne & strength of the Bull; fights low to get his proper aduantage; answering mightines with nimblenes, and yet at times imploying his wonderfull force, wherein he was second to none. In summe, the blowes were strong, the thrusts thicke, and the auoydings cunning. But the forsaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being conquered to
45 be long in conquering) strake him so mightie a blow, that he made *Amphialus* put knee to the ground, without any humblenesse. But when he felt himselfe striken downe, and saw himselfe striken downe by his riual, then shame seemed one arme, and disdaine another; fury in his eyes, and reuenge in his heart; skill and force gaue

place, and they tooke the place of skill and force: with so vnweariable a manner, that the forsaken Knight also was driuen to leaue the sterne of cunning, and giue himself wholly to be guided by the storme of fury: there being in both (because hate would not suffer admiration) extreame disdain to find themselves so matched.

What (sayd *Amphialus* to himselfe) am I *Amphialus*, before whom so many mon-
sters and Gyants haue false dead, when I onely sought causelesse aduentures? and
can one Knight now withstand me in the presence of *Philoclea*, and fighting for *Phi-
loclea*? or since I lost my liberty, haue I lost my courage? haue I gotten the heart of a
slave, as well as the fortune? If an army were against me in the fight of *Philoclea*,
could it resist me? O beast, one man resists thee: thy riual resists thee, or am I indeed
Amphialus? haue not passions kild him, and wretched I (I know not how) succeeded
into his place? Of the other side, the forsaken Knight with no lesse spite, fell out with
himselfe; Hast thou broken (sayd he to himselfe) the commandement of thy onely
Princessse to come now into her presence, and in her presence to proue thy selfe a
coward? Doth *Asia* and *Egypt* set vp Trophies vnto thee, to bee matched here by a
traytor? O noble *Barsanes*, how shamed will thy soule be, that he that slew thee,
should be resisted by this one man? O incomparable *Pyrocles*, more grieued wilt
thou be with thy friends shame, then with thine owne imprisonment, when thou
shalt know how little I haue bin able to do for the deliury of thee, and those heauen-
ly Princesses. Am I worthy to be friēd to the most valorous Prince that euer was en-
tituled valorous, and shew my selfe so weake a wretch? No, shamed *Musidorus*, wor-
thie for nothing, but to keepe sheepe, get thee a sheephooke againe, since thou canst
use a sword no better.

Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then with another, sharpen their
ouer-sharpe humors; like the Lion that beates himselfe with his owne taile, to make
himselfe the more angrie. These thoughts indeede not staying, but whetting their
angrie swords, which now had put on the apparell of Crueltie: they bleeding
so abundantly, that every body that saw them, fainted for them, and yet they
fainted not in themselves: their smart being more sensible to others eyes, then to
their owne feeling. Wrath and Courage barring the common sense from bringing
any message of their case to the mind: Paine, Wearinesse, & Weaknesse, not daring
to make knowne their case (though already in the limits of death) in the presence of
so violent furie: which filling the veines with rage, in steede of blood, and making
the mind minister spirites to the body, a great while held out their fight, like an ar-
row shotte vppward by the force of the bow, though by his owne nature hee would
go downeward. The forsaken Knight had the more wounds, but *Amphialus* had
the forer; which the other (watching time and place) had cunningly giuen vnto
him. Who euer saw a well-mand Galley fight with a tall ship, might make vnto him-
selfe some kind of comparison of the difference of these two Knights; a better cou-
ple then which the world could not bragge of. *Amphialus* seemed to excell in
strength, the forsaken Knight in nimblenesse; and yet did the ones strength excell in
nimblenesse, & the others nimblenesse excell in strength: but now, strength & nim-
blenesse were both gone, and excesse of courage onely maintained the fight. Three
times had *Amphialus* with his mighty blowes driuen the forsaken Knight to goe
staggering backward, but euery one of those times hee requited paine with smart
and shame with repulse. And now, whether he had cause, or that ouer-much confi-
dence (an ouer-forward scholler of vnconquered Courage) made him thinke he had
cause, he began to perswade himselfe he had the aduantage of the comba, though
the

the aduantage he tooke himselfe to haue, was only that he should be the later to die: which hope, Hate (as vnsecrēt as Loue) could not conceale, but drawing himselfe a litle backe from him, brake out in these maner of words.

Ah *Amphialus* (said the forsaken knight) this third time thou shalt not escape me, but thy death shall satisfie thy iniurie and my malice, and pay for the crueltie thou shewedst in killing the noble *Argalus* and the faire *Parthenia*. In troth (said *Amphialus*) thou art the best knight that euer I fought withall, which would make me willing to grant thee thy life, if thy wit were as good as thy courages; (that besides other follies) layest that to my charge, which most against my will was committed. But whether my death be in thy power, or no, let this tell thee; and vpon the word wayted a blow, which parted his shield into two peeces; & despising the weake resistāce of his alreadie broken armour, made a great breach into his heart side, as if he wold make a passage for his loue to get out at.

But paine rather seemed to increase life, then to weaken life in those champions. For the forsaken knight comming in with his right leg, & making it guide the force of the blow, strake *Amphialus* vpon the bellie so horrible a wound, that his guts came out withall. Which *Amphialus* perceiuing (fearing death, onely because it should come with ouerthrow) he seemed to coniure all his strength for one moments seruice; and so, lifting vp his sword with both hands, hit the forsaken knight vpon the head, a blow, wherewith his sword brake. But (as if it would do a notable seruice before it died) it preuayled so, euen in the instant of breaking, that the forsaken knight fell to the ground, quite for that instant forgetting both loue and hatred: & *Amphialus* (finding himselfe also in such weaknesse, as he looked for speedy death) glad of the victorie, though litle hoping to enioy it, puld vp his visar, meaning with his dagger to giue him death; but in stead of death, he gaue him life: for, the aire so reuiued his spirits, that comming to himselfe, and seeing his present danger, with a life conquering death, he tooke *Amphialus* by the thigh, and together rose himselfe and ouerturned him. But *Amphialus* scrambled vp againe, both now so weake indeed, as their motions rather seemed the after drops to a storm, thē any matter of great fury.

But *Amphialus* might repēt himselfe of his wilfull breaking his good sword: for, the forsaken knight (hauing with the extremitie of iustlie-conceiued hate, and the vnprofitfulnesse of his owne neare-threatning death, blotted out all complements of curtesie) let flie at him so cruellie, that though the blowes were weake, yet weaknesse vpon a weakned subiect, proued such strength, that *Amphialus* hauing attempted in vaine, once or twise to close with him, receiuing wound vpon wound, sent his whole burthen to strike the earth with falling, since he could strike his foe no better in standing: giuing no other tokens of himselfe, then as of a man euen ready to take his oath to be deaths true seruant.

Which when the hardie brothers of *Anaxius* perceiued, not recking law of armes, nor vse of chiuallrie, they flew in to defend their friend, or reuenge their losse of him. But they were forthwith encountred with the two braue companions of the forsaken knight, whereof the one being all in greene, both armour and furniture, it seemed a pleasant garden, wherein grew Orange trees; which with their golden fruites, cunningly beaten in and embroydered, greatly enriched the eye-pleasing colour of greene. In his shield was a sheepe feeding in a pleasant field, with this word *without feare or enuie*. And therefore was called the Knight of the sheepe. The other knight was all in milke white, his attiring else all cut in stars, which made of cloth of siluer, and siluer spangles, each way seemed to cast manie aspects. His deuice was

the verie Poleit selfe, about which manie starres stirring, but the place it selfe left void. The word was, *The best place yet reserved*. But these foure knights inheriting the hate of their friends, began a most fierce combat: the forsaken knight himselfe not able to helpe his side, but was driuen to sit him downe, with the extreame faintnesse of his more and more fainting body. But those valiant couples seeking honour by dishonouring, and to build safetie vpon ruine, gaue new appetites to the almost gluttoned eyes of the beholders: and now bloud began to put sweat from the full possession of their outsidcs, no aduantage being yet to be seene; onely the knight of the sheepe seeming most deliuer, and affecting most all that viewed him, when a companie of souldiers sent by *Cecropia*, came out in boates to the Island; and all came running to the destruction of the three knights, whereof the one was vtterlie vnable to defend himselfe.

But then did the other two knights shew their wonderfull courage and fidelitie. For turning backe to backe, and both bestriding the blacke forsaken knight (who had fainted so long til he had lost the feeling of faintnesse) they held play against the rest, though the two brothers vnknighly helped them; till *philanax* (who watchfully attended such traiterous practises) sent likewise ouer, both by boat and swimming, so choice a number as did put most of the other to the sword. Onely the two brothers with some of the brauest of them, carying away the body of *Amphialus*, which they would rather haue died, then haue left behind them.

So was the forsaken knight (laid vpon clokes) caried home to the campe. But his two friends knowing his earnest desire not to be knowne, couering him from any bodies eyes, conueyed him to their owne tent: *Basilus* himselfe conquering his earnest desire to see him, with feare to displease him, who had fought so notable in his quarell. But Fame set the honour vpon his backe, which he would not suffer to shine in his face: no mans mouth being barraine of praises to the noble knight, that had battered the most esteemed knight in the world: euerie body praying for his life, and thinking that therein they prayed for themselues. But he himselfe, when by the diligent care of friends, and well applyed cunning of Surgeons, he came to renew againe the league betweene his mind and bodie; then fell he to a fresh warre with his owne thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, laying cowardise to himselfe, whom the impudentest backebiter would not so haue wronged. For his courage (vsed to vse victorie as an inheritance) could brooke no resistance at any time: but now that he had promised himselfe not only the conquest of him, but the sealing of the walles, and deliuerie of *Pamela*, though he had done beyond all others expectation, yet so short was he of his owne, that he hated to looke vpon the Sunne, that had seene him do so weakely: and so much abhorred all visitation or honour, whereof he thought himselfe vnworthy, that he besought his two noble friends to cary him away to a castle not far off, where he might cure his wounds, and neuer be knowne till he made successe excuse this (as he thought) want in him. They louingly obeyed him, leauing *Basilus* and all the campe verie sorie for the parting of these three vnknown knights, in whose prowesse they had reposed greatest trutt of victorie.

But they being gone, *Basilus* and *philanax* gaue good order to the strengthening of the siege, fortifying themselues, so as they feared no more any such sodaine onset, as that of *Anaxius*. And they within (by reason of *Anaxius* hurt, but especially of *Amphialus*-is) gaue theselues only to diligent watch & ward, making no sallies out; but committing the principall trust to *Zoilus* & *Lycurgus*. For *Anaxius* was yet forced

forced to keepe his chamber. And as for *Amphialus*, his bodie had such wounds, & he gaue such wounds to his mind, as easilie it could not be determined, whether death or he made the greater haste one to the other: for when the diligent care of cunning Chirurgians had brought life to the possession of his owne right, Sorow and Shame (like two corrupted seruants) came waiting of it, perswading nothing but the giuing ouer of it self to destruction. They laid before his eyes his present case, painting euery peece of it in most vgly colours: they shewed him his loue wrapped in despaire, his fame blotted by ouerthrow; so that if before he languished, because he could not obtaine his desiring, he now lamented, because he durst not desire the obtaining. Recreant *Amphialus* (would he say to himselfe) how darest thou entitle thy selfe the louer of *Philoclea*, that hast neither shewed thy selfe a faithfull coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no law can quite, nor grace haue pitie of? Alas life, what litle pleasure thou doest me, to giue me nothing but sence of reproch, and exercise of ruine? I would (sweet *Philoclea*) I had died, before thy eyes had scene my weaknesse: and then perchance with some sigh thou wouldest haue confessed, thou hadst lost a worthy seruant. But now, sayst thou that I am, what euer I haue done, serues but to build vp my riualls glorie. To these speeches he would couple such gestures of vexation, & would fortifie the gestures with such effects of furie, as sometimes offering to teare vp his wounds, sometimes to refuse the sustenance of meat, and counsell of Physitions, that his perplexed mother was driuen to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corseley to her selfe and annoyance to him: till in the end he was contented to promise her, he would attempt no violence vpon himself, vpon condition he might be troubled by no body but only his Physitions: his melancholy detesting all companie, so as not the very Chirurgians nor seruants durst speake vnto him in doing him seruice: only he had prayed his mother, as she tendred his life, she would procure him grace, and that without that, she would neuer come at him more.

His mother, who had confined all her loue onely vnto him, set only such about him, as were absolutely at her commandement, whom she forbade to let him know any thing that passed in the castle, till his wounds were cured, but as she from time to time should instruct them: she (for her self) being resolved, now she had the gouernement of all things in her owne hands, to satisfie her sons loue by their yeelding, or satisfie her owne reuenge in their punishment. Yet first, because she would be the freer from outward force, she sent a messenger to the campe to denounce vnto *Basilus*, that if he did not presentlie raise his siege, she would cause the heads of the three Ladies, prisoners, to be cut off before his eyes. And to make him the more feare a present performance, she caused his two daughters and *Zelma* to be led vnto the walles, where she had made a scaffold, easie to be scene by *Basilus*: and there caused them to be kept, as ready for the slaughter, till answer came from *Basilus*. A sight full of pitie it was, to see those three (all excelling in all those excellencies, wherewith Nature can beautifie any body: *Pamela* giuing sweetnesse to maiestie, *Philoclea* enriching noblenesse with humblenesse, *Zelma* setting in womanly beauty manlike valour) to be thus subiected to the basest iniurie of vniust fortune. One might see in *Pamela* a willingnesse to die, rather than to haue life at others discretion, though sometimes a Princelie disdain would sparkle out of her Princelie eyes, that it should be in others power to force her to die. In *Philoclea* a pretty feare came vp, to endamaske her rosie cheekes: but it was such a feare, as rather seemed a kindly child to her innate humblenesse, then any other dismayednesse: or if she

were dismayed, it was more for *Zelmane*, then for her self; or if more for her self, it was because *Zelmane* should lose her. As for *Zelmane*, as she went with her hands bound (for they durst not adventure on her well knowne valour, especiallie among a people, which perchance might be moued by such a spectacle to some reuolt) she was the true image of ouermaistered courage, and of spite, that sees no remedy. 5 For her breast swelled withall, the blood burst out at her nose, and she looked paler then accustomed, with her eyes cast on the ground, with such a grace, as if she were fallen out with the heauens, for suffering such an iniurie. The lookers on were so moued withall, as they misliked what themselues did, and yet still did what 10 themselues misliked. For some glad to rid themselues of the dangerous annoyāce of this siege, some willing to shorten the way to *Amphialus* his succession (whereon they were dependants) some and the greatest some, doing because others did, and suffering because none durst begin to hinder, did in this sort set their hands to this (in their owne conscience) wicked enterprife.

But when this message was brought to *Basilus*, and that this pitifull preparation 15 was a sufficient letter of credite for him to beleue it, he called vnto him his chiefe Councillours: among which, those he chieslie trusted were *Philanax* and *Kalander* lately come to the campe at *Basilus* commandement, and in himselfe wearie of his solitarie life, wanting his sonnes presence, & neuer hauing heard from his beloued guests since they parted from him) Now in this doubt what he should do, he willed 20 *Kalander* to giue him his aduise: who spake much to this purpose. You commaund me sir (said he) to speake, rather because you will keepe your wonted graue and noble maner, to do nothing of importāce without counsel the that in this cause (which indeed hath but one way) your mind needs to haue any counsel: so as my speech shal rather be to confirme what you haue already determined, then to argue against anie 25 possibilitie of other determination. For what sophistical scholler can find any question in this, whether you will haue your incōparable daughters liue, or die? whether since you be here to cause their deliuerāce, you will make your being here the cause of their destruction? for nothing can be more vnsensible, then to thinke what one doth, and to forget the end why it is done. Do therefore as I am sure you meane to 30 do, remoue the siege, & after seeke by practise, or other gentle meanes, to recouer that which by force you cannot: & therof is indeed (when it please you) more counsell to be taken. Once, in extremities the winning of time is the purchase of life, and worse by no meanes then their deaths can befall vnto you. A man might vse more words, if it were to any purpose to gyld gold, or that I had any cause to doubt of your 35 mind: but you are wise, and are a father. He said no more, for he durst not attempt to perswade the marrying of his daughter to *Amphialus*, but left that to bring in at another consultation. But *Basilus* made signe to *Philanax*, who standing a while in a maze as inwardly perplexed, at last thus deliuered his opinion.

If euer I could wish my faith vntried, & my counsell vntested, it should be at this 40 time, when in truth I must cōfesse I wold be content to purchase silence with discredite. But since you command, I obey: only let me say thus much, that I obey not to these excellent Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to whō I giue cōsēl. Therefore as to a Prince I say, that the graue & (I well know) true-minded counsell of my Lord *Kalander* had come in good time when you first tooke armes, before all 45 your subiects gate notice of your intention, before so much blood was spent, & before they were driuen to seeke this shift for their last remedie. But if now, this force you away, why did you take armes? since you might be sure when euer they were in
extre-

extremities they would haue recourse to this threatning? And for a wise man to take in hand that which his enemy may with a word ouerthrow, hath in my conceit great incongruities, & as great, not to forethinke what his enemy in reason will do. But they threaten they will kill your daughters. What if they promised you if you removed your siege, they would honorably send home your daughters? would you be angled by their promises? truly no more ought you be terrified by their threatnings. For yet of the two, promise binds faith more then threatning. But indeed a Prince of iudgement ought not to consider what his enemies promise, or threaten, but what the promisers & threatners in reason will do: and the nearest coniecture therunto, is what is best for their owne behoofe to do. They threaten if you remove not they will kill your daughters, and if you do remove, what suretie haue you but that they will kill them, since if the purpose be to cut off all impediments of *Amphialus* his ambition, the same cause will continue when you are away; and so much the more encouraged, as the reuenging power is absent, and they haue the more opportunities to draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for their securitie onelie, the same cause will bring forth the same effect: and for their securitie they will preserve them. But it may be said, no man knowes what desperate folkes will do: it is true, & as true that no reason nor policie can preuent what desperate folkes will do: and therefore they are among those dangers, which wisdom is not to reckon. Onlie let it suffice to take away their despaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is past; so as the Ladies may be freely deliuered. And let them that are your subiects trust you that are their Prince; do not you subiect your selfe to trust them, who are so vntrustie as to be manifest traitors. For if they find you so base-minded, as by their threatning to remove your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you vnto still by the same threatning? since then if loue stirre them, loue will keepe them from murdering what they loue; and if ambition prouoke them, ambitious they will be when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which bars not the one, & bridles the other. For as for their shewes and words, they are but feare-babes, not worthy once to moue a worthe mans conceit, which must still consider what in reason they are like to do. Their despaire I graunt you shall do well to preuent, which as it is the last of all resolutions, so no man falls into it while so good a way as you may offer, is open vnto the. In summe, you are a Prince, and a father of a people, who ought with the eye of wisdom, the hand of fortitude, and the heart of iustice, to set downe all priuate conceits, in comparison of what for the publike is profitable.

He would haue proceeded on, when *Gynecia* came running in amazed for her daughter *Pamela*, but mad for *Zelmane*: and falling at *Basilus* feet, besought him to make no delay; vsing such gestures of compassion in steed of stopped words, that *Basilus*, otherwise enough tender minded, easilie granted to raise the siege, which he saw dangerous to his daughters; but indeed more carefull for *Zelmane*, by whose besieged person, the poore old man was straightlie besieged: so as to rid him of the famine of his mind, he went in speed away, discharging his souldiers: only leauing the authority, as before; in *Philanax* hands, he himselfe went with *Gynecia* to a strong Castle of his, where he tooke counsell how first to deliuer *Zelmane*, whom he called the poore stranger, as though onlie Law of hospitalitie moued him, & for that purpose sent diuerse messengers to traffike with *Cecropia*.

But she by this means rid of the present danger of the siege (desiring *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus* to take the care, till their brother recovered, of reuictualling & furnishing

the citie, both with men, and what else wanted, against any new occasion should vrgē them, she her selfe disdayning to hearken to *Basilus*, without he would graunt his daughter in mariage to her sonne, which by no meanes he would be brought vnto) bent all the sharpnesse of her malicious wit, how to bring a comfortable grant to her sonne, whereupon she well found no lesse then his life depended. Therefore for a while she attempted all means of eloquent praying, and flattering perswasion, mingling sometimes gifts, sometimes threatnings, as she had cause to hope, that either open force, or vndermining, would best win the castle of their resolution. And euer as much as she did to *Philoclea*, so much did she to *Pamela*, though in manner sometimes differing, as she found fit to leuell at the ones noble height, and the others sweet lowlinesse. For though she knew her sonnes heart had wholly giuen it selfe to *Philoclea*, yet seeing the equall gifts in *Pamela*, she hoped, a faire grant wold recover the sorow of a faire refusall: cruelly intending the present impoysoning the one, as soone as the others affection were purchased.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratorie employed. *Pamelas* determination was built vpon so braue a rocke, that no shot of hers could reach vnto it: and *Philoclea* (though hūble seated) was so inuironed with sweet riuers of cleare vertue, as could neither be battered, nor vndermined; her wittie perswasions had wise answers; her eloquence recompenced with sweetnesse; her threatnings repelled with disdain in the one, and patience in the other; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to bind. So as *Cecropia* in nature violent, cruell, because ambitious; hatefull, for old rooted grudge to their mother, & now spiteful, because she could not preuaile with girles, as she counted them; lastly, drawne on by her loue to her sonne, and held vp by a tyrannicall authoritie, forthwith followed the byas of her owne crooked disposition, and doubling & redoubling her threatnings, fell to confirme some of her threatned effects: first withdrawing all comfort, both of seruants and seruice from them. But that those excellent Ladies had benevſed vnto, euen at home, and then found in themselves how much good the hardnesse of education doth to the resistance of miserie. Then dishonourable vsing them both in diet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeelding. But as before, the consideration of a prison had disgraced all ornaments, so now the same consideration made them attend all diseasfullnesse. Then still as she found those not preuaile, would she go forward with giuing them terrours, sometimes with noises of horror, sometimes with sodaine frightings in the night, when the solitarie darknesse thereof might easier astonish the disarmed senses. But to all Vertue and Loue resisted, strengthened one by the other, when each found it selfe ouer-vehemently assaulted. *Cecropia* still sweetning her fiercenesse with faire promises, if they would promise faire; that feeling euill, and seeing a way farre better, their minds might the sooner be mollified. But they that could not taste her behauiour, when it was pleasing indeed, could worse now, when they had lost all taste by her iniuries.

She resoluing all extremities, rather then faile of conquest, pursued on her rugged way: letting no day passe, without new and new perplexing the poore Ladies minds, and troubling their bodies; and still swelling, the more she was stopped, and growing hot with her owne doings; at length abhominable rage caried her to absolute tyrannies, so that taking with her certaine old women (of wicked dispositions, and apt for enuie-fake to be cruell to youth and beautie) with a countenance impoysoned with malice, flew to the sweete *Philoclea*, as if so many Kites should come about a white Doue, & matching violent gestures, with mischieuous threat-

threatnings, she hauing a rod in her hand (like a furie that shold carrie wood to the burning of *Dianas* temple) fell to scourge that most beautifull body: Lone in vaine holding the shield of Beautie against her blind crueltie. The Sunne drew clouds vp to hide his face from so pitifull a sight; and the verie stone walles did yeeld drops of sweat for agonie of such a mischiefe: each sencelesse thing had sense of pittie; only they that had sense, were sencelesse. Vertue rarely found her worldly weakenesse more, then by the oppression of that day: and weeping *Cupid* told his weeping mother, that he was sorie he was not deafe, as well as blind, that he might neuer know so lamentable a worke. *Philoclea*, with tearefull eyes, and sobbing breast (as soone as
 10 her wearinesse rather then compassion, gaue her respite) kneeled down to *Cecropia*, and making pittie in her face honourable, and torment delightfull, besought her, since she hated her (for what cause she tooke God to witnesse she knew not) that she would at once take away her life, & not please her selfe with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (said she) the common course of humanitie cannot moue
 15 you, nor the hauing me in your own walls, cannot claime pittie: nor womanly mercie, nor neere alliance, nor remembrance (how miserable so euer now) that I am a Princes daughter; yet let the loue (you haue often told me) your sonne beares me, so much procure, that for his sake, one death may be thought enough for me; I haue not liued so many yeares, but that one death may be able to conclude them: neither
 20 haue my faults (I hope) bene so many but that one death may satisfie them. It is no great suite to an enemy, when but death is desired. I craue but that, and as for the graunting your request, know for certaine you lose your labours, being euery day further of-minded from becomming his wife, who vseth me like a slaue. But that in stead of getting grace, renued againe *Cecropias* fury: so that (excellent creature) she
 25 was newly againe tormented by those hellish monsters: *Cecropia* vsing no other words, but that she was a proud and vngratefull wench: and that she would teach her to know her owne good, since of her self she would not conceiue it. So that with silence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour, hammered vpon by an illfaured Smith) she abode their pittiless dealing with her: till, rather reseruing her for
 30 more, then meaning to end, they left her to an vncomfortable leisure, to consider with her self her fortune; both helpless her self, being a prisoner, & hopelesse, since *Zelmae* was a prisoner: who therein onely was short of the bottome of miserie, that she knew not how vnworthily her Angell, by these deuils was abused: but wanted (God wot) no stings of griefe, when those words did but strike vpon her heart,
 35 that *Philoclea* was a captiue, & she not able to succour her. For well she knew the confidence *Philoclea* had in her, & well she knew, *Philoclea* had cause to haue confidence: and all troden vnder foot by the wheele of sencelesse Fortune. Yet if there be that imperious power in the soule, as it can deliuer knowledge to another, without bodily organs; so vehement were the workings of their spirites, as one met with o-
 40 ther, though themselues perceiued it not, but only thought it to be the doubling of their owne louing fancies. And that was the only worldly thing, whereon *Philoclea* rested her minde, that she knew she should die beloued of *Zelmae*, and should die, rather then be false to *Zelmae*. And so this most daintie Nimphe, easing the paine of her mind with thinking of anothers paine; and almost forgetting the paine of
 45 her bodie, through the paine of her minde, she wasted, euen longing for the conclusion of her tedious tragedie.

But for a while she was vnuisited, *Cecropia* employing her time in vsing the like crueltie vpon *Pamela*, her heart growing not onely to desire the fruit of punishing

them, but euen to delight in the punishing them. But if euer the beames of perfection shined through the cloudes of affliction, if euer Vertue tooke a bodie to shew his (els vnconceivable) beautie, it was in *Pamela*. For when Reason taught her there was no resistance, (for to iust resistance first her heart was enclined) then with so heavenly a quietnesse, and so gracefull a calmnesse, did she suffer the diuers kindes of torments they vsed to her, that while they vexed her faire bodie, it seemed, that she rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. And when *Cecropia* ended, and asked whether her heart would yeeld: she a little smiled, but such a smiling as shewed no loue, and yet could not but be louely. And then, Beastly woman (said she) followe on, do what thou wilt, and canst vpon me: for I know thy power is not vnlimited. Thou maist well wracke this sillie bodie, but me thou canst neuer ouerthrow. For my part, I will not do thee the pleasure to desire death of thee: but assure thy selfe, both my life and death, shall triumph with honour, laying shame vpon thy detestable tyrannie.

And so, in effect, conquering their doing with her suffering, while *Cecropia* tried as many sorts of paines, as might rather vexethem, then spoile them (for that shee would not do while she were in any hope to winne either of them for her sonne) *Pamela* remained almost as much content with triall in her selfe, what vertue could do, as griued with the miserie wherein she found her selfe plunged, onely sometimes her thoughts softened in her, when with open wings they flew to *Musidorus*. For then she would thinke with her self, how grievously *Musidorus* would take this her miserie; and she, that wept not for her selfe, wept yet *Musidorus* teares, which he would weepe for her. For gentle Loue did eassier yeeld to lamentation, then the constancie of vertue would els admitte. Then would she remember the case wherein she had left her poore shepheard, and she that wished death for her selfe, feared death for him; and she that condemned in her selfe the feeblenesse of sorrow, yet thought it great reason to be sorie for his sorow: and she that long had prayed for the vertuous ioyning themselues together, now thinking to die her selfe, hartely prayed, that long time their fortunes might be seperated. Liue long my *Musidorus* (would she say) and let my name liue in thy mouth, in thy heart my memorie. Liue long, that thou maist loue long the chaste loue of thy dead *Pamela*. Then would she wish to her selfe, that no other woman might euer possesse his hart: and yet scarcely the wish was made a wish, when her selfe would finde fault with it, as being too vniust, that so excellent a man should be banished from the comfort of life. Then would she fortifie her resolution, with bethinking the worst, taking the counsell of vertue, and comfort of loue.

So these Diamonds of the world whom Nature had made to be preciouslly set in the eyes of men, to be the chiefe workes of her workmanship, the chiefe ornaments of the world, and Princesses of felicitie, by rebellious iniurie were brought to the vttermost distresse that an enemies hart could wish, or a womans spite inuent: *Cecropia* daily in one or other sort punishing them, still with her euill torments giuing them feare of worse, making the feare it selfe the sorest torment of all; that in the end wearie of their bodies, they should be content to bestow them at her appointment. But as in labour, the more one doth exercise it, the more by the doing one is enabled to do; strength growing vpon the worke, so as what at first would haue seemed impossible, after growes easie: so these Princesses second to none, and far from any second, only to be matched by themselues, with the vse of suffering their mindes, gate the habit of suffering so, as all feares and terrors were to them but

summons

summons to a battaile, whereof they knew before hand they would be victorious, & which in the suffering was painefull, being suffered, was a trophée to it selfe: whereby *Cecropia* found her selfe still further off: for where at first she might perchance haue perswaded them to haue visited her sonne, and haue giuen him some comfort in his sicknesse, drawing neere to the confines of Deaths kingdome, now they protested, that they would neuer otherwise speake to him, then as to the enemy, of most vniust cruelty towards them, that any time or place could euer make them knowe.

This made the poison swel in her cankered breast, perceiuing that (as in water) the more she grasped the lesse she held: but yet now hauing run so long the way of rigor, it was too late in reason, & too contrary to her passion, to returne to a course of meekenesse. And therefore (taking counsell of one of her olde associates who so far excelled in wickednesse, as that she had not only lost al feeling of consciēce, but had gotten a very glory in euill) in the ende they determined, that beating, & other such sharp dealing did not so much pull downe a womans hart, as it bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeelding, then anger; making their tender harts take on the armour of obstinacy: (for thus did their wicked mindes blind to the light of vertue, and owlyeied in the night of wickednesse interpret of it) and that therefore that was no more to be tried. And for feare of death (which no question would do most with them) they had bene so often threatned, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it, and learned to esteeme threatning words to be but words. Therefore the last, but best way now was, that the one seeing indeed the others death, shold perceiue, there was no dallying meant: & then there was no doubt, that a womans soule would do much, rather then leaue so beautiful a body.

This being concluded, *Cecropia* went to *Philoclea* and told her, that now she was to come to the last part of the play: for her part, though she found her hard-hearted obstinacie such, that neither the sweetnesse of louing meānes, nor the force of hard meānes could preuaile with her, yet before she would passe to a further degree of extremity, she had sought to win her sister; in hope that her sonne might be with time satisfied with the loue of so faire a Lady; but finding her also rather more then lesse wilfull, she was now minded that one of their deathes should serue for an example to the other, that despising worthy folks was more hurtfull to the despiſer, then the despised: that yet because her sonne especially affected her, and that in her owne selfe she was more inclinable to pittie her, then she had deserued, she would begin with her sister; who that afternoone should haue her head cut off before her face; if in the meane time one of them, did not pull out their il-wrought stiches of vnkindenesse, she bad her looke for no other, nor longer time thē she told her. There was no assault giuen to the sweete *Philocleas* mind, that entred so far, as this: for where to all paines and dangers of her selfe, fore-sight (with his Lieutenant Resolution) had made ready defence, now with the loue she bare her sister, she was driuen to a stay, before she determined: but long she stayed nor, before this reason did shine vnto her, that since in her selfe she preferred death before such a base seruitude, loue did teach her to wish the same to her sister. Therefore crossing her armes, and looking side-ward vpon the ground, Do what you will (saide she) with vs: for my part, heauen shall melt before I be remoued. But if you will follow my counsell, for your owne sake (for as for prayers for my sake I haue felt how litle they preuaile) let my death first serue for example to win her, who perchance is not so resoluēd against *Amphialus*, and so shall you not onely iustlie punish me, (who indeede do hate both you and your sonne) but, if that may moue you,

you shall do more vertuously in preserving one most worthy of life, and killing
 an other most desirous of death: lastly in winning her, in steed of a peeuvish unhap-
 pie creature, that I am, you shall blesse your sonne with the most excellent woman
 in all praise-worthy things, that the world holdeth. But *Cecropia*, (who had already
 set downe to her selfe what she would do) with bitter both termes, and counte-
 nance, told her, that she should not need to woo death ouer-eagerly: for if her sister
 going before her did not teach her wit, herself should quickly follow. For since
 they were not to be gotten, there was no way for her sonnes quiet, but to knowe
 that they were past getting. And so since no intreating, nor threatening might pre-
 uayle, she bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which she should see within fewe
 houres in the hall of that castle.

A place in deed ouer fit for so vnfit a matter: for being so stately made, that the
 bottome of it being euen with the ground, the rooffe reached as hie as any part of
 the castle, at either end it had conuenient lodgings. In the one end was (one storie
 from the ground) *Philocleas* abode, in the other of euen height, *Pamelas* & *Zelmenes*
 in a chamber aboue her: but all so vaulted of strong and thickly built stone, as one
 could no way heare the other: each of these chambers had a litle windowe to looke
 into the hall, but because the sisters should not haue so much comfort, as to looke
 one to another, there was (of the outsid) curtaines drawne, which they could not
 reach with their hands, so barring the reach of their sight. But when the houre came
 that the Tragedie should beginne, and curtaynes were withdrawne from before the
 windowes of *Zelmane*, and of *Philoclea*: a sufficient challenge to call their eyes
 to defende themselues in such an incounter. And by and by came in at one end of
 the hall, with about a dozen armed souldiers a Ladie, led by a couple, with her
 handes bound before her: from aboue her eyes to her lippes muffled with a faire
 kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the shoulders all bare: and so was led on to a
 scaffold raised a good deale from the floore, & all couered with crimson veluet. But
 neither *Zelmane*, nor *Philoclea* needed to be told who she was: for the apparell she
 ware, made them too well assured, that it was the admirable *Pamela*. Whereunto
 the rare whiteneffe of her naked necke gaue sufficient testimonie to their astoni-
 shed senses. But the faire Lady being come to the scaffold, and then made to kneele
 downe, and so left by her vnkind supporters, as it seemed that she was about to
 speake somewhat (whereunto *Philoclea*, poore soule, earnestly listned, according to
 her speach euen minding to frame her minde, her heart neuer till then almost wa-
 uering to saue her sisters life) before the vnfortunate Ladie could pronounce three
 wordes, the executioner cut off the ones speech, and the others attention, with ma-
 king his sworde do his cruell office vpon that beautifull necke. Yet the pittilesse
 sworde had such pittie of so precious an obiect, that at first it did but hit flatlong.
 But little auailed that, since the Ladie falling downe astonished withall, the cruell
 villaine forced the sword with another blow to diuorce the faire marriage of the
 head and bodie.

And this was done so in an instant, that the verie act did ouerrun *Philocleas* sor-
 row (sorrow not being able so quickly to thunderbolt her heart thorough her sen-
 ses, but first onely opprest her with a storme of amazement) but when her eyes
 sawe that they did see, as condemning themselues to haue seene it, they became
 wearie of their owne power of seeing: and her soule then drinking vp woe with
 great draughts, she fell downe to deadly traunces: but her waiting iaylors with
 cruell pittie brought lothed life vnto her; which yet many times tooke his leaue as
 though

though he would indeed depart: but when he was stayed by force, he kept with him deadly Sorrow, which thus exercised her mourning speech. *Pamela* my sister, my sister *Pamela*, woe is me for thee, I would I had died for thee. *Pamela* neuer more shal I see thee: neuer more shall I enioy thy sweet companie, and wise counsell. Alas, thou art gone to beautifie heauen, and hast left me here, who haue nothing good in me, but that I did euer loue thee, and euer will lament thee. Let this day be noted of all vertuous folkes for most vnfortunate: let it neuer be mentioned, but among curses; and cursed be they that did this mischiefe, and most accursed be mine eyes that beheld it. Sweete *Pamela*; that head is striken off, where only wisdom might be spoken withall; that bodie is destroyed, which was the liuing booke of vertue. Deare *Pamela* how hast thou left me to all wretchednesse and miserie? Yet while thou liuedst, in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O *Pamela*, how much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then my mother, and loue thee more then my selfe? Neuer more shall I lie with thee: neuer more shall we bathe in the pleasant riuer together: neuer more shall I see thee in thy shepheard apparell. But thou art gone, and where am I? *Pamela* is dead; and liue I? O my God, And with that she fell againe in a fowne, so as it was a great while before they could bring her to her self againe; but being come to her selfe, Alas (said she) vnkind women, since you haue giuen me so many deathes, torment me not now with life: for Gods sake let me goe, & excuse your hands of more blood. Let me follow my *Pamela*, whom euer I sought to follow. Alas *Pamela*, they will not let me come to thee. But if they keepe promise, I shall tread thine owne steps after thee. For to what am I borne (miserable soule) but to be most unhappie in my selfe, & yet more unhappie in others? But o that a thousand more miseries had chanced vnto me, so thou haddest not died: *Pamela*, my sister *Pamela*. And so, like lamentable *Philomela* complained she the horrible wrong done to her sister, which if it stird not in the wickedly closed mindes of her tormentors, a pittie of her sorrow, yet bred it a wearinesse of her sorrow: so as only leauing one to preuent any harme she should do her selfe, the rest went away, consulting againe with *Cecropia*, how to make profit of this their late bloudie act.

In the ende, that woman that vsed most to keepe company with *Zelmane*, tolde *Cecropia*, that she found by many most sensible proofes in *Zelmane*, that there was neuer woman so loued another, as she loued *Philoclea*: which was the cause that she (further then the commandement of *Cecropia*) had caused *Zelmanes* curtaines to be also drawne: because, hauing the same spectacle that *Philoclea* had, she might stand in the greater feare for her, whom she loued so well: and that indeed she had hit the needle in that deuise: for neuer saw she creature so astonished as *Zelmane*, exceedingly sory for *Pamela*, but exceedingly exceeding that exceedingnesse in feare for *Philoclea*. Therefore her aduice was, she should cause *Zelmane* to come & speake with *Philoclea*. For there being such vehemencie of friendship between them, it was most likely both to moue *Zelmane* to perswade, & *Philoclea* to be perswaded. *Cecropia* liked well of the counsell, & gaue order to the same woman to go deale therein with *Zelmane*, & to assure her with oth, that *Cecropia* was determined *Philoclea* shold passe the same way that *Pamela* had done, without she did yeeld to satisfie the extremitie of her sonnes affectiō: which the womā did, adding thereunto many (as she thought) good reasons to make *Zelmane* thinke *Amphialus* a fit match for *Philoclea*.

But *Zelmane* (who had from time to time vnderstood the cruell dealing they had vsed to the sisters, & now had her owne eyes wounded with the sight of ones death) was so confused withall (her courage still rebelling against her wit, desiring stil with

force to do impossible matters) that as her desire was stopped with power, so her conceit was darkened with a mist of desire. For blinde Loue; and inuincible valure still would cry out, that it could not be, *Philoclea* should be in so miserable estate, and she not relieue her: and so while she haled her wit to her courage, she drew it from his owne limits. But now *Philocleas* death (a word able to marshall all his thoughts in order) being come to so short a point either with small delay to be suffred, or by the giuing her selfe to another to be preuented, she was driven to thinke and to desire some leasure of thinking: which the woman granted for that night vnto her. A night that was not halfe so blacke, as her minde; not halfe so silent, as was fit for her musing thoughts. At last, he that would faine haue desperately lost a thousand liues for her sake, could not finde in his heart, that she should loose any life for her owne sake; and he that despised his owne death in respect of honour, yet could well nye dispence with honour it selfe in respect of *Philocleas* death: for once the thought could not enter into his hart, nor the breath issue out of his mouth, which could consent to *Philocleas* death for any bargaine. Then how to preuent the next degree to death (which was her being posselt by another) was the point of his minds labour: and in that he found no other way, but that *Philoclea* should pretend a yeelding vnto *Cecropias* request; and so by speaking with *Amphialus*, and making faire (but delaying) promises, procure libertie for *Zelmane*; who only wisht but to come by a sword, not doubting then to destroy them al, and deliuer *Philoclea*: so little did both the men, and their forces seeme in her eyes, looking down vpon them from the high top of affections tower.

With that minde therefore (but first well bound) shee was brought to *Philoclea*, hauing already plotted out in her conceit, how she would deale with her: and so came she with hart and eyes, which did each sacrifice either to Loue vpon the altar of Sorow: and there had she the pleasing displeasing sight of *Philoclea*: *Philoclea*, who already the extreame sence of sorow had brought to a dulnesse therin, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miseries cruelly battered, & yet shewed it most the perfection of that beautie, which could remaine vnouerthrowne by such enemies. But when *Zelmane* was set downe by her, and the women gone away (because she might be the better perswaded when no body was by, that had heard her say she would not be perswaded) then began first the eyes to speake, and the harts to crie out: Sorow a while would needes speake his owne language without vsing their tongues to be his interpreters. At last *Zelmane* brake silēce, but spake with the onely eloquence of amazement: for all her long methodized oration was inherited onely by such kinde of speeches. Deare Ladie, in extreame necessities we must not. But alas vnfortunate wretch that I am, that I liue to see this day. And I take heauen and earth to witnesse, that nothing: & with that her breast swelled so with spite and grieve, that her breath had not leasure to turne it selfe into words. But the sweet *Philoclea* that had alreadie dyed in *Pamela*, & of the other side had the heauinesse of her hart something quickned in the most beloued sight of *Zelmane*, ghesseid somewhat at *Zelmanes* mind; and therefore spake vnto her in this sort: My *Pirotles* (said shee) I knowe this exceeding comfort of your presence, is not brought vnto mee for any good-will that is owed vnto me: but (as I suppose) to make you perswade me to saue my life with the ransome of mine honour: although no bodie should be so vnfit a pleader in that cause as your selfe, yet perchance you would haue me liue. Your honour? God forbid (said *Zelmane*) that euer, for any cause, I should yeeld to any touch of it. But a while to pretend some affection, till

till time, or my libertie might work something for your seruice: this, if my astonished senses would giue me leaue, I would faine haue perswaded you.

To what purpose my *Pyrocles*? (said *Philoclea*) of a miserable time what gaine is there? Hath *Pamelas* example wrought no more in me? is a captiue life so much worth? can euer it goe out of these lips, that I loue any other but *Pyrocles*? shall my tongue be so false a traitor to my heart, as to say I loue any other but *Pyrocles*? And why should I do all this? to liue? O *Pamela*, sister *Pamela*, why should I liue? onely for thy sake *Pyrocles* I would liue: but to thee I know too well I shall not liue; and if not to thee, hath thy loue so base allay, my *Pyrocles*, as to wish me to liue? for dissimulation, my *Pyrocles*, my simplicitie is such, that I haue hardly bene able to keep a straight way, what shall I do in a crooked? But in this case there is no meane of dissimulation, not for the cunningest: present answer is required, and present performance vpon the answer. Art thou so terrible o death? No my *Pyrocles*; and for that I do thanke thee, and in my soule thanke thee; for I confesse the loue of thee is herein my chiefeft vertue. Trouble me not therefore deare *Pyrocles*, nor double not my death by tormenting my resolution: since I cannot liue with thee, I will die for thee. Only remember me, deare *Pyrocles*, and loue the remembrance of me: and if I may craue so much of thee, let me be thy last loue, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthiest creature liuing) yet remember that my loue was a worthy loue. But *Pyrocles* was so ouercome with sorow (which wisdome and vertue made iust in so excellent a Ladies case, full of so excellent kindnesse) that words were ashamed to come forth, knowing how weake they were to expresse his mind, and her merit: and therefore so stayed in a deadly silence, forsaken of hope, and forsaking comfort: till the appointed guardians came in, to see the fruites of *Zelmanes* labour: and then *Zelmana* warned by their presence, fel againe to perswade, though scarcely her selfe could tell what; but in summe, desirous of delays. But *Philoclea*, sweetly continuing constant, and in the end punishing her importunitie with silence, *Zelmana* was faine to end. Yet crauing another times conference, she obtained it, and diuerse others; till at the last *Cecropia* found it was to no purpose, & therefore determined to follow her owne way. *Zelmana* yet still desirous to win (by any means) respite, euen wasted with sorow, & vncertaine, whether in worse case in her presence, or absence, being able to do nothing for *Philocleas* succour, but by submitting the greatest courage of the earth to fall at the feet of *Cecropia*, & craue stay of their sentence till the vttermoſt was seene, what her perswasions might do.

Cecropia seemed much to be moued by her importunitie, so as diuers dayes were wonne of painefull life to the excellent *Philoclea*: while *Zelmana* suffered some hope to cherish her mind, especially trusting vpon the helpe of *Musidorus*, who (she knew) would not be idle in this matter, till one morning a noise awaked *Zelmana*, from whose ouer-watchfull mind, the tired body had stolne a litle sleepe: & straight with the first opening of her eyes, Care taking his wonted place, she ran to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noyse guided her) & there might she see (the curtaine being left open euer since the last execution) seuen or eight persons in a cluster vpon the scaffold: who by and by retiring themselues, nothing was to be seene thereupon, but a basen of gold pitifully enamelled with blood, and in the midst of it, the head of the most beautifull *Philoclea*. The horriblenesse of the mischief was such, as *Pyrocles* could not at first beleue his owne senses, but bent his wofull eyes to discern it better: where too well he might see it was *Philocleas* selfe, hauing noueile, but beautie ouer her face, which still appeared to be aliue;

so did those eyes shine, euen as they were wont, and they were wont more then any other: and sometimes as they moued, it might well make the beholder thinke, that death therein had borrowed her beautie, and not they any way disgraced by death, so sweet and piercing a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a sorow which then laid hold on *Pyrocles*, but a wilde furie of desperate agony, so that he cried out, O tyrant heauen, traitor earth, blind prouidence, no iustice, how is this done? how is this suffered? hath this world a gouernment? If it haue, let it powre out all his mischiefs vpon me, and see whether it haue power to make me more wretched then I am. Did the excell for this? haue I prayed for this? abhominable hand that did it; detestable deuill that commanded it; cursed light that beheld it: & if the light be cursed, what are then mine eyes that haue scene it? And haue I scene *Philoclea* dead, and do I liue? and haue I liued, not to helpe her, but to talke of her? and stand I still talking? And with that (caried with the madnesse of anguish, not hauing a readier way to kill himselfe) he ran as hard as euer he could with his head against the wall, with intention to braine himselfe: but the haste to do it made the doing the slower. For as he came to giue the blow, his foote tript, so as it came not with the full force: yet forcible enough to strike him downe; and withall to deprive him of his sence, so that he lay a while comforted by the hurt, in that he felt not his discomfort.

And when he came againe to himselfe, he heard, or he thought he heard a voyce which cried, Reuenge, Reuenge vnto him; whether indeed it were his good Angell, which vsed that voyce to stay him from vnnaturall murdering of himselfe; or that his wandering spirits lighted vpon that conceit, and by their weaknesse subiect to apprehensions) supposed they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant seruant Anger, stopped him from present destroying himselfe: yeelding in reason and manhood, first to destroy man, woman and child, that were any way of kinne to them that were accessarie to this crueltye; then to raze the Castle, and to build a sumptuous monument for her sister, and a most sumptuous for herselfe, and then himselfe to die vpon her tombe. This determining in himselfe to do, and to seeke all meanes how (for that purpose) to get out of prison: he was content a while to beare the thirst of death: & yet went he againe to the window, to kisse the beloued head with his eyes, but there saw he nothing but the scaffold, all couered ouer with scarlet, and nothing but solitarie silence to mourne this mischiefe. But then, Sorow hauing disperst it selfe from his heart, into all his noble parts, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries and teares, & with a more gentle dolefulnesse could powre out his inward euill.

Alas (said he) and is that head taken away too, so soone from mine eyes? What, mine eyes, perhaps they enuie the excellencie of your sorow? Indeed, there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all mankind, but teares: and woe be to me, if any exceed me in wofulnesse. I do coniure you all my senses, to accept no object but of sorow, be ashamed, nay, abhorre to thinke of comfort. Vnhappie eyes you haue scene too much, that euer the light should be welcome to you: vnhappy eares, you shall neuer heare the musike of musike in her voyce: vnhappy hart that hast liued to feele these pangs. Thou hast done thy worst, World, and cursed be thou, and cursed art thou, since to thine owne selfe thou hast done the worst thou couldest do. Exiled Beautie, let onely now thy beautie be blubbered faces. Widowed Musike, let now thy tunes be rorings, and lamentations. Orphane Vertue, get thee wings, and flie after her into heauen; here is no dwelling place for thee

thee. Why liued I, alas? Alas why loued I? to die wretched, and to be the example of the heauens hate? And hate and spare not, for your worst blow is stricken. Sweet *Philoclea*, thou art gone, and hast caried with thee my loue; and hast left thy loue in me, and I wretched man do liue; I liue, to die continually, till thy reuenge do giue me leaue to die: and then die I will, my *Philoclea*, my heart willingly makes this promise to it selfe. Surely he did not looke vpon thee, that gaue the cruell blow: for no eye could haue abidden to see such beautie ouerthrowne by such mischiese. Alas, why should they deuide such a head from such a body? no other bodie is worthy of that head; no other head is worthy of that body: O yet, if I had taken my last leaue, if I might haue taken a holy kisse from that dying mouth. Where art thou Hope, which promist neuer to leaue a man while he liueth? tel me, what canst thou hope for? nay tell me, what is there which I would willingly hope after? Wishing power (which is accounted infinite) what now is left to wish for? She is gone, and gone with her all my hope, al my wishing. Loue, be ashamed to be called loue: cruel Hate, vnspokeable Hate is victorious ouer thee. Who is there now left, that can iustifie thy tyrannie, & giue reason to thy passion? O cruell diuorce of the sweetest mariage that euer was in Nature: *philoclea* is dead, and dead is with her all goodnesse, all sweetnesse, all excellencie. *philoclea* is dead, and yet life is not ashamed to continue vpon the earth. *Philoclea* is dead: ô deadlie word, which containeth in it selfe the vttermost of all my misfortunes. But happie word when thou shalt be said of me, and long it shall not be, before it be said.

Then stopping his words with sighes, drowning his sighes in teares, and drying againe his teares in rage, he would sit a while in a wandering muse, which represented nothing but vexations vnto him: then throwing himselfe sometime vpon the floore, and sometimes vpon the bed: then vp againe, till walking was wearisome & rest loathsome: and so neither suffering food, nor sleepe to help his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing but weepe. *Philoclea*, sigh *Philoclea*, and crie out *Philoclea*; till as it happened (at that time vpon his bed) toward the dawning of the day, he heard one stirre in his chamber, by the motion of garments; and with an angrie voyce asked, Who was there? A poore Gentlewoman (answered the partie) that wish long life vnto you. And I soone death to you (said he) for the horrible curse you haue giuen me. Certainly (said she) an vnkind answer, and farre vnworthie the excellencie of your mind, but not vsutable to the rest of your behauiour. For most part of this night I haue heard you (being let into your chamber, you neuer perceiuing it, so was your mind estranged from your senses) and haue heard nothing of *Zelmane*, in *Zelmane*, nothing but weake waylings, fitter for some nurse of a village, then so famous a creature as you are. O God (cried out *Pyrocles*) that thou wert a man that vset these words vnto me. I tell thee I am sorie, I tell thee I will be sorie in despite of thee, & all them that would haue me ioyfull. And yet (replied she) perchance *Philoclea* is not dead, whom you so much bemoane. I would we were both dead on that condition, said *Pyrocles*. See the folly of your passion (said she) as though you should be nearer to her, you being dead, and shee aliue; then shee being dead, and you aliue: and if she be dead, was she not borne to die? what then do you crie out for? not for her, who must haue died one time or other; but for some fewe yeares: so as it is time and this world, that seeme so louely things, and not *Philoclea* vnto you. Onoble sisters (cried *Pyrocles*) now you be gone (who were the onely exalters of all womankind) what is left in that sex, but babling and businesse? And truly (said she) I will yet a little longer trouble you. Nay, I praie you do (said

Pyrocles) for I wish for nothing in my short life but mischiefs & cumbers: and I am content you shall be one of them. In truth (said she) you would thinke your selfe a greatly priuiledged person, if since the strongest building, & lastingest monarchies are subiect to end, only your *Philoclea* (because she is yours) should be exempted, but indeed you bemone your self, who haue lost a friend; you cannot her, who hath in one act both preserued her honour, and lest the miseries of this world. O womans philosophie, childish follie (said *Pyrocles*) as though if I do bemone my selfe, I haue not reason to do so, hauing lost more then any monarchie, nay then my life can be worth vnto me. Alas (said she) comfort your selfe, Nature did not forget her skill, when she had made them: you shal find many their superiours, and perchance such, as (when your eyes shall looke abroad) your selfe will like better. 5

But that speech put all good maners out of the conceit of *Pyrocles*; in so much, that leaping out of his bed, he ran to haue striken her: but comming neare her (the morning then winning the field of darknesse) he saw, or he thought he saw, indeed, the verie face of *Philoclea*; the same sweetnesse, the same grace, the same beautie: with which caried into a diuine astonishment, he fell downe at her feet. Most blessed Angell (said he) well hast thou done to take that shape, since thou wouldest submit thy selfe to mortall sence; for a more Angelicall forme could not haue bin created for thee. Alas, euen by that excellent beautie, so beloued of me, let it be lawfull for me to aske of thee, what is the cause that she, that heauenly creature, whose forme you haue taken, shold by the heauens be destined to so vnripe an end? Why should vniustice so preuaile? Why was she seene to the world so soone to be rauished from vs? Why was she not suffered to liue, to teach the world perfection? Do not deceiue thy selfe (answered she) I am no Angell; I am *Philoclea*, the same *Philoclea*, so truly louing you, so truly beloued of you. If it be so (said he) that you are indeed the soule of *Philoclea*, you haue done well to keepe your owne figure: for no heauen could haue giuen you a better. Then alas why haue you taken the paines to leaue your blissefull seate to come to this place most wretched, to me, who am wretchednesse it selfe, and not rather obtaine for me, that I might come where you are, there eternally to behold, and eternally to loue your beauties? You know (I know) that I desire nothing but death, which I onely stay, to be iustly reuenged of your vniust murtherers. Deare *Pyrocles* (said she) I am thy *Philoclea*, & as yet liuing: not murdered, as you supposed, and therefore be comforted. And with that gaue him her hand. But the sweet touch of that hand seemed, to his astrayed powers so heauenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his former beleefe: till she with vehement protestations (and desire that it might be so, helping to perswade that it was so) brought him to yeeld; yet doubtfully to yeeld to this height of all comfort, that *Philoclea* liued: which witnessing with teares of ioy, Alas (said he) how shall I belecue mine eyes any more? or do you yet but appeare thus vnto me, to stay me from some desperate end? For alas I saw the excellent *Pamela* beheaded: I saw your head (the head indeed, and chiefe part indeed of all Natures works) standing in a dish of gold, too meane a shrine (God wot) for such a relike. How can this be, my onely deare, and you liue? or if this be not so, how can I belecue mine owne senses? and if I cannot belecue them, why should I now belecue these blessed tidings they bring me? 10 15 20 25 30 35 40

The truth is (said she) my *Pyrocles*, that neither I (as you find) nor yet my deare sister is dead: although the mischieuously suttile *Cecropia* vsed sleights to make either of vs thinke so of other. For, hauing in vaine attempted the farthest of her wicked eloquence 45

eloquence, to make eyther of vs yeeld to her sonne, & seeing that neither it, accompanied with great flatteries, and riche presents, could get any ground of vs, nor yet the violent way she fell into of cruelly tormenting our bodies, could preuaile with vs, at last, she made either of vs thinke the other dead, & so hoped to haue wrested
 5 our mindes to the forgetting of vertue: & first she gaue to mine eyes the miserable spectacle of my sisters (as I thought) death: but indeed it was not my sister: it was onely *Artesia*, she who so cunningly brought vs to this misery. Truly I am fory for the poore Gentlewoman, though iustly she be punished for her double falshood: but *Artesia* musted so, as you could not easily discerne her; and in my sisters apparrell (which they had taken from her vnder colour of giuing her other) did they execute: And when I (for thy sake especially deare *Pyrocles*) could by no force, nor feare be won, they assayed the like with my sister, by bringing me downe vnder the scaffold & (making mee thrust my heade vp through a hole they had made therein) they did put about my poore neck a dish of gold, wherout they had beaten the bottom, so as
 15 hauing set bloud in it, you sawe how I played the part of death). God knowes euen willing to haue done it in earnest) and so had they set me, that I reached but on tip-toes to the ground, so as scarcely I could breathe, much lesse speake: And truly if they had kept me there any whit longer, they had strangled me, in steed of beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and seeking to see their issue of this practise
 20 they found my noble sister (for the deare loue she vouchsafeth to beare me) so grieved withall, that shee willed them to do their vttermost crueltie vnto her: for she vowed, neither to receiue sustenance of them that had bene the causers of my murther: and finding both of vs, euen giuen ouer, not like to liue many houres longer, and my sister *Pamela*, rather worse then my selfe, (the strength of her heart worse bearing those indignities) the good woman *Cecropia* (with the same pittie as folkes keepe foule, when they are not fatte inough for their eating) made vs know her deceit, and let vs come one to another; with what ioy you can well imagine, who I know feele the like; sauing that we only thought our selues reserued to miseries, & therefore fitter for condoling, then congratulating. For my part, I am fully perswaded, it is but with a little respite, to haue a more feeling sence of the torments she
 30 prepares for vs. True it is, that one of my guardians would haue me to beleue, that this proceeds of my gentle cousin *Amphialus*: who hauing heard some inkling that we were euill entreated, had called his mother to his bedside, from whence he neuer rose since his last combate, and besought, and charged her vpon all the loue
 35 she bare him, to vse vs with al kindnesse: vowing, with al the imprecations he could imagine, that if euer he vnderstood for his sake, that I receiued further hurt then the want of my libertie, he would not liue an houre longer. And the good woman sware to me that he would kill his mother, if he knewe how I had bene dealt with; but that *Cecropia* keepes him from vnderstanding things how they passe, onely ha-
 40 uing heard a whispering, and my selfe named, he had (of abundance, forsooth, of honourable loue) giuen this charge for vs. Whereupon this enlargement of mine was growne: for my part I know too well their cunning (who leaue no money vnoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleue any word they say, but (my deare *Pyrocles*) euen looke for the worst, and prepare my selfe for the same. Yet I must
 45 confesse, I was content to robbe from death, and borrow of my miserie the sweet comfort of seeing my sweet sister, and most sweete comfort of thee my *Pyrocles*. And so hauing leaue, I came stealing into your chamber: where (O Lord) what a ioy it was vnto me, to heare you solemnise the funeralls of the poore *Philoclea*. That

I my selfe might liue to heare my death bewailed ? and by whome ? by my deere *Pyrocles*. That I saw death was not strong enough to diuide thy loue from me ? O my *Pyrocles*, I am too well payde for my paines I haue suffered : ioyfull is my woe for so noble a cause ; and welcome be all miseries , since to thee I am so welcome. Alas how I pittied to heare thy pittie of me ; and yet a great while I could not finde in my heart to interrupt thee , but often had euen pleasure to weepe with thee : and so kindly came forth thy lamentations , that they inforced me to lament too , as if indeed I had bene a looker on , to see poore *Philoclea* dye. Till at last I spake with you , to try whether I could remoue thee from sorrow , till I had almost procured my selfe a beating. And with that she pretily smiled , which mingled with her teares , one could not tell whether it were a mourning pleasure , or a delightfull sorrow : but like when a few Aprill drops are scattered by a gentle *Zephyrus* among fine coloured flowers. But *Pyrocles*, who had felt (with so small distance of time) in himselfe the ouerthrow both of hope and despaire , knew not to what key he should tune his minde , either of ioy , or sorrow. But finding perfite reason in neither , suffred himselfe to be caried by the tide of his imagination , and his imaginations to be raised euen by the sway , which hearing or seeing , might giue vnto them : he saw her aliue , he was glad to see her aliue : he saw her weepe , he was sorie to see her weepe : he heard her comfortable speeches , nothing more glad some : he heard her prognosticating her owne destruction , nothing more dolefull . But when he had a little taken breath from the panting motion of such contrarietie in passions , he fell to consider with her of her present estate , both comforting her , that certainly the worst of this storme was past , since alreadie they had done the worst , which mans wit could imagine : and that if they had determined to haue killed her , now they would haue done it : and also earnestly counselling her , and enabling his counsels with vehement prayers , that shee would so farre second the hopes of *Amphialus* , as that shee might but procure him libertie ; promising then as much to her , as the liberalitie of louing courage durst promise to himselfe.

But who could liuely describe the manner of these speeches , should paint out the lightsome colours of affection , shaded with the deepest shadowes of sorrow , finding then betweene hope and feare , a kinde of sweetnesse in teares : till *Philoclea* content to receiue a kisse , and but a kisse of *Pyrocles* , sealed vp his moning lips , and closed them vp in comfort : and her selfe (for the passage was left betweene them open) went to her sister : with whome shee had stayed but a while , fortifying one another (while *Philoclea* tempered *Pamelas* iust disdain , and *Pamela* ennobled *Philocleas* sweete humblenesse) when *Amphialus* came vnto them : who neuer since he had heard *Philoclea* named , could be quiet in himselfe , although none of them about him (fearing more his mothers violence then his power) would discover what had passed : and many messages he sent to know her estate , which brought answers backe , according as it pleased *Cecropia* to indite them , till his heart full of vnfortunate affection , more and more misgiuing him , hauing impatiently borne the delay of the nights vnfitnesse , this morning he gat vp , and though full of wounds (which not without danger could suffer such exercise) he apparelled himselfe , and with a countenance , that shewed strength in nothing but in griefe , he came where the sisters were ; and weakly kneeling downe , he besought them to pardon him , if they had not bene vsed in that castle according to their worthinesse , and his duties ; beginning to excuse small matters , poore Gentleman , not knowing in what fort they had bene handled.

But

But *Pamela's* high heart (hauing conceiued mortall hate for the iniurie offered to her and her sister) could scarcely abide his sight, much lesse heare out his excuses; but interrupted him with these words. Traitor (said she) to thine owne blood, and false to the profession of so much loue as thou hast vowed, do not defile our cares
 5 with thy excuses; but pursue on thy crueltie, that thou and thy godly mother haue vsed towards vs: for my part, assure thy selfe, and so do I answer for my sister (whose mind I know) I do not more desire mine owne safetie then thy destruction. Amazed with this speech, he turned his eye, full of humble sorrowfulnesse, to *Philoclea*. And is this (most excellent Ladie) your doome of me also? She, sweet Ladie, sate
 10 weeping: for as her most noble kinsman she had euer fauoured him, and loued his loue, though she could not be in loue with his person; and now partly vkindnesse of his wrong, partly pitie of his case, made her sweet mind yeeld some teares, before she could answer; and her answer was no other, but that she had the same cause as her sister had. Hereplied no further, but deliuering from his heart two or
 15 three (vntaught) sighes, rose, and with most low reuerence, went out of their chamber: and straight by threatning torture, learned of one of the women, in what terrible maner those Princesses had bene vsed. But when he heard it, crying out, O God; and then not able to say any more (for his speech went backe to rebound woe vpon his heart) he needed no iudge to go vpon him: for no man could
 20 euer thinke anie other worthy of greater punishment, then he thought himselfe. Full therefore of the horriblest despaire, which a most guiltie conscience could breed, with wild lookes promising some terrible issue, vnderstanding his mother was vpon the top of the leads, he caught one of his seruants swords from him, and none of them daring to stay him, he went vp, caried by furie, in steed of strength;
 25 where she was at that time, musing how to go thorough with this matter, and resolving to make much of her Nieces in shew, and secretly to impoyson them; thinking since they were not to be wonne, her sonnes loue would no otherwise be mitigated.

But when she saw him come in with a sword drawne, and a looke more terrible
 30 then the sword, she streight was stricken with the guiltinesse of her owne conscience: yet the well knowne humblenesse of her sonne somewhat animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth such a monster of unhappinesse as I am; she fearing he would haue stricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but onely intended to kill himselfe in her
 35 presence) went backe so far, til ere she were aware, she ouerthrew her selfe from ouer the Leads, to receiue her deaths kisse at the ground: and yet was she not so happie as presently to die, but that she had time with hellish agonie to see her sonnes mischief (whom she loued so well) before her end; whē she confest (with most desperate, but not repenting mind) the purpose she had to impoyson the Princesses, and would then haue had them murdered. But euery body seeing, & glad to see her end,
 40 had left obedience to her tyranny.

And (if it could be) her ruine increased woe in the noble heart of *Amphialus*, who when he saw her fall, had his owne rage stayed a litle with the sodainnesse of her destruction. And was I not enough miserable before (said he) but that before my end
 45 I must be the death of my mother? who how wicked soeuer, yet I would she had receiued her punishment by some other. O *Amphialus*, wretched *Amphialus*, thou hast liued to be the death of thy most deare companion and friend *Philoxenus*, and of his father, thy most carefull foster-father. Thou hast liued to kill a Lady with

thine owne hands, and so excellent and vertuous a Lady as the faire *Parthenia* was: thou hast liued to see thy faithfull *Ismenus* slaine in succouring thee, and thou not able to defend him: thou hast liued to shew thy selfe such a coward, as that one vnknown knight could ouercome thee in thy Ladies presence: thou hast liued to beare armes against thy rightful Prince, thine own vnkle: thou hast liued to be accounted, & iustly accounted a traitor, by the most excellēt persons that this world holdeth: thou hast liued to be the death of her, that gaue thee life. But ah wretched *Amphialus*, thou hast liued for thy sake, and by thy authoritie, to haue *Philoclea* tormented. O heauens, in *Amphialus* castle, where *Amphialus* commaunded; tormented, tormented? Torment of my soule, *Philoclea* tormented; and thou hast had such comfort in thy life, as to liue all this while. Perchance this hand (vsed onely to mischieuous acts) thinks it were too good a deed to kill me; or else filthy hand, onely worthy to kil women, thou art affraid to strike a man. Feare not cowardly hand, for thou shalt kill but a cowardly traitor; and do it gladly; for thou shalt kill him whom *Philoclea* hateth. With that furioullie he tare open his doublet, and setting the pommel of the sword to the ground, and the point to his breast, he fell vpon it. But the sword more mercifull then he to himself, with the slipping of the pommel, the point swarued, and razed him but vpon the side: yet with the fall, his other wounds opened so, as he bled in such extremitie, that *Charons* boat might verie well be caried in that floud: which yet he sought to hasten by this means. As he opened his doublet & fell, there fell out *Philocleas* kniues, which *Cecropia* at the first had taken from her, & deliuered to her sonne; & he had euer worne them next his heart, as the onely relike he had of his Saint: now seeing them by him (his sword being so, as weakenesse could not well draw it out from his doublet) he tooke the kniues, and pulling one of them out, and manie times kissing it, and then, first with the passions of kindnesse and vnkindnesse melting in teares: O deare kniues, you are come in a good time, to reuēge the wrong I haue done you all this while, in keeping you from her blessed side, and wearing you without your mistresse leaue. Alas, be witnesse with me, yet before I die (and well you may, for you haue laine next my heart) that by my consent, your excellent mistresse should haue had as much honour as this poore place could haue brought forth for so high an excellencie; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, farre other hope would my desire often haue giuen me; but other euent it hath pleased her to lay vpon me. Ah *Philoclea* (with that his teares gushed out, as though they would striue to ouerflow his bloud) I would yet thou knewest how I loue thee. Vnworthie I am, vnhappy I am, false I am; but to thee alas, I am not false. But what a traitor am I, any way to excuse him, whom she cōdemneth? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her seruice, but in punishing him, who hath so offended her. Deare knife, then do your noble mistresses commandement. With that, he stabbed himselfe into diuerse places of his breast and throte, vntill those wounds (with the old, freshly bleeding) brought him to the sencelesse gate of death. By which time, his seruants hauing (with feare of his fury) abstained a while from comming vnto him, one of them (preferring dutifull affection before fearefull dutie) came in, and there found him swimming in his owne bloud, giuing a pitifull spectacle, where the conquest was the conquerours ouerthrow, and selfe-ruine the onely triumph of a battaile, fought betweene him and himselfe. The time full of daunger, the person full of worthinesse, the maner full of horror, did greatly astonish all the beholders: so as by and by, all the towne was full of it, and then of all ages came running vp to see the beloued body; euerie bodie thinking their

their safetie bled in his wounds, and their honor died in his destruction.

But when it came, (& quickly it came) to the eares of his sproud friend *Anaxius*, (who by that time was growen well of his wound, but neuer had come abroad, disdain-
 5 exceedingly vexed, either with kindnesse, or (if a proud heart be not capable there-
 of) with disdaine, that he, who had the honor to be called the friend of *Anaxius*,
 should come to such an vnexpected ruine. Therefore, then comming abroad, with
 a face red in anger, and engrained in pride, with liddes raised, and eyes leuelling
 10 earth shake vnder him, with his hand vpon his sword; short speeches, and disdain-
 full answers, giuing streight order to his two brothers, to go take the oath of obe-
 dience, in his name, of all the souldiers, and Citizens in the towne: and withall, to
 sweare them to reuenge the death of *Amphialus*, vpon *Basilus*. He himselfe went
 to see him, calling for all the surgeons and physicions there; spending some time in
 15 viewing the body, and threatning them all to be hanged, if they did not heale him.
 But they (taking view of his wounds, and falling downe at *Anaxius* feete) assured
 him, that they were mortall, and no possible meanes to keepe him aboue two daies
 aliue: and he stood partly in doubt, to kill, or saue them, betweene his owne furie,
 and their humblenesse. But vowing, with his owne hands to kill the two sisters, as
 20 causers of his friends death: when his brothers came to him, and told him they had
 done his comaundement, in hauing receiued the oath of alleageance, with no great
 difficultie: the most part terrified by their valure, and force of their seruants, and
 many that had bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing to do any thing, rather
 then come vnder the subiection of *Basilus* againe; and such fewe as durst gainsay,
 25 being cut off by present slaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to him) they told *Anaxius*,
 that the faire Queene *Helen* was come, with an honourable retinue, to the towne:
 humbly desiring leaue to see *Amphialus*, whome she had sought in many places of
 the world; & lastly, being returned into her own countrie, she heard together of the
 30 late siege, and of his combat with the strange Knight, who had dangerously hurt
 him. Vherupon, full of louing care (which she was content euen to publish to the
 world, how vngratefully soeuer he dealt with her) she had gotten leaue of *Basilus*,
 to come by his frontiers, to cary away *Amphialus* with her, to the excellentest sur-
 geon then known, whom she had in her countrey, but so old, as not able to trauaile:
 35 but had giuen her foueraigne annointments, to preferue his body withall, till he
 might be brought vnto him: and that *Basilus* had graunted leaue: either naturall
 kindnesse preuailing ouer all the offences done, or rather glad to make any passage,
 which might leade him out of his countrie, & from his daughters. This discourse
Lycurgus vnderstanding of *Helen*, deliuered to his brother, with her vehement de-
 40 desire to see the bodie, and take her last farewell of him. *Anaxius*, though he were
 fallen out with all womankind (in respect of the hate he bare the sisters, whome he
 accounted murtherers of *Amphialus*) yet at his brothers request, graunted her
 leaue. And she (poore Lady) with grievous expectation, and languishing desire,
 caried her faint legs to the place where he lay, either not breathing, or in all appea-
 45 rance breathing nothing but death.

In which piteous plight when she saw him, though Sorow had set before her
 mind the pitifullest conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the present sight went
 beyond all former apprehensions: so that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her

fight ranne from her seruice, rather then abide such a sight; and she fell in a fowne
 vpon him, as if she could not choose but dye of his wounds. But when her breath
 (awearie to be closed vp in woe) broke the prison of her faire lips, and brought
 memorie (with his seruant senses) to his naturall office, she yet made the breath
 conuey these dolefull wordes with it. Alas (said she) *Amphialus*, what strange
 disasters be these, that hauing sought thee so long, I should be now sorie to finde
 thee? that these eyes should looke vpon *Amphialus*, and be grieued withall? that I
 should haue thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort?
 How often haue I blest the meanes that might bring me neere thee? Now, woe
 worth the cause that brings me so neere thee. Often, alas, often hast thou disdained
 my teares: but now, my deare *Amphialus*, receiue them: these eyes can serue for
 nothing else, but to weepe for thee; since thou wouldest neuer vouchsafe them
 thy comfort, yet disdain not them thy sorrow. I would they had bene more deare
 vnto thee; for then hadst thou liued. Woe is me that thy noble heart could loue
 who hated thee, and hate who loued thee. Alas, why should not my faith to thee
 couer my other defects, who only sought to make my Crowne thy foot-stoole, my
 selfe thy seruant? that was all my ambition; and alas thou disdaindest it to serue
 them, by whome thy incomparable selfe wert disdained. Yet (ô *Philoclea*) where-
 foer you are, pardon me, if I speake in the bitterness of my soule, excellent may
 you be in all other things (and excellent sure you are since he loued you) your want
 of pittie, where the fault onely was infinitenesse of desert, cannot be excused. I
 would, ô God, I would that you had granted his deserued suite of marrying you,
 and that I had bene your seruing-maide, to haue made my estate the foile of your
 felicitie, so he had liued. How many weary steps haue I trodden after thee, while
 my onely complaint was, that thou wert vnkinde? Alas I would now thou wert
 to be vnkind. Alas why wouldest thou not commaund my seruice, in perswading
Philoclea to loue thee? Who could, or (if euery one could) who would haue recounted
 thy perfections so well as I? who with such kindly passions could haue stirred
 pittie for thee as I? who should haue deliuered not only the words, but the teares I
 had of thee? and so shouldest thou haue exercised thy disdain in me, and yet vsed my
 seruice for thee.

With that the body mouing somewhat, and giuing a grone full of deaths musick,
 she fell vpon his face, and kist him, and withall cried out. O miserable I, that haue
 onely fauour by miserie: and then would shee haue returned to a fresh careere of
 complaints, when an aged and wise Gentleman came to her, and besought her, to
 remember what was fit for her greatnesse, wisdom, and honour: and withall, that
 it was fitter to shew her loue, in carying the body to her excellent Surgeon, first ap-
 plying such excellent medicines as she had receiued of him for that purpose, rather
 then onely shew her selfe a woman-louer in fruitlesse lamentations. She was streight
 warned with the obedience of an ouerthrowne minde, and therefore leauing some
 surgeons of her owne to dresse the body, went her selfe to *Anaxius*, and humbling
 her selfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wish, besought him, that since the
 surgeons there had vtterly giuen him ouer, that he would let her carie him away in
 her litter with her, since the worst he could haue should bee to die, and to die in her
 armes that loued him aboue all things; and where he should haue such monuments
 erected ouer him, as were fit for her loue, and his worthines: beseeching him with-
 all, since she was in a countrey of enemies (where shee trusted more to *Anaxius* va-
 lour, then *Basilus* promise) that he would couey them safely out of those territories.
 Her

Her reasons something moued him, but nothing throughly perswaded him, but the last request of his help: which he streight promised, warranting all securitie, as long as that sword had his master aliue. She as happy therein as unhappinesse could be (hauiing receiued as small comfort of her own surgeons as of the others) caused yet the bodie to be easily conueyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roare and crie, as though neuer till then they had lost their Lord. And if the terror of *Anaxius* had not kept them vnder, they would haue mutinied, rather then suffered his bodie to be caried away.

But *Anaxius* him selfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men of that place they were affraid euen to crie, though they were ready to crie for feare; but (because that they might do) euery bodie forced (euen with harming themselues) to do honour to him: some throwing themselues vpon the ground; some tearing their clothes, and casting dust vpon their heads, and some euen wounding themselues, & sprinkling their owne blood in the aire.

The generall consort of whose mourning, persourmed so the naturall tunes of sorrow; that euen to them (if any such were) that felt not the losse, yet others grieve taught them grief; hauiing before their compassionat sense so passionate a spectacle of a yong man, of great beautie, beautified with great honor, honoured by great valure, made of inestimable value, by the noble vsing of it, to lye there languishing, vnder the arrest of death, & a death, where the maner could be no comfort to the discomfortableness of the matter. But when the bodie was carried through the gate, & the people (sauiing such as were appointed) not suffered to go further, there was such an vniuersall crie, as if they had all had but one life, & all receiued but one blow.

Which so moued *Anaxius* to consider the losse of his friend, that (his mind apter to reuenge, then tenderesse) he presently giuing order to his brother to keepe the prisoners safe, & vniuersited till his returne from conueying *Helen*, he sent a messenger to the sisters, to tell them this curteous message: that at his returne with his own hands, he would cut off their heads, & send them for tokens to their father.

This message was brought vnto the sisters, as they sate at that time together with *Zelmae*, conferring how to carrie themselues, hauiing heard of the death of *Amphilus*. And as no expectation of death is so painful, as where the resolution is hindred by the intermixing of hopes, so did this new alarum, though not remoue, yet moue somewhat the constancy of their mindes, which were so vnconstantly dealt with. But within a while, the excellent *Pamela* had brought her minde againe to his old acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her sister (whom most deerely she loued.) Sister (said she) you see how many acts our Tragedie hath: Fortune is not yet awearie of vexing vs: but what? A ship is not counted strong for byding one storme: It is but the same trumpet of death, which now perhaps giues the last sound: and let vs make that profit of our former miseries, that in them we learned to dye willingly. Truly said *Philoclea*, deare sister, I was so beaten with the euils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to despise the sweetnesse of it, yet my weaknesse bredde that strength, to be wearie of the paines of it: onely I must confesse, that little hope, which by these late accidents was awaked in me, was at the first angrie withall. But euen in the darkenesse of that horror, I see a light of comfort appeare; & how can I tread amisse, that see *Pamela* steppes? I would onely (O that my wish might take place) that my schoole-Mistres might liue, to see mee say my lesson truly. Were that a life, my *Philoclea* said *Pamela*. No, no (said she) let it come, and put on his worst face: for at the worst it is but a bug beare. Ioy is it to me to see you so well

resolued, and since the world will not haue vs, let it lose vs. Onely (with that shee stayed a little, and sighed) onely my *Philoclea*, (then she bowed downe, & whispered in her eare) only *Musidorus*, my shepheard, comes betwene me and death, & makes me thinke I should not dye, because I know he would not I should dye. With that *Philoclea* sighed also, saying no more, but looking vpon *Zelmane*: who was walking vp and downe the chamber, hauing heard this message from *Anaxius*, and hauing in time past heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her againe into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with her selfe of the manner how to preuent it, she continued her musing humour, little saying, or indeede, little finding in her hart to say, in a case of such extremitie, where peremptorily death was threatned: and so stayed they; hauing yet that comfort, that they might tarie together. *Pamela* nobly, *Phyloclea* sweetely, and *Zelmane* sadly, and desperately none of them entertaining sleep, which they thought should shortly begin neuer to awake.

But *Anaxius* came home, hauing safely conducted *Helen*, and safely hee might well do it: For though many of *Basilus* Knights would haue attempted something vpon *Anaxius*, by that meanes to deliuer the Ladies; yet *Philanax*, hauing receiued his masters commaundement, and knowing his word was giuen, would not consent vnto it. And the black-Knight (who by them was able to carry abroad his woundes) did not knowe thereof; but was bringing force, by force to deliuer his Lady. So as *Anaxius*, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making euen chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as soone as hee was returned, with a felon hart calling his brother vp with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three together; with full intention to kill the sisters with his owne handes, and send their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwise enclined) dissuaded him: but his reuerence stayed their perswasions. But when hee was come into the chamber, with the very wordes of cholerike threatning climbing vp his throte, his eyes first lighted vpon *Pamela*; who hearing hee was comming, and looking for death, thought she would keepe her owne maiestie in welcomming it; but the beames thereof so strake his eyes, with such a counterbuffe vnto his pride, that if his anger could not so quickly loue, nor his pride so easily honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthinesse.

Which while it bred a pause in him, *Zelmane* (who had readie in her minde both what and how to say) stept out vnto him, and with a resolute stayednesse void either of anger, kindnesse, disdain, or humblenesse) spake in this sort. *Anaxius* (said she) if *Fame* haue not bene ouerpartiall to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I do call thee euen before that vertue, & will make it the iudge betwene vs. And now I do affirme, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou hast done, thou doest weakely, in seeking without daunger to reuenge his death, whose life with danger thou mightst perhaps haue preserued: thou doest cowardly, in going about by the death of these excellent Ladies, to preuent the iust punishment that hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their father, or any other could make, might lay vpon thee and dost most basely, in once presenting thy selfe as an executioner; a vile office vpon men, and in a iust cause: beyond the degree of any vile worde, in so vniust a cause, and vpon Ladies, and such Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman. I say, thou art vnworthy to be counted a knight, or to be admitted into the companie of Knights. Neither for what, I say, will I alleadge other reasons of wisdom, or iustice, to proue my speech, because I know thou dost disdain to be tyed to their rules, but even in thine own vertue (whereof thou so much

glorieſt) I will make my tryall: & therefore deſie thee, by the death of one of vs two to proue or diſproue theſe reproches. Chuiſe thee what armes thou likeſt, I only demaund, that theſe Ladies (whom I defend) may in libertie ſee the combat.

- When *Zelmane* began her ſpeech, the excellencie of her beautie & grace, made
 5 him a litle content to heare. Beſides that, a new leſſon he had read in *Pamela* had already taught him ſome regard. But when ſhe entred into brauery of ſpeech, hee thought at firſt, a mad & rayling humor poſſeſt her; till, finding the ſpeeches hold well together, & at length come to flat challenge of combat, he ſtood leaning back with his body & head, ſometimes with bent browes looking vpon the one ſide of her,
 10 ſometimes of the other, beyond maruell maruelling, that he, who had neuer heard ſuch ſpeeches from any knight, ſhould be thus rebuffed by a woman; & that maruel made him heare out her ſpeech: which ended, he turned his head to his brother *Zoilus*, & ſaid nothing, but only liſting vp his eyes, ſmiled. But *Zelmane* finding his mind, *Anaxius* (ſaid ſhe) perchance thou diſdaineſt to anſwere me, becauſe (as a woman)
 15 thou thinkeſt me not fit to be fought withall. But I tell thee, that I haue bin trayned vp in martiall matters, with ſo good ſucceſſe, that I haue many times ouercome brauer Knights then thy ſelfe: and am well knowne to be equall in ſeates of armes, to the famous *Pyrocles*: who ſlue thy valiant Vncle, the Giant *Euardes*. The remembrance of his Vncles death ſomething netled him, ſo as he anſwered thus.
 20 Indeede (ſayd he) any woman may be as valiant as that coward, and trayterly boy, who ſlue my Vncle trayterouſly, and after ranne from me in the plaine field. Fiuethouſand ſuch could not haue ouercome *Euardes*, but by falſhood. But I fought him all ouer *Aſia*, following him ſtill from one of his cony holes to another, till coming into this Countrie, I heard of my friends being beſieged, and ſo came to blow
 25 away the wretches that troubled him. But whereſoeuer the miſerable boy ſlie, heauen, nor hell, ſhall keepe his heart from being torne by theſe hands. Thou lyeſt in thy throate (ſayd *Zelmane*) that boye, where euer he went, did ſo noble acts, as thy heart (as proud as it is) dares not thinke of, much leſſe performe. But to pleaſe thee the better with my preſence, I tell thee, no creature can be neerer of kinnage to him, ſo
 30 then my ſelfe: and ſo well we loue, that he would not be ſorier for his owne death then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an Amazon Ladie. And therefore, thou canſt not deuife to reuenge thy ſelfe more vpon him, then by killing me: which if thou dareſt do, manfullie doo it, otherwiſe, if thou harne theſe incomparable Ladies, or my ſelfe without daring to fight with me, I proteſt before theſe Knights,
 35 and before heauen and earth (that will reueale thy ſhame) that thou art the beggarlieſt daſtardly villaine, that diſhonoureth the earth with his ſteps: and if thou letteſt me ouerliue them, ſo will I blaze thee. But al this could not moue *Anaxius*, but that he onely ſaid, Euill ſhould it become the terrour of the world to fight, much worſe to ſcold with thee.
 40 But (ſaid he) for the death of theſe ſame (pointing to the Princeſſes) of my grace I giue them life. And withall, going to *Pamela*, and offering to take her by the chin, And as for you, Minion (ſaid he) yeeld but gently to my will, and you ſhall not onely liue, but liue ſo happilie, He would haue ſaid further, when *Pamela*, diſpleaſed both with words, matter and maner, putting him away with her faire hand, Proud
 45 beaſt (ſaid ſhe) yet thou playeſt worſe thy Comedie, then thy Tragedie. For my part, aſſure thy ſelfe, ſince my deſtinie is ſuch, that at each moment my life and death ſtand in equall ballance, I had rather haue thee, and thinke thee far fitter to be

my hangman, then my husband. Pride and anger would faine haue cruellie reuenged so bitter an answer, but already *Cupid* had begun to make it his sport, to pull his plumes: so that, vnused to a way of curtesie, and put out of his byas of pride, he hastily went away, grumbling to himselfe; betweene threatening & wishing; leauing his brothers with them: the elder of whom *Lycurgus*, liked *Philoclea*, & *Zoilus* wold needs loue *Zelmane*, or at least, entertaine theselues with making them belceue so. *Lycurgus* more braggard, & neere his brothers humour, began, with setting forth their blood, their deeds, how many they had despised of most excellent women; how much they were bound to them, that would seeke that of them. In summe, in all his speeches, more like the bestower then the desirer of felicitie. Whō it was an excellent pastime (to those that would delight in the play of vertue) to see with what a wittie ignorance she would not vnderstand: & how, acknowledging his perfections, she would make that one of his perfections, not to be iniurious to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would he fall to touching and toying, still viewing his graces in no glasse but self-liking. To which *Philoclea*s shamefastnesse and humblenessse, were as strong resistors as choller and disdaine: for though she yeelded not, he thought she was to be ouercome: and that thought awhile stayed him from further violence. But *Zelmane* had eye to his behauiour, and set it in her memorie vpon the score of reuenge, while she her selfe was no lesse attempted by *Zoilus*; who lesse full of brags was forwardest in offering (indeed) dishonorable violence.

But when after their fruitlesse labours they had gone away called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed between new conceived desires, and disdaine to be disdained) *Zelmane* (who with most assured quietnesse of iudgement looked into their present estate) earnestly perswaded the two sisters, that to auoide the mischiefs of proud outrage, they would onely so farre sute their behauiour to their estates, as they might winne time; which as it could not bring them to worse case then they were, so it might bring forth unexpected reliefe. And why (said *Pamela*) shall we anie longer flatter aduersitie? Why should we delight to make our selues any longer balles to iniurious Fortune, since our owne parents are content to be tyrants ouer vs, since our owne kinne are content trayterously to abuse vs? Certainly in mishap it may be some comfort to vs that we are lighted in these fellowes hands, who yet will keepe vs from hauing cause of being miserable by our friends meanes. Nothing grieues me more, then that you, noble Ladie *Zelmane*, (to whō the world might haue made vs able to do honour) should receiue onely hurt by the contagion of our miserie. As for mee and my sister, vndoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dying nobly, while we haue done or suffered nothing, which might make our soule ashamed at the parture from these bodies. Hope is the fawning traytor of the mind, while vnder colour of friendship, it robs it of his chiefe force of resolution. Vertuous and faire Ladie (said *Zelmane*) what you say is true, and that truth may well make vp apart in the harmonic of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought alwayes to be one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring forth any good, do not barre your self thereof: for then wil be the time to die noble, when you cannot liue noble. Then so earnestlie shee perswaded with them both, to referre them-selues to their fathers consent (in obtaining whereof they knew some while would bespent) and by that meanes to temper the mindes of their proud woers; that in the end *Pamela* yeelded to her because she spake reason; and *Philoclea* yeelded to her reason because she spake it.

And

And so when they were againe solicited in that litle pleasing petition, *Pamela* forced her selfe to make answer to *Anaxius*, that if her father gaue his consent she would make her selfe beleue, that such was the heauenly determination, since she had no meanes to auoide it. *Anaxius* (who was the most franke promiser to himselfe of successe) nothing doubted of *Basilus* consent, but rather assured himselfe, hee would be his Orator in that matter: and therefore hee chose out an officious seruant (whom he esteemed verie wise, because he neuer found him but iust of his opinion) and willed him to be his Embassadour to *Basilus*, and to make him know, that if he meant to haue his daughter both safe and happie, and desired himselfe to haue such a sonne in lawe, as would not onely protect him in his quiet course, but (if he list to accept it) would giue him the monarchie of the world, that then he should receiue *Anaxius*, who neuer before knew what it was to pray any thing. That if he did not, he would make him know, that the power of *Anaxius* was in euerie thing beyond his will, and yet his will not to be resisted by any other power.

15 His seruant with smiling and cast-vp looke, desired God to make his memorie able to containe the treasure of that wise speech; and therefore besought him to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his mind might be the better acquainted with the diuinesse therof, and that being graciouslie graunted, he then doubted not by carying with him in his conceit, the grace wherewith *Anaxius* spake it, to perswade rockie minds to their owne harme: so litle doubted he to win *Basilus* to that, which he thought would make him thinke the heauens opened, when he heard but the proffer thereof. *Anaxius* grauely allowed the probabilitie of his coniecture, and therefore sent him away, promising him he should haue the bringing vp of his second sonne by *Pamela*.

25 The messenger with speed perfourmed his Lords commaundement to *Basilus*, who by nature quiet, and by superstition made doubtfull, was loth to take any matter of armes in hand, wherein already he had found so slowe successe; though *Philanax* vehemently vrged him thereunto, making him see that his retiring backe did encourage iniuries. But *Basilus* betwixt the feare of *Anaxius* might, the passion of his loue, and ieaiousie of his estate, was so perplexed, that not able to determine, he tooke the common course of men, to flie onely then to deuotion, when they want resolution: therefore detaining the messenger with delayes, he deferred the directing of his course to the counsell of *Apollo*, which because himselfe at that time could not well go to require, he entrusted the matter to his best trusted *Philanax*: who (as one in whom obedience was a sufficient reason vnto him) went with diligence to *Delphos*, where being entred into the secret place of the Temple, & hauing perfourmed the sacrifices vsuall, the spirit that posselt the prophecying woman, with a sacred furie attended not his demand, but as if it would argue him of incredulitie, told him, not in darke wonted speeches, but plainly to be vnderstood, what he came for, and that he should returne to *Basilus*, and will him to denie his daughters to *Anaxius* and his brothers, for that they were reserued for such as were better beloued of the Gods. That he should not doubt, for they should returne vnto him safely and speedily. And that he should keepe on his solitarie course, till both *Philanax* and *Basilus* fullie agreed in the vnderstanding of the former prophecie: withal commanding *Philanax* from thenceforward to giue tribute, but not oblatiō

45 to humane wisdom.

Philanax then finding that reason cannot shew it selfe more reasonable, then to leaue reasoning in things about reason, returnes to his Lord, and like one that

preferred truth before the maintayning of an opinion, hid nothing from him, nor from thenceforth durst any more dissuade him from that which he found by the celestiall providence directed; but he himselfe looking to repaire the gouernment as much as in so broken an estate by ciuill dissention he might, and fortifying with notable arte, both the Lodges, so as they were almost made vnapprochable, hee left *Basilus* to bemoane the absence of his daughters, and to bewaile the imprisonment of *Zelmane*: yet whollie giuen holily to obey the Oracle, he gaue a resolute negative vnto the messenger of *Anaxius*, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good termes desiring him to shew himselfe, in respect of his birth and profession, so princelie a Knight, as without forcing him to seeke the way of force, to deliuer in noble sort those Ladies vnto him, and so should the iniurie haue bene in *Amphialus*, and the benefite in him.

The messenger went backe with this answer, yet hauing euer vsed to suger any thing which his Maister was to receiue, he told him, that when *Basilus* first vnderstood his desires, he did ouer-reach so farre all his most hopefull expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldnesse to hearken to such a man, in whō the heauens had such interest, without asking the Gods counsell, and therefore had sent his principall Counceller to *Delphos*, who although he kept the matter neuer so secret, yet his diligence, inspired by *Anaxius* priuiledge ouer all worldly things, had found out the secreete, which was, that he should not presume to marie his daughters to one, who already was enrolled among the demie-gods, and yet much lesse he should dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

Anaxius, who till then had made Fortune his creator, and force his God, now began to find another wisdom to be aboue, that iudged so rightlie of him: and where in this time of his seruants wayting for *Basilus* resolution, he and his brothers had courted their Ladies, as whom they vouchsafed to haue for their wiues, he resolved now to dallie no longer in delays, but to make violence his Oratour, since he had found perswasions had gotten nothing but answers. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who hauing all this while wanted nothing to take that away but his authoritie, gaue spurres to his running; and (vnworthy men) neither feeling vertue in themselves, nor tendering it in others, they were headlong to make that euill consort of loue and force, when *Anaxius* had word, that from the Tower there were descried some companies of armed men, marching towards the towne; wherefore he gaue present order to his seruants and souldiers, to go to the gates and walles, leauing none within but himselfe and his brothers: his thoughts then so full of their intended pray, that *Mars*-his lowdest trumpet could scarcely haue awaked him.

But while hee was directing what hee would haue done, his youngest brother *Zoilus* glad that he had the commission, went in the name of *Anaxius*, to tell the sisters, that since he had answere from their father, that he and his brother *Lycurgus* should haue them in what sort it pleased them, that they would now graunt them no longer time, but presentlie to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or perswaded. *Pamela* made him answere, that in a matter whereon the whole state of her life depended, and wherein she had euer answered, she would not lead, but follow her parents pleasure; she thought it reason she should, either by letter, or particular messenger vnderstand somthing from themselves & not haue their beleefe bound to the report of their partiall seruant, & therefore as to their words, she & her sister had euer a simple & true resolution, so against their

their vniust force, God they hoped, would either arme their liues, or take away their liues. Well Ladies (said he) I will leaue my brothers, who by and by will come vnto you, to be their owne embassadors, for my part, I must now do my selfe seruice. And with that turning vp his mustachoes, and marching as if he would begin a pauen, he went toward *Zelmane*. But *Zelmane* (having had all this while of the messengers being with *Basilus*, much to do to keepe those excellent Ladies from seeking by the passport of death, to escape those base dangers whereunto they found themselves subiect) still hoping that *Musidorus* would finde some meanes to deliuer them; and therefore had often both by her owne example, and comfortable reasons, perswaded them to ouerpasse many insolent indignities of their proud suters, who thought it was a sufficient fauour not to do the vttermost iniurie, now come againe to the streight she most feared for them, either of death or dishonor, if heroicall courage would haue let her, she had bene beyond her self amazed: but that yet held vp her wit, to attend the vttermost occasion, which euen then brought his hairie forehead vnto her: for *Zoilus* smacking his lips, as for the Prologue of a kisse, and something aduancing himselfe, Darling (said he) let thy heart be full of ioy, and let thy faire eyes be of counsell with it, for this day thou shalt haue *Zoilus*, whom many haue longed for; but none shall haue him, but *Zelmane*. And oh, how much glory I haue to thinke what a race will be betwene vs. The world, by the heauens, the world will be too little for them: And with that, he would haue put his arme about her necke, but shee withdrawing her selfe from him, My Lord (said shee) much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not dissemble with you, my natiuitie being cast by one that neuer failed in any of his prognostications, I haue bene assured, that I should neuer be apt to beare children. But since you will honor me with so hie fauor, I must only desire that I may performe a vow which I made among my cuntrywomen, the famous *Amazons*, that I wold neuer mary none, but such one as was able to withstand me in Armes: therefore, before I make mine owne desire seruiceable to yours, you must vouchsafe to lend me armour and weapons, that at least, with a blow or two of the sword, I may not find my selfe periured to my selfe. But *Zoilus* (but laughing with a hartie lowdnesse) went by force to embrace her; making no other answer, but since she had a mind to trie his Knighthood, she should quickly know what a man of armes he was: and so, without reuerence to the Ladies, began to struggle with her.

But in *Zelmane* then Disdaine becamewisdome, and Anger gaue occasion. For abiding no longer abroad in the matter, she that had not put off, though she had disguised, *Pyrocles*, being farre fuller of strong nimblenesse, tript vp his feeet, so that he fell downe at hers. And withall (meaning to pursue what she had begun) puld out his sword which he ware about him: but before she could strike him withall, he gat vp, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethren, preparing themselves to come downe to their mistresses. But she followed at his heeles, and euen as he came to throw himselfe into their armes for succor, she hit him with his owne sword, such a blow vpon the waste, that she almost cut him asunder: once, she sundred his soule from his body, sending it to *Proserpina*, an angry Goddesse against rauishers. But *Anaxius*, seing before his eyes the miserable end of his brother, fuller of despite then wrath, and yet fuller of wrath then sorow, looking with a wofull eye vpon his brother *Lycurgus*, Brother, said he, chastise this vile creature, while I go downe, and take order least further mischief arise: and so went downe to the Ladies, whom he visited, doubting there had bene some further practise then yet he

conceiued. But finding them onely strong in pacience, he went and lockt a great Iron gate, by which onely any bodie might mount to that part of the Castle, rather to conceale the shame of his brother, slaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other anoyance, and then went vp to receiue some comfort of the execution, he was sure his brother had done of *Zelmane*. But *Zelmane* no sooner saw those brothers, of whom Reason assured her she was to expect reuenge, but that shee lept to a target, as one that well knew the first marke of valure to be defence. And then accepting the oportunitie of *Anaxius* going away, she waited not the pleasure of *Lycurgus*, but without any words (which she euer thought vaine, when resolution tooke the place of perswasion) gaue her owne hart the contentment to be the assailer. *Lycurgus*, who was in the disposition of his nature hazardouse, & by the luckie passing through many dangers, growne confident in himselfe, went toward her, rather as to a spoile, then to fight, so farre from feare, that his assurednesse disdained to hope. But when her sword made demonstrations aboue all flatterie of arguments, and that he found she prest so vpon him, as shewed that her courage sprang not from blinde despaire, but was garded both with cunning and strength: self-loue then first in him diuided it selfe from vain-glory, and made him finde that the world of worthinesse had not his whole globe comprised in his brest, but that it was necessarie to haue strong resistance against so strong assailing. And so betweene them, for a fewe blowes, *Mars* himselfe might haue bin delighted to looke on. But *Zelmane*, who knew that in her case, slownesse of victory was litle better then ruine, with the bellowes of hate, blew the fire of courage, and he striking a maine blow at her head, she warded it with the shield, but so warded, that the shield was cut in two peeces, while it protected her, & withall she ran in to him, and thrusting at his breast, which he put by with his target, as hee was lifting vp his sword to strike againe, she let fall the peece of her shield, and with her left hand catching his sword of the inside of the pommell, with nimble and strong sleight, shee had gotten his sword out of his hand before his sence could conuey to his imagination, what was to be doubted. And hauing now two swords against one shield, meaning not foolishly to be vngatefull to good fortune, while he was no more amazed with his being vnweaponed, then with the suddainnesse thereof, she gaue him such a wound vpon his head, in despite of the shields ouer-weake resistance, that withall he fell to the ground, astonished with the paine, & agast with feare. But seeing *Zelmane* ready to conclude her victory in his death, bowing vp his head to her, with a countenance that had forgotten all pride, Enough excellent Lady, said he, the honor is yours: Whereof you shal want the best witnesse, if you kil me. As you haue taken from men the glory of manhood, returne so now againe to your own sex, for mercy. I will redeeme my life of you with no small seruices, for I will vndertake to make my brother obey all your comandements. Grant life I beseech you, for your own honor, and for the persons sake that you loue best. *Zelmane* represt awhile her great hart, either disdaining to be cruel, or pitiful, & therefore not cruel: & now the image of humane condition, began to be an Orator vnto her of compassion, when she saw, as he lifted vp his armes with a suppliant grace, about one of the, unhappily tied, a garter with a Iewel, which (giuē to *Pyrocles* by his aunt of *Theffalia*, & greatly esteemed by him) he had presented to *Philoclea*, & with inward rage promising extreame hatred, had scene *Lycurgus* with a proud force, & not without some hurt vnto her, pull away from *Philoclea*, because at entreatie she would not giue it him. But the sight of that was like a cyphar, signifying all the iniuries which *Philoclea* had of him suffered, & that remēbrāce feeding vpon

vpon wrath, trod downe all conceits of mercie. And therefore saying no more, but
 No villaine, die: it is *philoclea* that sends thee this token for thy loue. With that she
 made her sword drinke the blood of his heart, though he wresting his body, & with
 a countenance prepared to excuse, wold faine haue delayed the receiuing of deaths
 5 Ambassadors. But neither that stayed *Zelmaes* hand, nor yet *Anaxius* crie vnto
 her, who hauing made fast the iron gate, euen then came to the top of the staires,
 when, contrary to all his imaginations, hee saw his brother lie at *Zelmaes* mercie.
 Therefore crying, promising, and threatening to her to hold her hand: the last grone
 of his brother was the only answer he could get to his vnrespected eloquence. But
 10 then Pitie would faine haue drawne teares, which Furie in their spring dried, and
 Anger would faine haue spoken, but that Disdaine sealed vp his lippes; but in his
 heart he blasphemed heaven, that it could haue such a power ouer him; no lesse a-
 shamed of the victorie he should haue of her, then of his brothers ouerthrow: and
 no more spited, that it was yet vnreuedged, then that the reuenge shold be no grea-
 15 ter then a womans destruction. Therefore with no speech, but such a groning crie,
 as often is the language of sorowfull anger, he came running at *Zelmae*, vfe of figh-
 ting then seruing in stead of patient consideration what to do. Guided wherewith,
 though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according to knowledge, pressing
 vpon *Zelmae* in such a well defended maner, that in all the combats that euer she
 20 had fought, she had neuer more need of quicke senses, and ready vertue. For being
 one of the greatest men of stature then liuing; as hee did fullie answer that stature
 in greatnesse of might, so did he exceed both in greatnesse of courage, which with
 a countenance formed by the nature both of his mind and bodie, to an almost hor-
 rible fiercenesse, was able to haue caried feare to any mind, that was not priuie to
 25 it selfe of a true and constant worthinesse. But *Pyrocles*, whose soule might well be
 separated from his bodie, but neuer alienated from the remembring of what was
 comely, if at the first he did a litle apprehend the daungerousnesse of his aduersarie,
 whom once before he had something tried, and now perfectly sawe, as the verie
 picture of forcible furie: yet was that apprehension quicklie stayed in him, rather
 30 strengthening then weakning his vertue by that wrestling; like wine, growing the
 stronger by being moued. So that they both, prepared in hearts, and able in hands,
 did honour solitarinesse there with such a combat, as might haue demaunded, as a
 right of fortune, whole armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there,
 where manhood blew the trumpeter, and satisfaction did whet as much as glorie.
 35 There was strength against nimblenesse; rage, against resolution; furie, against ver-
 tue; confidence, against courage; pride, against noblenesse: loue in both, bree-
 ding mutuall hatred, and desire of reuenging the iniurie of his brothers slaughter,
 to *Anaxius*, being like *Philocleas* captiuitie to *Pyrocles*. Who had seene the one,
 would haue thought nothing could haue resisted; who had marked the other, wold
 40 haue maruelled that the other had so long resisted. But like two contrarie tides, ei-
 ther of which are able to carie worlds of ships, and men vpon them, with such swift-
 nesse, as nothing seemes able to withstand them: yet meeting one another, with
 mingling their watrie forces, & strugling together, it is long to say whether stream
 gets the victorie: So betweene these if *Pallas* had bene there, she could scarce-
 45 lie haue told, whether she had nursed better in the feates of armes. The Irish grey-
 hound, against the English mastiffe: the sword-fish, against the whale; the Rhino-
 ceros against the Elephant, might be models, and but models of this combat. *A-
 naxius* was better armed defensiuelie: for (beside a strong caske brauely couered,

wherewith he couered his head) he had a huge shield, such perchance, as *Achilles* shewed to the pale walles of Troy, wherewithall that great body was couered. But *Pyrocles*, vterly vnarmed for defence, to offend had the aduantage: for, in either hand he had a sword, and with both hands nimbly performed that office. And according as they were diuersly furnished, so did they differ in the maner of fighting. For *Anaxius* most by warding, and *Pyrocles* oftneft by auoyding, resisted the aduersaries assault. Both hastie to end, yet both often staying for aduantage. Time, distance, and motion, custome made them so perfect in, that as if they had bene fellow Counselers, and not enemies, each knew the others mind, and knew how to preuent it. So as their strength sayled them sooner then their skill, and yet their breath failed the sooner then their strength. And breathlesse indeed they grew, before either could complaine of any losse of blood.

So that consenting by the mediation of necessitie, to a breathing time of truce, being withdrawne a litle one from the other, *Anaxius* stood leaning vpon his sword, with his grim eye so setled vpon *Zelmane*, as is wont to be the looke of an earnest thought. Which *Zelmane* marking, and according to the *Pyrocleian* nature, fuller of gay brauerie in the midst, then in the beginning of danger; What is it (said she) *Anaxius*, that thou so deeply musest on? Doth thy brothers example make thee thinke of thy fault past, or of thy comming punishment? I thinke (said he) what spitefull God it should be, who enuying my glorie, hath brought me to such a wayward case, that neither thy death can be a reuenge, nor thy ouerthrow a victorie. Thou doest well indeed (said *Zelmane*) to impute thy case to the heauenly providence, which will haue thy pride find it selfe (euen in that whereof thou art most proud) punished by the weake sexe which thou most contemnest.

But then, hauing sufficiently rested themselves, they renewed againe their combat, far more terrible then before: like nimble vaulters, who at the first & second leape do but stirre, and (as it were) awake the fiery and aerie parts, which after in the other leapes they do with more excellencie exercise. For in this pausing, each had brought to his thoughts the maner of the others fighting, and the aduantages, which by that, and by the quality of their weapons they might worke themselves; and so againe repeated the lesson they had said before, more perfectly, by the vsing of it. *Anaxius* oftner vsed blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his shield animating him vnto it. *Pyrocles*, of a more fine and deliuer strength, watching his time when to giue fit thrusts; as, with the quicke obeying of his body, to his eyes quicke commandement, he shunned anie harme *Anaxius* could do to him: so wold he soon haue made an end of *Anaxius*, if he had not found him a man of wonderful, & almost matchlesse excellencie in matters of armes. *Pyrocles* vsed diuerse faynings to bring *Anaxius* on into some inconuenience: but *Anaxius* keeping a sound maner of fighting, neuer offered but seeing faire cause, and then followed it with well gouerned violence. Thus spent they a great time, struiuing to do, and with struiuing to do, wearying themselves more the with the verie doing, *Anaxius* finding *Zelmane* so neare vnto him, that with litle motion he might reach her, knitting all his strength together, at that time mainlie foyned at her face. But *Zelmane* stronglie putting it by with her right hand sword, comming in with her left foote and hand, wold haue giuen a sharpe visitation to his right side, but that he was faine to leape away. Whereat ashamed, (as hauing neuer done so much before in his life.)

How

How this combate ended, how the Ladies by the coming of the discovered forces were deliuered, and restored to Basilius, and how Dorus againe returned to his old maister Dametas is altogether unknowne. What afterward chaunced, out of the Authors owne writings and conceits hath bene supplied, as followeth.

5 A Fter that *Basilius* (according to the oracles promise) had receiued home his daughters, and settled himselfe againe in his solitarie course and accustomed companie, there passed not many daies ere the now fully recomforted *Dorus* hauing waited a time of *Zelma*nes walking alone towards her little Arbor, tooke leaue of
 10 his maister *Dametas* husbandrie to follow her. Neere whereunto ouertaking her, and sitting downe together among the sweet flowers whereof that place was verie plentifull, vnder the pleasant shade of a broad-leaued *Sycamor*, they recounted one to another their strange pilgrimage of passions, omitting nothing which the open harted friendship is wont to lay forth, where there is cause to communicate
 15 both ioyes & sorows, for indeed there is no sweeter tast of friendship, then the coupling of soules in this mutualitie either of condoling or comforting: where the oppressed minde findes it selfe not altogether miserable, since it is sure of one which is feelingly sorie for his miserie: & the ioyful spends not his ioy, either alone, or there where it may be enuiued: but may freely send it to such a well grounded object, from
 20 whence he shall be sure to receiue a sweete reflection of the same ioy, and, as in a cleere mirror of sincere good wil, see a liuely picture of his own gladnesse. But after much discourse on either part, *Dorus* (his heart scarce seruing him to come to the point, whereunto his then comming had bene wholly directed, as loth in the kindest sort to discover to his friend his owne vnkindnesse) at length, one worde emboldening another made knowne to *Zelma*ne, how *Pamela* vpon his vehement oath
 25 to offer no force vnto her, till he had inuested her in the Duchie of *Theffalia*, had condescended to his stealing her away to the next sea port. That besides the strange humors shee saw her father more and more falling into, and vnreasonable restraint of her libertie, whereof shee knew no cause but light grounded ieaiousies, added
 30 to the hate of that manner of life, and confidence shee had in his vertue, the chiefest reason had wonne her to this, was the late danger shee stood in of loosing him, the like whereof (not vnlike to fall if this course were continued) she chose rather to dye then againe to vndergoe. That now they waited for nothing else, but some fit time for their escape, by the absence of their three lothsome companions, in whom
 35 follie ingendred suspicion. And therefore now, said *Dorus*, my deere Cousin, to whome nature began my friendship, education confirmed it, and vertue hath made it eternall, here haue I discovered the verie foundation whereupon my life is built: be you the Iudge betwixt mee and my fortune. The violence of loue is not vnknowne to you: And I know my case shall neuer want pittie in your consideration.
 40 How all the ioyes of my heart do leaue mee, in thinking I must for a time be absent from you, the eternall trueth is witnesse vnto mee, I know I should not so sensibly feele the pangs of my last departure. But this enchantment of my restless desire hath such authoritie in my selfe about my selfe, that I am become a slaue vnto it, I haue no more freedome in mine owne determinations. My thoughts
 45 are now all bent how to carrie away my burdenous blisse. Yet, most beloued Cousin, rather then you should thinke I doe herein violate that holie band of true friendship, wherein I vnworthie am knit vnto you, commaund mee stay. Perchance the force of your commaundement may worke such impression into my

heart, that no reason of mine owne can imprint into it. For the Gods forbid, the
 foule word of abādoning *Pyrocles*, might euer be objected to the faithful *Musidorus*.
 But if you can spare my presence, whose presence no way serues you, and by the di-
 uision of these two Lodges is not oft with you: nay if you can thinke my absence
 may, as it shall, stand you in stead, by bringing such an armye hither, as shall make
Basilus, willing or vnwilling, to know his owne happe, in graunting you *Philoclea*:
 then I will cheerefullie goe about this my most desired enterprife, and shall thinke
 the better halfe of it alreadie atchieued, being begun in the fortunate houre of my
 friends contentment. These words, as they were not knit together with such a con-
 stant course of flowing eloquence, as *Dorus* was wont to vse: so was his voice inter-
 rupted with sighes, & his countenance with enterchanging colour disimayed. So
 much his own heart did finde him faultie to vnbind any way the continuall vse of
 their deare friendship. But *Zelmane*, who had all this while gladly harkened to the
 other tydings of her friends happie successe, when this last determination of *Dorus*
 strake her attentiu eares, she stayed a great while oppressed with a dead amazemēt.
 There came streight before her minde, made tender with woes, the images of her
 own fortune. Her tedious longings, her causes to despaire, the comber some folly of
Basilus, the enraged icalousie of *Gynecia*, her selfe a Prince without retinue; a man
 annoyed with the troubles of woman-kind; lothsomly loued, and dangerously lo-
 uing; And now for the perfecting of all, her friend to be taken away by himselfe, to
 make the losse the greater by the vnkindnesse. But within a while she resolutely pas-
 sed ouer all inward obiections, and preferring her friends profit to her own desire,
 with a quiet but hartie looke, she thus answered him. If I bare thee this Loue ver-
 tuous *Musidorus*, for mine owne sake, and that our friendship grew because I for
 my part, might reioyce to enioy such a friend, I should now so thoroughly feele mine
 owne losse, that I should call the heauens and earth to witnesse, how cruelly ye rob
 me of my greatest comfort, measuring the breach of friendship by mine owne pas-
 sion. But because indeede I loue thee for thy selfe, and in my iudgement iudge of
 thy worthinesse to be loued, I am content to build my pleasure vpon thy comfort:
 And then will I deeme my hap in friendship great, when I shall see thee, whom I
 loue happie. Let me be onely sure, thou louest me still, the onely price of true af-
 fection: go therefore on, worthie *Musidorus*, with the guide of vertue, and seruice
 of fortune. Let thy loue be loued, thy desires prosperous, thy escape safe, and thy
 iorney easie. Let euery thing yeeld his help to thy desert, for my part absence shall
 not take thee from mine eyes, nor afflictions shall barre me from gladding in thy
 good, nor a possessed hart shall keepe thee from the place it hath for euer allotted
 vnto thee. *Dorus* would faine haue replied againe, to haue made a liberall confes-
 sion that *Zelmane* had of her side the aduantage of well performing friendship: but
 partly his owne griefe of parting from one he loued so dearly, partly the kinde care
 in what state he should leaue *Zelmane*, bred such a conflict in his minde, that ma-
 ny times he wished, he had either neuer attempted, or neuer reuealed this secrete
 enterprife. But *Zelmane*, who had now looked to the vttermost of it, and esta-
 blished her minde vpon an assured determination, My only friend said she, since to
 so good towardnesse, your courteous destinies haue conducted you, let not a cere-
 moniall consideration of our mutuall loue, be a barre vnto it. I ioy in your pre-
 sence, but I ioy more in your good, that friendship brings forth the fruits of en-
 mitie, which preferres his owne tendernesse, before his friends damage. For my
 part, my greatest griefe herein shalbe, I can be no further seruiceable vnto you.

O *Zelmane* said *Dorus* with his eyes euen couered with water, I did not think so soone to haue displayed my determination vnto you, but to haue made my way first in your louing iudgemēt. But alas as your sweet disposition drew me so far: so doth it now strengthen me in it. To you therefore be the due commendation giuen, who
 5 can conquere me in Loue, and Loue in wisdom. As for mee, then shall goodnesse turne to euill, and vngratefulness be the token of a true heart, when *Pyrocles* shall not possesse a principall seat in my soule, when the name of *Pyrocles* shall not be held of me in deuout reuerence.

They would neuer haue come to the cruell instant of parting, nor to the il-faring
 10 word of farewell, had not *Zelmane* scene a farre off the old *Basilus*, who hauing performed a sacrifice to *Apollo*, for his daughters, but principally for his mistresse happy returne, had since bene euery where to seeke her. And now being come within compasse of discerning her, he began to frame the loueliest countenance he could, stroking vp his legges, setting his beard in due order, and standing bolt vpright.
 15 Alas said *Zelmane*, behold an euill fore-token of your sorrowfull departure. Yonder see I one of my furies, which doth daylie vex me, farewell, farewell my *Musidorus*, the Gods make fortune to waite on thy vertues, and make mee wade through this lake of wretchednesse. *Dorus* burst out into a flood of teares, wringing her fast by the hand. No, no, said he, I go blindfold, whither the course of my ill happe carries me:
 20 for now too late my hart giues me this our separating can neuer be prosperous. But if I liue, attēd me here shortly with an army. Thus both appalled with the grievous renting of their long Combination, (hauing first resolved with theselues, that whatsoeuer fell vnto them, they should neuer vpon no occasion vtter their names for the cōseruing the honour of their Royal parētage, but keepe the names of *Daiphantus* &
 25 *Palladius*, as before had been agreed between the) they tooke diuerse waies: *Dorus* to the lodg-ward, wher his heavy eyes might be somthing refreshed; *Zelmane* towards *Basilus*: saying to her selfe with a skornefull smiling: Yet hath not my friendly fortune depriued me of a pleasant companion. But he hauing with much search come to her presence, *Doubt* & *Desire* bred a great quarel in his mind. For his former experience had taught him to doubt: & true feeling of Loue made doubts dangerous,
 30 but the working of his desire had ere long wonne the field. And therefore with the most submissiue maner his behauour could yeeld: O Goddesse, said hee towardes whom I haue the greatest feeling of Religion, be not displeased at some shew of deuotion I haue made to *Apollo*: since he (if he know any thing) knowes that my heart
 35 beares farre more awful reuerēce to your self then to his, or any other the like *Deity*. You wil euer be deceiued in me, answered *Zelmane*: I wil make my selfe no competitor with *Apollo*, neither can blasphemies to him be duties to me. With that *Basilus* tooke out of his bosome certaine verses he had written, and kneeling downe, presented them to her. They contained this:

40
 45
 45
 PHæbus farewell, a sweeter Saint I serue,
 The high conceits thy heau'nly wisdomes breed,
 My thoughts forget: my thoughts which neuer swerue
 From her, in whome is sowne their freedoms seede,
 And in whose eyes my dayly doome I reede.

Phæbus farewell, a sweeter Saint I serue,
 Thou art farre off, thy kingdome is aboue:

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*She heau'n on earth with beauties doth preferue.
Thy beames I like, but her cleare rayes I loue:
Thy force I feare, her force I still do proue.*

*Phœbus yeeld vp thy title in my mind:
She doth possesse, thy Image is defaste,
But if thy rage some brane reuenge will find,
On her, who hath in me thy temple raste,
Employ thy might, that she my fires may taste.
And how much more her worth surmounteth thee,
Make her as much more base by louing me.*

This is my Hymne to you, said he, not left me by my aūcestors, but begun in my selfe. The temple wherein it is daylie sung, is my soule: & the sacrifice I offer to you withall, is all whatsoeuer I am. *Zelmaue*, who euer thought she found in his speeches the ill taste of a medicine, & the operation of a poyson, would haue suffred a disdain-
ful looke to haue bene the onely witnesse of her good acceptation; but that *Basilius*
began a fresh to lay before her many pitifull prayers, and in the end to conclude that
he was fully of opinion it was onely the vnfortunatenesse of that place that hindred
the prosperous course of his desires. And therefore since the hateful influence which
made him embrace this solitary life, was now past ouer him (as he doubted not the
iudgement of *Philanax* would agree with his) and his late mishaps had taught him
how perillous it was to cōmit a Princes state to a place so weakly guarded: he was
now inclined to returne to his pallace in *Mantineia*, and there he hoped he shold be
better able to shew how much he desired to make all he had hers: with many other
such honny words which my pen growes almost weary to set downe: This indeede
neerely pierced *Zelmaue*. For the good beginning she had there obtained of *Philo-*
clea made her desire to continue the same trade, till vnto the more perfecting of her
desires: & to come to any publike place she did deadly feare, lest her mask by many
eyes might the sooner be discouered, and so her hopes stopped, and the state of her
ioyes endangered. Therefore awhile she rested, musing at the dayly chaunging la-
byrinth of her owne fortune, but in her self determined it was her only best to keep
him there: & with fauours to make him loue the place, where the fauours were recei-
ued, as disgraces had made him apt to chaunge the soyle.

Therefore casting a kind of corner looke vpon him, It is truly saide, (said she)
that age cooleth the bloud. How soone goodman you are terrified before you re-
ceiue any hurt? Do you not knowe that daintinesse is kindly vnto vs? And that
hard obtaining, is the excuse of womans graunting? Yet speake I not as though you
were liketo obtaine, or I to grant. But because I would not haue you imagin, I am to
be wonne by courtly vanities, or esteeme a man the more, because he hath hand-
some men to waite of him; when he is affraid to liue without them. You might haue
seene *Basilius* humbly swell, and with a lowly looke, stand vpon his tiptoes; such di-
uerfitie her words deliuered vnto him. *O Hercules* aunswered he; *Basilius* afraid? Or
his bloud cold, that boyles in such a fornace? Care I who is with mee, while I en-
ioy your presence? Or is any place good or bad to me, but as it pleaseth you to blesse
or curse it? O let me be but ened in your good grace, and I desie whatsoeuer there
is or can be against me. No, no, your loue is forcible, and my age is not without vi-
gour. *Zelmaue* thought it not good for his stomacke, to receiue a surfet of too much
faueur, and therefore thinking he had enough for the time, to keepe him from any
sodaine

sodaine remouing, with a certaine gracious bowing downe of her head toward him, she turned away, saying, she would leaue him at this time to see how temperately he could vse so bountifull a measure of her kindnesse. *Basilus* that thought euerie drop a flood that bred anie refreshment, durst not further presse her, but with an
 5 ancient modestie left her to the sweet repast of her owne fancies. *Zelma* as soone as he was departed, went toward *Pamelas* lodge in hope to haue scene her friend *Dor-
 10 rus*, to haue pleased her selfe with another painefull farewell, and further to haue taken some aduise with him touching her owne estate, wherof before sorow had not suffered her to thinke. But being come euen neere the Lodge, she saw the mouth of
 10 a caue, made as it should seeme by Nature in despite of Arte: so fitlie did the rich-
 growing marble serue to beautifie the valt of the first entrie. Vnderfoot the ground
 seemed minerall, yeelding such a glistering shew of gold in it, as they say the riuer
Tagus caries in his sandy bed. The caue framed out into many goodly spacious
 15 roomes such as the self-liking men, haue with long and learned delicacie found out
 15 the most easfull. There ran through it a litle sweet riuer, which had left the face of
 the earth to drowne her self for a small way in this darke, but pleasant mansion. The
 verie first shew of the place entised the melancholie mind of *Zelma* to yeeld her
 selfe ouer there to the flood of her owne thoughts. And therefore sitting downe in
 the first entrie of the Caues mouth, with a song she had lately made, she gaue a dole-
 20 full way to her bitter affects, she sung to this effect:

*Since that the stormie rage of passions darke
 (Of passions darke, made darke by beauties light)
 VVith rebell force, hath closde in dungeon darke
 My mind, ere now led forth by reasons light:*

*Since all the things which giue mine eyes their light,
 Do foster still the fruits of fancies darke:
 So that the vvindowes of my inward light
 Do serue, to make my inward powers darke:*

*Since, as I say, both mind and senses darke
 Are hurt, not helpt, with piercing of the light:
 VVhile that the light may shew the horrors darke,
 But cannot make resolu'd darknesse light:
 I like this place, where at the least the darke
 May keepe my thoughts from thought of wouted light.*

In steed of an instrument, her song was accompanied with the wringing of her
 40 hands, the closing of her weary eyes, and euen sometime cut off with the swelling of
 her sighes, which did not suffer the voyce to haue his free and natieue passage. But
 as she was a while musing vpon her song, raising vp her spirits, which were some-
 thing false into the weaknesse of lamentation, considering solitarie complaints do
 no good to him whose helpe stands without himself, she might a farre off, first heare
 45 a whispering sound, which seemed to come from the inmost part of the caue, & be-
 ing kept together with the close hollownesse of the place, had as in a truncke the
 more liberall access to her eares, and by and by she might perceiue the same voice
 deliuer it selfe into muscalle tunes, & with a base Lyra giue forth this song:

THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKES,

HArke plaintfull ghosts, infermall furies harke
Vnto my woes the hatefull heauens do send,
The heauens conspir'd, to make my vitall sparke
A wretched wracke, a glasse of Ruines end.

Seeing, Alas, so mightie powers bend
Their irefull shot against so weake a marke,
Come eae, become my graue, come death, and lend
Receipt to me, within thy bosome darke.

For what is life to dayly dying mind,
VWhere drawing breath, I sucke the ayre of woe:
VWhere too much sight makes all the body blind,
And highest thoughts downeward most headlong throw?
Thus then my forme, and thus my state I find,
Death wrapt in flesh, to lining graue assign'd.

And pawling but a litle, with monefull melodie it continued this octaue:

Like those sicke folkes, in whom strange humours flowe,
Can taste no sweets, the sower only please:
So to my mind, while passions dayly grow,
VWhose fierie chaines, vpon his freedome seaze,
Ioyes strangers seeme, I cannot bide their show,
Nor brooke ought else but well acquainted woe,
Bitter grieve tastes me best, paine is my ease,
Sicke to the death, still louing my dis ease.

O Venus, said Zelmane, who is this so well acquainted with me, that can make so liuely a portraiture of my miseries? It is surely the spirit appointed to haue care of me, which doth now in this dark place beare part with the cōplaints of his unhappie charge. For if it be so, that the heauēns haue at all times a measure of their wrathfull harmes, surely so many haue come to my blissefull lot, that the rest of the world hath too small a portiō, to make with cause so waileful a lamēration. But (said she) what-soeuer thou be, I will seeke thee out, for thy musike well assures me we are at least hand fellow prentises to one vngacious master. So raise she & went guiding herself by the still playning voice, till she saw vpon a stone a little waxe light set, and vnder it a peece of paper with these verses verie lately (as it should seeme) written in it:

How is my Sunne, whose beames are shining bright,
Become the cause of my darke ougly night?
Or how do I captiu'd in this darke plight,
Bewaille the case, and in the cause delight?

My mangled mind huge horrors still do fright,
VWith sense possesst, and claim'd by reasons right:
Betwixt which two in me I haue this fight,
VWhere who so winnes, I put my selfe to flight.

Come

*Come cloudy feares close vp my daseled sight,
Sorrowes sucke vp the marow of my might,
Due sighes blowe out all sparks of ioyfull light,
Tyre on despaire vpon my tired sprite.*

*An end, an end, my dull'd pen cannot write,
Nor maz'd head thinke, nor faltring tongue recite.*

And hard vnderneath the Sonnet, were these words written:

*This Caue is darke, but it had neuer light.
This v-vaxe doth wast it selfe, yet painlesse dies.
These words are full of woes, yet feele they none.*

*I darkned am, who once had clearest sight.
I waste my heart, which still new torment tries.
I plaine with cause, my woes are all mine owne.*

*No Caue, no wasting waxe, no words of grieve,
Can hold, shew, tell my paines without reliefe.*

She did not long stay to reade the words, for not farre off from the stone she might discern in a darke corner, a Ladie lying with her face so prostrate vpon the ground, as she could neither know, nor be knowne. But (as the generall nature of man is desirous of knowledge, and sorow especially glad to find fellowes,) she went as softly as she could conuey her foot, neare vnto her, where she heard these words come with vehement sobbings from her. O darknesse (said she) which doest light-somlie (me thinks) make me see the picture of my inward darknesse: since I haue chosen thee to be the secrete witnesse of my sorowes, let me receiue a safe receipt in thee; and esteeme them not tedious, but if it be possible, let the vitering them be some discharge to my ouerladen breast. Alas sorow, now thou hast the full sacke of my conquered spirits, rest thy selfe a while, and set not still new fire to thy owne spoiles: O accursed reason, how many eyes thou hast to see thy euils, and how dim, nay blind thou art in preuenting them? Forlorne creature that I am! I would I might be freely wicked, since wickednesse doth preuaile, but the footsteps of my ouer-trodden vertue lie still as bitter accusations vnto me. I am deuided in my self, how can I stand? I am ouerthrowne in my selfe, who shall raise me? Vice is but a nurse of new agonies, and the vertue I am diuorced from, makes the hatefull comparison the more manifest. No, no, vertue, either I neuer had but a shadow of thee, or thou thy selfe art but a shadow. For how is my soule abandoned? How are all my powers layd waste? My desire is pained, because it cannot hope, and if hope came, his best should be but mischief. O strange mixture of humane mindes; onely so much good left, as to make vs languish in our owne euils. Ye infernall furies, (for it is too late for me, to awake my dead vertue, or to place my comfort in the angry Gods) ye infernall furies I say, ayde one that dedicates her selfe vnto you, let my rage be satisfied, since the effect of it is fit for your seruice. Neither be afraid to make me too happie, since nothing can come to appease the smart of my guilty conscience. I desire but to assuage the sweltring of my hellish longing, dejected *Gynecia*, *Zelmane* no sooner hard the name of *Gynecia*, but that with a cold sweat all ouer

her, as if she had bene ready to tread vpon a deadly stinging Adder, she would haue withdrawne her selfe, but her owne passion made her yeeld more vnquiet motions, then she had done in comming. So that she was perceiued, and *Gynecia* sodainlie risen vp, for indeed it was *Gynecia*, gotten into this Caue, (the same Caue, wherein *Damet* as had safelie kept *Pamela* in the late vprore) to passe her pangs, with change 5 of places. And as her mind ran stil vpon *Zelmane*, her piercing louers eye had soone found it was she. And seeing in her a countenance to flie away, she fell downe at her feete, and catching fast hold of her: Alas (said she) whither, or from whom doest thou flie away? The sauagest beasts are wonne with seruice, and there is no flint but may be mollified: How is *Gynecia* so vnworthie in thine eyes? or 10 whome cannot abundance of loue make worthie? O thinke not that crueltie, or vngratefulnessse, can flowe from a good mind! O weigh, Alas! weigh with thy selfe the new effects of this mightie passion, that I vnfit for my state, vncomely for my sexe, must become a suppliant at thy feete! By the happie woman that bare thee, by all the ioyes of thy heart, and successe of thy desire, I beseech thee turne thy selfe 15 to some consideration of me, and rather shew pitie in now helping mee, then in too late repenting my death, which hourelly threatens me. *Zelmane* imputing it to one of her continuall mishaps, thus to haue met with this Ladie, with a full wearie countenance; Without doubt Madame, said she, where the desire is such, as may be obtained, and the partie well deseruing as your selfe, it must be a great excuse 20 that may well colour a deniall; but when the first motion carries with it a direct impossibilitie, then must the only answer be, comfort without heip, & sorow to both parties; to you not obtaining, to me not able to graunt. O said *Gynecia*, how good leisure you haue to frame these scornfull answers? Is *Gynecia* thus to be despised? Am I so vile a worme in your sight? no, no, trust to it hard-hearted Tigre, I will not 25 be the only Actor of this Tragedie: since I must fall, I will presse downe some others with my ruines: since I must burne, my spitefull neighbours shall feelee of my fire. Doest thou not perceiue that my diligent eyes haue pierced through the clowdie maske of thy disguisement? Haue I not told thee, o foole (if I were not much more foole) that I know thou wouldest abuse vs with thy outward shew? Wilt thou still 30 attend the rage of loue in a womans hart? the gyrl thy well chosen mistresse, perchance shall defend thee, when *Basilus* shall know how thou hast sotted his mind with falsehood, and falsely sought the dishonour of his house. Beleue it, beleue it vnkind creature, I will end my miseries with a notable example of reuenge, & that accursed cradle of mine shall feelee the smart of my wound, thou of thy tyranny, and 35 lastly (I confesse) my selfe of mine owne work. *Zelmane* that had long before doubted her selfe to be discovered by her, and now plainlie finding it, was as the proverbe saith, like them that hold the wolfe by the eares, bitten while they hold, and slaine if they loose. If she held her off in these wonted termes, she saw rage would make her loue worke the effectes of hate; to grant vnto her, her heart was so bound 40 vpon *Philoclea*, it had bene worse the a thousand deaths. Yet found she it was necessarie for her to come to a resolution, for *Gynecias* sore could bide no leasure, & once discovered, besides the danger of *Philoclea*, her desires shold be for euer vtterly stopped. She remēbred withall the words of *Basilus*, how apt he was to leaue this life, & returne to his court, a great bar to her hopes. Lastly she considered *Dorus* enterprise 45 might bring some strange alteration of this their well liked fellowship. So that encompassed with these instant difficulties, she bent her spirits to thinke of a remedie, which might at once both saue her from them, and serue her to the accomplishmēt of

of her only pursuite. Lastly, she determined thus, that there was no way but to yeeld to the violence of their desires, since struiving did the more chafe them. And that following their owne current, at length of it selfe it would bring her to the other side of her burning desires.

Now in the meane while the diuided *Dorus*, long diuided betweene loue and friendship, and now for his loue diuided frō his friend, though indeed without prejudice of friendships loyaltie, which doth neuer barre the mind from his free satisfaction: yet still a cruell iudge ouer himself, thought he was somewayes faultie, and applied his minde how to amend it, with a speedie and behouefull returne. But then was his first studie, how to get away, whereto already he had *Pamela's* content, confirmed and concluded vnder the name of *Mopsa* in her owne presence, *Dorus* taking this way, that whatsoeuer he would haue of *Pamela* he would aske her, whether in such a case it were not best for *Mopsa* so to behaue her selfe, in that sort making *Mopsa's* enuie, an instrument of that she did enuie. So hauing passed ouer his first and most feared difficultie, he busied his spirites how to come to the haruest of his desires, whereof he had so faire a shew. And thereunto (hauing gotten leaue for some dayes of his maister *Dametias*, who now accompted him as his sonne in lawe,) he romed round about the desert, to finde some vnknowne way, that might bring him to the next Sea port, as much as might be out of all course of other passengers: which all very well succeeding him, & he hauing hired a Barke for his liues traffick, and prouided horses to carrie her thither, returned homeward, now come to the last point of his care, how to go beyond the loathsome watchfulnesse of these three vncomely companions, and therein did wisely consider, how they were to be taken with whom he had to deale, remembring that in the particularities of euery bodies mind & fortune, there are particular aduantages, by which they are to be held. The muddy mind of *Dametias*, he found most easily stirred with couetousnes. The curst mischieuous heart of *Miso*, most apt to be tickled with ielousie, as whose rotten braine could thinke well of no body. But yong mistresse *Mopsa*, who could open her eyes vpon nothing, that did not all to bewonder her, he thought curiositie the fittest baite for her. And first for *Dametias*, *Dorus* hauing employed a whole dayes worke, about a ten mile off from the Lodge (quite contrarie way to that he meant to take with *Pamela*) in digging and opening the ground, vnder an ancient oke that stood there, in such sort as he might longest hold *Dametias* greedy hopes, in some shew of comfort, he came to his maister, with a countenance mixt betweene chearfulness and haste, & taking him by the right hand, as if he had a great matter of secrecie to reueale vnto him: Maister (said he) I did neuer thinke that the Gods had appointed my mind freely brought vp, to haue so löging a desire to serue you, but that they minded thereby to bring some extraordinarie fruit to one so beloued of them, as your honestie makes me think you are. This bindes me euen in conscience, to disclose that which I perswade my selfe is allotted vnto you, that your fortune may be of equall ballance with your deserts. He said no further, because he wold let *Dametias* play vpon the bit a while, who not vnderstanding what his words intended, yet well finding they caried no euill newes, was so much the more desirous to know the matter, as he had free scope to imagine what measure of good hap himselfe would. Therefore putting off his cap to him, which he had neuer done before, and assuring him he shold haue *Mopsa*, though she had bin all made of cloth of gold, he besought *Dorus* not to hold him long in hope, for that he found it a thing his heart was not able to beare. Maister, answered *Dorus*, you haue so satisfied me, with promising me

the vttermoſt of my deſired bliſſe, that if my dutie bound me not, I were in it ſufficiently rewarded. To you therefore ſhall my good hap be conuerted, and the fruite of all my labor dedicated. Therwith he told him, how vnder an anciēt oke, (the place he made him eaſily vnderſtand, by ſufficient marks he gaue vnto him) he had found digging but a litle depth, ſcatteringly lying a great number of rich Medailles, and that piercing further into the ground, he had met with a great ſtone, which by the hollow ſound it yeelded, ſeemed to be the couer of ſome greater vault, & vpon it a boxe of Cypreſſe, with the name of the valiant *Ariſtomenes* grauen vpon it: & that within the boxe, he found certaine verſes, which ſignified that ſome depth againe vnder that all his treasures lay hidden, what time for the diſcord fell out in *Arcadia*, 10 he liued baniſhed. Therewith he gaue *Dametas* certaine Medailles of gold he had long kept about him, and asked him becauſe it was a thing much to be kept ſecret, and a matter one man in twentie howers might eaſily performe, whether he would haue him go & ſeeke the bottom of it, which he had refrained to do till he knew his mind, promiſing he would faithfully bring him what he found, or elſe that he himſelfe would do it, and be the firſt beholder of that comfortable ſpectacle. No man 15 need doubt which part *Dametas* would chooſe, whoſe fancie had already deuoured all this great riches, and euen now began to grudge at a partner, before he ſaw his owne ſhare. Therefore taking a ſtrong iade, loden with ſpades and mattocks, which he meant to bring backe otherwiſe laden, he went in all ſpeed thitherward, taking 20 leaue of no body, only deſiring *Dorus* he would looke well to the Princeſſe *Pamela*. promiſing him mountaines of his owne labour, which neuertheleſſe he litle meant to performe, like a foole, not cōſidering, that no man is to be moued with part, that neglects the whole. Thus away went *Dametas*, hauing alreadie made an image in his fancie, what pallaces he would build, how ſumptuouſlie he would fare, & among 25 all other things imagined what money to employ in making coſſers to keep his money: his ten mile ſeemed twiſe ſo manie leagues, and yet contrarie to the nature of it, though it ſeemed long, it was not wearifome. Many times he curſed his horſes want of cōſideration, that in ſo important a matter wold make no greater ſpeed: many times he wiſhed himſelfe the backe of an aſſe, to helpe to carie away the new 30 ſought riches (an vnfortunate wiſher, for if he had aſwell wiſhed the head, it had bene graunted him.) At length being come to the tree, which he hoped ſhould beare ſo golden Acornes, downe went all his inſtruments, and forthwith to the renting vp of the hurtleſſe earth, where by and by he was caught with the lime of a few promiſed Medailles, which was ſo perfect a pawne vnto him of his further expectation, that he deemed a great number of howers well employed in groping further 35 into it, which with logs and great ſtones was made as cumberſome as might be, till at length with ſweatie browes he came to the great ſtone. A ſtone, God knowes, full vnlike to the couer of a Monument, but yet there was the Cypreſſe box with *Ariſtomenes* grauen vpon it, and theſe verſes written in it.

40

A Banisht man, long bard from his deſire
 By inward lets, of them his ſtate poſſeſt,
 Hid here his hopes, by which he might aſpire
 To hane his harmes with wiſedomes helpe redreſt.

45

*Seeke then and ſee, what man eſteemeth beſt,
 All is but this, this is our labours hire:*

of

*Of this we liue, in this we finde our rest,
 Who hold this fast no greater wealth require.
 Looke further then, so shalt thou finde at least,
 A bait most fit, for hungrie minded guest.*

He opened the box, and to his great comfort read them, and with fresh courage went about to lift vp that stone. But in the meane time: ere *Dametas* was halfe a mile gone to the treasure ward, *Dorus* came to *Miso*, whom he found sitting in the chimneis end, babling to her selfe, and shewing by all her gestures, that shee was loathsomly wearie of the world, not for any hope of a better life, but finding no
 10 one, good, neither in minde nor bodie, where-out shee might nourish a quiet thought, hauing long since hated each thing else, began now to hate her selfe. Before this sweete humourd Dame, *Dorus* set himselfe, and framed towards her such a smiling countenance, as might seeme to be mixt betweene a tickled mirth,
 15 and a forced pittie. *Miso*, to whome cheerefulnesse in others, was euer a sauce of enuie in her selfe, tooke quickly marke of his behauiour, and with a looke full of foreworne spite: Now the Diuell, said shee, take these villaines, that can neuer leaue grenning, because I am not so faire as mistresse *Mopsa*, to see how this skip- iacke looks at me. *Dorus* that had the occasion he desired, Truely mistresse aunswere
 20 red he, my smiling is not at you, but at them that are from you, and in deede I must needes a little accord my countenance with others sport. And therewithall tooke her in his armes, and rocking her to and fro, In faith mistresse, said he, it is high time for you, to bid vs good night for euer, since others can possesse your place in your owne time. *Miso* that was neuer voide of malice enough to suspect the vt-
 25 termost euill, to satisfie a further shrewdnesse, tooke on a present mildnesse, & gently desired him, to tell her what he meant: for, said shee, I am like enough to be kna- uisly dealt with, by that churle my husband. *Dorus* fell off from the matter a- gaine, as if he had meant no such thing, till by much refusing her intreatie, and vehemently stirring vp her desire to know, he had strengthened a credit in her to
 30 that he should say. And then with a formall countenance, as if the conscience of the case had touched himselfe: Mistresse, said he, I am much perplexed in mine owne determination, for my thoughts do euer will me to do honestly, but my iudgement failes me what is honest: betwixt the generall rule, that entrusted se- crecies are holie to be obserued, and the particular exception, that the disho-
 35 nest secrecies are to be reuealed: especially there, where by reuealing they may either be preuented, or at least amended. Yet in this ballance, your iudgement wayes me downe, because I haue confidence in it, that you will vse what you know moderately, and rather take such faults as an aduantage to your owne good desert, then by your bitter vsing it, be contented to be reuenged on others with your own
 40 harmes. So it is mistresse, said he, that yesterday driving my sheepe vp to the stately hill, which lifts his head ouer the faire Citie of *Mantineia*, I hapned vpon the side of it, in a little falling of the ground which was a rampier against the Sunnes rage, to perceiue a yong maid, truly of the finest stamp of beautie, & that which made her beautie the more admirable, there was at all no art added to the helping of it. For
 45 her apparell was but such as Shepherds daughters are wont to weare: and as for her haire, it hoong downe at the free libertie of his goodly length, but that some- times falling before the cleare starres of her sight, shee was forced to put it behind her eares, and so open againe the treasure of her perfections, which that for a while

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

had in part hidden. In her lap there lay a Shepheard, so wrapped vp in that wel-liked place, that I could discerne no peece of his face, but as mine eyes were attent in that her Angelike voice strake mine eares with this song :

MY true loue hath my hart, and I haue his,
By iust exchange, one for the other giu'ne.
I hold his deare, and myne he cannot misse:
There neuer was a better bargaine driu'ne.

His hart in me, keepes me and him in one,
My hart in him, his thoughts and senses guides:
He loues my hart for once it was his owne:
I cherish his, because in me it bides.

His hart his wound receiued from my sight:
My hart was wounded, with his wounded hart,
For as from me, on him his hurt did light,
So still me thought in me his hurt did smart:
Both equall hurt, in this change sought our blisse:
My true loue hath my hart and I haue his.

But as if the Shepheard that lay before her, had bene organes, which were only to be blowne by her breath, she had no sooner ended with the ioyning her sweete lips together, but that he recorded to her musike this rurall poesie:

OVVords which fall like sommer dew on me,
O breath more sweete, then is the growing beane,
O tongue in which, all honyed liquors bee,
O voice that doth, the Thrush in shrillnesse staine,
Do you say still, this is her promise due,
That she is myne, as I to her am true.

Gay haire, more gay then straw when haruest lyes,
Lips red and plum, as cherries ruddy side,
Eyes faire and great, like faire great oxes eyes,
O breast in which two white sheepe swell in pride:
Ioyne you with mee, to seale this promise due,
That she be mine, as I to her am true.

But thou white skinne, as white as cruddes well prest,
So smooth as sleeke stone-like, it smoothes each part,
And thou deare flesh, as soft as wooll new drest,
And yet as hard, as brawne made hard by art:
First fower but say, next fowre their saying seale,
But you must pay, the gage of promist weale.

And with the conclusion of his song, he embraced her about the knees, O sweete Charisa said he, when shall I enjoy the rest of my toying thoughts? And when shall your

your blisfull promise now due, be verified with iust performance? with that I drew
 neerer to them, and saw (for now he had lifted vp his face to glasse himselfe in her
 faire eyes) that it was my maister *Dametas*, but here *Miso* interrupted his tale, with
 rayling at *Dametas*, with all those exquisite termes, which I was neuer good skold
 5 inough to imagine. But *Dorus*, as if he had bin much offended with her impacience,
 would proceed no further till she had vowed more stilnesse. For said he, if the first
 drumme thus chase you, what will you be when it comes to the blowes? Then
 he told her, how after many familiar entertainments betwixt them, *Dametas*, laying
 before her, his great credit with the Duke, and withall giuing her very faire presents,
 10 with promise of much more, had in the end, concluded together to meete as that
 night at *Mantineia*, in the *Oudemian* streete, at *Charitas* vncles house, about tenne of
 the clocke. After which bargaine *Dametas* had spied *Dorus*, and calling him to
 him, had with great brauery told him all his good happe, willing him in any case
 to returne to the old witch *Miso* (for so in deede mistresse of liueliuesse, and not
 15 of ill will he termed you) and to make some honest excuse of his absence, for
 sayde he, kissing *Charita*, if thou didst know what a life I lead with that driuell, it
 would make thee euen of pittie, receiue me into thy onely comfort. Now Mi-
 stresse sayde he, exercise your discretion, which if I were well assured of, I would
 wish you to goe your selfe to *Mantineia*, and (lying secret in some one of your
 20 gossypshoules, till the time appoynted come) so may you finde them together,
 and vsing mercie, reforme my Maister from his euill wayes. There had nothing
 more enraged *Miso*, then the prayles *Dorus* gaue to *Charitas* beautie, which made
 her ieaiousie swell the more, with the poyson of enuy. And that being increased
 with the presents she heard *Dametas* had giuen her (which all seemed torne out
 25 of her bowells) her hollow eyes, yeelded such wretched lookes, as one might
 well thinke *Pluto* at that time, might haue had her soule very good cheape. But
 when the fire of spite had fully caught hold of all her inward partes, then whoso-
 euer would haue seene the picture of *Alecto*, or with what manner of countenance
Medea kild her owne children, needed but take *Miso* for the full satisfaction of that
 30 point of his knowledge. She that could before scarce go, but supported by crutches,
 now flew about the house, borne vp with the wings of Anger, there was no one
 sort of mortall reuenge, that had euer come to her eares, but presented it selfe nowe
 to her gentle mind. At length with few words, for her words, were choakt vp with
 the rising of her reuengefull heart, she ran downe, and with her owne hands sadled a
 35 mare of hers, a mare that 7 yeare before had not bin acquainted with a saddle, and so
 to *Mantineia* she went, casting with her self, how she might couple shame with the
 punishmēt of her accursed husband: but the person is not worthy in whose passion
 I should too long stand. Therefore now must I tell you that Mistresse *Mopsa* (who
 was the last party *Dorus* was to practise his cunning withal) was at the parting of her
 40 parents, attending vpon the Princeesse *Pamela*, whom because she found to be placed
 in her fathers house, she knew it was for suspicion the Duke had of her. This made
Mopsa with a right base nature (which ioyes to see anie hard hap happen to them,
 they deeme happie) grow proud ouer her, and vse great ostentation of her own dili-
 gēce, in prying curiously into each thing that *Pamela* did. Neither is there any thing
 54 sooner ouerthrowes a weak hart, then opiniō of authority, like too strōg a liquor for
 so feeble a glasse, which ioined it self to the humor of enuying *Pamelas* beauty, so far,
 that oft she would say to her self, if she had bin borne a Princeesse as well as *Pamela*,
 her perfections then should haue bene as well seene as *Pamelas*, with this manner

of woman, and placed in these termes, had *Dorus* to play his last part, which hee would quickly haue dispatched in tying her vp in such a maner, that she should litle haue hindred his enterprife. But that the vertuous *Pamela* (whē she saw him so minded,) by countenance absolutelie forbad it, resolutely determining, she would not leaue behinde her any token of wrong since the wrong done to her selfe was the best 5 excuse of her escape. So that *Dorus* was compelled to take her in the maner hee first thought of, and accordingly *Pamela* sitting musing at the strange attempt shee had condiscended vnto, and *Mopsa* hardby her, (looking in a glasse with very partiall eyes (*Dorus* put him selfe between them, and casting vp his face to the top of the house, shrugging all ouer his bodie, and stamping somtimes vpon the ground, gaue 10 *Mopsa* occasion (who was as busie as a Bee to know any thing) to aske her louer *Dorus* what ayled him, that made him vse so strange a behauiour, he, as if his spirits had beene rauished with some supernaturall contemplation, stood still mute, somtimes rubbing his forehead, sometimes starting in himselfe, that he set *Mopsa* in such an itche of inquirie, that shee would haue offered her maydenhead, rather then be long 15 kept from it. *Dorus* not yet answering to the purpose, still keeping his amazement. *O Hercules*, saide he, resolute me in this doubt. A tree to graunt ones wishes? Is this the cause of the Kinges solitarie life? Which parte shall I take? Happie in either, vn-happie because I cannot know which were my best happ. These doubtful selfe speeches, made *Mopsa* yet in a further longing of knowing the matter, so that the prettie 20 pigge, laying her sweete burthen about his neck, my *Dorus*, saide she, tell mee these wordes, or els I know not what will befall mee, honny *Dorus* tell them me. *Dorus* hauing stretched her mind vpon a right laste, extreamely loued *Mopsa*, saide he, the matters be so great, as my harte failes me in the telling them, but since you hold the greatest seat in it, it is reason your desire should adde life vnto it. Therewith he told 25 her a farre fet tale how that many millions of yeres before *Iupiter* fallen out with *Apollo* had throwne him out of heauen, taking from him the priuiledge of a God. So that poore *Apollo* was faine to leade a verie miserable life, vnacquainted to worke and neuer vsed to begge, that in this order hauing in time learned to be *Admetus* heardman, he had vpon occasion of fetching a certaine breede of beasles out of *Ar-* 30 *cadia*, come to that verie desert, where wearied with trauaile, and resting himselfe in the boughes of a pleasant Ashe tree, stood little off from the lodge, he had with pittifull complaints gotten his father *Iupiters* pardon, and so from that tree was receiued againe to his golden spheare. But hauing that right nature of a God, neuer to be vngratefull, to *Admetus* he had graunted a double life, and because that tree 35 was the chappel of his prosperous prayers, he had giuen it this qualitie, that whatsoever of such estate, and in such maner as he then was, sate downe in that tree, they should obtaine whatsoever they wished. This *Basilus* hauing vnderstoode by the oracle, was the onely cause which had made him trie, whether framing himselfe to the state of an heardman, he might haue the priuiledge of wishing onely graunted 40 to that degree, but that hauing often in vaine attempted it, because in deede he was not such, he had now opened the secret to *Dametas*, making him sweare he should with according to his direction. But because saide *Dorus*, *Apollo* was at that time with extreame griefe muffled round about his face, with a skarlet cloake, *Ad-* 45 *metus* had giuen him, and because they that must wish must be muffled in like sorte, and with like stuffe, my master *Dametas* is gone I know not whither, to prouide him a skarlet cloake, and to morrow doth appoint to returne with it, my Mistresse I cannot tell how, hauing gotten some inckling of it, is trudged to *Mantineia*, to get her selfe

selfe a cloake before him : because she would haue the first wish. My master at his
 parting, of great trust told me this secret, commaunding me to see no bodie should
 clime that tree. But now my *Mopsa*, said he, I haue here the like cloak of mine own,
 and am not so verie a foole as though I keepe his cōmandement in others to barre
 5 my selfe, I rest onely extremely perplexed, because hauing nothing in the world I
 wish for, but the enioying you & your fauour, I think it a much pleasanter conquest
 to come to it by your own consent, then to haue it by such a charming force as this
 is. Now therefore choose since haue you I will, in what sort I shall haue you. But
 neuer child was so desirous of a gay puppet, as *Mopsa* was to be in the tree, & there-
 10 fore without squeamishnesse, promising all he would, she coniured him by all her
 precious Loues, that she might haue the first possession of the wishing tree, assuring
 him that for the enioying her he should neuer neede to clime farre. *Dorus* to whom
 time was precious, made no great ceremonies with her, but helping her vp to the
 top of the tree, frō whence likewise she could ill come down without help, he mus-
 15 fled her round about the face, so truely that she her selfe could not vndo it. And so
 he told her the manner was, she should hold her mind in continuall deuotion to *A-*
pollo, without making at all any noyse, till at the farthest within twelue houres space,
 she should heare a voice call her by name three times, & that till the third time shee
 must in no wise answere; & then you shal not need to doubt your coming downe,
 20 for at that time said he, be sure to wish wisely, & in what shape soeuer he come vnto
 you, speake boldly vnto him, and your wish shall haue as certaine effect, as I haue a
 desire to enioy your sweet Loues: in this plight did he leaue *Mopsa*, resolved in her
 hart, to be the greatest Lady of the world, & neuer after to see of worse then fur-
 mentie. Thus *Dorus* hauing deliuered his hands of his three tormentors, tooke spe-
 25 dily the benefit of his deuise, and mounting the gracious *Pamela* vpon a faire horse
 he had prouided for her, he thrust himselfe forthwith into the wildest part of the de-
 sart, where he had left markes to guide him frō place to place to the next sea port,
 disguising her verie sirly with scarfs although he rested assured, he should meet that
 way with no body, till he came to his barke, into which he ment to enter by night.
 30 But *Pamela* who al this while, transported with desire & troubled with feare had ne-
 uer free scope of iudgement to looke with perfect consideratiō into her own enter-
 prise, but euen by the lawes of loue, had bequeathed the care of her self vpon him to
 whō she had geuē her self. Now that the pang of desire with euident hope was quiet-
 ed, & most part of the feare passed, reason began to renew his shining in her hart, &
 35 make her see her self in her self; & weigh with what wings she flew out of her natie
 country; & vpō what ground she built so strange a determinatiō. But loue fortified
 with her louers presence kept still his own in her hart. So that as they ridde together
 with her hand vpon her faithfull seruants shoulder, sodainly casting her bashful eyes
 to the ground, and yet bending her self towards him,) like the clyent that commits
 40 the cause of al his worth to a wel trusted aduocate,) from a milde spirit said vnto him
 these sweetely deliuered wordes : Prince *Musidorus*, (for so my assured hope is I
 may iustlie call you, since with no other my heart would euer haue yeelded to
 goe; And if so I doe not rightlie tearme you, all other wordes are as bootlesse,
 as my deede miserable, and I as vnfortunate, as you wicked) my Prince *Musidorus*
 45 I saye now that the vehement shewes of your faithfull Loue towards mee, haue
 brought my minde to aunswere it, in so due a proportion, that contrarie to all gene-
 rall rules of reason, I haue layde in you, my estate, my life, my honour : it is your
 part to double your former care, and make me see your vertue no lesse in preseruing

then in obtaining: and your faith to be a faith as much in freedome, as bondage. Tender now your owne workmanship; and so gouerne your loue towards me, as I may still remaine worthie to be loued. Your promise you remember, which here by the eternall giuers of vertue, I coniure you to obserue, let me be your owne as I am, but by no vnjust conquest; let not our ioyes which ought euer to last, be stayned in our own consciences, let no shadow of repentance steale into the sweet consideration of our mutuall happinesse. I haue yeelded to bee your wife, stay then till the time that I may rightly bee so; let no other defiled name burden my heart. What should I more saye? If I haue chosen well, all doubt is past, since your action onely must determine, whether I haue done vertuously or shamefully in following you. *Musidorus* that had more aboundance of ioye in his hart, then *Ulysses* had what time with his owne industrie he stole the fatall *Palladium*, imagined to bee the only relike of *Troies* safetie, taking *Pamelas* hand, & many times kissing it, What I am, said he, the Gods I hope will shortly make your owne eyes Iudges; and of my mind towards you, the meane time shalbe my pledge vnto you, your contentment is dearer to me then mine owne, & therefore doubt not of his mind, whose thoughts are so thrall'd vnto you, as you are to bend or slack them as it shall seeme best vnto you. You do wrong to your selfe, to make any doubt that a base estate could euer vndertake so high an enterprize; or a spotted minde bee able to behold your vertues. Thus much onely I must confesse, I can neuer doe, to make the world see you haue chosen worthily, since all the world is not worthy of you. In such delightfull discourses, kept they on their iourney, mayntaining their hearts in that right harmonic of affection, which doth enterchangeably deliuer each to other the secret workings of their soules, till with the vnus'd trauaile, the Princesse being weary, they lighted downe in a faire thicke wood, which did entise them with the pleasantnes of it to take their rest there. It was all of Pine trees, whose brode heads, meeting together, yeelded a perfit shade to the ground, where their bodies gaue a spacious and pleasant roome to walke in, they were set in so perfect an order, that euery way the eye being full, yet no way was stopped. And euen in the midst of them, were there many sweete springs, which did loose themselues vpon the face of the earth. Here *Musidorus* drew out such prouision of fruits, & other cates, as he had brought for that dayes repast, and layd it downe vpon the faire Carpet of the greene grasse. But *Pamela* had much more pleasure to walke vnder those trees, making in their barks prettie knottes, which tyed together the names of *Musidorus* and *Pamela*, sometimes entermixedly changing them, to *Pammedorus* and *Musimela*, with twentie other flowers of her trauailing fancies, which had bound them selues to a greater restraint, then they could without much paine well endure, and to one tree more beholding to her then the rest, she entrusted the treasure of her thoughts in these verses:

Do not disdain, o streight vp-raised Pine,
That wounding thee, my thoughts in thee I graue:
Since that my thoughts, as streight as streightnesse thine
No smaller wound, alas! far deeper haue.

Deeper engran'd, which salue nor time can saue,
Giue to my heart, by my fore wounded eyne:
Thus cruell to my selfe, how canst thou craue
My inward hurt should spare thy outward rime

Ref

*Tet still faire tree, lift up thy stately line,
Line long, and long witnesse my chosen mart,
VVhich barde desires, (barde by my selfe) impart*

*And in this growing barke growe verses myne.
My heart my word, my word hath giu'n my hart.
The giuer giu'n from gift shall neuer part.*

Vpon a roote of the tree, that the earth had left something barer then the rest,
she wrate this couplet:

*SWEETE roote say thou, the roote of my desire
VVas vertue cladde in constant loues attire.*

Musidorus, seing her fancies drawne vp to such pleasaunt contemplations, accompanied her in them, and made the trees aswell beare the badges of his passions, as this song engraue in them did testifie:

*YOU goodly pines, which still with braue assent,
In natures pride your heads to heau'nward heaue,
Though you besides such graces earth hath lent,
Of some late grace a greater grace receiue,*

*By her who was (O blessed you) content
VVith her faire hand, your tender barkes to cleaue,
And so by you (O blessed you) hath sent,
Such piercing words as no thoughts els conceaue:*

*Tet yeeld your graunt, a baser hand may leaue
His thoughts in you, where so sweete thoughts were spent,
For how would you the mistresse thoughts bereaue
Of waiting thoughts all to her service ment?*

*Nay higher thoughts (though thrall'd thoughts) I call
My thoughts then hers, who first your ryne did rent.
Then hers, to whom my thoughts a lonely thrall
Rysing from lowe, are to the highest bent;
VVhere hers, whom worth makes highest ouer all
Comming from her, cannot but downward fall.*

While *Pamela* sitting her downe vnder one of them, and making a posie of the fayre vndergrowing flowers, filled *Musidorus* cares with the heauenly sound of her musicke, which before he had neuer heard, so that it seemed vnto him anew assault giuen to the castle of his heart, already conquered, which to signifie and with all replie to her sweete notes, hee sang in a kinde of still, but rauishing tune a fewe verses, her song was this, and his replie followes:

Pamela. **L**ike diuers flowers, whose diuers beauties serue
To decke the earth with his well colour'd weede,
Though each of them, his priuate forme preserve,
Yet ioyning formes one sight of beautie breede.

Right so my thoughts, whereon my hart I feede:
Right so my inward parts, and outward glasse,
Though each possesse a diuers working kinde,
Yet all well knit to one faire end do passe:
That he to whome these sundrie gifts I binde,
All what I am, still one, his owne, do finde.

Musidorus *All what you are still one, his owne to finde,
You that are borne to be the worldes eye,
What were it els, but to make each thing blinde?
And to the sunne with waxen wings to flie?*

No no, such force with my small force to trye
Is not my skill, or reach of mortall minds.
Call me but yours, my title is most hye:
Hold me most yours, then my long suite is signe.

You none can claime but you your selfe aright,
For you do passe your selfe, in vertues might.
So both are yours: I, bound with gaged hart:
You onely yours, too farre beyond desert.

In this vertuous watonnesse, suffering their minds to descend to each tender enioy-
ing their vnited thoughts, Pamela hauing tasted of the fruits, & growing extreame
sleepie, hauing bin long kept frō it, with the perplexitie of her dangerous attempt,
laying her head in his lap, was inuited by him to sleepe with these softly vttered ver-
ses:

Lock vp, faire liddes, the treasure of my hart:
Preserue those beames, this ages onely light:
To her sweete sence, sweete sleepe some ease impart,
Her sence too weake to beare her spirits might.

And while o sleepe thou closest vp her sight,
(Her sight where loue did forge his fairest dart)
O harbour all her parts in easefull plight:
Let no strange dreame make her faire body start.

But yet o dreame, if thou wilt not depart
In this rare subiect from thy common right:
But wilt thy selfe in such a seate delight,

Then take my shape, and play a louters part:
Kisse her from me, and say vnto her spirit,
Till her eyes shine, I linc in darkest night.

The

The sweete *Pamela* was brought into a sweete sleepe with this song which gaue *Musidorus* oportunitie at leasure to behold her excellent beauties. He thought her faire forehead was a field where all his fancies fought; and euery haire of her head seemed a strong chaine that tied him. Her fairer liddes then hiding her fairer eyes, seemed vnto him sweete boxes of mother of pearle, rich in themselues, but containing in them farre richer Jewels. Her cheekes with their colour most delicately mixed would haue entertained his eyes somewhile, but that the roses of her lippes (whose separating was wont to be accompanied with most wise speeches) now by force drew his sight to marke how pretily they lay one ouer the other, vniting their deuided beauties: and thorough them the eye of his fancy deliuered to his memorie the lying (as in ambush) vnder her lippes of those armed ranks, all armed in most pure white, & keeping the most precise order of militarie discipline. And lest this beautie might seeme the picture of some excellent artificer, soorth there stole a soft breath, carrying good testimonie of her inward sweetnesse: and so stealingly it came out, as it seemed loath to leaue his contentfull mansion, but that it hoped to be drawne in againe to that well closed paradise, which did so tyrannize ouer *Musidorus* affects, that he was compelled to put his face as lowe to hers, as he could, sucking the breath with such ioy, that he did determine in himselfe, there had bene no life to a *Camaleons*, if he might be suffered to enioy that food. But long he was not suffered being within a while interrupted by the comming of a companie of clownish villaines, armed with diuers sorts of weapons, and for the rest both in face and apparell so forewasted, that they seemed to beare a great conformitie with the sauages; who miserable in themselues, taught to encrease their mischiefes in other bodies harmes, came with such cries as they both awaked *Pamela*, and made *Musidorus* turne vnto them full of a most violent rage, with the looke of a shee *Tigre*, when her whelpes are stolne away.

But *Zelmane* whome I left in the *Caue* hardly bestead, hauing both great wittes and stirring passions to deale with, makes me lend her my penne awhile to see with what dexteritie she could put by her dangers. For hauing in one instant both to resist rage and go beyond wisedome, being to deale with a Ladie that had her wits awake in euery thing, but in helping her owne hurt, she saw now no other remedie in her case, but to qualifie her rage with hope, & to satisfie her wit with plainnesse. Yet lest too abrupt falling into it, should yeeld too great aduantage vnto her, she thought good to come to it by degrees with this kind of insinuation. Your wise, but very darke speeches, most excellent Lady, are wouen vp in so intricate a maner, as I know not how to proportiō mine answer vnto them: so are your prayers mixt with threatens, and so is the shew of your loue hidden with the name of reuenge, the natural effect of mortal hatred. You seeme displeased with the opinion you haue of my disguising, and yet if be not disguised, you must needes be much more displeased. Hope then (the onely succour of perplexed mindes) being quite cut off, you desire my affection, and yet you your selfe thinke my affection alreadie bestowed. You pretend crueltie, before you haue the subiection, and are ielous of keeping that, which as yet you haue not gotten. And that which is strangest in your ielousie, is both the vniustice of it, in being loath that should come to your daughter, which you deeme good, and the vaynesse, since you two are in so diuers respects; that there is no necessitie one of you should fall to be a barre to the other. For neither (if I be such as you fancie) can I marrie you, which must needes be the onely end I can aspire to in her: neither neede the marrying of her keepe me from a gratefull

consideration how much you honor me in the loue you vouchsafe to beare me. *Gynecia*, to whom the fearefull agonies shee still liued in, made any small retriual sweete, did quickly finde her words falling to a better way of comfort, & therefore with a mind readie to shew nothing could make it rebellious against *Zelma*, but too extreme tyrāny, she thus said: Alas too much beloued *Zelma*, the thoghts are 5 but outflowings of the mind, & the tongue is but a seruant of the thoughts, therefore maruaile not that my words suffer contrarieties, since my minde doth hourly suffer in it selfe whole armies of mortall aduersaries. But, alas, if I had the vse of mine own reason, then should I not neede, for want of it, to finde my selfe in this desperate mischiefe, but because my reason is vanished, so haue I likewise no po- 10 wer to correct my vnreasonablenesse. Do you therfore accept the protection of my minde, which hath no other resting place, and driue it not, by being vnregarded to put it selfe into vknowne extremities. I desire but to haue my affection answered, and to haue a right reflection of my loue in you. That graunted, assure your selfe mine owne loue will easily teach mee to seeke your contentment: and make 15 me thinke my daughter a very meane price to keepe still in mine eyes the foode of my spirits. But take heede that contempt driue me not into despaire, the most violent cause of that miserable effect. *Zelma* that already sawe some fruit of her last determined fancie (so farre as came to a mollifying of *Gynecias* rage) seeing no other way to satisfie suspicion, which was held open with the continuall prickes of 20 loue, resolved now with plainnesse to winne trust, which trust shee might after deceiue with a greater subletie. Therefore looking vpon her with a more relenting grace, then euer she had done before, pretending a great bashfulnesse before she could come to confesse such a fault, she thus sayd vnto her: Most worthy Lady, I did neuer thinke, till now, that pitie of another could make me betray my selfe, 25 nor that the sound of words could ouerthrow any wise bodies determination. But your words (I thinke) haue charmed me, and your grace bewitched me. Your compassion makes me open my hart to you, & leaue vnharboured mine own thoughts. For prooffe of it, I will disclose my greatest secret, which well you might suspect, but neuer know, & so haue your wandring hope in a more painful wildernesse, be- 30 ing neither way able to be lodged in a perfect resolution. I will, I say, vnwrap my hidden estate, & after make you iudge of it, perchance director. The truth is, I am a man: nay, I will say further to you, I am borne a Prince. And to make vp your minde in a through vnderstanding of me since I came to this place, I may not deny I haue had some sprinkling of I know not what good liking to my Lady 35 *Philoclea*. For how could I euer imagine, the heauens would haue rayned down so much of your fauour vpon me? & of that side there was a shew of possible hope, the most comfortable Counsellor of loue. The cause of this my changed attyre, was a iourney two yeares agoe I made among the *Amazons*, where hauing fought to trye my vnfortunate valure, I met not one in all the Countrey but was too 40 hard for me, till in the end in the presence of their Queene *Marpesia*, I hoping to preuayle against her, challenged an old woman of fourescore yeares, to fight on horsebacke to the vttermost with me. Who hauing ouerthrowne me, for the sauing of my life, made me sweare I should go like an vnarmed *Amazon*, till the comming of my beard did, with the discharge of my oath, deliuer me of that bon- 45 dage. Here *Zelma* ended, not cōming to a full conclusion, because she would see what it wrought in *Gynecias* mind, hauing in her speech sought to winne a reliefe of her, & if it might be, by disgrace of her selfe to diminish *Gynecias* affectiō.

For

For the first it had much preuailed. But *Gynecia* whose end of louing her, was not her fighting, neither could her loue too deeply grounded receiue diminishment; and besides shee had seene her selfe, sufficient proofes of *Zelmanes* admirable pro-
 5 wesse. Therefore sleightly passing ouer that point of her fained dishonor, but ta-
 king good hold of the confessing her manly sexe, with the shamefast looke of that
 suitor, who hauing alreadie obtained much, is yet forced by want to demaund
 more, put foorth her sorrowfull suite in these words: The gods, said shee, reward
 thee for thy vertuous pittie of my ouerladen soule, who yet hath receyued some
 breath of comfort, by finding thy confession to maintaine some possibilitie of my
 10 languishing hope. But alas! as they who seeke to enrich themselues by minerall
 industrie, the first labour is to finde the myne, which to their cheerefull comfort
 being found, if after any vnllooked for stop, or casuall impediment keepe them
 from getting the desired vre, they are so much the more greeued, as the late con-
 ceiued hope addes torment to their former want. So, falles it out with mee
 15 happie or haplesse woman (as it pleaseth you to ordayne) who am now either to
 receyue some gredon of my most wofull labours, or to returne into a more wret-
 ched darknesse, hauing had some glimmering of my blisfull Sunne, O *Zelma-
 ne*, tread not vpon a soule that lyes vnder your foote: let not the abasing of my selfe
 make me more base in your eyes, but iudge of me according to that I am, and haue
 20 bene, and let my errors be made excusable by the immortall name of loue. With
 that, vnder a fained rage, tearing her clothes, shee discovered some partes of her faire
 body, which if *Zelmanes* hart had not bene so fully possiest as there was no place left
 for any new guest, no doubt it would haue yeelded to that gallant assault. But *Zelma-
 ne* so much the more arming her determination, as she sawe such force threatened,
 25 yet still remembring shee must wade betwixt constancie and curtesy, embracing
Gynecia, and once or twise kissing her, Deare Ladie, sayd she, he were a great enemy
 to himselfe, that would refuse such an offer, in the purchase of which a mans life
 were blessedly bestowed. Nay, how can I euer yeeld due recompence, for so exces-
 siue a fauour? but hauing nothing to giue you but my selfe, take that: I must con-
 30 fesse a small, but a very free gift what other affection soeuer I haue had, shall giue
 place to as great perfection, working besides vpon the bond of gratefulnesse.
 The gods forbid I should be so foolish, as not to see, or so wicked as not to re-
 member, how much my small deserts are ouerballanced by your vnspeakable good-
 nesse. Nay happy may I well accompt my mis-hap among the *Amazons*, since that
 35 dishonor hath bene so true a path to my greatest honor, and the chaunging of my
 outward rayment, hath clothed my minde in such inward contentation. Take there-
 fore noble Lady as much comfort to your hart, as the full commandement of me
 can yeeld you: wipe your faire ~~eyes~~ and keepe them for nobler seruices. And now I
 wil presume thus much to say ~~to you~~, that you make of your selfe for my sake, that
 40 my ioyes of my new obtained ~~things~~ may be accomplished in you. But let vs leaue
 this place, least you be too long missed, and henceforward quiet your mind from a-
 ny further care, for I will now (to my too much ioy) take the charge vpon me, with-
 in fewe dayes to worke your satisfaction, and my felicitie. Thus much she sayde,
 and withall led *Gynecia* out of the Caue, for well she sawe the boyling minde of *Gy-
 necia* did easily apprehend the fitnesse of that lonely place. But indeede this direct
 promise of a short space, ioyned with the cumberfome familiar of womankind, I
 meane modestie, stayed so *Gynecias* minde, that she tooke thus much at that present
 for good payment: remaining with a painefull ioy, and a wearysome kinde of

comfort, not vnlike to the condemned prisoner, whose mind still running vpon the violent arriuall of his cruell death, heares that his pardon is promised, but not yet signed. In this sort they both issued out of that obscure mansion: *Gynecia* alreadie halfe perswaded in her selfe (ô weaknesse of humane conceit) that *Zelmanes* affectiō was turned towards her. For such alas! we are all, in such a mould are we cast, that with the too much loue we beare our selues, being first our own flatterers, wee are easily hooked with our own flattery, we are easily perswaded of others loue. 5

But *Zelmae* who had now to play her prize, seeing no way things could long remaine in that state, & now finding her promise had tyed her tryall to a small compasse of time, began to throw her thoughts into each corner of her inuention, how the might archieue her liues enterprize: for well shee knew deceit cannot otherwise be maintained but by deceit: and how to deceiue such heedfull eyes, and how to satisfie, and yet not satisfie such hopefull desires, it was no small skill. But both their thoughts were called from themselves, with the sight of *Basilus*, who then lying down by his daughter *Philoclea*, vpon the faire, though naturall, bed of greene-grasse, seeing the funne what speede he made, to leaue our West to do his office in the other *Hemisphere*, his inward Muses made him in his best musicke, sing this Madrigall. 15

Why dost thou haste away
O Titan faire the giuer of the day?

20

Is it to carrie newes

To VVesterne wights, what starres in East appeare?

Or dost thou thinke that here

Is left a Sunne, whose beames thy place may vse?

Yet stay and well peruse,

25

VVhat be her gifts, that make her equall thee,

Bend all thy light to see

In earthly clothes enclosde a heauenly sparke.

Thy running course cannot such beauties marke:

No, no, thy motions be

30

Hastened from vs with barre of shadow darke,

Because that thou the author of our sight

Disaainst we see thee staine with others light.

And hauing ended, Deere *Philoclea*, said he, sing something that may diuert my thoughts from the continuall taske of their ruinous harbour: She obedient to him, and not vnwilling to disburden her secret passion, made her sweete voice be heard in these words: 35

O Stealing time the subiect of delaie,
(Delay, the racke of vnrefram'd desire)

40

VVhat strange dessein hast thou my hopes to staie,

My hopes which do but to mine owne aspire?

Mine owne? ô word on whose sweet sound doth pray

45

My greedy soule, with gripe of inward fire:

Thy title great, I iustly challenge may,

Since in such phrased his faith he did attire.

O

*O time, become the chariot of my ioyes :
As thou drawest on, so let my blisse draw neere.
Each moment lost, part of my hap destroyes.*

*Thou art the father of occasion deare :
Ioine with thy sonne, to ease my long annoyes.
In speedie helpe, thanke-worthie friends appeare.*

Philoclea brake off her song, as soone as her mother with *Zelmane* came neere vnto them rising vp with a kindly bashfulnesse, being not ignorant of the spite her mother bare her, and stricken with the sight of that person, whose loue made all those troubles seeme faire flowers of her dearest garland, nay rather all those troubles made the loue increase. For as the arriual of enemies makes a towne so fortifie it self, as euer after it remains stronger, so that a man may say, enemies were no small cause to the townes strength: So to a mind once fixed in a well pleased determination, who hopes by annoyance to ouerthrow it, doth but teach it to knit together all his best grounds, and so perchance of a chanceable purpose, make an vchangeable resolution. But no more did *Philoclea* see the wonted signes of *Zelmaes* affection towards her; she thought she saw another light in her eyes, with a bold and carelesse looke vpon her, which was wont to be dazeled with her beautie; and the framing of her curtesies rather ceremonious then affectionate, and that which worst liked her, was, that it proceeded with such quiet settlednesse, as it rather threatned a full purpose, then any sodaine passion. She found her behauiour bent altogether to her mother, and presumed in her selfe, she discerned the well acquainted face of his fancies now turned to another subiect. She saw her mothers worthinesse, and too well knew her affection. These ioyning their diuerse working powers together in her mind, but yet a prentise in the painefull myserie of passions, brought *Philoclea* into a new trauerse of her thoughts, and made her keepe her carefull looke the more attentue vpon *Zelmaes* behauiour, who indeed (though with much paine, and condemning her selfe to commit a sacrilege against the sweet Saint that liued in her inmost temple) yet strengthening her selfe in it, being the surest way to make *Gynecia* bite of her other baits, did so quite ouer-rule all wonted shewes of loue to *Philoclea*, and conuert them to *Gynecia*, that the part she played did worke in both a full and liuely perswasion: to *Gynecia* such excessiue cōfort, as the being preferred to a riual doth deliuer to swelling desire: But to the delicate *Philoclea*, whose calme thoughts were vnable to nourish any strong debate, it gaue so stinging a hurt, that fainting vnder the force of her inward torment, she withdrew her selfe to the Lodge, and there wearie of supporting her owne burthen, cast her selfe vpon her bed, suffering her sorow to melt it selfe into abundance of teares; at length closing her eyes, as if each thing she saw was a picture of her mishap, and turning vpon her heart side, which with vehement panting, did summon her to consider her fortune, she thus benomed her selfe.

Alas *Philoclea*, is this the price of all thy paynes? Is this the reward of thy giuen-away libertie? Hath too much yeelding bred crueltie? Or can too great acquaintance make mee helde for a straunger? Hath the choosing of a companion made mee left alone? Or doth graunting desire cause the desire to be neglected? Alas, despised *Philoclea*, why diddest thou not holde thy thoughtes

in their simple course and content thy self with the loue of thine owne vertue, which would neuer haue betrayed thee? Ah fillie foole, didst thou looke for truth in him, that with his owne mouth confest his falshood? for plaine proceeding in him, that still goes disguised? They say the falsest men will yet beare outward shewes of a pure mind. But he that euen outwardly beares the badge of trecherie, what helles of wickednesse must needs in the depth be contained? But ô wicked mouth of mine how darest thou thus blaspheme the ornament of the earth, the vessell of all vertue? Owretch that I am that wil anger the Gods in dispraising their most excellēt work! Ono, no, there was no fault but in me, that could euer thinke so high eyes would looke so low, or so great perfections would staine themselues with my vnworthinesse. Alas, why could I not see? I was too weake a band to tie so heauenlie a heart: I was not fit to limit the infinite course of his wonderfull destinies. Was it euer like that vpon onelie *Philoclea* his thoughts should rest? Ah fillie soule that couldest please thy selfe with so impossible an imagination! An vniuersall happinesse is to flowe from him. How was I so inueigled to hope, I might be the marke of such a mind? He did thee no wrong, O *Philoclea*, he did thee no wrong, it was thy weaknesse to fancie the beames of the sunne should giue light to no eyes but to thine! And yet ô Prince *Pyrocles*, for whom I may well begin to hate my selfe, but can neuer leaue to loue thee, what triumph canst thou make of this conquest? What spoyle wilt thou carie away of this my vnderferued ouerthrow? could thy force find out no fitter field then the feeble mind of a poore mayd, who at the first sight did with thee all happinesse? Shall it be said the mirror of mankind hath bene employed to destroy a hurtlesse Gentlewoman? O *Pyrocles*, *Pyrocles*, let me yet call thee before the iudgement of thine owne vertue, let mee be accepted for a plaintiffe in a cause which cōcerns my life: what need hadst thou to arme thy face with the inchāting maske of thy painted passions? what need hadst thou to fortifie thy excellencies with so exquisite a cunning, in making our owne arts betray vs? what needest thou descend so far from thy incōparable worthinesse, as to take on the habite of weak womankind? Was all this to winne the vndefended Castle of a friend, which being wonne, thou wouldest after raze? Could so small a cause allure thee? or did not so vniust a cause stop thee? O me, what say I more, this is my case, my Loue hates me, vertue deales wickedlie with me, and he does me wrong, whose doing I can neuer account wrong. With that the sweete Lady turning her selfe vpon her wearie bed, she happely saw a lute, vpon the bellie of which *Gynecia* had written this song, what time *Basilus* imputed her iecalous motions to proceed of the doubt she had of his vntimely loues. Vnder vvhich vaile she contented to couer her neuer ceasing anguish, had made the Lute a monument of her mind, which *Philoclea* had neuer much marked, til novv the feare of a competitor more stirred her, then before the care of a mother. The verses were these:

M^r Lute within thy selfe thy tunes enclose,
 Thy mistresse song is now a sorow's crie,
 Her hand benumb'd vvith fortunes daylie blowes,
 Her mind amaz'd can neither helpe apply.
 VVe are these my words as mourning weeds of woes,
 Blacke inke becomes the state wherein I die.
 And though my mones be not in musike bound,
 Of written griefes, yet be the silent ground.

The

*The world doth yeeld such ill consoorted shewes,
 With circled course, which no wise stay can trie,
 That childish stuffe which knowes not friends from foes,
 (Better despise) bewonder gasing eye.*

*Thus noble gold, downe to the bottome goes,
 When worthlesse corke, aloft doth floting lie.*

*Thus in thy selfe, least strings are lowdest found,
 And lowest stops do yeeld the highest sound.*

- 10 *Philoclea* read them, and throwing downe the Lute, Is this the legacie you haue
 bequeathed me, o kinde mother of mine, said she? did you bestow the light vpon
 me for this? or did you beare me to be the Author of my buriall? A trim purchase
 you haue made of your owne shame; robbed your daughter to ruine your selfe?
 The birds vnreasonable, yet vse so much reason, as to make neasts for their tender
 15 young ones; my cruell mother turnes me out of mine owne harbour; alas, plaint
 bootes not, for my case can receiue no help, for who should geue mee helpe?
 shall I flie to my parents? they are my murtherers: shall I go to him, who alreadie
 being wonne and lost, must needs haue killed all pitie? Alas, I can bring no new in-
 20 tercessions, he knowes already what I am is his. Shall I come home againe to my
 selfe? O me condemned wretch; I haue giuen away my selfe. With that the poore
 soule beat her breast as if that had bene guilty of her faults, neither thinking of re-
 uenge, nor studying for remedy, but (sweet creature) gaue grieve a free dominion,
 keeping her chamber a few dayes after, not needing to faine her self sicke, feeling e-
 25 uen in her soule the pangs of extreme paine. But litle did *Gynecia* recke that, neither
 when she saw her go away from them, neither when she after found that sicknesse
 made her hide her faire face: so much had fancie preuayled against nature. But o
 you that haue euer knowne, how tender to euery motion loue makes the louers
 heart, how he measures all his ioyes vpon her contentment: & doth with respectfull
 eye hang all his behauiour vpon her eyes: iudge I pray you now of *Zelmanes* trou-
 30 bled thoughts, when she saw *Philoclea*, with an amazed kind of sorow, carie away
 her sweet presence, and easily found (so happie a coniecture unhappie affection
 hath) that her demeanour was guilty of that trespassse. There was neuer foolish soft-
 hearted mother, that forced to beat her child, did weepe first for his paines, and do-
 ing that she was loth to do, did repent before she began, did find halfe that motion
 35 in her weake mind, as *Zelmae* did, now that she was forced by reason to giue an
 outward blow to her passions, and for the lending of a small time, to seeke the vsu-
 rie of all her desires. The vnkindnesse she conceiued, *Philoclea* might conceiue, did
 wound her soule, each teare she doubted she spent, drowned all her comfort. Her
 sickenesse was a death vnto her. Often would she speake to the image of *Philoclea*
 40 which liued and ruled in the highest of her inward part, and vse vehement othes and
 protestations vnto her; that nothing should euer falsifie the free chosen vow she
 had made. Often would she desire her that she would looke wel to *Pyrocles* hart, for
 as for her she had no more interest in it to bestow it any way: Alas would she say, on-
 lie *Philoclea* hast thou not so much feeling of thine own force, as to know no new
 45 Conquerour can preuaile against thy conquests? Was euer any dazeled with the
 Moone, that had vsed his eyes to the beames of the Sunne? Is he caried away
 with a greedie desire of Acornes, that hath had his senses rauished with a garden of
 most delightfull fruits? O *Philoclea*, *Philoclea*, be thou but as mercifull a princeesse to

my mind, as thou art a true possessor, and I shall have as much cause of gladness as thou hast no cause of misdoubting. O no, no, when a mans owne hart is the gage of his debt, when a mans owne thoughts are willing witnesses to his promise; lastly, when a man is the layler over himselfe; there is little doubt of breaking credite, and lesse doubt of such an escape. In this combate of *Zelma*nes doubtfull imaginations, 5 in the end reason well backed with the vehement desire to bring her matters soone to the desired haven, did over-rule the boyling of her inward kindnesse, though as I say with such a manifest strife, that both *Basilus* and *Gynecias* well waiting eyes, had marked her muses had labored in deeper subiect then ordinarie, which she likewise perceiuing they had perceiued, awaking her selfe out of those thoughts, and principallie caring how to satisfie *Gynecia* (whose iudgement and passion she stood most 10 in regard of) bowing her head to her attentive care, Madame (said she) with praise of my thoughts, I have found out a way by which your contentment shall draw on my happiness. *Gynecia* deliuering in her face as thankfull a ioyfulness as her heart could hold, said, it was then time to retire themselves to their rest, for what 15 with riding abroad the day before, and late sitting up for Eclogues, their bodies had dearelie purchased that nights quiet. So went they home to their Lodge, *Zelma*ne framing of both sides bountifull measures of louing countenances to eithers ioy, and neithers ieaiousie; to the especiall comfort of *Basilus*, whose weaker bowels were straight full with the least liquor of hope. So that still holding her by the hand, 20 and sometimes tickling it, he went by her with the most gay conceits that euer had entred his braines, growing now so hearted in his resolution, that he little respected *Gynecias* presence. But with a lustier note then wonted, clearing his voice, & cheering his spirits, looking still vpon *Zelma*ne (whom now the Moone did beautifie with her shining almost at the full) as if her eyes had bene his song-Booke, hee did 25 the message of his mind in singing these verses:

When two Sunnes do appeare,
Some say it doth betoken wonders neare,
As Princes losse or change: 30
Two gleaming Sunnes of splendour like I see,
And seeing feeble in me
Of Princes heart quite lost the ruine strange.

But now each where doth range 35
With vgly cloke the darke enuious night:
Who full of guiltie spite,
Such liuing beames should her blacke seat assaile,
Too weake for them our weaker sight doth vaile.

No sayes faire Moone, my light 40
Shall barre that wrong, and though it not preuaile
Like to my brothers rayes, yet those I send
Hurt not the face, which nothing can amend.

And by that time being come to the Lodge, and visited the sweet *Philoclea*, with 45 much lesse then naturall care of the Parents, and much lesse then wonted kindnesse of *Zelma*ne, each party full fraught with diuersly working fancies, made their pillows weake

weak props of their ouer-loden heads. Yet of all other were *Zelmanes* braines most turmoyled, troubled with loue both actiue and passiue; and lastlie, and especially with care, how to vse her short limited time to the best purpose, by some wise and happie diuerting her two louers vnwelcome desires. *Zelmae* hauing had the night her only counsellor in the busie enterprise she was to vndertake, & hauing all that time mused, and yet not fullie resolued, how she might ioyne preuayling with preuenting, was offended with the dayes bold entrie into her chamber, as if he had now by custome growne an assured bringer of euill newes. Which she taking a Cirterne to her, did lay to *Auroras* charge with these well sung verses:

10
A Vrora now thou shewst thy blushing light,
 (VVhich oft to hope layes out a guilefull baite,
 That trusts in time, to find the way aright
 To ease those paines, which on desire do wwaite.

15
 Blush on for shame: that still with thee do light
 On pensiue soules (in steed of restfull baite)
 Care vpon care (in steed of doing right)
 To ouer-pressed breasts, more grienous waight.

20
 As oh: my selfe, whose woes are neuer light,
 (Tide to the stake of doubt) strange passions baite,
 VVhile thy knowne course, obseruing natures right,
 Stirres me to thinke what dangers lie in waite.
 25
 For mischiefes great, day after day doth show:
 Make me still feare, thy faire appearing show.

Alas said she, am not I runne into a strange gulfe, that am faine for loue to hurt her I loue? And because I detest the others, to please them I detest? O only *Philo-*
 30 *clea*, whose beautie is matched with nothing, but with the vspeakeable beautie of thy fairest mind, if thou didst see vpon what a racke my tormented soule is set, litle would you thinke I had any scope now to leape to any new chaunge; with that with hastie hands she got her selfe vp turning her sight to euerie thing, as if chaunge of obiect might help her inuention. So went she againe to the Caue, where forthwith
 35 it came into her head, that should be the fittest place to perfourme her exploit, of which she had now a kind of confused conceit, although she had not set downe in her fancie, the meeting with each particularity that might fall out. But as the painter doth at the first but shew a rude proportion of the thing he imitates, which after with more curious hand he drawes to the representing each lineamēt: so had her thoughts beating about it continuallie, receiued into them a ground-plot of her deuise, although she had not in each part shapte it according to a full determination. But in this sort hauing early visited the mornings beautie, in those pleasant de-
 40 serts, she came to the King and Queene and told them, that for the performance of certaine her countrie deuotions, which onely were to bee exercised in solitari-
 45 nesse, she did desire their leaue she might for a few dayes lodge her self in the caue, the fresh sweetnesse of which did greatlie delight her, in that hote countrie; and that for that smal space, they wold not otherwise trouble themselues in visiting her, but at such times as she would come to waite vpon them, which should be euerie

day at certaine houres, neither should it be long, she would desire this priuiledged
 absence of them. They whose minds had already taken out that lesson, perfectly to
 yeeld a willing obedience to all her desires, with consenting countenance made her
 soone see her pleasure was a law vnto them. Both indeed inwardlie glad of it, *Basilus*
 hoping that herdeuiding her selfe from them, might yet giue him some freer occa-
 sion of comming in secret vnto her, whose fauourable face had lately strengthened
 his fainting courage. But *Gynecia* of all other most ioyous, holding her selfe assured
 that this was but a prologue to the play she had promised her. Thus both flattering
 themselues with diuerslie grounded hopes, they rang a bell which serued to call
 certaine poore women which euer lay in cabins not farre off, to do the household ser-
 uices of both Lodges, and neuer came to either but being called for: and comman-
 ded them to carie forthwith *Zelmanes* bed and furniture of her chamber into the
 pleasant caue; and to decke it vp as finelie as it was possible for them, that their soules
 rest might rest her bodie to her best pleasing maner: that was with all diligence per-
 fourmed of them, and *Zelmae* already in possession of her new chosen lodging,
 where she like one of *Vestaes* nunnnes, entertained her selfe for a few dayes in all thew
 of straightnesse, yet once a day comming to do her dutie to the King and Queene,
 in whom the seldomnesse of the sight encreased the more vnquiet longing, though
 somewhat qualified, as her countenance was decked to either of them with more
 comfort then wonted. Especiallie to *Gynecia*, who seeing her whollie neglecting her
 daughter *Philoclea*, had now promised her selfe a full possession of *Zelmanes* heart, still
 expecting the fruit of the happie and hoped for inuention. But both shee and *Basilus*
 kept such a continuall watch about the precinctes of the Caue, that either of them
 was a bar to the other from hauing any secret communing with *Zelmae*. While in
 the meane time the sweete *Philoclea* forgotten of her father, despised of her mother,
 and in apparence left of *Zelmae* had yeelded vp her soule to be a pray to sorow and
 vnkindnesse, not with raging conceit of reuenge as had passed through the stout and
 wise heart of her mother, but with a kindlie meeknesse taking vpon her the weight of
 her owne woes, and suffering them to haue so full a course as it did exceedingly wea-
 ken the estate of her bodie: as well for which cause, as for that she could not see *Zel-
 mae*, without expressing (more then she would) how far now her loue was impriso-
 ned in extremitie of sorow, she bound her selfe first to the limits of her owne cham-
 ber, and after, (griefe breeding sicknesse) of her bed. But *Zelmae* hauing now a full
 libertie to cast about euerie way, how to bring her conceiued attempt to a desired
 successe, was oft so perplexed with the manifold difficultie of it, that sometimes she
 would resolue by force to take her away, though it were with the death of her parents,
 sometimes to go away her selfe with *Musidorus* and bring both their forces, so to win
 her. But lastlie, euen the same day that *Musidorus* by feeding the humour of his three
 lothsome gardiens, had stolne away the Princessse *Pamela* (whether it were that loue
 meant to match them euerie way, or that her friends example had holpen her inuen-
 tion, or that indeed *Zelmae* forbare to practise her deuise till shee found her friend
 had passed through his.) The same day, I say, she resolued on a way to rid out of the
 the Lodge her two cumbersome louers, & in the night to carie away *Philoclea*: wher-
 unto she was assured her owne loue no lesse then her sisters, would easilie winne her
 consent. Hoping that although their abrupt parting had not suffered her to demand
 of *Musidorus* which way he meant to direct his iourney) yet either they shold by some
 good fortune, find him: or if that course fayled, yet they might well recouer some
 towne of the *Helots*, neare the frontiers of *Arcaasia*, who being newlie againe vp in
 armes

armes against the Nobilitie, she knew would be as glad of her presence, as she of their protection. Therefore hauing taken order for all things requisite for their going, & first put on a sleight vnder-lute of mans apparell, which before for such purposes she had prouided, she curiously trimmed her selfe to the beautifying of her beauties, that being now at her last triall, she might come vnto it in her brauest armour. And so putting on that kinde of milde countenance, which doth encourage the looker on to hope for a gentle answer, according to her late receiued maner, she left the pleasant darknesse of her melancholie caue, to go take her dinner of the king and Queene, and giue vnto them both a pleasant food of seeing the owner of their desires. But euen as the *Persians* were anciently wont to leaue no rising Sun vnslutted, but as his faire beames appeared clearer vnto them, would they more hartelie reioyce, laying vpon them a great foretoken of their following fortune: So was there no time that *Zelmane* encountred their eyes with her beloued presence, but that it bred a kind of burning deuotion in them, yet so much the more gladding their greedy soules, as her countenance were cleared with more fauour vnto them, which now being determinately framed to the greatest descent of kindnesse, it took such hold of her infortunate louers, that like children about a tender father, from a long voyage returned, with louelie childishnesse hang about him, and yet with simple feare measure by his countenance, how farre he accepts their boldnesse: so were these now throwne into so seruiceable an affection, that the turning of *Zelmanes* eye was a strong sterne enough to all their motions, wending no way, but as the inchanting force of it guided them. But hauing made a light repast of the pleasant fruits of that countrie, enterlarding their food with such maner of generall discourses, as louers are wont to couer their passions in, when respect of a third person keepes them from plaine particulars, at the earnest entreatie of *Basilus*, *Zelmane*, first saluting the Muses with a base Viall hung hard by her, sent this ambassade in versified musike to both her ill-requited louers.

*Beautie hath force to catch the humane sight:
Sight doth bewitch the fancie euill awaked.
Fancie we feele, includes all passions might,
Passion rebeld, oft reasons strength hath shaken.*

*No wonder then, though sight my sight did taint,
And though thereby my fancie was infected,
Though (yoked so) my mind with sicknesse faint,
Had reasons weights for passions ease reiected.*

*But now the fit is past: and time hath giu'n
Leasure to weigh what due desert requireth.
All thoughts so sprung, are from their dwelling driu'n,
And wisdom to his wonted seate aspireth.
Crying in me: eye-hopes deceitfull proue:
Things rightlie priz'd, loue is the band of loue.*

And after her song with an affected modestie, she threw downe her eye, as if the conscience of a secret graunt her inward mind made, had sodainly cast a bashfull vayle ouer her. Which *Basilus* finding, and thinking now was the time to vrg

his painfull petition, beseeching his wife with more carefull eye to accompanie his sicklie daughter *Philoclea*, being rid for that time of her, who was content to graunt him any scope, that she might after haue the like freedome, with a gesture gouerned by the force of his passiōs, making his knees his best supporters he thus said vnto her.

If either, said he, O Lady of my life, my deadly pangues could beare delay, or that this were the first time the same were manifested vnto you, I would now but maintaine still the remembrance of my misfortune, without vrging any further reward, then time and pitie might procure for me. But (alas) since my martyrdom is no lesse painfull, then manifest, and that I no more feele the miserable danger, then you know the assured truth thereof: why should my tongue denie his seruice to my heart? Why should I feare the breath of my words who dayly feele the flame of your works? Embrace in your sweet consideration I beseech you, the miserie of my case, acknowledge your selfe to be the cause, and thinke it is reason for you to redresse the effects. Alas, let not certaine imaginatiue rules, whose truth stands but vpon opinion, keepe so wise a mind from gratefultnesse & mercie, whose neuer saying lawes nature hath plated in vs. I plainly lay my death vnto you, the death of him that loues you, the death of him whose life you may saue, say your absolute determination, for hope it self is a paine, while it is ouermastered with feare, & if you do resolue to be cruell, yet is the speediest condemnation, as in euils, most welcome. *Zelmane* who had fullie set to her selfe the traine she should keepe, yet knowing that who soonest means to yeeld doth well to make the brauest parlie, keeping countenance aloft. Noble Prince (said she) your words are too well couched to come out of a restless mind, and thanked be the Gods, your face threatens no daunger of death. These are but those swelling speeches, which giue the vttermost name to euery trifle, which all were worth nothing, if they were not enamelled with the goodly outside of loue. Truly loue were verie vnlovely, if it were half so deadly, as your louers (still liuing) tearme it: I thinke well it may haue a certaine childish vehemencie, which for the time to one desire will engage all the soule, so long as it lasteth. But with what impatience, you your selfe shew, who confesse the hope of it a paine, & think your own desire so vnworthy, as you wold faine be rid of it, & so with ouermuch loue sue hard for a hastie refusall. A refusall! (cried out *Basilus*, amazed with all, but pierced with the last.) Now assure your selfe, whensoever you vse that word definitiue, it will be the vndoubted doome of my approaching death. And the shall your owne experience know in me, how soone the spirits dried vp with anguish, leaue the performance of their ministerie, whereupon our life dependeth. But alas what a crueltie is this, not only to torment, but to thinke the torment sleight? The terriblest tyrants would say by no man they killed, he dyed not; nor by no man they punished, that he escaped free; for of all other, there is least hope of mercy where there is no acknowledging of the paine: & with like cruelty are my words breathed out from a flaming heart, accounted as messengers of a quiet mind. If I speake nothing, I choake my selfe, & am in no way of reliefe: if simplie, neglected: if confusedly not vnderstood: if by the bending together all my inward powers, they bring forth any liuely expressing of that they truly feele, that is a token, forsooth, the thoughts are at too much leasure. Thus is silence desperate, follie punished, and wit suspected. But indeed it is vaine to say any more, for words can bind no beliefe. Lady, I say, determine of me, I must confesse I cannot beare this bartell in my mind, & therefore let me soone know what I may account of my self, for it is a hell of dolours, when the mind still in doubt for want of resolution, can make no resistance.

Indeed

Indeed (answered *Zelmane*) if I should graunt to your request, I should shew an example in my selfe that I esteeme the holy band of chastitie to be but an imaginative rule, as you termed it: & not the truest obseruance of nature, the most noble commandement that mankind can haue ouer themselues, as indeed both learning teacheth, and inward feeling assureth. But first shal *Zelmanes* graue become her marriage bed, before my soule shall consent to his owne shame, before I will leaue a marke in my selfe of an vnredeemeable trespasse. And yet must I confesse that if euer my heart were stirred, it hath bene with the manifest and manifold shewes of the miserie you liue in for me. For in trueth so it is, nature giues not to vs her degenerate children, any more generall precept, then one to helpe the other, one to feele a true compassion of the others mishap. But yet if I were neuer so contented to speake with you (for further neuer *ô Basilus* neuer looke for at my hands) I know not how you can auoid your wiues ielous attendance, but that her suspicion shall bring my honour into question. *Basilus* whose small failes the least wind did fill, was forthwith as far gone into a large promising himselfe his desire, as before he was stricken down with a threatned deniall. And therfore bending his browes as though he were not a man to take the matter as he had done; What (said he) shall my wife become my mistresse? Thinke you not that thus much time hath taught me to rule her? I will mew the Gentlewoman till she haue cast all her feathers; if she rouse her self against me. And with that he walked vp & downe, nodding his head, as though they mistooke him much that thought he was not his wiues maister. But *Zelmane* now seeing it was time to conclude; Of your wisdom & manhood (said she) I doubt not, but that sufficeth not me, for both they can hardly tame a malicious tongue, & impossibily bar the freedome of thought, which be the things that must be only witnessses of honor, or iudges of dishonor. But that you may see I do not set light your affection, if too night after your wife be assuredly asleep, wherof by your loue I coniure you to haue a most precise care, you will steale handsomly to the caue vnto me, there do I grant you as great proportion as you will take of free cōference with me, euer remembring you seeke no more, for so shall you but deceiue your self, and for euer loose me. *Basilus* that was old enough to know that womē are not wont to appoint secret night meetings for the purchasing of land, holding him selfe alreadie an vndoubted possessor of his desires, kissing her hand, & lifting vp his eyes to heauen, as if the greatnesse of the benefite did go beyond all measure of thanks, said no more, least stirring of more words, might bring forth some perhaps contrarie matter. In which trance of ioy, *Zelmane* went frō him, saying she would leaue him to the remembrance of their appointment, & for her she would go visite the Lady *Philoslea*, into whose chamber being come, keeping still her late taken on grauity, & asking her how she did, rather in the way of dutiful honor, then any speciall affectiō, with extreame inward anguish to the both, she turned frō her, & taking the Queene *Gynecia*, led her into a bay window of the same chamber, determining in her selfe, not to vtter to so excellent a wit as *Gynecia* had, the vttermost point of her pretended deuise, but to keepe the clause of it for the last instant, whē the shortnesse of the time should not giue her spirits leasure to looke into all those doubts, that easily enter to an open inuention. But with smiling eyes, and with a deliuered over grace, sayning as much loue to her, as she did counterfeit litle loue to *Philoslea*, she began with more credible then eloquent speech to tell her, that with much consideration of a matter so nearely importing her own fancie, and *Gynecias* honor, she had now concluded that the night following should be the fittest time for the ioyning toge-

ther their seuerall desires, what time sleepe should perfectly do his office vpon the King her husband, and that the one should come to the other into the caue. Which place, as it was the first receit of their promised loue, so it might haue the first honour of the due performance. That the cause why those few dayes past, she had not sought the like, was, least the new change of her lodging, might make the Duke more apt to marke any sodaine euent: which now the vie of it would take out of his mind. And therefore now most excellent Lady (said she) there resteth nothing but that quicklie after supper, you traine vp the king to visite his daughter *Philoclea*, & then faining your selfe not well at ease, by your going to bed, draw him not long to be after you. In the meane time I will be gone home to my lodging, where I will attend you, with no lesse deuotion, but as I hope with better fortune, then *Thisbe* did the too much louing and too much loued *Pyramus*. The blood that quickly came into *Gynecias* faire face, was the only answer she made, but that one might easily see, contentment and consent were both to the full in her; which she did testifie with the wringing *Zelmane* fast by the hand, closing her eyes, and letting her head fall, as if she would giue her to know, she was not ignorant of her fault, although she were transported with the violence of her euil. But in this triple agreement did the day seeme tedious of all sides, till his neuer erring course, had giuen place to the nights succession: And the supper by each hand halted, was with no lesse speed ended, when *Gynecia* presenting a heauie sleepinesse in her countenance, brought vp both *Basilus* and *Zelmane* to see *Philoclea*, still keeping her bed, and farre more sicke in mind then bodie, and more grieved then comforted with any such visitation. Thence *Zelmane* wishing easefull rest to *Philoclea*, did seeme to take that nights leaue of this princelie crue, when *Gynecia* likewise seeming somewhat diseased, desired *Basilus* to stay a while with his daughter, while she recommended her sicknesse to her beds comfort, indeed desirous to determine againe of the manner of her stealing away; to no lesse comfort to *Basilus*, who the sooner she was asleepe, the sooner hoped to come by his long pursued praye. Thus both were bent to deceiue each other, and to take the aduantage of either others disadvantage. But *Gynecia* hauing taken *Zelmane* into her bed-chamber, to speake a litle with her of their sweet determination: *Zelmane* vpon a sodaine (as though she had neuer thought of it before.) Now the Gods forbid (said she) so great a Ladie as you are should come to me: or that I should leaue it to the hands of fortune, if by either the ill governing of your passion, or your husbands sodaine waking, any daunger might happen vnto you. No if there be any superiority in the points of true loue, it shall be yours: if there be anie daunger, since my selfe am the authour of this deuise, it is reason it should be mine. Therefore do you but leaue with me the keyes of the gate, and vpon your selfe take my vpper garment, that if any of *Dametas* house see you, they may thinke you to be my self, and I will presently lie downe in your place, so muffled for your supposed sicknesse, as the King shall nothing know me. And then as soone as he is asleepe, will I (as it much better becomes me) waite vpon you. But if the vttermost of mischiefs should happen, I can assure you the kings life shall sooner pay for it, then your honour. And with the ending of her wordes, she threw off her mantell, not giuing *Gynecia* any space to take the full image of this new chaunge into her fancie. But seeing no readie obiection against it in her heart, and knowing that there was no time then to stand long disputing; besides remembring the giuer was to order the maner of his gift, yeelded quicklie to this conceit, indeed not among

among the smallest causes, tickled thereunto by a certaine wanton desire, that her husbands deceit might be the more notable. In this sort did *Zelmane* nimbly disarayng her selfe, possesse *Gynecias* place, hiding her head in such a close maner, as grievous and ouerwatched sicknesse is wont to inuite to it selfe the solace of sleepe.

5 And of the other side the Queene putting on *Zelmanes* outmost apparell, went first into her closet, there quicklie to beautifie her selfe with the best and sweetest night deckings. But there casting an hasty eye ouer her precious things, which euer since *Zelmanes* comming, her head otherwise occupied had left vnseene, she hapned to see a bottle of gold, vpon which downe along were graued these verses:

10

*Let him drinke this, whom long in armes to fold
Thou doest desire, and with free power to hold.*

She remembred the bottle, for it had bene kept of long time by the kings of *Cy-*
15 *prus*, as a thing of rare vertue, and giuen to her by her mother, when she being verie young married to her husband of much greater age, her mother perswaded it was of propertie to force loue with loue effects, had made a precious present of it to this her beloued child, though it had bene receiued rather by tradition to haue
20 such a qualitie, then by any approued experiment. This *Gynecia* (according to the common disposition, not only (though especially) of wiues, but of all other kinds of people, not to esteeme much ones owne, but to thinke the labour lost, employed about it) had neuer cared to giue to her husband, but suffered his affection to run according to his owne scope. But now that loue of her particular choise had awaked her spirits, and perchaunce the verie vnlawfulnesse of it had a litle blowne the
25 coale; among her other ornaments with glad mind she tooke most part of this liquor, putting it into a faire cup, all set with diamonds: for what dares not loue undertake, armed with the night, and prouoked with lust? And thus downe she went to the Caue-ward, guided onely by the Moones faire shining, suffering no other thought to haue any familiarity with her braines, but that which did present vnto
30 her a picture of her aproching contentmēt. She that had long disdained this solitary life her husband had entred into, now wished it much more solitarie, so she might only obtaine the priuate presence of *Zelmane*. She that before wold not haue gone so farre, especiallie by night, and to so darke a place, now tooke a pride in the same courage, and framed in her mind a pleasure out of the paine it selfe. Thus with
35 thicke doubled paces she went to the Caue, receiuing to her self, for her first contentment, the only lying where *Zelmane* had done; whose pillow she kist a thousand times, for hauing born the print of that beloued head. And so keeping with panting heart her traouelling fancies so attentiuē, that the wind could stirre nothing, but that she stirred her selfe, as if it had bene the pace of the longed for *Zel-*
40 *mane*, shee kept her side of the bed; defending onely and cherishing the other side with her arme, till after a while waiting, counting with her selfe how many steppes were betwixt the Lodge and the Caue, and oft accusing *Zelmane* of more curious stay then needed, she was visited with an vnexpected guest.

For *Basilus*, after his wife was departed to her fained repose, as long as hee re-
45 mayned with his daughter, to giue his wife time of vnreadying her selfe, it was easily seene it was a verie thorny abode he made there: and the discourses with which he entertained his daughter, not vnlike to those of earnest players, when, in the midst of their game, trifling questions be put vnto them, his eyes still looking

about, and himselfe still changing places, begin to speake of a thing, and breake it off before it were halfe done. To any speech *Philocles* ministred vnto him, with a sodaine starting and casting vp his head, make an answer farre out of all Grammer: a certaine deepe musing, and by and by out of it: vncertaine motions, vnstayed graces. Hauing borne out the limit of a reasonable time with as much paine as might be, he came darkeling into his chamber, forcing himselfe to tread as softly as hee could. But the more curious he was, the more he thought euery thing creaked vnder him: and his mind being out of the way with another thought, and his eyes not seruing his turne in that darke place, each Coffer or Cupbord he met, one saluted his shinnes, another his elbowes: sometimes readie in reuenge to strike them againe with his face. Till at length, fearing his wife were not fullie asleepe, he came lifting vp the cloathes as gently as (I thinke) poore *Pan* did, when, in steed of *soles* bed he came into the rough embracings of *Hercules*; and laying himselfe downe, as tenderly as a new Bride, rested awhile with a verie open eare, to marke each breath of his supposed wife. And sometimes he himselfe would yeeld a long fetched sigh, as though that had bene a musike to drawe on another to sleepe, till within a verie litle while, with the other parties well counterfeited sleepe (who was as willing to be rid of him, as he was to be gone thence) assuring himselfe hee left all safe there, in the same order stale out againe, and putting on his night gowne, with much groping and scrambling, he gat himselfe out of the litle house, and then did the Moone-light serue to guide his feet. Thus with a great deale of paine, did *Basilus* go to her whom he fled, and with much cunning left the person for whom he had employed all his cunning. But when *Basilus* was once gotten (as he thought) int a cleare coast, what ioy he then made, how each thing seemed vile in his sight, in comparison of his fortune, how farre already he deemed himselfe in the chiefe tower of his desires, it were tedious to tell: once his heart could not choose but yeeld this song, as a fairing of his contentment.

GEt hence foule Griefe, the canker of the mind:
Farewell Complaint, the misers only pleasure,
Away vaine Cares, by which few men do find
Their sought-for treasure.

Ye helpelesse Sighes, blow out your breath to nought,
Teares, drowne your selues, for woe (your cause) is wasted,
Thought, thinke to end, too long the fruit of thoughts
My mind hath tasted.

But thou, sure Hope, tickle my leaping heart.
Comfort, step thou in place of wonted sadnesse:
Fore-felt Desire, begin to saour parts
Of comming gladnesse.

Let voyce of Sighes into cleare musike run,
Eyes, let your Teares with gazing now be mended,
In steed of Thought, true pleasure be begun,
And neuer ended.

Thus

Thus imagining as then with him selfe, his ioyes so held him vp, that he neuer touched ground. And like a right old beaten souldiour, that knewe well enough the greatest Captaynes do neuer vse long Orations, when it comes to the very point of execution, as soone as he was gotten into the Caue, and to the ioyfull (though silent) expectation of *Gynecia*, come close to the bed, neuer recking his promise to looke for nothing but conference, he leapt into that side reserued for a more welcome guest. And laying his louingst hold vpon *Gynecia*: O *Zelmane*, said he, embrace in your fauor this humble seruant of yours: hold within me my heart, which pants to leaue his maister to come vnto you. In what case poore *Gynecia* was, when she knew the voice, and felt the bodie of her husband, faire ladies; it is better to knowe by imagination then experience. For streight was her minde assaulted, partly with the being depriued of her vnquenched desire, but principallie with the doubt that *Zelmane* had betrayed her to her husband, besides the renewed sting of ielosie, what in the meane time might befall her daughter. But of the other side, her loue with a fixed perswasion she had, taught her to seeke all reason of hopes. And therein thought best before discovering of her selfe, to marke the behauiour of her husband; who, both in deedes and wordes stil vsing her, as taking her to be *Zelmane*, made *Gynecia* hope that this might be *Basilus* owne enterprise, which *Zelmane* had not stayed, least she should discouer the matter which might be per-
 20 fourmed at another time. Which hope accompanied with *Basilus* maner of dealing, (he being at that time fuller of liuelier fancies, then many years before he had bene) besides the remembrance of her daughters sicknesse, and late strange countenance betwixt her and *Zelmane*, all comming together into her mind, which was loath to condemne it self of an vtter ouerthrow, made her frame her selfe, not truly with a sugred ioy, but with a determinate patience to let her husband thinke he had found a verie gentle and supple-minded *Zelmane*; which he good man making full reckening of, did melt in as much gladnesse as shee was oppressed with diuers vngratefull burthens.

But *Pyrocles* who had at this present no more to play the part of *Zelmane*, ha-
 30 uing so naturally measured the maner of his breathing, that *Basilus* made no doubt of his sound sleeping, and laine a preatie while with a quiet vnquietnesse to performe his entended enterprise, as soone as by the debate betwixt *Basilus* shinnes and the vnregarding formes, he perceiued that he had fully left the Lodge: after him went he with stealing steps, hauing his sword vnder his arme (still doubting
 35 lest some mischaunce might turne *Basilus* backe againe) downe to the gate of the Lodge. Which not content to locke fast, he barred and fortified with as many deuises, as his wit and haste would suffer him, that so he might haue full time both for making readie *Philoclea*, and conueying her to her horse, before any might come in to finde them missing. For further ends of those ends, and what might
 40 ensue of this action, his loue and courage well matched neuer looked after, holding for an assured ground, that whosoever in great things will thinke to preuent all obiections, must lye still, and do nothing. This determination thus wayed, the first part thus perfourmed, vp to *Philocleas* chamber dore went *Pyrocles*, rapt from himselfe with the excessiue fore-feeling of his (as he assured himselfe) neere
 45 comming contentment. What euer paines he had taken, what daungers he had runne into, and especially those sawcie pages of loue, doubts, griefes, languishing hopes, and threatening despaires, came all now to his minde, in one ranke to beautifie his expected blisfulnesse, and to serue for a most fit sawce, whose sournesse

might giue a kinde of life to the delightfull cheare his imagination fed vpon. All the great estate of his father, all his owne glorie, seemed vnto him but a trifling pompe, whose good stands in other mens conceit, in cōparison of the true comfort he found in the depth of his mind, and the knowledge of any miserie that might ensue this ioyous aduenture, was recked of but as a slight purchase of possessing the top of happinesse: for so farre were his thoughts past through al perils, that already he conceiued himselfe safely arriued with his Lady at the stately pallace of *Pella*, among the exceeding ioyes of his father, & infinite congratulations of his friends, giuing order for the royall enterrayning of *Philoclea*, and for sumptuous shewes & triumphes against their mariage. In the thought wherof as he found extremitie of ioy, so well found he that extremitie is not without a certaine ioyfull paine, by extending the heart beyond his wonted limits, and by so forcible a holding all the senses to one object, that it confounds their mutuall working, not without a charming kind of rauishing them, from the free vse of their owne function. Thus grieved onely with too much gladnesse, being come to the doore, which should be the entrie to his happinesse, he was met with the latter end of a song, which *Philoclea* like a solitarie Nightingale, bewailing her guiltlesse punishment, & helplesse misfortune, had newly deliuered ouer, meaning none should be iudge of her passion, but her owne conscience. The song hauing bene accorded to a sweetly playd on Lute, contained these verses, which she had lately with some art curiously written, to enwrap her secret and resolute woes.

*V*ertue, beautie, and speech, did strike, wound, charme,
My hart, eyes, cares, with wonder, loue, delight:
First, second, last, did binde, enforce, and arme,
His workes, shewes, suites, with wit, grace, and vow's might.

Thus honor, liking, trust, much farre, and deepe,
Held, pearst, possesst, my iudgment, sense, and will,
Till wrong, contempt, deceit, did growe, steale, creepe,
Bandes, fauour, faith, to breake, defile, and kill.

Then grieve, vnkindnesse, prooffe, tooke, kindled, thought,
Well grounded, noble, due, spite, rage, disdaine,
But ah, alas! (In wayne) my mind, sight, thought,
Doth him, his face, his words, leaue, shunne, refraine,
For no thing, time, nor place, can loose, quench, ease,
Mine owne, embraced, fought, knot, fire, discase.

The force of loue to those poore folke that feele it, is many wayes verie strange, but no way stranger, then that it doth so enchain the louers iudgement vpon her that holdes the raines of his mind, that whatsoeuer she doth is euer in his eyes best.
And

And that best, being by the continuall motion of our changing life, turned by her to any other thing, that thing againe becommeth best. So that nature in each kinde suffering but one superlatiue, the lower only admits no positive. If she sit still, that is best, for so is the conspiracie of her seuerall graces held best together to make one perfect figure of beauty. If she walke, no doubt that is best, for besides the making happie the more places by her steps, the very stirring addes a pleasing life to her naturall perfectiōs. If she be silent, that without comparison is best, since by that means the vntroubled eye, most freely may deuour the sweetnesse of his object. But if she speake, he will take it vpon his death that is best, the quintessence of each word, being distilled downe into his affected soule: Example of this was well to be seene in the giuen-ouer *Pyrocles*, who with panting breath, and sometime sighes, not such as sorrowe restraining the inward parts doth make them glad to deliuer, but such as the impaciencie of delay, with the vnSURETIE of neuer so sure hope, is wont to breath out now being at the doore, of the one side, hearing her voice, which he thought if the Philosophers said true of the heauenly seuen sphered harmony, was by her not only represented, but farre surmounted, and of the other hauing his eyes ouerfilled with her beautie, (for the king at his parting had left the chamber open, and she at that time lay, as the heart of that countrie did well suffer, vpon the top of her bed, hauing her beauties eclipsed with nothing but with a faire smocke, wrought all in flames of ash-colour filke & gold, lying so vpon her right side, that the left thigh downe to the foot, yeelded his delightfull proportion to the full view, which was seene by the help of a rich lampe, which thorow the curtaines a litle drawne cast forth a light vpon her, as the Moone doth when it shines into a thinne wood;) *Pyrocles* I say was stopped with the violence of so many darts, cast by *Cupid* altogether vpon him, that quite forgetting him selfe, and thinking therein already he was in the best degree of felicitie, he would haue lost much of his time, and with too much loue omitted the enterprize vndertaken for his loue, had not *Philocleas* pitifull accusing of him forced him to bring his spirits againe, to a new bias, for she laying her hand vnder her faire cheek, vpon which there did priuily tickle the sweet drops of her delightfull though sorrowfull teares, made these words waite vpon her moanefull song. And hath that cruell *Pyrocles* said she, deserued thus much of me, that I should for his sake lift vp my voice in my best tunes, and to him continually, with powring out my plaint, make a disdained oblation? Shall my soule still do this honour to his vnmercifull tyrannie, by my lamenting his losse, to shew his worthinesse and my weaknesse? He heares thee not simple *philoclea*, he heares thee not; and if he did, some hartes grow the harder, the more they find their aduantage. Alas what a miserable constitution of minde haue I! I disdaine my fortune, & yet reuerence him that disdaines me; I accuse his vngratefulnessse, and haue his vertue in admiration. O yee deafe heauens, I would either his iniurie could blot out mine affection, or my affection could forget his iniury. With that giuing a pitifull but sweet shrill, shee tooke againe the lute, and began to sing this Sonnet, which might serue as an explaining to the other:

THe loue which is imprinted in my soule
 With beauties scale, and vertue faire disguis'd,
 With inward cries puts up a bitter role
 Of huge complaints, that now it is despis'd.

*Thus thus the more I loue, the wrong the more
Monstrous appears, long tyneth receined late,
VVrong sturres remorsefull grieffe, grieffe deadly sore
Vnkindnesse breeds, vnkindnesse softeth hath.*

*But ah the more I hate, the more I thinke
VVhyme I doe hate, the more I thinke on him,
The more his matchlesse giftes do deeply sinck
In to my brest, and loues renewed swimme,
VVhat medicine then, can such disease remoue,
VVhere loue drawes hate, and hate engendyeth loue?*

But *Pyrocles* that had heard his name accused, & cōdemned by the mouth, which of all the world, and more then all the world, he most loued had then cause enough to call his minde to his home, & with the most haste he could (for true loue feares the accident of an instant) to match the excusing of his fault, with declaration of his arrand thither. And therefore blowne vp & downe with as many contrary passions, as *Aeolus* sent out windes vpon the Troian reliques, guided vpō the sea by the valiant *Aeneas*, he went into her chamber with such a pace as reuerent feare doth teach, where kneeling downe, & hauing prepared a long discourse for her, his eyes were so filled with her sight, that as if they would haue robbed all their fellowes of their seruices, both his hart fainted, and his tounge fayled in such sort, that he could not bring forth one word, but referred her vnderstanding to his eyes language. But she in extremitie amazed to see him there, at so vndue a season, & ashamed that her beautifull body made so naked a prospect, drawing in her delicate limmes into the weake guard of the bed, and presenting in her face to him such a kinde of pittifull anger, as might shew, this was only a fault, therfore because she had a former grudge vnto him, turning away her face frō him she thus said vnto him: O *Zelmae* or *Pyrocles*, (for whether name I vse it much skils not, since by the one I was first deceiued & by the other now betrayed) what strange motion is the guide of thy cruel minde hither? Dost thou not thinke the day torments thou hast giuen me sufficient, but that thou doest enuie me the nights quiet? Wilt thou giue my sorrowes no truce, but by making me see before mine eyes how much I haue lost, offer me due cause of confirming my plaint? Or is thy hart so full of rancour, that thou dost desire to feed thine eyes with the wretched spectacle of thine ouerthrowne enemye, & so to satisfie the full measure of thy vnderferued rage, with the receiuing into thy sight the vnreleuable ruines of my desolate life? O *Pyrocles*, *Pyrocles* for thine own vertues sake, let miseries be no musique vnto thee, & be content to take to thy selfe some colour of excuse, that thou didst not know to what extremitie thy inconstancie, or rather falshood hath brought me. *Pyrocles* to whom euery sillable she pronounced, was a thunderbolt to his hart, equally distraught betwixt amasement & sorow, abashed to see such a stop of his desires, griued with her paine, but tormented to find himselfe the author of it, with quaking lips, & pale cheere, alas diuine Lady said he, your displeasure is so contrary to my desert, & your words so farre beyond all expectatiōs, that I haue least abilitie now I haue most need, to speake in the cause vpō which my life dependeth. For my troth is so vndoubtedly constant vnto you, my hart is so assured a witnesse to it selfe, of his vnspotted faith, that hauing no one thing in me, whereout any such sacriledge might arise, I haue likewise nothing in so direct a thing

thing to say for my selfe, but sincere & vehement protestations, for in truth, there
 may most words be spent, where there is some probabilitie, to breed of both sides
 cōiectural allegatiōs. But so perfect a thing as my loue is of you, as it suffers no que-
 stiō, so it seemes to receiue iniury by additiō of any words vnto it. If my soule could
 5 haue bene polluted with trechery, it would likewise haue provided for it selfe, due
 furniture of colourable answers, but as it should vpō the naked conscience of his vi-
 touched duty, so I must confesse it is altogether vnarmed against so vniust a violēce
 as you lay vpon me: alas! let not the paines I haue taken to serue you, be now accū-
 10 ted iniurious vnto you, let not the dangerous cunning I haue vsed to please you be
 deemed a treason against you, since I haue deceiued them whom you feare for your
 sake, do not you destroy me for their sake; what can I without you further do? Or to
 what more forwardnesse can any counsel bring our desired happinesse? I haue pro-
 15 uided whatsoeuer is needful for our going, I haue rid them both out of the lodge, so
 that there is none here to be hinderers or knowers of our departure, but onely the
 almightie powers, whom I inuoke as triers of mine innocencie, & witnesses of my
 wel meaning. And if euer my thoughts did receiue so much as a fainting in their af-
 fections: if they haue not continually with more & more ardour, frō time to time
 20 pursued the possession of your sweetest fauour; if euer in that possession they recei-
 ued either spot, or falshood: then let their most horrible plagues fall vpon me, let
 mine eyes be depriued of the light which did abase the heauenly beames that strake
 thē, let my falsified tounge serue to no vse but to bemoane mine own wretchednes, let
 my hart impoisoned with detestable treason, be the seate of infernall sorrow, let my
 soule with the endlesse anguish of his conscience become his owne tormentor. O
 25 false mankind cried out the sweet *Philoclea*. How can an impostumed hart but yeld
 forth euil matter by his mouth? Are oathes there to be beleueed, where vowes are
 broke? No no, who doth wound the eternal iustice of the Gods, cares little for abu-
 sing their names: & who in doing wickedly doth not feare due recōpēcing plagues
 doth little feare that inuoking of plagues, wil make them come euer a whit the soo-
 30 ner. But alas what aileth this new conuersatiō, haue you yet another sleight to play,
 or do you think to deceiue me in *Pyrocles* forme, as you haue done in *Zelmanes*? Or
 rather now you haue betrayed me in both, is some third sex left you, into which you
 can transforme your selfe to inueigle my simplicitie? Enioy, enioy the conquest you
 haue already wonne: & assure your selfe you are come to the farthest point of your
 35 cunning. For my part vnkind *Pyrocles*, my onely defence shalbe beleefe of nothing,
 my comfort my faithfull innocencie, & the punishment I desire of you shalbe your
 own conscience. *Philoclea* hard perseuering in this vniust condēnation of him, did
 so ouerthrowe all the might of *Pyrocles* minde (who saw that time would not serue
 to proue by deeds, & that the better words he vsed, the more they were suspected
 40 of deceitfull cunning.) That voide of all counsell, and depriued of all comfort,
 finding best deserts punished, and nearest hopes preuented, he did abandon the
 succour of himselfe, and suffered grieve so to close his hart, that his breath sayling
 him with a deathfull shutting of his eyes, he fell downe at her bedside, hauing had
 time to say no more, but oh whom doest thou kill *Philoclea*? She that litle looked for
 45 such an extreame euent of her doings, start out of her bed, like *Venus* rising from
 her mother the sea, not so much stricken downe with amazement, and grieve of her
 fault, as lifted vp with the force of loue and desire to helpe, she laide her faire body
 ouer his breast, & throwing no other water in his face, but the streame of her teares,
 nor giuing him other blowes but the kissing of her welformed mouth, her onely

cries were these lamentations: O vnfortunate suspition, said she, the verie meane to loose that we most suspect to loose. O vnkind kindnesse of mine, which returnes an imagined wrong with an effectuall iniury. O foole to make quarell my supplicatiō, or to vse hate as the mediator of loue, childish *Philoelea*, hast thou thrown away the Jewell wherein all thy pride consisted? Hast thou with too much hast ouerrun thy selfe? Then would she renew her kisses: And yet not finding the life returne, redouble her plaints in this manner: O diuine soule, said she, whose vertue can possesse no lesse then the highest place in heauen, if for mine eternall plague, thou hast vtterly left this most sweet mansion, before I follow thee with *Thisbes* punishment for my rash vnwarinesse, heare this protestation of mine: That as the wrong I haue done thee proceeded of a most sincere, but vnresistable affection: so led with this pitifull example, it shall end in the mortall hate of my selfe, and (if it may be) I will make my soule a tombe of thy memorie. At that word with anguish of minde and weaknesse of bodie encreased one by the other, & both augmented by this fearefull accident, she had falne downe in a fount, but that *Pyrocles* then first seuering his eye liddes, and quickly apprehending her danger, to him more then death, beyond all powers struiuing to recouer the commandement of all his powers, stayed her frō falling: and then lifting the sweet burthen of her body in his armes, laid her againe in her bed. So that she, but then the Physition, was now become the patient: and he, to whom her weaknesse had bene seruiceable, was now enforced to do seruice to her weaknesse, which performed by him with that hartie care, which the most carefull loue on the best loued subiect in greatest extremitie could employ, preuailed so farre, that ere long she was able (though in strength exceedingly delected) to cal home her wandering senses, to yeeld attention to that her beloued *Pyrocles* had to deliuer. But he lying downe on the bed by her, holding her hand in his, with so kind an accusing her of vnkindnesse, as in accusing her he condemned himself, began frō point to point to discouer vnto her all that had passed betweene his loathed louers & him. How he had entertained, & by entertaining deceiued, both *Basilus* & *Cynegja*: & that with such a kind of deceipt, as either might see the cause in the other, but neither espie the effect in themselves. That all his fauors to them had tended onely to make them strangers to this his actiō: & al his strangenesse to her to the final obtaining of her long promised, & now to be performed fauor. Which deuise seeing it had so well succeeded to the remouing all other hinderances, that onely her resolution remained for the taking their happie iourney, he coniured her by all the loue she had euer borne him, she would make no longer delay to partake with him what foeuer honors the noble kingdom of *Macedon*, & al other *Euarchus* dominions might yeeld him, specially since in this enterprise he had now waded so far, as he could not possibly retire himself back, without being overwhelmed with danger & dishonor. He needed not haue vsed further perswasion: for that only coniuration had so forcibly bound al her spirits, that could her body haue seconded her mind, or her mind haue strengthened her body, without respect of any worldly thing, but only feare to be againe vnkind to *Pyrocles*, she had cōdiscended to go with him. But raising her selfe a litle in her bed, & finding her own vnabilitie in any sort to endure the aire: My *Pyrocles* said she (with teareful eyes & a pitifull countenance, such as wel witnessed she had no will to deny any thing she had power to performe) if you can conuey me hence in such plight as you see me; I am most willing to make my extreamest danger a testimony, that I esteeme no danger in regard of your vertuous satisfaction. But she fainted so fast, that she was not able to vtter the rest of her conceiued speech: which also

also turned *Pyrocles* thoughts from expecting further answers, to the necessary care of reuiuing her, in whose fainting himself was more then ouerthrown. And that ha-
 uing effected with all the sweet meanes his wits could deuise, though his highest
 hopes were by this vnexpected downfall sunke deeper then any degree of dispaire:
 yet lest the appearance of his inward grieve might occasion her further discomfort,
 hauing racked his face to a more comfortable semblance, he sought some shewe of
 reason, to shew she had no reason, either for him, or for her selfe so to be afflicted.
 Which in the sweete minded *Philoclea*, whose consideration was limited by his
 words, & whose conceit pierced no deeper then his outward countenance, wrought
 within awhile such quietnesse of mind & that quietnesse againe such repose of bo-
 die, that sleep by his harbingers weaknesse, wearinesse, & watchfulnesse, had quickly
 takē vp his lodging in al her senses. Then indeed had *Pyrocles* leasure to sit in iudge-
 ment on himselfe, and to heare his reason accuse his rashnesse, who, without fore-
 cast of doubt, without knowledge of his friend, without acquainting *Philoclea* with
 his purpose, or being made acquainted with her present estate, had false headlong
 into that attempt, the successe whereof he had long since set downe to himselfe as
 the measure of all his other fortunes. But calling to minde how weakely they do
 that rather finde fault with what cannot be amended, then seeke to amend wherein
 they haue bene faultie: he soone turned him from remembring what might haue
 bene done, to considering what was now to be done, & when that consideration fai-
 led what was now to be expected. Wherin hauing runne ouer all the thoughts, his
 reason called to the strictest accounts, could bring before him, at length he lighted
 on this: That as long as *Gynecia* bewraied not the matter (which he thought she wold
 not doe, as well for her owne honour and safetie, as for the hope she might still haue
 of him, which is loth to die in a louers heart) all the rest might turne to a pretie me-
 ryment, and enflame his louer *Basilus*, againe to cast about for the missed fauour.
 And as naturally the heart stuffed vp with wofulnesse, is glad greedilie to sucke the
 thinnest aire of comfort: so did he at first, embrace this conceit as offering great
 hope, if not assurance of well doing, till looking more nearely into it, and not able
 to answer the doubts and difficulties he saw therein more and more arising, the night
 being also far spent, his thoughts euen wearie of his owne burthens, fell to a stray-
 ing kind of vncertaintie: and his mind standing only vpon the nature of inward in-
 telligences, left his body to giue a sleeping respite to his vitall spirits, which he, ac-
 cording to the qualitie of sorow, receiued with greater greedinesse then euer in his
 life before: according to the nature of sorow, I say, which is past cares remedie. For
 care stirring the braines, and making thin the spirits, breaketh rest: but those griefs
 wherein one is determined there is no preuenting, do breed a dul heauinesse which
 easily clothes it selfe in sleepe. So as laid downe so neare the beautie of the world
Philoclea, that their necks were subiect each to others chaste embracements, it see-
 med loue had come thither to lay a plot in that picture of death how gladly, if death
 came, their soules would go together.

The third Eclogues.

Thyrsis not with many painted words nor falsified promises, had won the con-
 sent of his beloued *Kala*, but with a true and simple making her know he loued
 her not, forcing himselfe beyond his reach to buy her affection, but giuing her
 such pretie presents, as neither could wearie him with the giuing, nor shame her

for the taking. Thus the first Strawberies he could find, were euer in a cleane washe dish sent to *Kala*, thus poesies of the spring flowers were wrapt vp in a litle greene silk and dedicated to *Kalas* breasts, thus sometimes his sweetest Creame, sometimes the best Cakebread his mother made, were referued for *Kalas* taste. Neither would hee stick to kil a lamb when she would be content to come ouer the way vnto him. But then so, how the house was swept & rather no fire thē any smoke left to trouble her. Then loue songs were not daintie, when she would heare them, and as much mannerlie silence when she would not: in going to Church great worship to *Kala*. So that all the parish said, neuer a maide they knew so well wayted on: and when dauncing was about the Maypole, no body taken out but she, and he after a leape or two to shewe her his owne actiuitie, would frame all the rest of his dauncing, onely to grace her. As for her fathers sheepe, he had no lesse care of them then his owne: so that she might play her as she would, warrāted with honest *Thyrsis* carefulnesse. But if he spied *Kala* fauourd any one of the flocke more then his fellowes, then that was cherished: thearing him so (when shorne he must be) as might most become him: but while the wooll was on, wrapping within it some verses, wherein *Thyrsis* had a special gift, & making the innocent beast his ynweeting messenger. Thus constantly continuing, though he were none of the fayrest, at length he wanne *Kalas* heart, the honestest wench in all those quarters. And so with consent of both parents (without which neither *Thyrsis* would ask, nor *Kala* grant) their marying day was appointed, which because it fell out in this time, I thinke it shall not be impertinent, to remember a little our shepheards, while the other greater persons, are either sleeping or otherwise troubled. *Thyrsis* mariage time once known, there needed no inuiting of the neighbours in that valley, for so well was *Thyrsis* beloued, that they were all ready to doe him credit, neither yet came they like Harpies to deuoure him: but one brought a fat pigge, the other a tender kidd, the third a great goose: as for cheese, milke, & butter, were the gossips presents. Thither came of strange shepheards only the melancholy *Philisides*, for the vertuous *Coridon* had long since left off all ioyfull solemnities. And as for *Strephon* and *Klaimus*, they had lost their mistresse, which put them into such extreme sorrowes as they could scarcely abide the light of the day, much lesse the eyes of men. But of the *Arcadian* borne shepheards, thither came good old *Geron*, young *Histor*, though vnwilling, and vpright *Dicus*, merie *Tas* and iolly *Nico*. As for *Dametis* they durst not presume (his pride was such) to inuite him: and *Dorus* they found might not be spared. And thereunder a bower was made of bowes (for *Thyrsis* house was not able to receiue thē) euery one placed according to his age. The women (for such was the maner of the countrey) kept together to make good cheare among themselues, from which otherwise a certaine painful modestie restraines them, and there might the sadder matrons giue good counsell to *Kala*: who poore soule wept for feare of that she desired. But among the shepheards was all honest libertie, no feare of dangerous tel-tales, who hunt greater prayes, nor indeede mindes in them to giue tel-tales any occasion; but one questioning with another of the manuring his ground, and gouerning his flock, the highest point they reached to was, to talke of the holinesse of mariage, to which purpose affocne as their sober dinner was ended, *Dicus* in steede of thanks, sang this song with a cleare voice and cheerfull countenance.

L Et mother earth now decke her selfe in flowers,
To see her of spring seeke a good increase,
w here

Where in stealest lone doth vanquish Cupids powers,
 And war of thoughts is swallow'd up in peace,
 Which neuer may decrease,
 But like the turtles faire,
 Live one in two, a well united paire,
 Which that no chance may slaine,
 O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

O beaun awake shew forth thy stately face,
 Let not these slumbring clouds thy beauties hide,
 But with thy cheerefull presence helpe to grace
 The honest Bridegrome, and the bashfull Bride,
 Whose loues may euer bide,
 Like to the Elme and Vine;
 With mutuall embracements them to twyne:
 In which delightfull paine,
 O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

Yee Muses all which chaste affects allow,
 And haue to Thyrtis shewd your secret skill,
 To this chaste loue your sacred fauours bow,
 And so to him and her your giftes distill,
 That they all vice may kill:
 And like to lillies pure,
 May please all eyes, and spotlesse may endure.
 Where that all blisse may raigne,
 O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

Yee Nymphes which in the waters empire haue,
 Since Thyrtis musike oft doth yeeld your praise,
 Graunt to the thing which we for Thyrtis craue.
 Let one time (but long first) close vp their daies,
 One craue their bodies seaze:
 And like two riuers sweete,
 When they though diuers do together meete:
 One streame both streames containe,
 O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

Pan, father Pan, the god of silly sheep,
 Whose care is cause that they in number grow,
 Haue much more care of them that them do keep,
 Since from these good the others good doth flow,
 And make their issue show
 In number like the heard
 Of yonglings, which thy selfe with loue hast reard.
 Or like the drops of raine.
 O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

THE COUNTESS OF PEMBROKES

*Vertue (if not a God) yet Gods chiefe part,
Be thou the knot of this their open wom,
That still he be her head, she be his hart,
He leane to her, she vnto him do bow:*

Each other still allow:

Like Oke and Mistletoe.

Her strength from him, his praise from her do growe.

In which most lovely traine,

O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

*But thou foule Cupid syre to lawlesse lust,
Be thou farr hence with thy empoison'd dart,
Which though of glittering golde, shall beere take rust,
Where simple loue, which chastnesse doth impart,
Avoides thy hurtfull arte.*

Not needing charming skill,

Such mindes with sweet affections for to fill,

Which being pure and plaine,

O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

*All churlish wordes, shrewd answers, crabbed looks,
All priuatenesse, selfe-seeking, inward spite,
All waivardnesse, which nothing kindly brookes.
All strife for toyes, and clayming masters right.*

Be hence aye put to flight,

All styrring husbands hate

Gainst neighbors good for womanish debate

Be fled as things most vaine,

O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

*All peacock pride, and fruits of peacocks pride,
Longing to be with losse of substance gay,
With retchlesnesse what may thy house betide,
So that you may on hyer slippers stay,*

For euer hence away:

Tet let not flatterie,

The sinke of filth, be counted huswifery:

But keeping wholesome meane,

O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

*But aboue all, away vile iealousie,
The euill of enils iust cause to be vniust,
(How can he loue suspecting treacherie?
How can she loue where loue cannot win trust?)*

Goe snake hide thee in dust,

Ne dare once shew thy face,

Where open harts do hold so constant place,

That they thy sting restraine,

O Himen long their coupled ioyes maintaine.

The earth is deckt with flowers, the beauns displaid,
 Muses grant gifts, Nymphes long and ioyned life,
 Pan store of babes, vertue their thoughts well staid,
 Cupids lust gone, and gone is bitter strife,
 Happie man, happy wife.
 No pride shall them oppresse,
 Nor yet shall yeeld to tothsome sluttishnesse,
 And ieaousie is slaine:
 For Himen will their coupled ioyes maintaine.

Truly *Dicus*, sayd *Nico*, although thou didst not graunt me the price the last day, when vndoubtedly I wan it, yet must I needs say, thou for thy part hast sung well and thriftilie. *Pas* straight desired all the companie they would beare witness, that *Nico* had once in his life spoken wisely; for, sayd he, I will tell it his father, who will be a glad man when he heares such newes. Very true, sayd *Nico*, but indeed so would not thine in like case, for hee would looke thou shouldest liue but one houre longer, that a discreete word wandred out of thy mouth. And I pray thee (sayd *Pas*) gentle *Nico*, tell me what mischaunce it was that brought thee to taste so fine a meate? Many goodman blockehead sayd *Nico*, because hee speakes against ieaousie, the filthie traytor to true affection, and yet disguising it selfe in the rayment of loue. Sentences, Sentences, cried *Pas*. Alas how ripe witted these young folkes be now adayes! But well counsell'd shall that husband be, when this man comes to exhort him not to be ieaous. And so shall hee, answered *Nico*, for I haue seene a fresh example, though it be not very fit to be knowne. Come, come, said *Pas*, bee not so squeamish, I know thou longest more to tell it, then we to heare it. But for all his wordes *Nico* would not bestowe his voice till he was generally entreated of all the rest. And then with a mery mariage looke he sang this following discourse, for with a better grace he could sing then tell:

A Neighbour mine not long ago there was,
 (But namelesse he, for blamelesse he shall be)
 That married had a trickie and bonny lasse
 As in a sommer day a man might see:
 But he himselfe a foule vnhandsome groome,
 And farre unfit to hold so good a roome.

Now whether moud with selfe vnworthinesse,
 Or with her beautie fit to make a pray,
 Fell ieaousie did so his braine oppresse,
 That if he absent were but halfe a day,
 He gest the worst (you wot what is the worst)
 And in himselfe new doubting causes nurst.

While thus he fear'd the silly innocent,
 Who yet was good, because she knew none ill,

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Vnto his house a iollie shepheard went,
To whome our prince did beare a great good will,
Because in wrestling and in pastorall
He farre did passe the rest of shepheards all.*

*And therefore he a courtier was benamed,
And as a courtier was with cheere receined,
(For they haue tongues to make a poore man blamed,
If he to them his dutie misconceined)
And for this Courtier should well like his table,
The goodman bad his wife be seruiceable.*

*And so she was, and all with good intent,
But fewe dayes past while she good maner vsde,
But that her husband thought her seruice bent
To such an end as he might be abuse.
Yet like a coward fearing strangers pride,
He made the simple wench his wrath abide.*

*VVith chumpish lookes, hard words, and secret nips,
Grumbling at her when she his kindnesse sought,
Asking her how she tasted Courtiers lips,
He forst her thinke that which she neuer thought.
In fine he made her gesse, there was some sweet,
In that which he so fear'd that she should meet.*

*VVhen once this entred was, in womans hart,
And that it had enflam'd a new desire,
There rested then, to play a womans part,
Fuell to seeke and not to quench the fire:
But (for his iealous eye she well did finde)
She studied cunning how the same to blinde.*

*And thus she did. One day to him she came,
And (though against his will) on him she leand,
And out gan cry, ah well away for shame,
If you helpe not our wedlocke will be staine,
The goodman starting, asks what did her moue?
She sigh'd and saide, the bad guest sought her loue.*

*He little looking that she should complaine
Of that, whereto he feard she was encline,
Busing her oft, and in his hart full faine,
He did demaund what remedy to finde,
How they might get that guest, from them to wend,
And yet the prince (that lou'd him) not offend.*

Husband, quoth she, go to him by and by,

And

And tell him you do find I do him loue:
 And therefore pray him that of curtesie
 He will absent himselfe, least he should moue
 A young girles heart, to that were shame for both,
 Whereto you know, his honest heart were loath.

Thus shall you shew that him you do not doubt,
 And as for me (sweet husband) I must beare.
 Glad was the man when he had heard her out,
 And did the same, although with mickle feare.
 For feare he did, least he the young man might
 In choller put, with whom he would not fight.

The Courtlie Shepheard much agast at this,
 Not seeing earst such token in the wife,
 Though full of scorne, would not his dutie misse,
 Knowing that euill becomes a household strife,
 Did go his way, but sojourn'd neare thereby,
 That yet the ground hereof he might espie.

The wife thus hauing settled husbands braine,
 Who would haue sworne his spouse Diana was,
 Watched when she a further point might gaine,
 Which little time did fitly bring to passe.
 For to the Court her man was call'd by name.
 Whither he needs must go for feare of blame.

Three dayes before that he must sure depart,
 She written had (but in a hand disguise)
 A letter such, which might from either part
 Seeme to proceed, so well it was deuise.
 She seald it first, then she the sealing brake,
 And to her iealous husband did it take.

With weeping eyes (her eyes she taught to weepe)
 She tolde him that the Courtier had it sent:
 Alas (quoth she) thus womens shame doth creepe.
 The Goodman read on both sides the content,
 It title had, Vnto my onely Loue:
 Subscription was, Yours most, if you will proue.

The pistle selfe such kind of words it had,
 My sweetest ioy, the comfort of my sprite,
 So may thy flockes increase thy deare heart glad,
 So may each thing, euen as thou wishest light,
 As thou wilt deigne to reade, and gently reed
 This mourning incke, in which my heart doth bleed.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Long haue I lou'd (alas thou worthy art)
 Long haue I lou'd, (alas loue craueth loue)
 Long haue I lou'd thy selfe, alas my heart
 Doth breake, now tongue vnto thy name doth mone,
 And thinke not that thy answer answer is,
 But that it is my doome of bale or blisse.

5

The iealous wretch must now to Court be gone:
 Ne can he faile, for Prince hath for him sent:
 Now is the time we may be here alone,
 And giue a long desire a sweet content.
 Thus shall you both reward a louer true,
 And eke reuenge his wrong suspecting you.

10

And this was all, and this the husband read
 With chafe enough, till she him pacified:
 Desiring, that no grieffe in him he bread,
 Now that he had her words so trulie tried:
 But that he would, to him the letter show,
 That with his fault he might her goodnesse know.

15

20

That straight was done with many a boystrous threat,
 That to the King he would his sinne declare,
 But now the Courtier gan to smell the feat,
 And with some words which shewed little care,
 He staid untill the goodman was departed,
 Then gaue he him the blow which neuer smarted.

25

Thus may you see, the iealous wretch was made
 The Pandar of the thing he most did feare,
 Take heede therefore, how you ensue that trade,
 Least the same markes of iealousie you beare.
 For sure, no iealousie can that preuent,
 Whereto two parties once be full content.

30

Behold, said *Pas*, a whole dicker of wit: he hath pickt out such a tale with intention to keepe a husband from iealousie, which were enough to make a sanctified husband iealous, to see subtilties so much in the feminine gender. But, said he, I will strike *Nico* dead, with the wise words shall flow out of my gorge. And without further entreatie thus sang:

35

40

Who doth desire that chaste his wife should be,
 First be he true, for truth doth truth deserue:
 Then such be he, as she his worth may see,
 And one man still credit with her preserue.

45

Not toying kinde, nor causeleslie unkinde,
 Not stirring thoughts, nor yet denying right,

Not

*Not spying faults, nor in plaine errors blind,
Neuer hard hand, nor euer raines too light.*

*As farre from want, as farre from vaine expence,
(The one doth force, the latter doth entice)
Allow good companie, but keepe from thence
All filthy mouthes that glory in their vice.
This done, thou hast no more, but leaue the rest
To vertue, fortune, time and womans brest.*

Well cōcluded, said *Nico*, whē he hath done all, he leaues the matter to his wifes discretion. Now whenſouer thou marieſt, let her discretion decke thy head with *Aetons* ornament, *Pas* was ſo angriē with his wiſh, being indeed towards mariage, that they might perchance haue fallen to buffets, but that *Dicus* deſired *Philifides* (who as a ſtranger ſate among them, reuoluing in his mind all the tempeſts of euill fortunes he had paſſed) that he would do ſo much grace to the company, as to ſing one of his countrie ſongs. *Philifides* knowing it no good maners to be ſqueamiſh of his coming, hauing put himſelf in their company, without further ſtudy began to vtter that, wherewith his thoughts were then (as alwaies) moſt buſied: and to ſhew what a ſtranger he was to himſelfe, ſpake of himſelfe as of a third perſon, in this ſort:

THe lad *Philifides*
Lay by a riuers ſide,
In ſlowrie ſiela a gladder eye to pleaſe:
His pipe was at his foot,
His lambes were him beſides,
A widow turtle neare on bared rooſt
Sate wayling without boot.
Each thing both ſweet and ſad
Did draw his boyling braine
To thinke, and thinke with paine
Of *Miras* beames eclipt by abſence bad.
And thus, with eyes made dimme
With teares, he ſaid, or ſorrow ſaid for him:
O earth, once answer giue,
So may thy ſtately grace
By North, or South ſtill rich adorned lie,
So *Mira* long may be
On thy then bleſſed face,
Whoe foot doth ſet a heau'n on curſed thee,
I aſke, now answer me.
If th'author of thy bliſſe
Phœbus, that ſhepherd high
Do turne from thee his eye,
Doth not thy ſelfe, when he long abſent is,
Like rogue, all ragged go,
And pine away with daylie waſting woe?
Tell me you vvanſon brooke,

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

So may your sliding race
 Shun loathed-louing bankes with cunning crooke?
 So in you euer new
 Mira may looke her face,
 And make you faire wth shadow of her hue:
 So w^{hen} to pay your due
 To mother sea you come,
 She chide you not for stay,
 Nor beat you for your play,
 Tell me if your diuerted springs become
 Absented quite from you,
 Are you not dried? Can you your selues renew?
 Tell me you flowers faire
 Cowslip and Columbine,
 So may your Make this wholsome spring time aire
 Wth you embraced lie,
 And lately thence vntwine:
 But with dew drops engender children bie:
 So may you neuer aie,
 But pull'd by Miras hand,
 Dresse to some hers, or head,
 Or scatter on her bed.
 Tell me, if husband spring time leaue your land,
 W^{hen} he from you is sent,
 W^{ither} not you, languisht with discontent?
 Tell me, my silly pipe,
 So may thee still betide
 A cleane cloth thy moistnesse for to wipe:
 So may the cherries red
 Of Miras lips deuide
 Their sugred selues to kisse thy happie head:
 So may her eares be led,
 Her eares where Musike lines,
 To heare, and not despise
 Thy liri-bliring cries,
 Tell, if that breath, which thee thy sounding gines,
 Be absent farre from thee,
 Absent alone canst thou then piping be?
 Tell me my lambe of gold,
 So maist thou long abide
 The day well fed, the night in faithfull folde:
 So grow thy w^{ool}l of note,
 In time that richlie dy'd
 It may be part of Miras peticote,
 Tell me, if w^{olues} the throte
 Haue caught of thy deare damme,
 Or she from thee be stayd,
 Or thou from her be strayd,

canst

Canst thou, poore lambe, become anothers lamme?
 Or rather till thou die
 Still for thy Dam with bea-waymenting crie?
 Tell me ò Turtle true,
 So may no fortune breed
 To make thee nor thy better-loued rue:
 So may thy blessings swarme
 That Mira may thee feede
 With hand & mouth; with lap & breast keep warme,
 Tell me if greedy arme,
 Do fondly take away
 With traitour lime the one,
 The other left alone:
 Tell me poore wretch, parted from wretched pray
 Disdaine not you the Greene,
 Wayling till death shun you not to be seene?
 Earth, brooke, flowrs, pipe, lambe, Done
 Say all, & I with them,
 Absence is death, or worse, to them that loue.
 So I unlucky lad
 Whom hilles from her do hemme,
 What fits me now but teares, & sighings sad?
 O fortune too too bad,
 I rather would my sheepe
 Thadst killed with a stroke,
 Burnt Caban lost my cloke,
 Then want one hower those eyes which my ioyes keepe.
 Oh! what doth wailing winne?
 Speech without end were better not beginne.
 My song climbe thou the wind,
 Which holland sweet now gently sendeth in,
 That on his wings the leauell thou maist find
 To hit, but Kissing his
 Her ear's the weights of wit.
 If thou know not for whom thy Maister dies,
 These markes shall make thee wise:
 She is the heardeesse faire that shines in darke,
 And giues her kids no food, but willow's barke.
 This said, at length he ended
 His oft sigh-broken dittie,
 Then raise, but raise no legs: which faintnesse bended,
 With skinne in sorow died,
 With face the plot of pitie,
 With thoughts which thoughts their own tormētors tried.
 He rase, & streight espied
 His Ramme, who to recouer
 The Ewe another loued,
 With him prond battell proued.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*He envied such a death in sight of Iouer,
And alwayes westward eying,
More envied Phœbus for his westerne flying.*

The whole companie would gladlie haue taken this occasion of requesting *Philisides* in plainer sort to discouer vnto them his estate. Which he willing to preuent (as knowing the relation thereof more fit for funerals then the time of a mariage) began to sing this song he had learned before he had euer subiected his thoughts to acknowledge no Maister, but a Mistresse.

*AS I my little flocke on Ister banke
(A litle flocke; but well my pipe the couth)
Did piping leade, the Sunne alreadie sanke
Beyond our world, and ere I got my booth,
Each thing with mantle blacke the night doth scoth;
Sauing the glow worrie, which would courteous be
Of that small light oft watching shepheards see.*

*The welkin had full niggardly enclosed
In coffer of dimme clowds his siluer groates,
Icleepd starres; each thing to rest disposed,
The caues were full, the mountaines void of goates:
The birds eyes closd closed their chirping notes.
As for the Nightingale wood-musikes King,
It August was, he daind not then to sing.*

*Amid my sheepe, though I saw nought to feare,
Yet (for I nothing saw) I feared sore;
Then found I which thing is a charge to beare,
As for my sheepe I dradded mickle more
Then euer for my selfe since I was bore.
I sate me do:rne: for see to go we could,
And sang vnto my sheepe least stray they should.*

*The song I sang old Lanquet had me taught,
Lanquet, the shepheard best swift Ister knew,
For clearkly reed, and hating vvhhat is naught,
For faithful heart, cleane hands, and mouth as true:
With his sweet skill my skilleffe youth he drew,
To haue a feeling taste of him that sits
Beyond the heauen, far more beyond your wits.*

*He said, the Musike best thilke powers pleasd
Vvas iumpe concord betweene our wit and will:
VWhere highest notes to godlinesse are raisd,
And lowest sinke not downe to iote of ill:
VWith old true tales he wont mine eares to fill,
How shepheards did of yore, how now they thrive,
Spoiling*

Spoiling their flock, or while twixt them they strine.
 He liked me, but pitied lustfull youth:
 His good strong staffe my slippry yeares upbore:
 He still hop'd well because he loued truth;
 Till forste to part, with heart and eyes euen sore,
 To worthy Coriden he gaue me ore,
 But thus in okes true shade recounted he,
 VVhich now in nights deepe shade sheep heard of me.

Such maner time there was (what time I n'ot)
 VVhen all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours
 VVas onely won'd with such as beasts begot:
 Vnknowne as then were they that builded towers:
 The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers
 Might freely rome, or rest, as seemed them:
 Man was not man their dwellings into hem.

The beastes had sure some beastly policie:
 For nothing can endure where order n'is.
 For once the Lion by the Lambe did lie.
 The fearefull Hinde the Leopard did kisse:
 Hurles was Tygers pawe and Serpents hisse.
 This thinke I well, the beast with courage clad,
 Like Senators a harmelesse empire had.

At which whether the others did repine,
 (For enuie harbreth most in feeblest heart)
 Or that they all to changing did incline,
 (As euen in beasts their dammes leane changing parts)
 The multitude to Ioue a suite imparts,
 VVith neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,
 Roring, and howling for to haue a King,

A King, in language theirs they said they would:
 (For then their language was a perfect speech)
 The birdes likewise with chirps, and puing could
 Cackling, and chattering, that of Ioue beseech.
 Onely the owle still warnd them not to seech
 So hastily that which they would repent:
 But saw they would, and he to deserts went.

Ioue wisely said (for wisdom wisely sayes)
 O beasts, take heed what you of me desire.
 Rulers will thinke all things made them to please,
 And soone forget the swinke due to their hire,
 But since you will, part of my heau'nly fire
 I will you lende; the rest your selues must giue,
 That it both seeme and felt may with you liue.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

Full glad they were and tooke the naked sprite,
 Which straight the Earth yeloathed in his clay:
 The Lion, hart; the Ounce gaue a fine might;
 The Horse, good shape; the Sparrow, lust to play;
 Nightingale, voice, entising songs to say,
 Elephant gaue a perfect memorie:
 And Parot, ready tongue, that to applie.

5

The Foxe gaue craft; the Dog gaue flatterie;
 Asse, patience; the Mole, a working thought;
 Eagle, high looke; Wolfe secret crueltie:
 Monkie sweet breath; the Cow, her faire eyes brought;
 The Ermion, whitest skinne, spotted with nought;
 The sheepe, mild-seeming face; climbing, the Beare;
 The Stagge did giue the harme-eschewing feare.

15

The Hare, her sleights; the Cat, his melancholy;
 Ante, industrie; and Connie, skill to build;
 Cranes, order; Storkes, to be appearing holie;
 Camaleon, ease to change; Ducke, ease to yeeld;
 Crocodile, teares, which might be falsely spild:
 Ape great thing gaue, though he did mowing stand,
 The instrument of instruments, the hand.

20

Each other beast likewise his present brings:
 And (but they drad their Prince they ought should want)
 They all consented were to giue him wings;
 And ay more awe towards him for to plant,
 To their owne worke this priuiledge they grant,
 That from thenceforth to all eternitie,
 No beast should freely speake, but onely he.

25

Thus Man was made; thus Man their Lord became:
 Who at the first, wanting, or hiding pride,
 He did to beasts best vse his cunning frame;
 With water drinke, herbs meat, and naked hide.
 And fellow-like let his dominion slide;
 Not in his sayings saying I, but we:
 As if he meant his Lordship common be.

35

40

But when his seate so rooted he had found,
 That they now skilld not, how from him to wend;
 Then gan in guilelesse earth full many a wound,
 Iron to seeke, which gainst it selfe should bend,
 To teare the bowels, that good corne should send.
 But yet the common Damme none did becomone;
 Because (though hurt) they neuer hard her grone.

45

Then

Then gan the factions in the beasts to breed;
 VVhere helping weaker sort, the nobler beasts,
 (As Tygers, Leopards, Beares and Lions seed)
 Disdaind with this, in deserts sought their restes;
 VVhere famine rauine taught their hungrie chests,
 That craftily he forst them to do ill,
 VVhich being done he afterwards would kill.

For muthers done, which neuer erst was seene,
 By those great beasts, as for the weakers good,
 He chose themselves his guarders for to beene,
 Gainst those of might, of whom in feare they stood,
 As horse and dogge, not great, but gentle blood:
 Blith were the commons castell of the field,
 Tho when they saw their foen of greatnesse kild.

But they or spent, or made of slender might,
 Then quickly did the meaner cattell find,
 The great beames gone, the house on shoulders light:
 For by and by the horse faire bits did bind:
 The dogge was in a collar taught his kind.
 As for the gentle birds like case might rewe
 VVhen falcon they, and gossehaue saw in mew,

VVorst fell to smallest birds, and meanest heard,
 VVhome now his owne, full like his owne he used.
 Yet first but wood, or feathers off he teard:
 And when they were well vs'de to be abused,
 For hungrie teeth their flesh with teeth he brus'd:
 At length for glutton taste he did them kill:
 At last for sport their sillie limes did spill.

But yet ò man, rage not beyond thy neede:
 Deeme it no glorie to swell in tyrannie.
 Thou art of blood; ioy not to see things bleede:
 Thou fearest death; thinke they are loth to die.
 A plaint of guiltlesse hurt doth pierce the skie.
 And you poore beasts, in patience bide your hell,
 Or know your strengths, and then you shall do well.

Thus did I sing, and pipe eight sullen houres
 To sheepe, whom loue, not knowledge, made to heare,
 Now fancies fits, now fortunes balefull stowers:
 But then I homewards call'd my lambkins deare:
 For to my dimmed eyes began t'appeare
 The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,
 Sure shepheards signe, that morne should soone fetch day.

According to the nature of diuerse eares, diuerse iudgements streight followed: some praising his voice, others his words fit to frame a pastorall stile, others the strangeness of the tale, and scanning what he should meane by it. But old *Geron* (who had borne him a grudge euer since in one of their Eclogues he had taken him vp ouer-bitterly) tooke hold of this occasion to make his reuenge, & said, He neuer saw thing worse proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knew not what beastes at such a sport-meeting, when rather some song of loue, or matter for ioyful melody was to be brought forth. But said he, This is the right conceipt of young men, who thinke, then they speake wiseliest, when they cannot vnderstand themselues. But little did the melancholike shepheard regard either his dispraises, or the others praises, who had set the foundation of his honour there, where he was most despised. And therefore he returning againe to the traine of his desolate pensiuenesse, *Geron* inuited *Histor* to answer him in Eclogue-wise; who indeed hauing bene long in loue with the faire *Kala*, and now by *Lalus* ouergone; was growne into a detestation of mariage. But thus it was.

Geron. Histor.

Geron. *I* N faith good *Histor*, long is your delay,
From holy mariage sweete and surest meane:
Our foolish lust in honest rules to stay,
I pray thee do so *Lalus* sample leane:
Thou seest, how friske, and iolly now he is,
That last day seem'd, he could not chew a beane.
Beloeue me man, there is no greater blisse,
Then is the quiet ioy of louing wise;
Which who so wants, halfe of himselfe doth misse:
Friend without change, playfellow without strife,
Foode without fulnesse, counsaile without pride,
Is this sweet doubling of our single life.

Histor. No doubt to whom so good chance did betide,
As for to finde a pasture strawed with gold,
He were a foole, if there he did not bide.
Who would not haue a Phoenix if he could?
The humming Waspe, if it had not a sting,
Before all flies the waspe accept I would.
But this bad world, few golden fields doth bring,
Phoenix but one, of Crowes we millions hate.
The Waspe seemes gay, but is a combrous thing.
If many *Kalaes* our *Arcadia* gane,
Lalus example I would soone ensue,
And thinke, I did my selfe from sorrow saue.
But of such wines we finde a slender crew,
Shrewdnesse so stirres, pride so puffes vp the heart,
They seldome ponder what to them is due.
With meager lookes, as if they still did smart;
Fuling, and whimpring, or else scolding flat,
Make home more paine then following of the cart.
Either dull silence, or eternall chat;
Still contrarie to what her husband sayes;

If he do praise the dog, she likes the cat.

*Austere she is, when he would honest playes;
And gamesome then, when he thinks on his sheepe;
Shee bids him goe, and yet from iorney staves,
She warre doth euer with his kinsfolke keepe,
And makes them fremb'd, who friends by nature are,
Enuying shallow toyes with malice deepe,*

*And if forsooth there come some new found ware,
The little coine his sweating browes haue got,
Must goe for that, if for her lowres he care:*

*Orels; Nay faith, mine is the lucklest lot,
That euer fell to honest woman yet:*

No wife but I hath such a man, God wot,

*Such is their speech, who be of sober wit;
But, who do let their tongues shew well their rage,
Lord, what bywords they speake, what spite they spit?*

*The house is made a very lothsome cage,
VVherein the birde doth neuer sing but cry,
VVith such a will as nothing can assuage.*

*Deerely the seruants do their wages buy,
Reuil'd for ech small fault, sometimes for none:
They better liue that in a gaile do lie.*

*Let other fowler spots away be blowne;
For I seeke not their shame, but still me thinkes,
A better life it is to lie alone.*

*Geron. VVho for ech sickle feare from vertue shrinks,
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:*

No mortall man the cuppe of suretie drinks.

*The heauens do not good haps in handfuls bring,
But let vs pike our good from out much bad:
That still our little world may know his king.*

*But certainly so long we may be glad,
VVhile that we doo what nature doth require,
And for thieuent we neuer ought be sad.*

*Man oft is plagu'd with aire, is burnt with fire,
In water drownd, in earth his buriall is;
And shall we not therefore their vse desire?*

*Nature aboue all things requirerh this,
That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;
VVhich drawne-out line doth hold all humane blisse*

*Thy father iustly may of thee complaine,
If thou do not repay his deedes for thee,
In granting vnto him a grandsires gaine.*

*Thy common-welth may rightly griued be,
VVhich must by this immortall be preserued,
If thus thou murder thy posteritie,*

His very being he hath not deserued,

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*Who for a selfe-concept will that forbear,
Whereby that being aye must be conserued.*

*And God forbid, women such cattell were,
As you paint them: but well in you I finde,
No man doth speake aright, who speakes in feare.*

*Whoonely sees the ill is worse then blind.
These fiftie winters married haue I beene;
And yet finde no such faultes in womankind.*

*I haue a wife worthie to be a Queene,
So well she can command, and yet obay;
In ruling of a house so well shee's seene.*

*And yet in all this time betwixt vs tway,
We beare our double yoke with such consent,
That neuer past foule word, I dare well say,*

*But these be your loue-toyes, which still are spent
In lawlesse games, and loue not as you should,
But with much studie learne late to repent.*

*How well last day before our Prince you could
Blinde Cupids workes with wonder testifie?
Yet now the roote of him abase you would.*

*Goe to, goe to, and Cupid now applie,
To that where thou thy Cupid maist auowe,
And thou shalt finde, in women vertues lie.*

*Sweet supple mindes which soone to wisdom bow
Where they by wisdomes rule directed are,
And are not forst fond thraldome to allow.*

*As we to get are fram'd, so they to spare:
We made for paine, our paines they made to cherish:
We care abroad, and they of home haue care.*

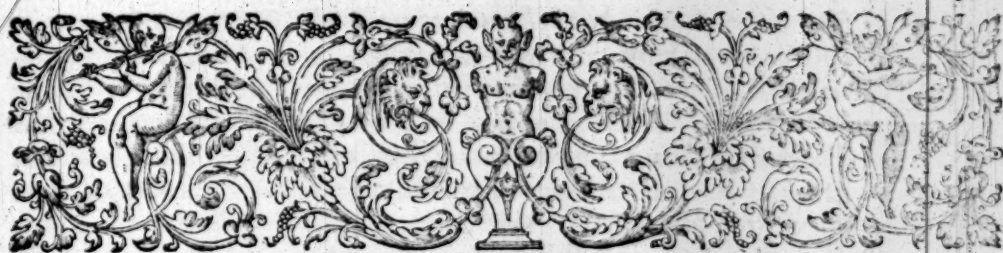
*O Hiltor, seeke within thy selfe to florish:
Thy house by thee must liue, or els be gone:
And then who shall the name of Hiltor nourish?*

*Riches of children passe a Princes throne,
Which touch the fathers hart with secret ioy,
When without shame he saith, these be mine owne.*

*Marrie therefore; for marriage will destroy
Those passions which to youthfull head doo clime,
Mothers and Nurses of all vaine annoy.*

He spake these words with such affection, as a curious eye might easily haue perceived he liked *Thyrsis* fortune better then he loued his person. But then indeed did all arise, and went to the women, where spending all the day, and good part of the night in dauncing, carolling and wassalling, lastly, they left *Thyrsis*, where he long desired to be left, and with many vnfaired thanks returned euerie man to his home. But some of the hauing to crosse the way of the two Lodges, might see a Lady making dolefull lamentations ouer a bodie which seemed dead vnto them. But me thinks *Damet* as cries vnto me, if I come not the sooner to comfort him, he will leaue of his golden worke, that hath already cost him so much labour and longing.

The end of the third Booke.



THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF THE
COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA.

(.)

He almighty wisdome euermore delighting to shew the world,
that by vnlikeliest meanes greatest matters may come to con-
clusion: that humane reason may be the more humbled, and
more willingly giue place to diuine prouidence: as at the first it
brought in *Dametas* to play a part in this royall pageant, so ha-
uing cōtinued him stil an actor, now that all things were grown
ripe for an end, made his folly the instrument of reuealing thar,
which farre greater cunning had sought to conceale. For so it fell out that *Dametas*
hauing spent the whole day in breaking vp the cumbersome worke of the Pastor
Dorus, and feeling in all his labour no paine so much, as that his hungrie hopes re-
ceiued anie stay, hauing with the price of much sweat and wearinesse gotten vp the
huge stone, which he thought should haue such a golden lining, the good man
in the great bed that stone had made, found nothing but these two verses, written
vpon a broad peece of velume:

*who hath his hire, hath well his labour plapt:
Earth thou diast seeke, and store of earth thou hast.*

What an inward discountenance it was to maister *Dametas*, to find his hope of
wealth turned to poore verses, for which he neuer cared much, nothing can describe
but either the feeling in ones selfe the state of such a mind *Dametas* had, or at least
the bethinking what was *Midas* fancie, when after the great pride he conceiued to
be made Iudge betweene Gods, he was rewarded with the ornament of an Asses
eares. Yet the deepe apprehension he had receiued of such riches, could not so so-
dainlie loose the colour that had so thoroughly died his thicke braine, but that he tur-
ned & tossed the poore bowels of the innocent earth, till the comming on of the
night, and the tediousnesse of his fruitlesse labour made him content rather to exer-
cise his discontentation at home then there. But forced he was (his horse being o-
therwise burthened with digging instruments) to returne as he came, most part of
the way on foot: with such grudging lamentations as a nobler mind would (but
more noblie) make for the losse of his mistresse. For so far had he fed his foolish
soule with the expectatiō of that which he reputed felicitie, that he no lesse accoun-
ted himselfe miserable, then if he had fallen from such an estate his fancie had

embraced. So then home againe went *Dametas*, punished in conceite, as in conceite he had erred, till he found himselfe there from a fancied losse false to essentiall miserie. For entring into his house three houres within night, in steede of the lightsome countenance of *Pamela*, which gaue such an inwarde decking to that Lodge, as proudest pallaces might haue cause to enuie it; and of the gratefull conuersation of *Dorus*, whose wittie behauiour made that lonelinessse to seeme full of good company: in steede of the loud scolding of *Miso*, and the busie rumbling vp and downe of *Mopsa*, which though they were so short, as quite contrarie to the others praise-worthinesse, yet were they farre before them in filling of a house: he found nothing but a solitarie darknesse: which as naturally it breedes a kinde of irksome gastfulnessse, so it was to him a most present terrour, remēbring the charge he had left behind, which he well knew imported no lesse then his life vnto him. Therefore lighting a candle, there was no place a mouse could haue dwelled in, but that he with quaking diligence sought into. But when he saw he could see nothing of that he most cared for, then became he the right paterne of a wretch deiected with feare: for crying & howling, knocking his head to the wall he began to make pitiful cōplaints, where no body could heare him: & (with too much dread he should not recover her) leaue all cōsideratiō how to recouer her. But at length looking like a shee goat, when she casts her kid, for verie sorow he tooke in his own behalf, out of the Lodge he wēt running as hard as he could, hauing now receiued the verie forme of hanging into his consideration. Thus running as a man would gladly haue run frō himself, it was his foolish fortune to espie, by the glimmering light the moone did then yeeld him, one standing aloft amōg the boughs of a faire Ash. He that would haue asked cōfisel at that time of a dog, cast vp his face, as if his tooth had bin drawing: and with much bending his sight, perceiued it was mistresse *Mopsa*, sitly seated there for wit & dignitie. There (I will not say with ioy, for how could he taste of ioy, whose imagination was fallen frō a pallace to a gallows?) But yet with some refreshing of comfort, in hope he should learne better tidings: of her he began to crie out; O *Mopsa*, my beloued chicken, here am I thine owne father *Dametas*, neuer in such a towardnesse of hanging, if thou canst not helpe mee. But neuer a word could his eloquence procure of *Mopsa*, who indeed was there attending for greater matters. This was yet a new burthen to poore *Dametas*, who thought all the world was conspired against him: and therefore with a silly choler he began another tune. Thou vile *Mopsa*, said he, now the vengeance of my fatherly curse light ouerthwart thee, if thou do not straight answer me. But neither blessing nor cursing could preuaile. *Mopsa*, who was now great with child with the expectation of her May-game hopes, and did long to be deliuered with the third time being named. Which by and by followed. For *Dametas* rubbing his elbow, stamping & whining, seeing neither of these take place, began to throw stones at her, and withall to coniure her by the name of hellish *Mopsa*. But when he had named her the third time, no chime can more so dainly follow the striking of a clocke, then she, verily thinking it was the God, that vsed her fathers voyce, throwing her armes abroad, and not considering she was muffled vpon so high a tree, came fluttring downe like a hooded hawke; like enough to haue broken her necke, but that the tree full of boughes tossed her frō one bough to another, and lastly well bruised brought her to receiue an vnfriendly salutation of the earth. *Dametas*, as soone as she was downe, came running to her, and finding her so close wrapt, pulled off the scarlet cloake: in good time for her, for with the forenesse of the fall, if she had not had breath giuen her, she had deliuered a foolish soule

foule to *Pluto*. But then *Dametas* began a fresh to desire his daughter not to forget
 the paines he had taken for her in her childhood (which he was sure she could not
 remember) and to tell him where *Pamela* was. O good *Apollo*, said *Mopsa*, if euer
 thou didst beare loue to *Phaetons* mother, let me haue a king to my husband. Alas,
 5 what speakest thou of *Phaeton*, said *Dametas*? If by thy circumspect meanes I find
 not out *Pamela*, thy father will be hanged to morow. It is no matter though he be
 hanged, answered *Mopsa*: do but thou make *Dorus* a king, and let him be my hus-
 band, good *Apollo*, for my courage doth much pricke me toward him. Ah *Mopsa*,
 cried out *Dametas*, where is thy wit? Dost thou not know thy father? How hast thou
 10 forgotten thy selfe? I do not aske wit of thee; mine owne God, (sayd she) but I see
 thou wouldest haue me remember my father, and indeed forget my selfe. No,
 no, a good husband. Thou shalt haue thy fill of husbands (said *Dametas*) and do
 but answer me my question. O I thanke thee (said *Mopsa*) with all my heart har-
 rilie; but let them be all kings. *Dametas* seeing no other way preuayle, fell downe
 15 on his knees, *Mopsa*, *Mopsa*, (said he) do not thus cruelly torment me: I am alrea-
 die wretched enough, alas either helpe me, or tell me thou canst not. She that
 would not be behind *Apollo* in curtesie, kneeled downe on the other side, I will ne-
 uer leaue tormenting thee (said *Mopsa*) vntill thou hast satisfied my longing, but I
 will proclaime thee a promise-breaker, that euen *Jupiter* shall heare it. Now by the
 20 fostering thou hast receiued in this place saue my life (said *Dametas*.) Now by the
 faire *Ash* (answered *Mopsa*) where thou didst receiue so great a good turne, graunt
 post haste to my burning fancie. O where is *Pamela*, said *Dametas*? O a lustie hus-
 band, said *Mopsa*. *Dametas* that now verilie assured himselfe, his daughter was mad,
 began vtterly to despaire of his life, and therefore amazedlie catching her in his
 25 armes, to see whether he could bring her to her selfe, he might feele the waight of
 a great cudgell light vpon his shoulders, and for the first greeting he knew his wife
*Miso*s voice, by the calling him ribalde villaine, and asking him whether she
 could not serue his turne as well as *Charita*? For *Miso* hauing according to *Dorus*
 counsell, gone to *Mantineia*, and there harboured her selfe in an old acquaintance
 30 house of hers, as soone as ten of the clocke was stricken (where she had remayned
 closely all that while, I thinke with such an amiable cheare, as when ieaious *Iuno*
 fate crosse-legged, to hinder the child-birth of her husbands loue) with open mouth
 she went to the Magistrate appointed ouer such matters, and there with the most
 scolding inuectiue, her rage rather then eloquence could bring forth, she requi-
 35 red his ayde to take *Dametas*, who had left his dutie to the king and his daughter, to
 commit adulterie in the house of *Charitas* vncke, in the Oudemian streete. But nei-
 ther was the name of *Charita* remembred, nor any such street knowne. Yet such was
 the generall mislike all men had of *Dametas* vnworthy aduancement, that euerie
 man was glad to make himselfe a minister of that, which might redound to his
 40 shame, and therefore with *Panike* cries & laughers, there was no suspected place in
 all the citie but was searched for vnder the title of *Dametas*; *Miso* euer formost en-
 couraging them with all the shamefull blasings of his demeanour, encreasing the
 sport of hunting her husband, with her diligent barking, till at length hauing alrea-
 die done both him and her selfe as much infamous shame, as such a tongue in such
 45 an action might performe, in the end not being able to find a thing that was not, to
 her mare again she went, hauing neither suspitiō nor rage any thing mitigated. But
 (leauing behind her a sufficient comedie of her tragicall fancies) away homeward
 she came, imputing the not finding her husband, to any chaunce rather then to his

innocencie. For her heart being apt to receive and nourish a bitter thought, it had so swallowed vp a determinate condemnation, that in the verie anatomic of her spirits one should haue found nothing but diuellish disdain, and hatefull ieaiousie. In this sort grunting out her mischieuous spite, she came by the tree, euen as *Dametas* was making that ill-vnderstood intercession to his foolish *Mopsa*. As soone as she hard her husbands voyce, she verily thought she had her play: and therfore stealing from her mare as softlie as she could, she came creeping and halting behind him, euen as he thinking his daughters litle wits had quite left her great nowle; began to take her in his armes; thinking perchance her feeling sence might call her mind-parts vnto her. But *Miso* who saw nothing but thorough the colour of reuengefull anger, established vpon the fore-iudgement of his trespassse, vndoubtedlie resolving that *Mopsa* was *Charita*, *Dorus* had told her of, mumping out her hoarse chafe, she gaue him the wooden salutation you heard of. *Dametas* that was not so sensible in any thing as in blowes, turned vp his blubbered face like a great lowt new whipt: Alas thou woman, said he, what hath thy poore husband deserued to haue his owne ill lucke loaden with thy displeasure? *Pamela* is lost, *Pamela* is lost. *Miso* still holding on the course of her former fancie, what tellest thou me naughtie varlet of *Pamela*, doest thou thinke that doth answer me, for abusing the lawes of mariage? Haue I brought thee children, haue I bene a true wife vnto thee, to be despised in mine old age? And euer among she would sauce her speeches with such Baltonados, that poore *Dametas* began now to thinke, that either a generall madding was false, or else that all this was but a vision. But as for visions the smart of the cudgell put out of his fancie: and therefore againe turning to his wife, not knowing in the world what she meant, *Miso* (said he) hereafter thou maist examine me, do but now tell me what is become of *Pamela*. I will first examine this drab, said she, and withall let fall her staffe as hard as she could vpon *Mopsa*, still taking her for *Charita*. But *Mopsa* that was already angrie, thinking that she had hindred her from *Apollo*, leapt vp and caught her by the throate, like to haue strangled her, but that *Dametas* from a condemned man was faine to become a iudge and part this fray, such a picture of a rude discord, where each was out with the other two. And then getting the oportunitie of their falling out to hold himselfe in suretie, who was indeed the veriest coward of the three, he renewed his earnest demaund of them. But it was a sport to see, how the former conceits *Dorus* had printed in their imaginations, kept still such dominion in them, that *Miso* though now she found and felt it was her daughter *Mopsa*, yet did *Charita* continually passe through her thoughts, which she vttered with such crabbed questions to *Dametas*, that he not possible conceiuing any part of her doubt, remained astonished, and the astonishment encreased her doubt. And as for *Mopsa*, as first she did assuredly take him to be *Apollo*, and thought her mothers comming did mar the bargain: so now much talking to & fro had deliuered so much light into the mysty mould of her capacity, as to know him to be her father. Yet remained there such footsteps of the foretaken opinion, that she thought verilie her father and mother were hasted thither to get the first wish. And therefore to whatsoeuer they asked of her, she would neuer answer, but embracing the tree, as if she feared it had bene running away, nay, sayes she, I will haue the first wish, for I was here first: which they vnderstood no more, then *Dametas* did what *Miso* meant by *Charita*: till at length with much vrging them, being indeed better able to perswade both, then to meet hand to hand with either, he preuailed so much with them, as to bring them into the Lodge to see what losse their

their negligence had suffered. Then indeed the neare neighbourhood they bare to themselves, made them leaue other toyes, & looke into what dangerous plight they were all faine, as soone as the king shold know his daughters escape. And as for the womē they began afresh to enter into their brawling, whether were in the fault.

- 5 But *Dametas* who did feare that among his other euils, the thunderbolt of that storme would fall vpon his shoulders, slipt away from them, but with so maigre a cheare as might much sooner engender laughter then pitie. O true *Arcadia*, would he say (tearing his haire and beard, and sometime for too much wo, making vnwel-
- 10 And you false-hearted trees, why would you make no noife, to make her vngracious departure knowne? Ah *Pamela*, *Pamela*, how often whē I brought thee in fine posies of all coloured flowers, wouldest thou clap me on the cheek, and say thou wouldest be one day euen with me? Was this thy meaning to bring me to an euen paire of gallows? Ah ill taught *Dorus*, that camest hither to learne good maners of me? Did
- 15 I euer teach thee to make thy maister sweat out his hart for nothing, & in the meane time to run away with thy mistresse? O my dun cow, I did thinke some euill was towards me euer since the last day thou didst run away from me, and held vp thy taile so pitifully: did not I see an Eagle kill a Cuckoe, which was a plaine foretoken vnto me *Pamela* should be my destruction? O wife *Miso* (if I durst say it to thy face) why
- 20 didst thou suspect thy husband, that loueth a peece of cheese better then a woman? And thou little *Mopsa*, that shalt inherite the shame of thy fathers death, was it time for thee to cline trees, which should so shortly be my best burial? O that I could liue without death, or die before I were aware! O hart, why hast thou no hands at commandeiment to dispatch thee? O hands why want you a heart to kill this villanie. In
- 25 this sort did he inuey against euery thing, sometimes thinking to run away, while it was yet night: but he that had included all the world within his sheepecote, thought that worse then any death: sometime for dread of hanging he meant to hang himselfe: finding as indeed it is, that feare is far more painefull to cowardise, then death to a true courage. But his fingers were nothing nimble in that action, & any thing
- 30 was let enough thereto, he being a true louer of himself without any riual. But lastlie, guided by a farre greater constellation then his owne, he remembred to search the other lodge, where it might be *Pamela* that night had retired her self. So thither with trembling hammes he caried himselfe, but employing his double key which the king for speciall credit had vnworthily bestowed vpon him, he found all the gates
- 35 sobarred, that his key could not preuaile, sauing onlie one trap doore which went downe into a vault by the celler, which as it was vnknowne of *Pyrocles*, so had he left it vnregarded. But *Dametas* that euer knew the Butterie better then any other place, got in that way, and passing softlie to *Philocleas* chamber, where he thought most likely to find *Pamela*, the doore being left open he entred in, and by the light of the
- 40 lampe he might discerne one on the bed by her: which he although he tooke to be *Pamela*, yet thinking no suretie enough in a matter touching his necke, hee went hard to the bed side of these vnfortunate louers, who at that time being not much before the breake of day (whether it were they were so diuinely surprised, to bring this whole matter to the destined conclusion, or that the vnresistable force of their
- 45 sorowes had ouerthrowne the wakefull vse of their senses) were as then possessed with a mutuall sleepe, yet not forgetting with vinie embracements, to giue any eye a perfect modell of affection. But *Dametas* looking with the lampe in his hand but neither with such a face nor mind vpon these excellent creatures, as *Psyche* did

vpon her vnknowne loue, and giuing euery way freedome to his fearfull eyes, did
 not onely perceiue it was *Zelmae*, and therefore much different from the Ladie he
 fought: but that this same *Zelmae* did more differ from the *Zelmae* he and others
 had euer taken her for, wherein the change of her apparell chieflie confirmed his o-
 pinion; satisfied with that, and not thinking it good to awake the sleeping Lyon, he
 went downe againe, taking with him *Pyrocles* sword (wherewith vpon his sleight
 vnderfute *Pyrocles* came only apparellled thither) being sure to leaue no weapon in
 the chamber, and so making the doore as fast as he could on the out side, hoping
 with the reuealing of this (as he thought greater fault) to make his owne the lesse,
 or at least that this iniurie would so fill the kings head, that he should not haue le-
 sure to chastise his negligence (like a foole not cōsidering that the more rage breeds
 the crueller punishment) he went first into the kings chamber, and not finding him
 there, he ran downe crying with open mouth, the king was betrayed, and that *Zel-
 mae* did abuse his daughter. The noise he made, being a man of no few words, ioy-
 ned to the yelping sound of *Miso*, and his vnpleasant inheritrix brought together
 some number of the shepheards, to whom he without any regard of reseruing it for
 the Kings knowledge, spattered out the bottome of his stomacke, swearing by him
 he neuer knew that *Zelmae*, whō they had taken all that while to be a woman, was
 as arrant a man as himselfe was, whereof he had seene sufficient signes and tokens;
 and that he was as close as a Butterflie with the Ladie *Philoclea*. The poore men ieal-
 ous of their Princes honour, were ready with weapons to haue entred the Lodge;
 standing yet in some pause, whether it were not best first to heare some newes from
 the king himselfe, when by the sodaine comming of other shepheards, which with
 astonished lookes ran from the one crie to the other, their griefes were furcharged
 with the euill tidings of the kings death. Turning therefore all their minds and eyes
 that way, they ranne to the Caue where they said he lay dead, the Sunne beginning
 now to send some promise of comming light, making haste, I thinke to be spectator
 of the following tragedies. For *Basilus* hauing past ouer the night more happie in
 contemplation then action, hauing had his spirits sublimed with the sweet imagi-
 nation of embracing the most desired *Zelmae*, doubting least the Caues darknesse
 might deceiue him in the dayes approach, thought it now season to returne to his
 wedlocke bed, remembring the promise he had made to *Zelmae*, to obserue due
 orders towards *Gynecia*. Therefore departing, but not departing without bequea-
 thing by a will of words, sealed with manie kisses, a full gift of all his loue and life
 to his misconceiued bedfellow, he went to the mouth of the caue, there to apparell
 himselfe; in which doing the motion of his ioy could not be bridled from vttering
 such like words: Blessed be thou, o night, said he, that hast with thy sweete wings
 shrowded me in the vale of blisse, it is thou that art the first gotten child of time,
 the day hath bin but an vsurper vpon thy delightful inheritance, thou inuitest all li-
 uing things to comfortable rest, thou art the stop of strife, and the necessarie
 truce of approaching battels. And therewith he sang these verses, to confirme his
 former praises.

O Night, the ease of care, the pledge of pleasure,
 Desires best meane, harnest of hearts affected,
 The seate of peace, the throne which is erected,
 Of humane life to be the quiet measure.

Be

*Be victor still of Phœbus golden treasure:
 VVho hath our sight with too much sight infected,
 VVhose light is cause we haue our lines neglected,
 Turning all natures course to selfe displeasure.*

*These stately starres in their now shining faces,
 VVish sinlesse sleepe, and silence wisdomes mother,
 VVitnesse his wrong which by thy helpe is eased:*

*Thou art therefore of these our desert places
 The sure refuge, by thee and by no other
 My soule is blist, sence ioyde, and fortune rayed.*

And yet farther would his ioyes needs breake forth. O *Basilus* (said he) the rest
 15 of thy time, hath bene but a dreame vnto thee: it is now onely thou beginnest to
 liue, now only thou hast entred into the way of blissefulnesse. Should fancie of ma-
 riage keepe me from this paradise? or opinion of I know not what promise bind me
 frō paying the right duties to nature & affection? O who would haue thought there
 could haue bene such difference betwixt women? Be iealous no more ô *Gynecia*,
 20 but yeeld to the preheminance of more excellent gifts, support thy self with such
 marble pillars as she doth, decke thy breast with those Alablaster bowles that *Zel-
 mane* doth: then accompanied with such a title, perhaps thou maist recouer the
 possession of my otherwise inclined loue. But alas *Gynecia*, thou canst not shew such
 euidence, therefore thy plea is vaine. *Gynecia* heard all this he said, who had cast a-
 25 bout her *Zelmanes* garmēt, wherein she came thither, & had followed *Basilus* to the
 Caues entrie, full of inward vexation, betwixt the deadlie accusation of her owne
 guiltinesse, and the spitefull doubt she had *Zelmane* had abused her. But because of
 the one side (finding the king did thinke her to be *Zelmane*, she had libertie to ima-
 30 gine it might rather be the kings owne vnbridled enterprise, which had barred *Zel-
 mane*, then *Zelmanes* cunning deceiuing of her, and that of the other if she should
 headily seeke a violent reuenge, her owne honour might be as much interessed, as
Zelmane endangered: she fell to this determination. First with fine handling of the
 King to settle in him a perfect good opinion of her, and then as she should learne
 how things had passed, to take into her selfe new deuised counsell, but this being
 35 her first action, hauing giuen vnlooked for attendance to the King, she heard with
 what partiality he did preferre her to her self, she saw in him how much fancy doth
 not only darken reason but beguile sence, she found opiniō Mistresse of the Louers
 iudgement, which seruing as a good lesson to her good conceit, she went out to *Ba-
 silus*, setting her selfe in a graue behauiour and statelie silence before him: vntil he
 40 (who at the first thinking her by so much shadow as he could see to be *Zelmane*, was
 beginning his louing ceremonies) did now being helped by the peping light, wher-
 with the morning did ouercome the nights darknesse, know her face and his error,
 which acknowledging in himself with starting backe from her, she thus with a mo-
 dest bitternesse spake vnto him: Alas my Lord, well did your words discipher your
 45 mind, and well be those words confirmed with this gesture. Verie lothsome must
 that woman be, from whom a man hath cause to go backe; and litle better liked
 is that wife, before whom the husband preferres them he neuer knew. Alas hath
 my faithfull obseruing my part of dutie made you thinke your selfe euer a whit the

more exempted? Hath that which should claime gratefulnesse, bene a cause of contempt? Is the being the mother of *Pamela* become an odious name vnto you? If my life hitherto led haue not auoided suspition, if my violated truth to you be deserving of any punishment, I refuse not to be chastised with the most cruell torment of your displeasure, I refuse not miserie, purchased by mine owne merite. Hard 5 I must needs say (although till now I neuer thought I should haue had cause to say) is the destinie of womankind, the triall of whose vertue must stand vpon the louing of them that employ all their industrie not to be beloued. If *Zelmanes* young yeares had not had so much grauity hidden vnder a youthfull face, as your gray haire haue bene but the vizar of vnfitting youthfulness, your vicious minde had brought 10 some fruits of repentance, & *Gynecia* might then haue bene with much more right so basely despised.

Basilus that was more ashamed to see himselfe so ouertaken, then *Vulcan* was, when with much cunning hee proued himselfe a Cuckold, began to make certaine extrauagant excuses: but the matter in it selfe hardly brooking any purgation, with 15 the sodainnesse of the time, which barred any good conioyned inuention, made him sometimes alleage one thing, to which by and by he would bring in a contrary, one time with flat denial, another time with mitigating the fault; now braue, then humble, vse such a stammering defensiu, that *Gynecia*, the violēce of whose fore indeed ran another way, was content thus to fasten vp the last stitch of her anger. Well, well my Lord, said she, it shall well become you so to gouerne your 20 selfe, as you may be fit rather to direct me, then to be iudged of me; and rather to be a wise maister of me, then an vnskilfull pleader before me. Remember the wrong you haue done is not onlie to me, but to your children, whom you had of me: to your countrey, when they shall find they are commaunded by him, that 25 cannot commaund his owne vndecent appetites: lastlie, to your selfe, since with these paines you do but build vp a house of shame to dwell in: if from those moueable goods of nature (wherewith, in my first youth my royall parents bestowed me vpon you) bearing you children, and increase of yeares haue withdrawne me; consider I pray you, that as you are cause of the one, so in the other, 30 time hath not left to worke his neuer failing effects in you. Trulie, trulie (sir) verie vntimelic are these fires in you: it is time for vs both to let reason inioy his due soveraigntie. Let vs not plant anew those weeds, which by natures course are content to fade.

Basilus that would rather then his life the matter had bene ended, the best rhetorike he had, was flat demanding pardon of her, swearing it was the verie force 35 of *Apollos* destinie which had caried him thus from his owne bias; but that now like as farre trauellers were taught to loue their owne countrey, he had such a lesson without booke, of affection vnto her, as he would repay the debt of this error with the interest of a great deale more true honour then euer before he had done 40 her. Neither am I to giue pardon to you, my Lord (said she) nor you to beare honour to me. I haue taken this boldnesse for the vnfained loue I owe vnto you, to deliuer my sorow vnto you; much more for the care I haue of your well doing, then for any other selfe fancie. For well I know that by your good estate my life is maintained, neither, if I would, can I separate my selfe from your fortune. For 45 my part therefore I claime nothing but that which may be safest for your selfe; my life, will, honor, and whatsoeuer else, shall be but a shadow of that bodie. How much *Basilus* owne shame had found him culpable, and had alreadie euen in soule read

reade his owne condemnation, so much did this vnexpected mildnesse of *Gynecia* captiue his heart vnto her, which otherwise perchaunce would haue growne to a desperate carelesnesse. Therefore embracing her, and confessing that her vertue shined in his vice, he did euen with a true resolu'd minde vowe vnto her, that as long as he vnworthie of her did liue, shee should be the furthest and onely limit of his affection. He thanked the destinies, that had wrought her honour out of his shame, and that had made his own struiuing to go amisse, to be the best meane euer after to hold him in the right path. Thus reconciled to *Basilus* great contentation, who began something to marke himselfe in his owne doings, his hard hap guided his eye to the cup of golde, wherein *Gynecia* had put the lickourment for *Zel-mane*, and hauing failed of that guest, was now carrying it home againe. But he whom perchaunce sorrow, perchaunce some long disaccustomed paines, had made extremely thirstie, tooke it out of her hands, although she directly told him, both of whom shee had it, what the effect of it was, and the little prooffe shee had seene thereof; hiding nothing from him, but that she meant to minister it to another patient. But the Duke, whose belly had no eares, and much drouth kept from the desiring a taster, finding it not vnpleasant to his pallate, dranke it almost off, leauing verie little to couer the cuppes bottome. But within awhile that from his stomacke the drinke had deliuered to his principall veines his noysome vapors, first with a painfull stretching, and forced yawning, then with a darke yellownesse dying his skinne, and a cold deadly sweat principally about his temples, his bodie by naturall course longing to deliuer his heauie burthen to his earthly damme, wanting force in his knees, which vtterly abandoned him, with heauie fall gaue some prooffe whether the operation of that vnkowne potion tended. For with pang-like grones, and gastly turning of his eyes, immediatly all his limmes stiffened, and his eyes fixed, he hauing had time to declare his case onely in these wordes. O *Gynecia* Idye. Haue care: of what or how much further he would haue spoken, no man can tell. For *Gynecia* hauing well perceiued the changing of his colour, and those other euill signes, yet had not looked for such a sodaine overthrow, but rather had bethought her selfe what was best for him, when she sodainly saw the matter come to that periode, comming to him, and neither with any cryes getting a word of him, nor with any other possible meanes, able to bring any liuing action from him, the height of all ouglie sorrowes did so horribly appeare before her amazed minde, that at the first, it did not onely distract all power of speech from her, but almost wit to consider, remaining as it were quicke buried in a graue of miseries. Her painfull memorie had streight filled her with the true shapes of all the fore-past mischiefes, her reason began to crye out against the filthie rebellion of sinfull sense, and to teare it selfe with anguish, for hauing made so weake a resistance, her conscience a terrible witnesse of the inward wickednesse, still nourishing this debatefull fire; her complaint now not hauing an end to be directed vnto something to disburden sorrow, but a necessarie downfall of inward wretchednesse. She saw the rigour of the lawes was like to lay a shamefull death vpon her, which being for that action vnderferued, made it the more insupportable, and yet in depth of her soule most deserued, made it more miserable. At length, letting her tongue go as her dolorous thoughts guided it, she thus with lamentable demeanour spake.

O bottomlesse pit of sorrow, in which I cannot containe my selfe, hauing the firebrands of all furies within me, still falling, and yet by the infinitenesse of it

neuer false. Neither can I ridde my selfe, being settred with the euerlasting consideration of it. For whither should I recommend the protection of my dishonored fall to the earth? it hath no life, and waites to be increased by the reliques of my shamed carcassee: to men? who are alwayes cruell in their neighbours faults, and make others ouerthrow become the badge of their ill masked vertue? to the heauens? O vnspcakable torment of conscience, which dare not looke vnto them. No sinne can enter there, oh there is no receipt for polluted mindes. Whither then wilt thou leade this captiue of thine, O snakie despaire? Alas, alas, was this the free-holding power that accursed poyson hath graunted vnto me, that to be held the surer it should depriue life? was this the folding in mine armes promised, that I should folde nothing but a dead bodie? O mother of mine, what a deathfull sucke haue you geuen me? O *Philoclea*, *Philoclea*, well hath my mother reuenged vpon me my vnmotherly hating of thee. O *Zelma*, to whom yet (least any miserie should faile me) remaine some sparkes of my detestable loue, if thou hast (as now alas! now my minde assures me thou hast) deceiued me, there is a faire stage prepared for thee, to see the tragicall end of thy hated louer. With that word there flowed out two riuers of teares out of her faire eyes, which before were drie, the remembrance of her other mischiefes being dried vp in a furious fire of selfe detestation, loue onely according to the temper of it melting it selfe into those brinie tokens of passion. Then turning her eyes againe vpon the bodie, shee remembred a dreame shee had had some nights before, wherein thinking herselfe called by *Zelma*, passing a troublesome passage, shee found a dead bodie which told her there should be her onely rest. This no sooner caught hold of her remembrance, then that shee determining with her selfe, it was a direct vision of her fore-appointed end, tooke a certaine resolution to embrace death, as soone as it should be offered vnto her, and no way to seeke the prolonging of her annoyed life. And therefore kissing the cold face of *Basilus*; And euen so will I rest said shee, and ioine this faultie soule of mine to thee, if so much the angrie gods will graunt mee.

As shee was in this plight, the Sunne now climing ouer our Horizon, the first Shepheards came by, who seeing the King in that case, and hearing the noise *Dametas* made of the Lady *Philoclea*, ranne with the dolefull tydings of *Basilus* death vnto him, who presently with all his companie came to the Caues entrie where the Kings body lay. *Dametas* for his part more glad for the hope he had of his priuate escape, then sorie for the publike losse his Countrie receiued for a Prince not to be misliked. But in *Gynecia*, nature preuailed aboue iudgement; and the shame shee conceiued to bee taken in that order, ouercame for that instant the former resolution, so that as soone as she saw the formost of the pastorall troupe, the wretched Princeesse ranne to haue hid her face in the next woods, but with such a minde, that she knew not almost her selfe what she could wish to bee the ground of her safetie. *Dametas* that saw her runne away in *Zelma*'s vpper rayment, and iudging her to be so, thought certainly all the spirites in hell were come to play a Tragedie in these woods, such strange change he sawe euery way. The King dead at the Caues mouth; the Queene (as he thought) absent; *Pamela* fled away with *Dorus*; his wife and *Mopsa* in diuers franzies. But of all other things *Zelma* conquered his capacitie, sodainly from a woman growne to a man; and from a lockt chamber gotten before him into the fields, which he gaue the rest quickly to vnderstand; for in steede of doing any thing as the exigent required, he began

began to make circles, and all those fantastickall defences that he had euer heard
 were fortifications against Diuels. But the other Shepheards who had both bet-
 ter wittes, and more faith, forthwith deuided themselues, some of them running af-
 ter *Gynecia*, and esteeming her running away, a great condemnation of her owne
 5 guiltinesse, others going to their Prince, to see what seruice was left for them either
 in recouerie of his life, or honoring his death. They that went after the Queene, had
 soone ouertaken her, in whom now the first feares were stayed, and the resolution
 to die had repossessed his place in her minde. But when they saw it was the Queene,
 to whom besides the obedient duetie they ow'de to her state, they had alwayes cari-
 10 ed a singular loue, for her courteous liberalities, and other wise and vertuous parts,
 which had filled all that people with affection and admiration. They were all so-
 dainly stopped, beginning to aske pardon for their following her in that sort, and
 desiring her to be their good Ladie, as she had euer bene. But the Queene who now
 thirsted to be ridde of her selfe, whom she hated aboue all things with such an assu-
 15 red countenance as they haue, who already haue dispensed with shame, and dige-
 sted the sorowes of death, she thus said vnto them. Continue, continue, my friends:
 your doing is better then your excusing, the one argues assured faith, the other wat
 of assurance. If you loued your Prince, when he was able and willing to doo you
 much good, which you could not then requite to him; doo you now publish your
 20 gratefulness, when it shal be seene to the world, there are no hopes left to leade you
 vnto it. Remēber, remēber you haue lost *Basilus*, a Prince to defend you, a Father
 to care for you, a cōpanion in your ioyes, a friend in your wants. And if you loued
 him, shew you hate the author of his losse. It is I, faithfull *Arcadians*, that haue spoy-
 led the Countrie of their protector. I, none but I, was the minister of his vnnaturall
 25 end. Cary therefore my blood in your hands, to testifie your owne innocencie,
 neither spare for my titles sake, but consider it was he that so entituled me. And
 if you thinke of any benefits by my meanes, thinke with it that I was but the instru-
 ment and he the spring. What stay ye Shepheards whose great Shepheard is
 gone? you neede not feare a woman, reuerence your Lords murtherer, nor haue
 30 pittie of her, who hath not pittie of her selfe. With this she presented her faire neck;
 some by name, others by signes, desired them to do iustice to the world, duty to
 their good king, honour to themselues, and fauour to her. The poore men looked
 one vpon the other, vnused to be arbiters in Princes matters, and being now falne
 into a great perplexitie, betwixt a Prince dead and a Princeesse alieue. But once for
 35 them she might haue gone whither she would, thinking it a sacriledge to touch
 her person, when she finding she was not a sufficient oratour to perswade her own
 death by their hands, well, said she, it is but so much more time of miserie, for my
 part I wil not giue my life so much pleasure from hēce forward as to yeeld to his de-
 sire of his own choise of death; since all the rest is taken away, yet let me excel in mi-
 40 serie. Leade me therefore whither you will; only happy, because I can not be more
 wretched. But neither so much wold the honest Shepheards do, but rather with ma-
 ny teares bemoaned this encrease of their former losse, till she was faine to leade thē,
 with a very strange spectacle, either that a Princeesse should be in the hands of
 shepheards, or a prisoner should direct her gardiens: lastly, before either wimes or
 45 accuser, a Lady condemne her selfe to death. But in such monefull march they
 went towards the other Shepheards, who in the meane time had left nothing vn-
 assayed to reuiue the King, but all was bootlesse; and their sorrows encreased the
 more they had suffred any hopes vainly to arise. Among other trials they made to

know at least the cause of his end, hauing espied the unhappie cup, they gaue the
 little liquor that was left to a dogge of *Dametas*, in which within a short time it
 wrought the like effect; although *Dametas* did so much to recouer him, that for
 verie loue of his life he dasht out his braines. But now all together and hauing *Gy-
 necia* among them, who to make her selfe the more odious, did continually record
 to their mindes the excessse of their losse, they yeelded themselves ouer to all those
 formes of lamentation that dolefull images do imprint in the honest, but ouer-
 tender hearts; especially when they thinke the rebound of the euil falles to their
 owne smart. Therefore after the auncient Greeke manner, some of them remem-
 bring the nobilitie of his birth, continued by being like his Auncestors: others
 his shape, which though not excellent, yet fauour and pittie drew all things now
 to the highest point; others his peaceable gouernement, the thing which most
 pleaseth men resolued to liue of their owne; others his liberalitie, which though it
 cannot light vpon all men, yet all men naturally hoping it may be they, make it a
 most amiable vertue. Some calling in question the greatnesse of his power, which
 encreased the compassion to see the present change, (hauing a dolefull memorie
 how he had tempered it with such familiar curtesie amōg them, that they did more
 feele the fruites, then see the pompes of his greatnesse) all with one consent giuing
 him the sacred titles of good, iust, mercifull, the father of the people, the life of
 his Countrie, they ranne about his bodie, tearing their beardes and garments;
 some sending their cryes to heauen, other inuening pratically howling musicke;
 manie vowing to kill themselves at the day of his funerals, generally giuing a true
 testimonie, that men are louing creatures when iniuries put them not from their
 naturall course: and how easily a thing it is for a Prince by succession, deeply to
 sinke into the soules of his subiects, a more liuely monument then *Mausolus*
 Tombe. But as with such hartie lamentation, they disperfed among those woods
 their resounding shrikes, the Sunne the perfectest marke of time, hauing now got-
 ten vp two houres iourney in his daily changing Circle, their voice helped with
 the onely aunswering Echo, came to the eares of the faithfull and worthie Gen-
 tleman *Philanax*: who at that time was comming to visite the King, accompanied
 with diuers of the worthie *Arcadian* Lords, who with him had visited the places
 adioyning for the more assurance of *Basilus* solitarinesse, a thing after the late mu-
 rinie he had vsually done, and since the Princesses returne more diligently conti-
 nued, which hauing now likewise perfourmed, thinking it as well his duetie to
 see the King as of good purpose, being so neare, to receiue his further direction:
 accompanied as aboue saide he was this morning comming vnto him, when
 these vnpleasent voices gaue his minde an vncertaine presage of his neere ap-
 proching sorrowe. For by and by he saw the bodie of his dearly esteemed Prince,
 and heard *Gynecias* lamenting: not such as the turtle-like loue is wont to make
 for the euer ouer-soone losse of her onely loued make, but with cursings of her
 life, detesting her owne wickednesse, seeming onely therefore not to desire death,
 because shee would not shew a loue of any thing. The Shepheards, especially
Dametas, knowing him to be the second person in authoritie, gaue soorthwith
 relation vnto him, what they knew and had proued of this dolorous spectacle,
 besides the other accidents of his children. But he principally touched with his
 maisters losse, lighting from his horse with a heauie cheare, came and kneeled
 downe by him, where finding he could do no more then the Shepheards had for
 his recouerie, the constancie of his minde, surprised before he might call together
 his

his best rules, could not refraine such like words. Ah deare maister, said hee, what change it hath pleased the Almighty Iustice to worke in this place! How soone (not to your losse, who hauing liued long to nature, & to time longer by your well deserued glorie, but longest of all in the eternall mansion you now possesse.) But how soone I say to our ruine, haue you left the fraile barke of your estate? O that the words I in most faithfull dutie deliuered vnto you, when you first entred this solitarie course, might haue wrought as much perswasion in you, as they sprang from truth in me perchaunce your seruant, *Philanax* should not now haue cause in your losse, to bewaile his owne ouerthrow. And therewith taking himselfe; and indeed euill fitteth it me (said he) to let go my heart to womannish complaints, since my Prince being vndoubredly well, it rather shewes loue of my selfe, which makes me bewaile mine owne losse. No, the true loue must bee proued in the honour of your memorie, and that must be shewed with seeking iust reuenge vpon your vniust and ynnaturall enemies, and farre more honorable it will be for your Tombe, to haue the blood of your murtherers sprinkled vpon it, then the teares of your friends. And if your soule looke downe vpon this miserable earth, I doubt not it had much rather your death were accompanied with well deserued punishment of the causers of it, then with the heaping on it more sorowes with the end of them, to whom you vouchsafed your affection, let them lament that haue wouen the web of lamentation; let their owne deathes make them crie out for your death, that were the authors of it. Therewith carying manfull sorow and vindicatiue resolution in his face, he rose vp, so looking on the poore guiltlesse Princessesse transported with an vniust iustice, that his eyes were sufficient Heraulds for him, to denounce a mortall hatred. She (whom furies of loue, firebrands of her conscience, shame of the world, with the miserable losse of her husband, towards whom now the disdaine of her selfe bred more loue; with the remembrance of her vision, wherewith she resolved assuredly the Gods had appointed that shameful end to be her resting place, had set her mind to no other way but to death) vsed such like speeches to *Philanax*, as shee had before to the shepheards; willing him not to looke vpon her as a woman, but a monster; not as a Princessesse, but a traitor to his Prince; not as *Basilus* wife, but as *Basilus* murtherer. She told him how the world required at his hands, the iust demonstration of his friendship, if he now forgot his Prince, he should shew he had neuer loued but his fortune: like those vermine that sucke of the liuing bloud, and leaue the bodie as soone as it is dead, poore Princessesse needlesly seeking to kindle him, who did most deadlie detest her, which he vttered in this bitter answere. Madame (said he) you do well to hate your selfe, for you cannot hate a worse creature; and though we feele enough your hellish disposition, yet we need not doubt you are of counsell to your selfe of much worse then we know. But now feare not, you shall not long be cumbred with being guided by so euill a soule, therefore prepare your selfe that if it be possible you may deliuer vp your spirit so much purer, as you more wash your wickednesse with repentance. Then hauing presently giuen order for the bringing from *Mantineia*, a great number of tents, for the receit of the principall *Arcadians*: the maner of that countrie being, that where the Prince died, there should be orders taken for the countries gouernment, & in the place any murther was committed, the iudgement shold be giuen there, before the bodie was buried, both concurring in this matter, and already great part of the Nobility being ariued, he deliuered the Princessesse to a Gentleman of great trust, and as for *Dametas* taking from him the keyes of both the Lodges,

calling him the moth of his Princes estate, & onely spot of his iudgement, he caused him with his wife and daughter, to be fettered vp in as manie chaines and clogs, as they could beare, and euerie third houre to be cruellie whipt, till the determinate iudgement shold be giuē of all these matters. That done, hauing sent already at his comming, to all the quarters of the countrie to seeke *Pamela*, although with small
 5 hope of ouertaking them, he himselfe went well accompanied to the Lodge where the two vnfortunate Louers were attending a cruell conclusion of their long, painfull, and late most painfull affection. *Dametas* clownish eyes, hauing bene the only discoverers of *Pyrocles* stratagem, had no sooner taken a full view of the (which in some sights would rather haue bred any thing, then an accusing mind) and loc-
 10 ked the doore vpon these two young folkes, now made prisoners for loue, as before they had bene prisoners to loue; but that immediatly vpon his going downe (whether with noife *Dametas* made, or with the creeping in of the light, or rather that as extreme grieve had procured his sleepe, so extreame care had measured his sleep, giuing his sences a very early *salutē* to come to theselues) *Pyrocles* awaked; and being
 15 vp, the first euill hanfell he had of the ill case wherein he was, was the seeing himselfe deprived of his sword, from which he had neuer separated himselfe in any occasion, and euen that night first by the kings bed, and then there had laid it, as hee thought safe: putting great part of the trust of his well doing in his owne courage so armed. For indeed the confidence in ones selfe is the chiefe nurse of magnanimitie,
 20 which confidence notwithstanding doth not leaue the care of necessarie furnitures for it: and therefore of all the Grecians *Homer* doth euer make *Achilles* the best armed. But that, as I say, was the first ill token: but by and by he perceiued he was a prisoner before anie arrest, for the dore which he had left open, was made so fast of the outside, that for all the force he could employ vnto it, he could not vndo *Da-*
 25 *metas* doing; then went he to the windowes, to see if that way there were any escape for him and his deare Ladie, but as vaine he found all his employment there, not hauing might to breake out but only one barre; wherein notwithstanding he strained his sinewes to the vttermost. And that he rather tooke out to vse for other seruice, then for any possibilitie he had to escape; for euen then it was that *Dametas*
 30 hauing gathered together the first comming shepheards, did blabber out what he had found in the Lady *Philoclea*s chamber. *Pyrocles* markedly hearkened to all that *Dametas* said, whose voice and mind acquaintance had taught him sufficiently to know. But when he assuredly perceiued that his being with the Ladie *Philoclea* was fullie discouered; & by the folly or malice, or rather malicious folly of *Dametas* her
 35 honour therein touched in the highest degree; remēbring withall the cruelty of the *Arcadian* lawes, which without exception did condemne all to death, who were found (as *Dametas* reported of them) in act of mariage without solemnitie of marriage; assuring himselfe besides the law, the king and the Queene would vse so much more hate against their daughter, as they had found themselues sorted by him in
 40 the pursute of their loue. Lastly, seeing they were not only in the way of death, but fitly incaged for death, looking with a hartie grieve vpon the honour of loue, the fellowlesse *Philoclea* (whose innocent soule now enioying his owne goodnesse did little know the danger of his euer faire then sleeping harbor) his excellent wit strengthened with vertue, but guided by loue, had soone described to himselfe a perfect
 45 vision of their present condition, wherein hauing presently cast a resolute reckening of his owne part of the miserie, not only the chiefe but sole burthen of his anguish consisted in the vnworthy case, which was like to fall vpon the best deseruing *Philoclea*.
 He

He saw the misfortune not the mismeaning of his work, was like to bring that creature to end, in whom the world (as he thought) did begin to receiue honour; he saw the weake iudgement of man, would condemne that as death-deseruing vice in her, which had in troth neuer broken the bonds of a true liuing vertue, & how often his eye turned to his attractiue adamant, so often did an vnspokeable horreur strike his noble heart to consider so vnripe yeares, so faultlesse a beautie, the mansion of so pure goodnesse, should haue her youth so vntimely cut off, her naturall perfections vnnaturally consumed, her vertue rewarded with shame; sometimes he would accuse himself of negligence, that had not more curiously looked to all the house entries, & yet could he not imagine the way *Damet* as was gotten in, and to call backe what might haue bin to a man of wisdō & courage, caries but a vain shadow of discourse; somtimes he could not chuse but with a dissolution of his inward might lamentably consider with what face he might looke vpon his (till then) ioy *Philoclea*, when the next light waking shold deliuer vnto her, shold perchāce be the last of her hurtlesse life. And that the first time she should bend her excellent eyes vpon him, she should see the accursed author of her dreadful end; & euen this consideration more thē any other, did so set it selfe in his well disposed mind, that dispersing his thoughts to all the wayes that might be of her safety, finding a very small discourse in so narrow limits of time & place, at lēth in many difficulties he saw none beare any likelihood for her life, but his death: For then he thought it wold fal out, that when they found his bodie dead, hauing no accuser but *Damet* as, as by his speech he found there was not, it might iustly appeare that either *Philoclea* in defending her honour, or else he himself in despaire of atchieuing, had left his carcasse proof of his intent, but witnes of her clearnesse, hauing a small while stayed vpo the greatnesse of his resolution & looked to the furthest of it: Be it so (said the valiat *Pyrocles*) neuer life for better cause, nor to better end was bestowed, for if death be to follow this doing, which no death of mine could make me leaue vndone, who is to die so iustly as my self? and if I must die, who can be so fit executioners as mine owne hands? which as they were accessaries to the doing, so in killing me they shall suffer their owne punishment. But then arose there a new impediment, for *Damet* as hauing caried away any thing, which he thought might hurt as tender a man as himselfe, he could find no fit instrument which might giue him a finall dispatch, at length making the more haste, least his Lady should awake, taking the yron barre, (which being sharper something at the one end then the other, he hoped ioyn'd to his willing strength, might breake off the feeble threed of mortallitie: truly (said he) fortune thou hast well perseuered mine enemy, that will graunt me no fortune, to be vnfortunate, nor let me have an easy passage now I am to trouble thee no more. But, said he, o bar blessed in that thou hast done seruice to the chamber of the paragon of life, since thou couldest not help me to make a perfecter escape, yet serue my turne I pray thee, that I may escape fro my selfe, therewithall yet once looking to fetch the last repast of his eyes, and new againe transported with the pitifull case he left her in, kneeling downe he thus prayed, O great maker and great ruler of this world (said he) to thee do I sacrifice this bloud of mine, and suffer (Lord) the errours of my youth, to passe away therein, and let not the soule by thee made, and euer bending vnto thee, be now reiected of thee, neither be offended that I do abandon this body, to the gouernment of which thou hadst placed me, without thyleaue, since how can I know but that thy vnsearchable mind is, I should so do, since thou hast taken from me all meanes longer to abide in it? And since the difference stands but in a short time of dying, thou that hast

framed my soule inclined to do good, how can I in this small space of mine, benefite so much all the humane kind, as in preserving thy perfectest workmanship, their chiefest honour? O iustice it selfe, howsoever thou determinest of me, let this excellent innocencie not be oppressed! Let my life pay her losse, ô Lord giue me some signe that I may die with this comfort. (And pawing a litle as if he had hoped for some token) and whensoever to the eternall darknesse of the earth she doth follow me, let our spirits possesse one place, and let them be more happie in that uniting. With that word striking the barre vpon his heart side with all the force he had, and falling withall vpon to giue it the thorow passage, the barre in troth was too blunt to do the effect, although it pierced his skinne, and bruised his ribs verie sore, so that his breath was almost past him. But the noise of his fall draue away sleepe from the quiet fences of the deare *Philoclea*, whose sweet soule had an early salutation of a deadly spectacle vnto her, with so much more astonishment, as the falling asleepe but a litle before she had retired her selfe from the vttermost point of wofulnesse, & saw now againe before her eyes the most cruell enterprize that humane nature can vndertake, without discerning any cause therof. But the liuely print of her affection had soone taught her not to stay long vpon deliberation in so vrgent a necessitie, therefore getting with speed her weake, though well accorded limmes out of her sweetned bed, as when Iuels are hastilie pulled out of some rich coffer, she spared not the nakednesse of her tender feet, but I thinke borne as fast with desire as 20 feare caried *Daphne*, she came running to *Pyrocles*, and finding his spirits something troubled with the fall; she put by the barre that lay close to him, and straining him in her most beloued embracement, My comfort, my ioy, my life (said she) what haste haue you to kill your *Philoclea* with the most cruell tormēt that euer Lady suffered? Do you not yet perswade your selfe that any hurt of yours is a death vnto me? And 25 that your death should be my hell? Alas, if any sodaine mislike of mee (for other cause I see none) haue caused you to loath your selfe, if any fault or defect of mine hath bred this terriblest rage in you, rather let me suffer the bitterness of it, for so shall the deseruer be punished, mankind preserved from such a ruine, and I for my part shall haue that comfort, that I die by the noblest hand that euer drew sword. *Pyrocles* 30 grieved with his fortune, that he had not in one instant cut off all such deliberation, thinking his life only reserved to be bound to be the unhappie newes-teller: Alas (said he) my only starre, why do you this wrong to God, your selfe, and me, to speake of faults in you; no, no, most faultlesse, most perfect Ladie, it is your excellencie that makes me hasten my desired end, it is the right I owe to the generall nature (that though against priuate nature) makes mee seeke the preservation of all 35 that she hath done in this age, let me, let me die. There is no way to saue your life (most worthy to be conserued) then that my death be your clearing, then did he with far more paine and backward loathnesse, then the so neare killing himselfe was (but yet driuen with necessitie to make her yeeld, to that he thought was her safety) 40 make her a short, but pithie discourse, what he had heard by *Dametas* speeches, confirming the rest with a plaine demonstration of their imprisonment. And thē sought he new means of stopping his breath; but that by *Philocleas* labor, aboue her force, he was stayed to heare her. In whom a man might perceiue what smal difference in the working there is, betwixt a simple voidnesse of euill, & a iudiciall habite of vertue. For she, not with an vnshaked magnanimity, wherewith *Pyrocles* wayed and despised death, but with an innocent guiltlesnesse, not knowing why she should feare to deliuer her unstained soule to God, helped with the true louing of *Pyrocles*, which 45 made

made her thinke no life without him, did almost bring her minde to as quiet attending al accidents, as the vnmaistred vertue of *Pyrocles*. Yet hauing with a pretty pale-nesse (which did leaue milken lines vpon her rosie cheekes) paid a litle duty to humane feare, taking the Prince by the hand, and kissing the wound he had giuen himselfe; O the only life of my life, and (if it fall out so) the comfort of my death, said she, farre, farre from you, be the doing me such wrong, as to thinke I will receiue my life as a purchase of your death, but well may you make my death so much more miserable, as it shall any thing be delaied after my onely felicitie. Doe you thinke I can accompt of the moment of death, like the vnspeakeable afflictions my soule should suffer, so oft as I call *Pyrocles* to my minde, which should be as oft as I breathed? Should these eyes guide my steps, that had seene your murder? Should these hands feed me that had not hindred such a mischief? Should this heart remaine within me, at euery pant to count the cōtinuall clock of my miseries? O no, if die we must, let vs thanke death, he hath not deuicid so true an vnion! And truly my *Pyrocles*, I haue heard my father, and other wise men say, that the killing ones selfe is but a false colour of true courage, proceeding rather of a feare of a further euil, either of torment or shame. For if it were a not respecting the harme, that would likewise make him not respect what might be done vnto him: and hope, being of all other, the most contrary thing to feare: this being an vtter banishment of hope, it seemes to receiue his ground in feare. Whatsoeuer (would they say) comes out of dispaire, cannot beare the title of valure, which should be lifted vp to such a height, that holding al things vnder it selfe, it should be able to maintaine his greatnesse euen in the midst of miseries. Lastly they would saie, God had appointed vs Captaines of these our bodily forts, which without treason to that Maiesty, were neuer to be deliuered ouer till they were redemaunded. *Pyrocles*, who had that for a lawe vnto him, not to leaue *Philoclea* in any thing vnsatisfied, although he stil remained in his former purpose, and knew that time would grow short for it, yet hearing no noise (the shepherdes being as then run to *Basilus*) with setled and humbled countenance, as a man that should haue spoken of a thing that did not cōcerne himselfe, bearing euē in his eyes sufficient shewes, that it was nothing but *Philocleas* danger, which did any thing burthen his heart, farre stronger then fortune, hauing with vehement embracings of her, got yet some fruit of his delayed end, he thus answered the wise innocencie of *Philoclea*. Lady most worthie not only of life, but to be the very life of all things the more notable demonstrations you make of the loue, so farre beyond my desert, with which it pleaseth you to ouercome fortune, in making me happie, the more am I euen in course of humanitie (to leaue that loues force, which I neither can nor will leaue) bound to seeke requitals witnesse, that I am not vngrateful to do which the infinitenesse of your goodnesse being such as it cānot reach vnto it, yet doing al I can, & paying my life, which is all I haue, though it be farre (without mesure) short of your desert, yet shal I not dye in debt, to mine own dutie. And truly the more excellent arguments you made, to keepe me from this passage, imagined far more terrible then it is; the more plainly it makes me see what reason I haue, to preuent the losse not only of *Arcadia*, but all the face of the earth should receiue, if such a tree (which euen in his first spring, doth not onely beare most beautifull blossoms, but most rare fruits) should be so vntimely cut off. Therefore, o most truly beloued Lady, to whom I desire for both our goods, that these may be my last words, geue me your consent euen out of that wisdom which must needs see, that (besides your vnmatchd betternesse, which perchaunce you will not see) it is fitter one

die then both . And since you haue sufficiently shewed you loue me, let me claime by that loue, you wil be content rather to let me die contentedly, then wretchedly: rather with a cleare & ioyful conscience, then with desperate condemnation in my selfe, that I accursed villaine, should be the meane of banishing from the sight of men the true example of vertue. And because there is nothing left me to be imagined, which I so much desire, as that the memory of *Pyrocles* may euer haue an allowed place in your wise iudgement, I am content to draw so much breath longer, as by answering the sweete obiections you alledged, may bequeath (as I thinke) a right conceite vnto you, that this my doing is out of iudgement, and not sprong of passion. Your father you say, was wont to say, that this like action doth more proceed of feare of further euil or shame, then of a true courage: Truly first, they put a very geffing case, speaking of them who can euer after come to tel, with what mind they did it. And as for my part, I call the immortall truth to witnesse, that no feare of torment can apall me: who know it is but diuerse manners of apparelling death: & haue long learned, to set bodily paine but in the second forme of my being. And as for shame, how can I be ashamed of that, for which my wel meaning conscience wil answere for me to God, and your vnresistable beautie to the world? But to take that argument in his owne force, and graunt it done for auoiding of further paine or dishonor, (for as for the name of feare, it is but an odious title of a passion, giuen to that which true iudgement performeth) graunt, I say, it is, to shunne a worse case, & truly I do not see, but that true fortitude, looking into al humane things with a persisting resolution, carried away neither with wonder of pleasing things, nor astonishment of the vnpleasant, doth not yet deprive it selfe of the discerning the difference of euil, but rather is the only vertue, which with an assured tranquillitie shunneth the greater by the valiant entring into the lesse. Thus for his countries safetie he wil spend his life, for the sauing of a lim, he wil not niggardly spare his goods; for the sauing of all his bodie, he wil not spare the cutting of a limme, where indeed the weake harted man wil rather die, then see the face of a surgeon: who might with as good reason say, that the constant man abides the painfull surgery, for feare of a further euill: but he is content to waite for death it selfe, but neither is true; for neither hath the one any feare, but a well choosing iudgement; nor the other hath any contentment, but onely feare; and not hauing a heart actiue to performe a matter of paine, is forced passiuely to abide a greater damage. For to do, requires a whole hart; to suffer falleth easiliest in the broken minds. And if in bodily torment thus, much more in shame; wherein since valure is a vertue, and vertue is euer limited, we must not runne so infinitely, as to thinke the valiant man is willingly to suffer any thing, since the verie suffering of some things is a certaine prooffe of want of courage. And if any thing vnwillingly among the chiefeft may shame go: for if honour be to be held deere, his contrarie is to be abhorred, and that not for feare, but of a true election. For which is the lesse inconuenient, either the losse of some yeares more or lesse (for once we know our liues be not immortall) or the submitting our selues to each vnworthie miserie, which the foolish world may lay vpon vs? As for their reason, that feare is contrarie to hope, neither do I defend feare, nor much yeeld to the authoritie of hope; to either of which great inclyning shewes but a feeble reason, which must be guided by his seruants; and who builds not vpon hope, shall feare no earthquake of despaire. Their last alleaging of the heavenly powers, as it beares the greatest name, so it is the onely thing, that at all bred any combate in my minde. And yet I do not see, but that if God hath made vs maisters

maisters of any thing, it is of our owne liues; out of which without doing wrong
 to any bodie, we are to issue at our owne pleasure. And the same argument would
 asmuch preuaile to say we should for no necessitie lay away from vs, any of our
 ioynts, since they being made of him, without his warrant we should not depart
 from them; or if that may be, for a greater cause we may passe to a greater degree.
 And if we be Lieutenants of God, in this little Castle, do you not thinke we must
 take warning of him to giue ouer our charge when he leaues vs vnprouided of
 good meanes to tarrie in it? No certainly do I not, answered the sorowfull *Phi-
 loclea*, since it is not for vs to appoint that mightie Maiestie, what time he will help
 vs: the vttermost instant is scope enough for him, to reuoke euery thing to ones
 owne desire. And therefore to preiudicate his determination, is but a doubt of
 goodnesse in him, who is nothing but goodnesse. But when in deede he doth either
 by sicknesse, or outward force lay death vpon vs, then are we to take knowledge
 that such is his pleasure, and to know that all is well that he doth. That we should
 be maisters of our selues, we can shew at all no title, nor claime; since neither we
 made our selues, nor bought our selues, we can stand vpon no other right but his
 gift, which he must limite as it pleaseth him. Neither is there any proportion be-
 twixt the losse of any other limme and that, since the one bends to the preserving
 all, the other to the destruction of all; the one takes not away the minde from the
 actions for which it is placed in the world, the other cuts off all possibilitie of his
 working. And truely my most deare *Pyrocles*, I must needes protest vnto you, that I
 cannot thinke your defence euen in rules of vertue sufficient. Sufficient and excel-
 lent it were, if the question were of two outward things, wherein a man might by
 natures freedome determine, whether he would preferre shame to paine; present
 smaller torment, to greater following, or no. But to this (besides the comparison of
 the matters values) there is added of the one part a direct euill doing, which ma-
 keth the ballance of that side too much vnequall: since a vertuous man without
 any respect, whether the griepe be lesse or more, is neuer to do that which he can
 not assure himselfe is allowable before the euerliuing rightfulnessse; but rather is
 to thinke honours or shames, which stand in other mens true or false iudgements,
 paines or not paines, which yet neuer approach our soules, to be nothing in re-
 gard of an vnspotted conscience. And these reasons do I remember, I haue heard
 good men bring in, that since it hath not his ground in an assured vertue, it pro-
 ceedes rather of some other disguised passion. *Pyrocles* was not so much perswaded
 as delighted, by her well conceiued and sweetely pronounced speeches; but
 when she had cloased her pittifull discourse, and as it were sealed vp her delight-
 full lippes, with the moistnesse of her teares, which followed still one another like a
 precious rope of pearle, now thinking it hye time. Be it as you say (saide he
 most vertuous beautie) in all the rest, but neuer can God himselfe perswade me,
 that *Pyrocles* life is not well lost, for to preferue the most admirable *Philoclea*. Let
 that be if it be possible written on my Tombe, and I will not enuye *Codrus* honour.
 With that he would againe haue vsed the barre, meaning if that failed, to leaue
 his braines vpon the wall. When *Philoclea* now brought to that she most feared,
 kneeled downe vnto him, and embracing so his legges, that without hurting
 her, (which for nothing he would haue done) he could not ridde himselfe from
 her, shee did with all the coniuring words, which the authoritie of loue may
 lay, beseech him, he would not now so cruelly abandon her, he would not
 leaue her comfortlesse in that miserie, to which he had brought her. That then

in deede she would euen in her soule accuse him, to haue most fouly betrayed her; that then she should haue cause to curse the time that euer the name of *Pyrocles* came to her eares, which otherwise no death could make her do. Will you leaue me, said she, not onely dishonoured as supposed vnchaste with you, but as a murderer of you? Will you giue mine eyes such a picture of hell, before my neere approaching death, as to see the mured Bodie of him I loue more then all the liues that nature can giue? With that she sware by the hiest cause of all deuotions, that if he did perseuere in that cruell resolution, she would (though vtruly) not onely confesse to her father, that with her cōsent this acte had bene committed, but if that would not serue (after she had puld out her owne eyes, made accursed by such a sight) she would giue her selfe so terrible a death, as she might thinke the paine of it would counteruaile the neuer dying paine of her mind. Now therefore kill your selfe, to crowne this vertuous action with infamy: kill your selfe to makeme (whom you say you loue) as long as I after liue, change my louing admiration of you, to a detestable abhorring your name. And so indeed you shall haue the ende you shoote at, for in steede of one death, you shall giue me a thousand, and yet in the meane time, depriue me of the helpe God may send me. *Pyrocles* euen ouerwayed with her so wisely vttered affection, finding her determination so fixed, that his ende should but depriue them both of a present contentment, and not auoide a comming euill (as a man that ranne not vnto it, by a sodaine qualme of passion, but by a true vse of reason, preferring her life to his owne) nowe that wisdome did manifest vnto him, that waye would not preuaile, he retired himselfe, with as much tranquillitie from it, as before he had gone vnto it. Like a man, that had set the keeping or leauing of the bodie, as a thing without himselfe, and so had thereof a freed and vntroubled consideration. Therefore throwing away the barre from him, and taking her vp from the place, where he thought the consummating of all beauties, verie vnworthily lay, suffering all his senses to deuoure vp their chiefeft foode, which he assured himselfe they should shortly after for euer be depriued of: well, said he, most deere Ladie, whose contentment I preferre before mine owne, and iudgement esteeme more then mine owne, I yeeld vnto your pleasure. The gods send you haue not wonne your owne losse. For my part they are my witnesses, that I thinke I do more at your commaundement, in delaying my death, then another would in bestowing his life. But now, said he, as thus farre I haue yeelded vnto you, so graunt me in recompence thus much againe, that I may finde your loue in graunting, as you haue found your authoritie in obtaining. My humble suite is, you will say I came in by force into your Chamber, for so am I resolu'd now to affirme, and that will be the best for vs both; but in no case name my name, that whatsoeuer come of me, my house be not dishonored. *Philoclea* fearing least refusall would turne him backe againe, to his violent refuge, gaue him a certaine countenance, that might shew she did yeeld to his request, the latter part whereof indeed she meant for his sake to performe. Neither could they spend more words together, for *Philanax*, with twentie of the noblest personages of *Arcadia* after him, were come into the Lodge, *Philanax* making the rest stay below, for the reuerence he bare to womanhood, as stillie as he could came to the dore, and opening it, drew the eyes of these two dolefull louers vpon him. *Philoclea* closing againe for modestie sake, within her bed the riches of her beauties, but *Pyrocles* tooke hold of his barre, minding at least to dye, before the excellent *Philoclea* should receiue any outrage. But *Philanax* rested awhile

awhile vpon himselfe, stricken with admiration at the goodly shape of *Pyrocles*, whom before he had neuer seene, and withall remembring besides others the notable act he had done (when with his courage and eloquence, he had saued *Basilus*, perchaunce the whole state from vtter ruine) he felt a kind of relenting minde towards him. But when that same thought came waited on with the remembrance of his maisters death, which he by al probabilities, thought he had bin of Counsell vnto with the Queene, compassion turned to hatefull passion, and left in *Philanax* a strange medley, betwixt pitie and reuenge, betwixt lyking and abhorring. O Lord, said he to himselfe, what wonders doth nature in our time, to set wickednesse so beautifully garnished? and that which is strangest, out of one spring to make wonderfull effectes both of vertue and vice to issue? *Pyrocles* seeing him in such a muse, neither knowing the man, nor the cause of his comming, but assuring himselfe, it was for no good, yet thought best to begin with him in this sort. Gentleman said he, what is the cause of your comming to my Lady *Philoclea*s chamber? is it to defend her from such violence, as I might goe about to offer vnto her? if it be so, truly your comming is vaine, for her owne vertue hath bene a sufficient resistaunce, there needes no strength to be added to so inuolate chastitie, the excellencie of her mind makes her bodie impregnable. Which for mine own part I had soone yeilded to confesse, with going out of this place (where I found but little comfort being so disdainfully receiued) had I not bene, I know not by whom presently vpon my coming hither, so locked into this chamber, that I could neuer escape hence: where I was fettered in the most guilty shame, that euer man was, seeing what a paradise of vnspotted goodnesse, my filthy thoughts sought to defile. If for that therefore you come, already I assure you your errand is performed; but if it be to bring me to any punishment whatsoeuer, for hauing vndertaken so vnexcusable presumption. Truly I bear such an accuser about me of mine own conscience, that I willingly submit my self vnto it. Only this much let me demand of you, that you wil be a witnes vnto the king what you heare me say, & oppose your selfe, that neither his sodaine fury, nor any other occasion may offer any hurt to this Lady; in whom you see nature hath accomplished so much, that I am faine to lay mine owne faultinesse, as a foile of her purest excellency. I can say no more, but looke vpon her beauty, remember her bloud, consider her yeares, and iudge rightly of her vertues, and I doubt not a gentlemans mind, will then be a sufficient instructor vnto you, in this I may tearme it miserable chaunce, happened vnto her by my vnbridled audacitie. *Philanax* was content to heare him out, not for any fauour he owed him, but to see whether he would reueale any thing of the originall cause, and purpose of the kings death. But finding it so far from that, that he named *Basilus* vnto him, as supposing him aliue, thinking it rather cunning then ignorance: Yong man, said he, whom I haue cause to hate, before I haue meane to know, you vse but a point of skill, by confessing the manifest smaller fault, to be beleeued hereafter in the deniall of the greater. But for that matter, all passeth to one end, & hereafter we shal haue leasure by torments to seeke the truth, if the loue of truth it selfe will not bring you vnto it. As for my Lady *Philoclea*, if it so fal out as you say, it shal be the more fit for her years, & comely for the great house she is come of, that an ill gouerned beautie hath not cancelled the rules of vertue. But howsoeuer it be, it is not for you to teach an *Arcadian*, what reuerent duty we owe vnto any of that progeny. But, said he, come you with me without resistance, for the one cannot auaille, and the other may procure pitie. Pitie? said *Pyrocles*, with a bitter smiling, disdaind with so currish an answer: no, no,

Arcadian, I can quickly haue pitie of my selfe, and I would thinke my life most miserable, which should be a gift of thine. Only I demaund this innocent Ladies securitie, which vntill thou hast confirmed vnto me by an oath, assure thy self, the first that layes hands vpon her shall leaue his life, for a testimony of his sacriledge. *Philanax* with an inward scorne thinking it most manifest they were both, he at least, of counsel with the kings death, Wel, said he, you speake much to me of the king: I do here sweare vnto you, by the loue I haue euer borne him, she shall haue no worfe, howsoeuer it fal out, then her owne parents. And vpon that word of yours I yeeld said the poore *Pyrocles*, deceiued by him that ment not to deceiue him, Then did *Philanax* deliuer him into the hands of a noble man in the cōpany, euery one desirous to haue him in his charge, so much did his goodly presēce (wherin true valure shined) breed a delightfull admiration in all the beholders. *Philanax* himselfe stayed with *Philoclea*, to see whether of her he might learne some disclosing of this former conclusion. But the sweet Lady whome first a kindly shamfastnesse had separated from *Pyrocles*, (hauing bene left in a more open view then her modesty would well beare) then the attending her fathers cōming, & studying how to behaue her self towards him for both their safeties, had called her spirits all within her: now that vpon a sodaine *Pyrocles* was deliuered out of the chamber from her, at the first she was so surprized with the extreame stroke of the wofull sight, that like those that in their dreames are taken with some vgly vision, they would faine cry for help, but haue no force, so remained she a while quite depriued not only of speech, but almost of any other liuely actiō. But whē indeed *Pyrocles* was quite drawn frō her eyes, & that her vital strength begā to return vnto her, now not knowing what they did to *Pyrocles*, but according to the nature of loue, fearing the worst, wringing her hands, & letting abundance of teares be the first part of her eloquēce, bending her amber-crowned head ouer her bed side to the hard-harted *Philanax*: O *Philanax*, *Philanax*, said she, I know how much authoritie you haue with my father: there is no man whose wildō he so much esteemes, nor whose faith so much he reposes vpon. Remember how oft you haue promised your seruice vnto me, how oft you haue giuen me occasion to beleue that there was no Lady in whose fauor you more desired to remaine: and if the remembrance be not vnpleasent to your mind, or the rehearfall vnfitting for my fortune, remember there was a time when I could deserue it. Now my chaunce is turned, let not your truth turne. I present my selfe vnto you, the most humble and miserable suppliant liuing, neither shall my desire be great: I seeke for no more life then I shal be found worthy of. If my bloud may wash away the dishonor of *Arcadia*, spare it not, although through me it hath indeed neuer bene dishonored. My only fute is, you wil be a meane for me, that while I am suffered to enioy this life, I may not be separated from him, to whom the Gods haue ioyned me, and that you determine nothing of him more cruelly then you do of me. If you rightly iudge of what hath past, wherein the Gods (that should haue bene of our mariage) are witnesses of our innocencies: then procure, we may liue together. But if my father will not so conceiue of vs, as the fault (if any were) was vnited, so let the punishment be vnited also. There was no man that euer loued either his Prince, or any thing pertaining to him with a truer zeale then *Philanax* did. This made him euen to the depth of his heart receiue a most vehemēt griefe, to see his master made as it were more miserable after death. And for himselfe, calling to mind in what fort his life had bin preferued by *Philoclea*, what time takē by *Amphialus* he was like to suffer acruel death, there was nothing could haue kept him from falling to all tender pitie,

pitie, but the perfect perswasion he had, that all this was ioyned to the packe of his
 maisters death, which the misconceiued speech of mariage made him the more
 belecue. Therefore first muttering to himselfe such like words : The violence the
 gentleman spake of, is now turned to mariage: he alledged *Mars*, but she speakes
 of *Venus*. O vnfortunate maister. This hath bene that faire diuell *Gynecia*: sent away
 5 one of her daughters, prostituted the other, empoysoned thee, to ouerthrow the
 diademe of *Arcadia*. But at length thus vnto her selfe he said: If your father, Ma-
 dame, were now to speake vnto, truly there should no body be found a more readie
 aduocate for you, then my selfe. For I would suffer this fault, though very great to
 10 be blotted out of my minde, by your former led life, your benefit towards my selfe,
 and being daughter to such a father. But since among your selues you haue taken
 him away, in whom was the only power to haue mercie, you must now be clothed
 in your owne working : and looke for none other, then that which dead pitilesse
 lawes may allot vnto you. For my part, I loued you for your vertue, but now where
 15 is that? I loued you in respect of a priuate benefit, what is that in comparison of the
 publike losse? I loued you for your father, vnhappy folks you haue robbed the world
 of him. These words of her father were so little vnderstood by the onely well vnder-
 standing *Philoclea*, that she desired him to tell her, what he meant to speake in such
 darke sort vnto her of her lord and father, whose displeasure was more dreadful vn-
 20 to her, then her punishment: that shee was free in her owne conscience, shee had
 neuer deserued euill of him, no not in this last fact: wherein if it pleased him to
 proceed with patience, he should finde her choise had not bene vnfortunate. He
 that saw her words writtē in the plaine table of her faire face, thought it impossible
 there should therein be contained deceit: and therefore so much the more abashed:
 25 Why, said he, Madame, would you haue me thinke, you are not of conspiracy with
 the Princeesse *Pamelas* flight, and your fathers death? with that word the sweet Lady
 gaue a pitifull cry, hauing streight in her face & breast abundance of witnesss, that
 her hart was far from any such abominable consent. Ah of all sides viterly ruined
Philoclea, said shee, now in deed I may well suffer all conceit of hope to dye in me.
 30 Deare father, where was I, that might not do you my last seruice before soone after
 miserably following you? *Philanax* perceiued the demonstration so liuely & true in
 her, that he easily acquitted her in his heart of that fact, and the more was moued to
 ioyne with her in most hartie lamentation. But remembring him, that the burthen
 of the state, and punishment of his masters murderers, lay all vpon him: Well, sayd
 35 he, Madame, I can do nothing, without all the states of *Arcadia*: what they will de-
 termine of you, I knowe not, for my part your speeches would much preuaile with
 me, but that I find not how to excuse your giuing ouer your body to him, that for
 the last prooffe of his treason, lent his garments to disguise your miserable mother,
 in the most vile fact she hath comitted. Hard sure it will be to separate your causes,
 40 with whom you haue so neerely ioyned your selfe. Neither do I desire it, said the
 sweetly weeping *Philoclea*: whatsoeuer you determine of him, do that likewise to
 me; for I knowe, from the fountaine of vertue nothing but vertue could euer pro-
 ceed; onely as you find him faultlesse, let him find you favorable, and build not
 my dishonor vpon surmises. *Philanax* feeling his hart more & more mollifying vnto
 45 her, renewed the image of his dead maister in his fancy, & vsing that for the spurres
 of his reuēgefull choller, went suddēly, without any more speech, from the desolate
 Lady, to whom nowe fortune seemed to threaten vnripe death, and vnderferued
 shame among her least euils. But *Philanax* leauing good guard vpon the Lodge,

went himselfe to see the order of his other prisoners, whom euen then as he issued, he found increased by this vnhoped meanes.

The noble *Pamela* hauing deliuered ouer the burthen of her fearfull cares to the naturall ease of a well refreshing sleepe, reposed both mind & bodie vpon the trusted support of her princely shepheard, when with the braying cries of a rascall 5 cōpany she was robbed of her quiet, so that at one insāt she opened her eyes, & the enraged *Musidorus* rose from her, enraged betwixt the doubt he had what these men would go about, and the spite he conceiued against their ill-pleasing presēce. But the clownes, hauing with their hideous noyse brought them both to their feet, had soone knowledge what guests they had found, for in deed these were the skum- 10 my remnant of those rebels, whose naughtie minds could not trust so much to the goodnesse of their Prince, as to lay their hangworthie necks vpon the constancy of his promised pardon. Therefore when the rest (who as sheepe had but followed their fellowes) so sheepishly had submitted themselues, these only committed their safetie to the thickest part of those desert woods, who as they were in the constitu- 15 tion of their mindes little better then beasts, so were they apt to degenerate to a beastly kind of life, hauing now framed their gluttonish stomacks to haue for food the wilde benefites of nature, the vtermost end they had, being but to draw out (as much as they could) the line of a tedious life. In this sort vagabonding in those vntroden places, they were guided by the euerlasting Iustice, vsing themselues to 20 be punishers of their faults, and making their owne actions the beginning of their chastizements, (vnhappily both for him and themselues) to light on *Musidorus*. Whom as soone as they saw turned towards them, they full well remembred it was he, that accompanied with *Basilus*, had come to the succour of *Zelma*: and had left among some of them bloudie tokens of his valour. As for *Pamela*, they 25 had many times seene her. Thus first sturred vp with a rusticall reuenge against him, and then desire of spoyle, to help their miserable wants, but chiefly thinking it was the way to confirme their owne pardon, to bring the Princeesse backe vnto her father (whom they were sure he would neuer haue sent so farre so sleightly accompanied) without any other denouncing of warre, set altogether vpon the worthe 30 *Musidorus*. Who being before hand almuch enflamed against them, gaue them so braue a welcome, that the smart of some made the rest stand further off, crying and prating against him, but like bad cures, rather barking then cloasing: he in the meane time placing his trembling Lady to one of the Pyne trees, and so setting himselfe before her, as might shewe the cause of his courage grew in himselfe, but 35 the effect was onely employed in her defence. The villaines that now had a second prooffe, how ill wards they had for such a sword, turned al the course of their violence into throwing darts and stones, in deede the only way to ouermaister the valour of *Musidorus*. Who finding them some alreadie touch, some fall so neere his chiefeft life *Pamela*, that in the end some one or other might hap to do an vnsuccourable 40 mischief, setting all his hope in dispaire, ran out from his Lady among them. Who streight like so many swine, when a hardie mastife sets vpon them, disperfed themselues. But the first he ouertooke, as he ran away, carying his head as farre before him, as those maner of runnings are wont to doe, with one blowe strake it so cleane off, that it falling betwixt the hands, and the body falling vpon it, it made a 45 shew as though the fellow had had great haste to gather vp his head againe. Another the speed he made to runne for the best game, bare him ful butt against a tree, so that tumbling backe with a brused face, and a dreadfull expectation, *Musidorus* was

was straight vpon him: & parting with his sword one of his legs from him, left him
 to make a roring lamération that his mortar-treading was marred for euer. A third
 finding his feet too slowe, aswell as his hands too weake, sodainly turned backe, be-
 ginning to open his lippes for mercie. But before he had well entred a rudely com-
 piled oration, *Musidorus* blade was come betweene his iawes into his throat, and
 5 so the poore man rested there for euer with a verie euill mouth full of an answer.
Musidorus in this furious chafe would haue followed some other of these hatefull
 wretches, but that he heard his Lady crie for helpe, whom three of this villanous
 crue, had (whiles *Musidorus* followed their fellowes) compassing about some trees,
 10 sodainly come vpon and surprised, threatening to kill her if she cried, and meaning
 to conuey her out of sight, while the Prince was making his bloud-thirstie chafe.
 But she that was resoluéd, no worse thing could fall vnto her, then the being depri-
 ued of him, on whom she had established all her comfort, with a pitifull cry fetched
 his eyes vnto her: who then thinking so many weapons thrust into his eyes, as with
 15 his eyes he sawe bent against her, made all hartie speed to her succour. But one of
 them wiser then his companions, set his dagger to her Alabaster throat, swearing
 if he threw not away his sword, he would presently kill her. There was neuer
 poore scholler, that hauing in steed of his booke some playingtoy about him, did
 more sodainly cast it from him, at the child-feared presence of a cruell School-
 20 maister, then the valiant *Musidorus* discharged himselfe of his onely defence,
 when he saw it stood vpō the instant point of his Ladies life. And holding vp his no-
 ble hands to so vnworthy audience, O *Arcadians*, it is I that haue done you the wrōg,
 she is your Princeesse (said he) she neuer had will to hurt you, and you see she hath
 no power. Vse your choller vpō me that haue better deserued it, do not your selues
 25 the wrong to do her any hurt, which in no time or place will euer be forgiuen you.
 They that yet trusted not to his curtesie, bad him stand further off from his sword,
 which he obediently did. So farre was loue aboute all other thoughts in him. Then
 did they call together the rest of their fellowes, who though they were few, yet
 according to their number possessed many places. And then began these sauage
 30 Senators to make a consultation, what they shold do: some wishing to spoile them
 of their iewels and let them go on their iourney (for that if they caried them backe,
 they were sure they should haue least part of their pray) others preferring their old
 homes to any thing, desired to bring them to *Basilus* as pledges of their surety: and
 there wanted not which cried the safest way was to kill thē both; to such an vnwor-
 35 thy thraldome were these great and excellēt personages brought. But the most part
 resisted to the killing of the Princeesse, fore-seeing their liues would neuer be safe af-
 ter such a fact committed: and began to wish rather the spoile then death of *Mu-
 sidorus*: when the villaine that had his leg cut off, came scrawling towards them, &
 being helped to them by one of the companie, began with a groning voice, and
 40 a disfigured face, to demaund the reuenge of his bloud, which since he had spent
 with them in their defence, it were no reason he should be suffered by them to die
 discontented. The only contentment he required was that by their helpe with his
 owne hands he might put his murtherer to some cruell death, he would faine haue
 cried more against *Musidorus*, but that the much losse of bloud helped on with this
 45 vehemencie, choked vp the spirits of his life, leauing him to make betwixt his body
 and soule an ill fauoured partition. But they seeing their fellow in that sort die be-
 fore their faces, did swell in new mortall rages: All resoluéd to kill him, but now
 onely considering what maner of terrible death they should inuent for him. Thus

was a while the agreement of his slaying, broken by disagreement of the manner of it; and extremitie of cruelty grew for a time to be the stop of cruelty. At length they were resolu'd, euery one to haue a peece of him, & to become all aswell hangmen, as iudges: when *Pamela* tearing her haire, and falling downe among them, sometimes with all the sort of humble prayers, mixt with promises of great good turnes 5 (which they knew her state was able to performe) sometimes threatning them, that if they kild him and not her, she would not only reuenge it vpon them, but vpon all their wiues and children: bidding them consider that though they might think she was come away in her fathers displeasure, yet they might be sure he would euer shew himselfe a father, that the Gods would neuer if she liued, put her in so base e- 10 state, but that she should haue abilitie to plague such as they were, returning afresh to prayers & promises, and mixing the same againe with threatnings, brought the who were now growne colder in their fellowes cause, who was past aggravating the matter, with his cries) to determine with themselves there was no way, but cyther to kill them both or saue them both. As for the killing, alreadie they hauing an- 15 swered themselves that that was a way to make them Citizens of the woods for euer; they did in fine conclude they would returne them backe againe to the king, which they did not doubt, would be cause of a great reward, besides their safetie from their fore-deserued punishment. Thus hauing either by fortune, or the force of those two lovers inward working vertue, settled their cruell hearts to this gentler 20 course, they tooke the two horses, and hauing set vpon the their princely prisoners, they returned towards the lodge. The villaines hauing decked all their heads with lawrell branches, as thinking they had done a notable act, singing and showing, ran by them, in hope to haue brought them the same day againe to the king. But the time was so farre spent, that they were forced to take vp that nights lodging in the 25 middest of the woods. Where while the clownes continued their watch about the, now that the night, according to his darke nature, did ad a kind of desolation to the pensieue hearts of these two afflicted louers, *Musidorus* taking the tender hand of *Pamela*, and bedawing it with his tears, in this sort gaue an issue to the swelling of his hearts grieve. Most excellent Lady said he; in what case thinke you am I with my 30 selfe, how vnmercifull iudgemēts do I lay vpon my soule, now that I know not what God hath so reuerfed my wel meaning enterprise, as in steed of doing you that honour which I hoped (& not without reason hoped) *Theffalia* should haue yeelded vnto you, am now like to become a wretched instrument of your disfort? Alas how contrarie an end haue all the inclinations of my mind taken! my faith falles out a 35 treason vnto you, and the true honour I beare you, is the field wherein your dishonour is like to be sowne! But I inuoke that vniuersall and onlie wisdom (which examining the depth of hearts, hath not his iudgement fixed vpon the euent) to beare testimonie with me that my desire though in extreamest vehemencie, yet did not so ouercharge my remembrance, but that as far as mans wit might be extēded, I sought 40 to preuent all things that might fall to your hurt. But now that all the euil fortunes of euill fortune haue cross'd my best framed intēt, I am most miserable in that, that I cannot only not giue you help, but which is worst of all, am barred from giuing you counsell. For how should I open my mouth to counsell you in that, wherein by my counsell you are most vnderferu'dly fallen? The faire & wise *Pamela*, although 45 full of cares of the unhappie turning of this matter, yet seeing the grieve of *Musidorus* onlie stirred for her, did so tread downe all other motions with the true force of vertue, that she thus answered him, hauing first kissed him, which before she had neuer

loue so commanding her, which doubted how long they should enjoy one another;
 or of a liuely sparke of noblenesse, to descend in most fauour to one, when he is low-
 est in affliction. My deare, and euer deare *Musidorus* (said she) a greater wrong do
 you to your self, that wil torment you thus with griefe for the fault of fortune. Since
 5 a man is bound no further to himselfe, then to do wisely; chance is onely to trouble
 them that stand vpon chance. But greater is the wrong (at least if any thing that
 comes from you may beare the name of wrong) you do vnto me, to thinke me ei-
 ther so childish, as not to perceiue your faithfull faultlesnesse; or perceiuing it, so
 basely disposed, as to let my heart be ouerthrowne, standing vpon it self in so vnspot-
 10 ted a purenesse. Hold for certain, most worthy *Musidorus*, it is your self I loue, which
 can no more be diminished by these showers of euill hap, then flowers are marred
 with the timely raines of Aprill. For how can I want comfort that haue the true and
 liuing comfort of my vnblenished vertue? And how can I want honour, as long as
Musidorus in whom indeed honour is, doth honor me? Nothing bred from my self
 15 can discomfort me: and fooles opinions I will not reckon as dishonour. *Musidorus*
 looking vp to the starres, O mind of minds (said he) the liuing power of all things,
 which doest with al these eyes behold our euer varying actiōs, accept into thy fauo-
 rable eares this praier of mine: If I may any longer hold out this dwelling on the earth
 which is called a life, grant me ability to deserue at this Ladies hands the grace she
 20 hath shewed vnto me, grant me wisdom to know her wisdom, and goodnesse so
 to encrease my loue of her goodnesse, that all mine owne chosen desires, be to my
 selfe but second to her determinations. Whatsoeuer I be, let it be to her seruice, let
 me herein be satisfied, that for such infinite fauours of vertue, I haue some way
 wrought her satisfaction. But if my last time approacheth, and that I am no longer to
 25 be amongst mortall creatures, make yet my death serue her to some purpose, that
 hereafter she may not haue cause to repent her self that she bestowed so excellent a
 mind vpon *Musidorus*. *Pamela* could not chuse but accord the cōceit of their fortune
 to these passionate prayers, in so much that her constant eyes yeilded some teares,
 which wiping from her faire face with *Musidorus* hand, speaking softlie vnto him,
 30 as if she had feared more any body should be witnesse of her weaknesse, then of a-
 ny thing else she had sayd, You see, said she, my Prince and onely Lord, what you
 worke in me by your too much grieuing for me. I pray you thinke I haue no ioy but
 in you, and if you fill that with sorow, what do you leaue for me? What is prepared
 for vs we know not; but that with sorow we cannot preuent it, we know. Now let vs
 35 turne frō these things, & think you how you will haue me behaue my self towards
 you in this matter. *Musidorus* finding the authoritie of her speech confirmed with
 direct necessitie, the first care came to his mind was of his deare friend and cousin
Pyrocles: with whom long before he had concluded what names they should beare,
 if vpon any occasion they were forced to giue themselves out for great men, and
 40 yet not make theselues fully known. Now fearing least if the Princeesse should name
 him for *Musidorus*, the fame of their two being together, would discouer *Pyrocles*;
 holding her hand betwixt his hands a good while together: I did not thinke most
 excellent Princeesse, said he, to haue made anie further request vnto you, for hauing
 bene already to you so vnfortunate a suiter, I know not what modestie can beare
 45 anie further demand. But the estate of one yong man, whom (next to you, far aboue
 my selfe) I loue more then all the world, one worthie of all wel being for the nota-
 ble constitution of his mind, and most vnworthy to receiue hurt by me, whom he
 doth in all faith & constancy loue, the pitie of him onely goes beyond all resolutiō

to the contrarie. Then did he to the Princeesse great admiration tell her the whole storie as farre as he knew of it, and that when they made the grieuous disunction of their long companie, they had concluded, *Musidorus* shold entitle himself *Paladius* Prince of *Iberia*, and *Pyrocles* should be *Daiphantus* of *Lycia*.

Now (said *Musidorus*) he keeping a womans habit is to vse no other name then *Zelmae*, but I that find it best, of the one side for your honor, you went away with a Prince and not with a shepheard: of the other side accounting my death lesse euill then the betraying of that sweet friend of mine, will take this meane betwixt both, and vsing the name of *Paladius*, if the respect of a Prince will stop your fathers furie, that will serue as well as *Musidorus*, vntill *Pyrocles* fortune being some way established, I may freely giue good proof that the noble coutry of *Theffalia* is mine: and if that will not mitigate your fathers opinion to mewards (nature I hope working in your excellencies will make him deale well by you) for my part the image of death is nothing fearfull vnto me: and this good I shall haue reaped by it, that I shal leaue my most esteemed friend in no danger to be disclosed by me. And besides (since I must confesse, I am not without a remorse of her case) my vertuous mother shall not know her sonnes violent death hid vnder the same will go of *Paladius*. But as long as her yeares now of good number, be counted among the liuing, she may ioy her self with some possibility of my returne. *Pamela* promising him vpon no occasion euer to name him, fell into extremitie of weeping, as if her eyes had bene content to spend all their seeing moistnesse, now that there was speech of the losse of that, which they held as their chiefeft light. So that *Musidorus* was forced to repaire her good counsels with sweet consolations, which continued betwixt them vntill it was about midnight, that sleepe hauing stolne into their heauie senses and now absolutely commanding in their vitall powers, left them delicately wound one in anothers armes quietly to waite for the comming of the morning: which as soone as she appeared to play her part, laden (as you haue heard) with so many well occasioned lamentations. Their lobbish guard (who all night had kept theselues awake, with prating how valiant deeds they had done when they ran away: and how faire a death their fellow had died, who at his last gaspe sued to be a hangman) awaked them, and set them vpon their horses, to whom the very shining force of excellent vertue, though in a verie harrish subiect, had wrought a kind of reuerence in them; *Musidorus* as he rid among them (of whom they had no other hold but of *Pamela*) thinking it want of a wel squared iudgemēt, to leaue any meane vnassayed of sauing their liues, to this purpose spake to his vnseemely gardians, vsing a 'plaine kind of phrase to make his speech the more credible. My maisters (said he) there is no man that is wise, but hath in whatsoeuer he doth some purpose wherto he directs his doings, which so long he followes, till he see that either that purpose is not worth the paines, or that another doing caries with it a better purpose. That you are wise in what you take in hand, I haue to my cost learned: that makes me desire you to tell me what is your end in carying the Princeesse & me backe to her father. Pardon said one, reward cried another. Well (said he) take both; although I know you are so wise to rememeber, that hardly they both will go together, being of so contrary a making, for the ground of pardon is an euill, neither any man pardons but remembers an euill done, the cause of reward is the opinion of some good act, and who so rewardeth, that holds the chiefe place of his fancie. Now one man of one companie, to haue the same consideration both of good and euill, but that the conceit of pardoning, if it be pardoned, will take away the mind of rewarding, is verie hard, if

if not impossible. For either euen in iustice will he punish the fault as well as reward the desert, or else in mercie ballance the one by the other: so that the not chastising shall be a sufficient satisfying. Thus then you may see that in your owne purpose, rests great vncertainty. But I will graunt that by this your deed you shall obtaine
5 your double purpose. Yet consider I pray you whether by another meane, that may not better be obtained, and then I doubt not your wisdomes will teach you to take hold of the better. I am sure you know, any bodie were better haue no need of a pardon then enioy a pardon; for as it caries with it the suretie of a preserued life, so beares it a continuall note of a deserued death. This therefore (besides the daunger
10 you may run into, my Lady *Pamela* being the vndoubted inheritrix of this state, if she shall hereafter seeke to reuenge your wrong done her) shall be continually cast in your teeth, as men dead by the law: the honest sort will disdaine your companie, and your children shall be the more basely reputed of, and you your selues in euery sleight fault hereafter, as men once condemned, aptest to be ouerthrowne.
15 Now if you wil (I doubt not you wil, for you are wise) turne your course, & gard my Lady *Pamela* thitherward, whither she was going: first you need not doubt to aduenture your fortunes where she goes, and there shall you be assured in a countrey as good and rich as this, of the same maners and language, to be so far from the conceit of a pardon, as we both shall be forced to acknowledge we haue receiued
20 by your meanes what soeuer we hold deare in this life. And so for reward iudge you whether it be not more likelie, you shall there receiue it where you liue done no euill, but singular & vnderferued goodnesse; or here where this seruice of yours shal be diminished by your dutie, and blemished by your former fault. Yes I protest and sweare vnto you, by the faire eyes of that Lady, there shall no Gentlemen in all
25 that country be preferred: you shall haue riches, ease, pleasure, and that which is best to such worthy mindes, you shall not be forced to crie mercie for a good fact. You only of all the *Arcadians*, shall haue the praise in continuing in your late valiant attempt, and not basely be brought vnder a halter for seeking the libertie of *Arcadia*. These words in their mindes, who did nothing for any loue of goodnesse, but
30 only as their senses presented greater shewes of profite, began to make them wauer, and some to clap their hands and scratch their heads, and sweare it was the best way. Others that would seeme wiser then the rest to capitulate what tenements they shold haue, what subsidies they shold pay: others to talk of their wiues, in doubt whether it were best to send for them, or to take new where they went: most (like
35 fooles) not readily thinking what was next to be done, but imagining what cheare they would make when they came there, one or two of the least discourages beginning to turne their faces towards the woods which they had left. But being now come within the plaine neare to the Lodges, unhappily they espied a troupe of horsemen. But then their false hearts had quickly for the present feare, forsaken
40 their last hopes, and therefore keeping on the way toward the Lodge, with songs of cries and ioy, the horsemen, who were some of them *philanax* had sent out to the search of *pamela*, came galloping vnto them; maruelling who they were that in such a generall mourning, durst sing ioyfull tunes, and in so publike a ruine weare the lawrell tokens of victorie. And that which seemed straungest, they might see
45 two among them vnarmed like prisoners, but riding like Captaines. But when they came nearer, they perceiued the one was a Ladie, and the Lady *Pamela*. Then glad they had by hap found that which they so litle hoped to meete withall, taking these clownes (who first resisted the, for the desire they had to be the deliuerers of

the two excellent prisoners, learning that they were of those rebels, which had made the dangerous vprere, as well vnder colour to punish that, as this their last withstanding them, but indeed their principall cause being, because they themselves would haue the onely praise of their owne quest, they suffered not one of the to liue. Marie three of the stubborne of them they left their bodies hanging vpon 5 the trees, because their doing might carie the likelier forme of iudgement. Such an vnlooked for end did the life of iustice worke, for the naughty minded wretches, by subiects to be executed, that would haue executed Princes: and to suffer that without law, which by law they had deserued. And thus these yong folkes twise prisoners, before any due arrest, deliuered of their iaylours, but not of their iayle, had 10 rather change then respite of miserie, these souldiers that tooke them with verie few words of entertainment, hastning to carie them to their Lord *Philanax*: to whom they came, euen as he going out of the Ladie *philocleas* chamber, had ouertaken *Pyrocles*, whom before he had deliuered to the custodie of a Nobleman of that countrie. Vhen *Pyrocles* led towards his prison, saw his friend *Musidorus*, with the 15 noble Ladie *Pamela* in that unexpected sort returned, his grieffe, (if any grieffe were in a mind, which had placed euerie thing according to his naturall worth) was verie much augmented, for besides some small hope he had, if *Musidorus* had once bene cleare of *Arcadia*, by his dealing and authoritie to haue brought his onely glad some desires to a good issue: the hard estate of his friend did no lesse, nay rather 20 more vexe him then his owne. For so indeed it is euer found, where valure and friendship are perfectly coupled in one heart, the reason being, that the resolute man, hauing once digested in his iudgement the worst extremity of his own case, and hauing either quite expelled or at least repelled all passion, which ordinarilie followes an ouerthrowne fortune, not knowing his friends mindes so well as his 25 owne, nor with what patience he brookes his case, (which is as it were the materiall cause of making a man happie or unhappie) doubts whether his friend accomps not him selfe more miserable, and so indeed bee more lamentable. But as soone as *Musidorus* was brought by the souldiers neere vnto *Philanax*, *Pyrocles* not knowing whether euer after hee should be suffered to see his friend, and determining there 30 could be no aduantage by dissembling a not knowing of him, leapt sodainlie from their hands that held him, and passing with a strength strengthened with a true affection, through them that encompassed *Musidorus*, he embraced him as fast as he could in his armes. And kissing his cheekes; O my *Paladius* (said he) let not our vertue now abandon vs; let vs proue our minds are no slaues to fortune, but in aduersitie can triumph ouer aduersity. Deare *Daiphantus* answered *Musidorus* (seeing by 35 his apparell his being a man was reuealed) I thanke you for this best care of my best part: but feare not, I haue kept too long companie with you to want now a thorow determination of these things; I well know there is nothing euill but within vs, the rest is either naturall or accidentall. *Philanax* finding them of so neare acquaintance, began presently to examine them apart: but such resolution he met within them, that by no such meanes he could learne further then it pleased them to deliuer. So that he thought best to put them both in one place, with espiall of their words and behauiour, that way to sift out the more of these forepassed mischiefs. And for that purpose gaue them both vnto the Nobleman, who before had the 40 custodie of *Pyrocles*, by name *Sympathus*, leauing a trustie seruant of his owne to giue diligent watch to what might passe betwixt them. No man that hath euer passed thorow the schoole of affection, needs doubt what a tormenting grieffe it was to the

the noble *Pamela*, to haue the companie of him taken from her, to whose vertuous companie she had bound her life. But weighing with her selfe, it was fit for her honour, till her doing were clearely manifested, that they should remaine separate, kept downe the rising tokens of grieffe; shewing passion in nothing but her eyes, which accompanied *Musidorus* euen vnto the tent, whither he and *Pyrocles* were led. Then with a countenance more princely then she was wont, according to the wont of highest hearts (like the palme tree striuing most vpward, when he is most burthened) she commaunded *Philanax*, to bring her to her father and mother, that she might render them account of her doings. *Philanax* shewing a sullen kind of reuerence vnto her, as a man that honoured her as his Maisters heire, but much misliked her for her (in his conceit) dishonourable proceedings, told her what was past, rather to answer her, then that he thought she was ignorant of it. But her good spirit did presently suffer a true compassionate affliction of those hard adventures: which with crossing her armes, looking a great while on the ground, with those eyes which let fall many teares, she well declared. But in the end remembring how necessarie it was for her, not to lose her selfe in such an extremitie, she strengthened her well created heart, and stoutly demaunded *Philanax*, what authoritie then they had to lay hands of her person, who being the vndoubted heire, was then the lawfull Princeesse of that kingdome. *Philanax* answered, her Grace knew the ancient lawes of *Arcadia* bare, she was to haue no sway of gouernement till she came to one and twentie yeares of age, or were married. And married I am, replied the wise Princeesse, therefore I demaund your due alleageance. The gods forbid (said *Philanax*, *Arcadia* should be a dowrie of such mariages. Besides, he told her, all the States of her country were euil satisfied touching her fathers death, which likewise according to the statutes of *Arcadia*, was euen that day to be iudged of, before the body were remoued to receiue his Princely funerals. After that past, she should haue such obedience, as by the lawes was due vnto her, desiring God she would shew her selfe better in publike gouernement, then she had done in private. She would haue spoken to the Gentlemen and people gathered about her: but *Philanax* fearing least thereby some commotion might arise, or at least a hinderance of executing his maisters murderers, which he longed after more then any thing, hastened her vp to the Lodge, where her sister was, and there with a chosen companie of Souldiers to garde the place, lest her with *Philoclea*, *Pamela* protesting they layd violent hands of her, and that they entred into rebellious attemptes against her. But high time it was for *Philanax* so to do: for alreadie was all the whole multitude false into confused and dangerous diuisions.

There was a notable example, how great dissipations, Monarchall gouernement is subiect vnto. For now their Prince and guide had left them, they had not experience to rule, and had not whom to obey. Publike matters had euer bene priuately gouerned, so that they had no liuely taste what was good for themselves. But euerie thing was either vehemently desirefull, or extreemely terrible. Neighbours inuasions, ciuill dissention, cruelty of the comming Prince, and whatsoever in common sence carries a dreadfull shew, was in all mens heads, but in few how to preuent: harkening on euery rumour, suspecting euerie thing, condemning them whom before they had honoured, making strange and impossible tales of the kings death, while they thought themselves in danger, wishing nothing

but safety, as soone as perswasion of safety tooke them, desiring further benefites, as amendment of forepassed faultes (which faultes notwithstanding none could tell either the grounds or effects of) all agreeing in the vniuersall names of liking or misliking, but of what in especiall points, infinitely disagreeing. Altogether like a falling steeple, the parts whereof, as windowes, stones, and pinnacles were well, 5 but the whole masseruinous. And this was the generall case of all, wherein notwithstanding was an extreame medley of diuersified thoughts; the great men looking to make themselues strong by factions, the Gentlemen some lending to them, some standing vpon theselues, some desirous to ouerthrow those few which they thought were ouer them, the souldiers desirous of trouble, as the nurse of spoyle, and not much vnlike to them, though in another way, were all the needie sort, the rich fearfull, the wise carefull. This composition of conceites, brought forth a dangerous tumult, which yet would haue bene more daungerous, but that it had so manie parts, that no body well knew against whom chieslie to oppose themselues. For some there were that cried to haue the state altered, and gouerned no more by a 15 Prince; marie in the alteration, many would haue the *Lacedamonian* gouernment of a few chosen Senatours; others the *Athenian*, where the peoples voyce held the chiefe authoriry. But these were rather the discoursing sort of men, then the actiue, being a matter more in imagination then practise. But they that went nearest to the present case, (as in a countrie that knew no gouernement without a Prince) 20 were they that stroue whom they should make. Whereof a great number there were that would haue the Princessse *Pamela* presently to enioy it: some disdaining that she had as it were abandoned her owne countrie, enclining more to *Philoclea*: and there wanted not of them, which wished *Gynecia* were deliuered, and made Regent till *Pamela* were worthily married. But great multitudes there were, which 25 hauing bene acquainted with the iust gouernment of *Philanax*, meant to establish him as Lieutenant of the state: and these were the most popular sort, who iudged by the commodities they felt. But the principall men in honour and might, who had long before enuied his greatnesse with *Basilus*, did much more spurne against any such preferment of him. For yet before their enuy had some kind of breathing 30 out his rancour, by laying his greatnesse as a fault to the Princes iudgement, who shewed in *Dametas* he might easilie be deceived in mens value. But now if the Princes choice, by so many mouthes should be confirmed, what could they obiekt to so rightly esteemed an excellencie? They therefore were disposed, sooner to yeeld to anything, then to his raising: and were content (for to crosse *Philanax*) to stop 35 those actions, which otherwise they could not but thinke good. *Philanax* himselfe, as much hindred by those, that did immoderately honour him, (which brought both more enuie, and suspition vpon him) as by them that did manifestly resist him (but standing onely vpon a constant desire of iustice, and a cleare conscience) went forward stoutly in the action of his maisters reuenge, which he thought him- 40 selfe particularly bound to. For the rest, as the ordering of the gouernment, he accounted himselfe but as one, wherein notwithstanding he would employ all his loyall endeuour.

But among the Noblemen, he that most openly set himselfe against him, was named *Timantus*, a man of midle age, but of extreame ambition, as one that had placed his vttermost good in greatnesse, thinking small difference by what meanes he came by it. Of commendable wit, if he had not made it a seruant to vnbrideled desires. Cunning to creepe into mens fauours, which he prized onely as they were

were seruiceable vnto him. Hee had bene brought vp in some souldierie, which he knew how to set out with more then deserued ostentation. Seruile (though enuious) to his betters: and no lesse tyrannically minded to them he had aduantage of. Counted reuengefull, but indeed measuring both reuenge and reward, as the partie might either helpe or hurt him. Rather shamelesse then bold, and yet more bold in practises, then in personall aduentures. In summe, a man that could be as euill as he listed, and listed as much as any aduancement might thereby be gotten. As for vertue, he counted it but a schoole name. He euen at the first assembling together, finding the great stroke *Philanax* caried among the people, thought it his readiest way of ambition, to ioyne with him: which though his pride did hardly brooke, yet the other vice carying with it a more apparant object, preuailed ouer the weaker, so that with those liberall protestations of friēdship, which men that care not for their word are wont to bestow, he offered vnto him the choise in marriage of either the sisters, so he would likewise help him to the other, and make such a partition of the
15 *Arcadian* estate. Wishing him, that since he loued his maister, because he was his maister, which shewed the loue began in himselfe, he should rather now occasion was presented, seeke his owne good substantially, then affect the smoke of a glory, by shewing an vntimely fidelitie to him that could not reward it; and haue all the fruit he should get in mens opinions, which would be as diuerse, as many; few agreeing to yeeld him due praise of his true heart. But *Philanax*, who had limited his thoughts in that he esteemed good (to which he was neither caried by the vaine tickling of vncertaine fame, nor from which he would be transported by enioying any thing, wherto the ignorāt world giues the excellent name of goods) with great mislike of his offer, he made him so peremptorie an answer, nor without threatening, if he found him foster any such fancie, that *Timantus* went with an inward spite from him, whom before he had neuer loued; and measuring all mens marches by his owne pace, rather thought it some further fetch of *Philanax* (as that would haue all to himselfe alone) then was any way taken with the louely beautie of his vertue; whose image he had so quite defaced in his owne soule, that he had
30 left himselfe no eyes to behold it, but staid waiting fit oportunitie to execute his desires both for himselfe and against *Philanax*, which by the bringing backe of *Pamela*, the people being deuided into manie motions (which both with murmuring noyses, and putting themselues in seuerall troupes, they well shewed) he thought apt time was laid before him, the waters being (as the prouerbe saith)
35 troubled, and so the better for his fishing. Therefore going amongst the chiefeest Lords, whom he knew principally to repine at *Philanax*, and making a kind of conuocation of them, he inueighed against his proceedings, drawing euerie thing to the most malicious interpretation, that malice it selfe could instruct him to do. He said, it was season for them to looke to such a weed, that else would ouergrow
40 them all. It was not now time to coulsult of the dead, but of the liuing: since such a slie Wolfe was entred among them, that could make iustice the cloake of tyrannie, and loue of his late maister the destruction of his now being children. Do you not see (sayd hee) how farre his corruption hath stretched, that hee hath such a number of rascalles voyces to declare him Lieuteuant, readie to make him Prince,
45 but that he instructs them, matters are not yet ripe for it? As for vs, because we are too rich to be bought, he thinks vs the fitter to be killed. Hath *Arcadia* bred no man but *Philanax*? is she become a stepmother to all the rest, and hath giuen all her blessings to *Philanax*? Or if there be men amongst vs, let vs shew wee

dildaine to be seruants to a seruant, Let vs make him know, we are farre worthier not to be slaues, then he to be a maister. Thinke you he hath made such haste in these matters, to giue them ouer to another mans hand? Thinke you, he durst become the Iaylor of his Princesse, but either meaning to be her maister, or her murtherer? And al this for the deare good wil (forsooth) he beares to the kings memorie, whose authoritie as he abused in his life, so he would now perseuer to abuse his name after his death. O notable affection, for the loue of the father to kill the wife, and disinherite the children! O single-minded modestie to aspire to no lesse then to the Princely Diademe! No, no, he hath viued all this while, but to come the sooner to his affected end. But let vs remember what we be, in qualitie his equals, in number farre before him; let vs deliuer the Queene and our naturall Princesses, and leaue them no longer vnder his authoritie; whose proceedings would rather shew that he himselfe had bene the murtherer of the King, then a fit Gardien of his posterity. These words pierced much into the minds, alreadie inclined that way; insomuch that most part of the Nobilitie confirmed *Timantus* speech, and were readie to execute it: when *Philanax* came among them, and with a constant, but reuerent behauiour, desired them they would not exercise private grudges in so common a necessitie. He acknowledged himselfe a man, and a faultie man, to the clearing or. satisfiing of which, hee would at all times submit himselfe, since his end was to bring all things to an vpright iudgement, it should euill fit him to flie the iudgement. But said he, my Lords, let not *Tymantus* rayling speech (who whatsoeuer he findes euill in his owne soule, can with ease lay it vpon another) make me loose your good fauour. Consider that all well doing stands so in the middle betwixt his two contrary euils, that it is a readie matter to cast a slaunderous shade vpon the most approued vertues. Who hath an euill tongue, can call seueritie, crueltie, and faithfull diligence, diligent ambition. But my end is not to excuse my selfe, nor to accuse him: for both those, hereafter will be time enough. There is neither of vs, whose purging or punishing may so much import to *Arcadia*. Now I request you, for your owne honours sake, and require you by the dutie you owe to this estate, that you do presently (according to the lawes) take in hand the chastisement of our maisters murtherers, and laying order for the gouenement: by whom soeuer it be done, so it be done, and iustly done, I am satisfied. My labour hath bene to frame things so, as you might determine: now it is in you to determine. For my part, I call the heauens to witnesse, the care of my heart stands to repay that, wherein both I, and most of you were tyed to that Prince; with whom all my loue of worldly action is dead.

As *Philanax* was speaking his last words, there came one running to him with open mouth, & fearful eyes, telling him, that there were a great nūber of the people, which were bent to take the yong men out of *Simpatheus* hands, & as it should seeme by their acclamations, were like enough to proclaime them Princes. Nay, said *Philanax*, (speaking aloud, and looking with a iust anger vpon the other Noblemen) it is now season to heare *Timantus* idle slaunders, while strangers become our Lords, and *Basilus* murtherers sit in his throne. But who soeuer is a true *Arcadian*, let him follow me. With that he went toward the place he heard of, followed by those that had euer loued him, & some of the Noblemen. Some other remayning with *Timantus*, who in the meane time was conspiring by strong hand to deliuer *Gynecia*, of whom the weakest guard was had. But *Philanax* where he went, found them all in an vpror, which thus was false out. The greatest multitude of people,

people, that were come to the death of *Basilus*, were the *Mantineans*, as being the nearest Citie to the lodges. Among these, the chiefe man both in authoritie and loue was *Kalander*, he that not long before had bene host to the two Princes, who though he knew not so much as by name, yet besides the obligation he stood bound to them in, for preserving the liues of his sonne & nephew, their noble behaviour had bred such loue in his heart towards them, as both with teares he parted from them, when they left him (vnder promise to returne) and did keepe their iewels and apparell as the relikes of two demy-gods. Among others, he had entred the prison, and seene them, which forthwith so inuested his soule, both with sorow & desire to helpe them (whom he rendred as his children) that calling his neighbors the *Mantineans* vnto him, he told them all the prayses of those two young men, swearing, he thought the Gods had provided for them better, then they theselues could haue imagined. He willed them to consider, that when all was done, *Basilus* children must enioy the state; who since they had chosen, and chosen so, as all the world could not mend their choise, why should they resist Gods doing, & their Princesses pleasure? This was the only way to purchase quietnesse without blood, where otherwise they should at one instant crowne *Pamela* with a Crowne of gold, & a dishonored title: which whether euer she wold forget, he thought it fit for the to weigh: such (said he) heroicall greatnesse shines in their eyes, such an extraordinarie maiesty in all their actions, as surely either fortune by parétage, or nature in creation, hath made them Princes. And yet a state alreadie we haue, we need but a man, who since he is presented vnto you by the heavenly providence, embraced by your vndoubted Princesse, worthie for their youth, of compassion, for their beautie, of admiration, for their excellent vertue to be Monarkes of the world, shall we not be content with our owne blisse? shall we put out our eyes because another man can not see? or rather like some men, when too much good happens vnto them, they thinke themselves in a dreame, and haue not spirits to taste their owne goods? No, no, my friends, beleue me, I am so vnpartiall, that I know not their names, but so overcome with their vertue, that I shall then thinke, the destinies haue ordained a perpetuall flourishing to *Arcadia*, when they shall allot such a gouernour vnto it. This spoken by a man graue in yeares, great in authoritie, neare allyed to the Prince, & known honest, preuailed so with all the *Mantineans*, that with one voyce they ran to deliuer the two Princes. But *Philanax* came in time to withstand the, both sides yet standing in armes, & rather wanting a beginning, then minds to enter into a bloudie conflict. Which *Philanax* foreseeing, thought best to remove the prisoners secretlie, and if neede were, rather without forme of iustice to kill them, then against iustice (as he thought) to haue them vsurpe the state. But there againe arose a new trouble. For *Sympathus* (the noble man that kept them) was so stricken in compassion with their excellent presence, that as he wold not falsifie his promise to *Philanax*, to giue them libertie, so yet would he not yeeld them to himselfe, fearing he would do them violence. Thus tumult vpon tumult arising, the Sun (I thinke) awearie to see their discordes, had already gone downe to his Westerne lodging. But yet to know what the poore shepheards did, who were the first descryers of these matters, will not to some eares perchance be a tedious digression.

Here ends the fourth Booke or Act.

The fourth Eclogues.

THE shepherds finding no place for the in these garboyles, to which their quiet hearts (whose highest ambition was in keeping theſelues vp in goodneſſe) had at all no aptneſſe, retired theſelues from among the clamorous multitude: and as ſorow deſires companie, went vp together to the Weſterne ſide of a hill, whoſe proſpect extended it ſo far, as they might well diſcerne many of *Arcadias* beauties. And there looking vpon the ſunnes as then declining race, the poore men ſate penſiue of their preſent miſeries, as if they found a wearineſſe of their woſull words: till at laſt good old *Geron* (who as he had longeſt taſted the benefits of *Baſilius* gouernmēt ſo ſeemed to haue a ſpeciall feeling of the preſent loſſe) wiping his eyes and long white beard bedewd with great drops of teares, began in this ſort to complaine. Alas poore ſheepe (ſaid he) which hitherto haue enioyed your fruitfull paſture, in ſuch quietneſſe as your wooll amōgſt other things hath made this cōtrie famous, your beſt dayes are now paſt: now you muſt become the victuall of an armie, and perchaunce an armie of forraine enemies: you are now not onely to feare home-
Volues, but alien *Lyons*; now (I ſay) now that our right *Baſilius* is deceaſed. Alas, ſweet paſtures, ſhal ſouldiers that know not how to vſe you, poſſeſſe you? Shall they that can not ſpeake *Arcadian* language be Lords ouer your ſhepherds? For alas with good cauſe may we looke for any euill, ſince *Baſilius* our onely ſtrength is taken from vs. To that all the other ſhepherds preſent vttered pitifull voyces, eſpecially the verie borne *Arcadians*. For as for the other, though humanitie moued them to pitie humane caſes, eſpecially in a Prince, vnder whom they had found a refuge of their miſeries, and iuſtice equally adminiſtred: yet could they not ſo naturally fee the liuely touch of ſorow. Neuertheſſe, of that number one *Agelaſtus* notably noted among them, as well for his ſkill in poetrie, as for an auſterely maintained ſorowfulneſſe, wherewith he ſeemed to deſpiſe the works of nature, framing an vniuerſall complaint in that vniuerſall miſchiefe, vttered it in this ſeltine:

*Since wayling is a bud of cauſefull ſorow,
 Since ſorow is the follower of euill fortune,
 Since no euill fortune equals publike damage:
 Now Princes loſſe hath made our damage publike;
 Sorow pay we to thee the rights of Nature,
 And inward griefe ſeale vp withoutward wailing.*

*VVhy ſhould we ſpare our voice from endleſſe wailing,
 VVho iuſtly make our harts the ſeate of ſorow?
 In ſuch a caſe where it appears that nature
 Doth adde her force vnto the ſting of fortune:
 Choofing alas! this our threatre publike,
 VVhere they would leaue trophees of cruell damage.*

*Then ſince ſuch pow'rs conſpir'd vnto our damage
 (VVhich may be knowne, but neuer helpt with wayling)
 Yet let vs leaue a monument in publike
 Of willing teares, torne haires, and cries of ſorow.*

For

For lost, lost is by blowe of cruell fortune
Arcadias gemme, the noblest childe of nature.

O nature doting old, O blinded nature,
How hast thou torne thy selfe! sought thine owne damage!
In graunting such a scope to filthy fortune,
By thy impes losse to fill the world with wailing.
Cast thy stepmother eyes vpon our sorow,
I blique our losse: so, see, thy shame is publique.

O that we had, to make our woes more publique,
Seas in our eyes, & brasen tongues by nature,
A yelling voice, & hearts compos'd of sorow,
Breath made of flames, wits knowing noughs but damage,
Our sports murdering our selues, our musiques wailing,
Our studies fixt vpon the falles of fortune.

No, no, our mischiefe growes in this vile fortune,
That priuate paines can not breath out in publique
The furious inward griefs with hellish wailing:
But forced are to burthen feeble nature
VVith secret sense of our eternall damage,
And sorow feede, feeding our soules with sorow.

Since sorow then concludeth all our fortune
VVith all our deaths shew we this damage publique.
His nature feares to die who lines still wailing.

It seemed that this cōplaint of *Agelastus* had awaked the spirits of the *Arcadians*,
astonished before with exceedingnesse of sorow. For he had scarcely ended, when
diuerse of them offred to follow his example, in bewayling the general losse of that
countrie which had bene aswell a nurse to straungers, as a mother to *Arcadians*. A-
mong therest one accounted good in that kinde, and made the better by the true
feeling of sorowe, roared out a song of lamentation, which (as well as might be)
was gathered vp in this forme:

Since that to death is gone the shepheard hie,
VVho most the silly shepheards pipe did pryse,
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.

And you ô trees (if any life there lies
In trees) now through your porous barks receaue
The strange resound of these my cansefull cries:
And let my breath vpon your branches cleaue,
My breath distinguish'd into words of woe,
That so I may signes of my sorrow leaue.
But if among your selues some one tree grow,
That aptest is to figure miserie,
Let it embassage beare your grieues to show.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

*The weeping Mirrhe I thinke will not denie
Her help to this, this iustest cause of plaint.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

*And thou poore Earth, whom fortune doth attaint,
In Natures name to suffer such a harme,
As for to loose thy gemme, and such a Saint,
Vpon thy face let coaly Ravens swarme:*

*Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be:
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.
Let gold now rust, let Diamonds wast in thee:
Let pearls be wan with woe their damme doth beare:
Thy selfe henceforth the light doo neuer see.*

*And you, o flowers, which sometimes Princes were,
Till these straunge altrings you did hap to trie,
Of Princes losse your selues for tokens reare.*

*Lilly in mourning blacke thy whitenesse die:
O Hyacinthe let Aie be on thee still.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

*O Echo, all these woods with roaring fill,
And do not onely marke the accents last,
But all, for all reach out my wailefull will:*

*One Echo to another Echo cast
Sound of my griefes, and let it neuer end,
Till that it hath all woods and waters past,
Nay to the heau'ns your iust complaining send,
And stay the starres inconstant constant race,
Till that they do vnto our dolors bend:*

*And aske the reason of that speciall grace,
That they, which haue no lines, should liue so long,
And vertuous soules so soone should loose their place?*

*Aske, if in great men good men do so throng,
That he for want of elbow roome must die?
Or if that they be skant, if this be wrong?*

*Did VVisdome this our wretched time espie
In one true chest to rob all Vertues treasure?
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.*

*And if that any counsell you to measure
Your dolefull tunes, to them still playning say,
To well felt grieffe, plaint is the onely pleasure.*

*O light of Sunne, which is entit'led day,
O well thou doest that thou no longer bidest;
For mourning light her blacke weedes may display.*

*O Phoebus with good cause thy face thou hidest,
Rather then haue thy all-beholding eye
Fowl'd with this sight, while thou thy chariot guidest.*

And

*And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie
A stately tombe to couer him deceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

5 O Philomela with thy brest oppressed
By shame and grieve, help, help me to lament
Such cursed harmes as cannot be redressed.
10 Or if thy mourning notes be fully spent,
Then giue a quiet eare vnto my plaining:
For I to teach the world complaint am bent.
Thou dimmy clouds, which well employ your staining
This cheerefull aire with your obscured cheere,
VVitnesse your wofull teares with daily rayning.
15 And if, O Sunne, thou euer didst appeare,
In shape, which by mans eye might be perceined,
Vertue is dead, now set thy triumph here.
Now set thy triumph in this world, bereaued
Of what was good, where now no good doth lie:
And by thy pompe our losse will be conceined.
20 O notes of mine your selues together tie:
VVith too much grieve me thinks you are dissolued,
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.

25 Time euer old, and yong is still resolued
VVithin it selfe, and neuer tasteth end:
But mankind is for aye to nought resolued.
The filthy snake her aged coat can mend,
And getting youth againe, in youth doth flourish:
But vnto Man, age euer death doth send.
30 The verie trees with grafting we can cherish,
So that we can long time produce their time:
But man which helpeth them, helpelesse must perish.
Thus, thus the mindes, which ouer all do cline,
VVhen they by yeares experience get best graces,
35 Must finish then by deaths detested crime.
VVe last short while, and build long lasting places:
Ab let vs all against foule Nature crie:
VVe Natures workes do help, she vs defaces.
For how can Nature vnto this reply?
40 That she her child, I say, her best child killeth?
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now apply.

45 Alas, me thinks, my weakned voice but spillet, h
The vehement course of this iust lamentation:
Me thinks, my sound no place with sorrow fillet, h
I know not I, but once in detestation
I haue my selfe, and all what life containeth,
Since Death on Vertues fort hath made inuasion.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES

One word of woe another after traineth:

Ne do I care how rude be my inuention,
So it be seene what sorrow in me raigneth.

O Elements, by whose (men say) contention,
Our bodies be in liuing power maintained,
VVas this mans death the fruit of your dissention?
O Phisicks power, which (some say) hath restrained
Approch of death, alas thou helpest meagerly,
VVhen once one is for Atropos distrained.
Great be Phisitions brags, but aid is beggerly,
VVhen rooted moisture failes, or groweth drie,
They leaue off all, and say, death comes too eagerly.
They are but words therefore that men do buy
Of any, since God Æsculapius ceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now apply.

Iustice, iustice is now (alas) oppressed:

Bountifulnesse hath made his last conclusion:
Goodnesse for best attire in dust is dressed.
Shepheards bewaile your vttermost confusion;
And see by this picture to you presented,
Death is our home, life is but a delusion.

For see alas, who is from you absented?

Absented? nay I say for euer banished

From such as were to dye for him consented?

Out of our sight in turne of hand is vanished

Shepherd of shepheards, whose well settled order
Private with wealth, publike with quiet garnished.

VVhile he did liue, farre, farre was all disorder;

Example more preuailing then direction,

Far was home strife, and far was foe from border.

His life a law, his looke a full correction:

As in his health we healthfull were preserved,

So in his sicknesse grow our sure infection.

His death our death. But ah, my Muse hath swarned,

From such deepe plaint as should such woes descric,

VVhich he of vs for euer hath deserved.

The stile of heauie hart can neuer flie

So high, as should make such a paine notorious:

Cease Muse therefore: thy dart o Death applie,

And farewell Prince, whom goodnesse hath made glorious.

Many were readie to haue followed this course, but the day was so wasted, that onely this riming *Sestine* deliuered by one of great account among them, could obtaine fauour to be heard.

Farewell O Sunne, Arcadias clearest light:

Farewell O pearle, the poore mans plenteous treasure.

Farewell O golden staffe, the weake mans might:

Farewell O toy, the ioyfull onely pleasure.

VVis dome

*Wisdomes farewell, the skillesse mans direction:
Farewell with thee, farewell all our affection.*

*For what place now is left for our affection,
Now that of purest lampe is quench'd the light,
Which to our darkned mindes was best direction?
Now that the mine is lost of all our treasure?
Now death hath swallow'd up our worldly pleasure,
We Orphans made, void of all publique might?*

*Orphans in deede, depriv'd of fathers might:
For he our father was in all affection,
In our well doing placing all his pleasure,
Still studying how to vs to be a light.
As well he was in peace a safest treasure:
In warre his wit & word was our direction.*

*VVhence, whence alas, shall we seeke our direction?
VVhen that we feare our hatefull neighbors might,
VVho long haue gap't to get Arcadians treasure.
Shall we now finde a guide of such affection,
VVho for our sakes will thinke all trauaile light,
And make his paine to keepe vs safe his pleasure?*

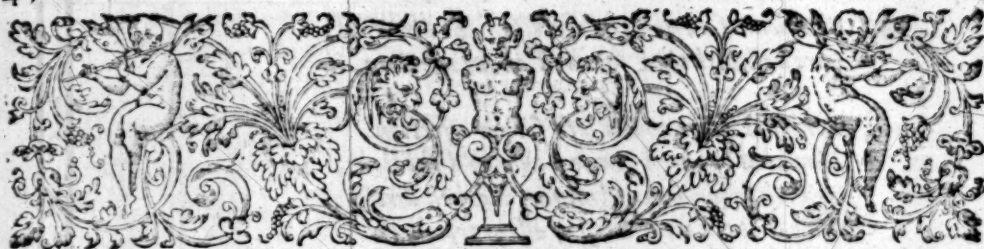
*No, no, for euer gone is all our pleasure;
For euer wandring from all good direction;
For euer blinded of our clearest light;
For euer lamed of our sared might;
For euer banish'd from well plac'd affection;
For euer robd of all our royall treasure.*

*Let teares for him therefore be all our treasure,
And in our wailfull naming him our pleasure:
Let hating of our selues be our affection,
And vnto death bend still our thoughts direction:
Let vs against our selues employ our might,
And putting out our eyes seeke we our light.*

*Farewell our light, farewell our spoiled treasure:
Farewell our might, farewell our daunted pleasure:
Farewell direction: farewell all affection.*

The night began to cast her darke Canopie ouer them, and they euen wearie with their woes bended homewards: hoping by sleepe, forgetting them selues, to ease their present dolours: when they were met with a troupe of twentie horse, the chiefe of which asking them for the King, and vnderstanding the hard newes, thereupon stayed among them expecting the returne of a messenger whom with speede he dispatched to *Philanax*.

The end of the fourth Booke.



THE FIFTH BOOKE OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

(.)

THE dangerous diuision of mens mindes, the ruinous renting
of all estates, had nowe brought *Arcadia* to feeble the pangs
of vttermost perill (such conuulsions neuer comming, but
that the life of that gouernmēt drawes neere his necessarie
period) when to the honest and wise *Philanax*, equally di-
stracted betwixt desire of his maisters reuenge & care, of the
estates establishment, there came (vnlooked for) a *Macedonian*
Gentleman, who in short, but pithy manner deliuered vnto him, that the renom-
med *Euarchus*, King of *Macedon*, purposing to haue visited his olde frend and con-
federate the King *Basilus*, was now come within halfe a mile of the Lodges, where
hauing vnderstood by certaine Shepheards, the sodain death of their Prince, had
sent vnto him, (of whose authoritie & faith he had good knowledge) desiring him to
aduertise him, in what securitie he might rest there for that night, where willingly
he would (if safely he might) helpe to celebrate the funerals of his auncient compa-
nion & allie, adding he need not doubt, since he had brought but twenty in his com-
pany, he would be so vnwise as to enter into any forcible attempt with so small
force. *Philanax* hauing entertayned the Gentleman, aswell as in the midst of so
many tumults he could, pausing awhile with himselfe, considering how it should
not onely be vniust, and against the lawe of Nations, not well to receiue a Prince
whom good will had brought among them, but (in respect of the greatnesse of his
might) very dangerous to giue him any cause of due offence; remembering withall
the excellent trials of his equitie, which made him more famous then his victories,
he thought he might be the fittest instrument to redresse the ruines they were in,
since his goodnesse put him without suspition, and his greatnesse beyond enuie.
Yet weighing with him selfe how hard many heads were to be bridled, and that in
this monstrous confusion such mischief might be attempted, of which late repen-
taunce should after be but a simple remedy: he iudged best first to knowe how the
peoples mindes would sway to this determination. Therefore desiring the Gentle-
man to returne to the King his maister, and to beseech him (though with his
paynes) to stay for an houre or two, where he was, till he had set things in better
order to receiue him: he himselfe went first to the Noblemen, then to *Kalander*
and the principall *Mantineans*, who were most opposite vnto him; desiring them,
that

that as the night had most blessedly stayed them frō entring into ciuill bloud, so they would be contēt in the night to assemble the people together, to heare some newes, which he was to deliuer vnto them. There is nothing more desirous of nouelties, then a man that feares his present fortune. Therefore they, whom mutuall diffidence
 5 made doubtfull of their vtter destruction, were quickly perswaded to heare of any new matter, which might alter at least, if not helpe the nature of their feare. Namely the chiefeit men, who as they had most to lose, so were most ieaious of their owne case, and were already growne as weary to be followers of *Timautus* ambitio, as before they were enuiers of *Philanax* worthinesse. As for *Kalander* & *Sympathus*, as in
 10 the one a vertuous friendship had made him seeke to aduance, in the other a natural commiseration had made him willing to protect the excellēt (though vnfortunate) prisoners, so were they not against this conuocation. For hauing nothing but iust desires in them, they did not mistrust the iustifying of them. Onely *Timautus* laboured to haue withdrawne them from this assembly, saying, it was time to stop their
 15 eares from the ambitious charmes of *Philanax*. Let them first deliuer *Gynecia*, and her daughters, which were fit persons to heare, and then they might begin to speake. That this was but *Philanax* comming, to linke broyle vpō broyle, because he might auoyd the answering of his trespasses, which as he had long intended, so had he prepared coloured speeches to disguise them. But as his wordes expressed rather a vio-
 20 lence of rancour, then any iust ground of accusation, so pierced they no further, thē to some partiall eares, the multitude yeelding good attētiō to what *Philanax* would propose vnto them: Who, like a man whole best building was a well-framed conscience, neither with plausible wordes, nor fawning countenance, but euen with the graue behaiour of a wise father, whom nothing but loue makes to chide, thus sayd
 25 vnto them. I haue (sayd he) a great matter to deliuer vnto you, and thereout am I to make a greater demaund of you: But truely such hath this late proceeding bene of yours, that I know not what is not to be demaunded of you. Me thinkes I may haue reason to require of you, as men are wont among Pirates, that the life of him that neuer hurt you, may be safe. Me thinkes I am not without apparence of cause, as if
 30 you were *Cyclopes* or *Cannibals*, to desire that our Princes body, which hath thirtie yeares maintained vs in a flourishing peace, be not torne in peeces, or deuoured among you, but may be suffered to yeeld it selfe, which neuer was defiled with any of your blouds, to the naturall rest of the earth. Me thinkes, not as to *Arcadians*, renowned for your faith to Prince, and loue of countrey, but as to sworne enemies of
 35 this sweet soyle, I am to desire you, that at least, if you will haue straungers to your Princes, yet you will not deliuer the seignorie of this goodly Kingdome to your noble Kings murtherers. Lastly, I haue reason, as if I had to speake to mad men, to desire you to be good to your selues: For before God, what either barbarous violence, or vnnaturall follie, hath not this day had his seate in your mindes, and left his foot-
 40 steps in your actions? But in troth I loue you too well, to stand long displaying your faults: I would you your selues did forget them, so you did not fall againe into them. For my part, I had much rather be an Orator of your prayses. But now (if you will suffer attentiuē iudgement, and not foreiudging passion, to be the waigher of my wordes) I will deliuer vnto you what a blessed meane the Gods haue sent vnto you, if
 45 you list to embrace it. I thinke there is none amōg you so young, either in yeares, or vnderstāding, but hath heard the true fame of that iust Prince *Euarchus* king of *Macedon*. A Prince with whom our late maister did euer hold most perfect alliance. He, euen he, is this day come, hauing but twentie horse with him, within two myles of

this place, hoping to haue found the vertuous *Basilus* aliue, but now willing to do honour to his death. Surely, surely the heauenly powers haue in so full a time bestowed him on vs, to vnite our diuisions. For my part therefore I wish, that since among our selues we can not agree in so manifold partialities, we do put the ordering of all these things into his hands, aswell touching the obsequies of the King, the punishment of his death, as the mariage and crowning of our Princesse. He is both by experience and wisdom taught how to direct: his greatnesse such, as no man can disdain to obey him: his equitie such, as no man neede to feare him. Lastly, as he hath all these qualities to helpe, so hath he (though he would) no force to hurt. If therefore you so thinke good, since our lawes beare that our Princes murder be chastised before his murdered body be buried, we may inuite him to sit to morow in the iudgement seate; which done, you may after proceede to the buriall. Whē *Philanax* first named *Enarchus* landing, there was a muttring murmur among the people, as though in that euill ordered weaknes of theirs he had come to conquer their countrey. But when they vnderstood he had so small a retinue, whil-
 15 pring one with another, and looking who should begin to confirme *Philanax* proposition, at length *Sympathus* was the first that allowed it, then the rest of the Noblemen, neither did *Kalander* strue, hoping so excellent a Prince could not but deale graciously with two such young men, whose authoritie ioyned to *Philanax*, all the popular sort followed. *Timantus* still blinded with his owne ambitious hast (not
 20 remembring factions are no longer to be trusted, then the factious may be perswaded it is for their owne good) would needes strue against the streame, exclaiming against *Philanax*, that now he shewed who it was, that would betray his countrey to straungers. But well he found, that who is too busie in the foundation of an house, may pull the building about his eares. For the people already tyred with their
 25 owne diuisions, (of which his clampring had bene a principall nurse) and beginning now to espye a haue of rest, hated any thing that should hinder them from it: asked one another whether this were not he, whose euill tounge no man could escape? whether it were not *Timantus* that made the first mutinous Oration, to strengthen the troubles? whether *Timantus*, without their consent, had not gone
 30 about to deliuer *Ginecia*? And thus inflaming one another against him, they threw him out of the assemblie, and after pursued him with stones and staues, so that with losse of one of his eyes, sore wounded and beaten, he was faine to flye to *Philanax* feete, for succour of his life: giuing a true lesson, that vice it selfe is forced to seeke the sanctuarie of vertue. For *Philanax* who hated his euill, but not his per-
 35 son, and knew that a iust punishment might by the maner be vniustly done; remembring withall, that although herein the peoples rage might haue hit rightly, yet if it were nourished in this, no man knew to what extremities it might extend it selfe: with earnest dealing, and employing the vttermost of his authoritie, he did protect the trembling *Timantus*. And then hauing taken a generall oath,
 40 that they should in the nonage of the Princesse, or till these things were settled, yeeld full obedience to *Enarchus*, so farre as were not preiudiciall to the lawes, customes, and liberties of *Arcadia*: and hauing taken a particular bond of *Sympathus* (vnder whom he had a seruauant of his owne) that the prisoners should be kept close, without conference with any man, he himselfe honorably accompanied with a great
 45 number of torches went to the king *Enarchus*, whose comming in this sort into *Arcadia* had thus fallen out.

The wofull Prince *Plangus* receiuing of *Basilus* no other succours but onely cer-
 taine

taine to conduct him to *Euarchus*, made all possible speede towards *Byzantium*,
 where he vnderstood the King, hauing concluded all his warres with the winning
 of that towne, had now for some good space made his abode. But being farre gone
 on his way, he receiued certaine intelligence, that *Euarchus* was not onely some
 5 dayes before returned into *Macedon*, but since was gone with some hast to visit
 that coast of his countrey that lay towards *Italy*. The occasion giuen by the *Latines*,
 who hauing already gotten into their hands, partly by conquest, and partly by
 confederacie, the greatest part of *Italy*, and long gaped to deuoure *Greece* also
 (observing the present oportunitie of *Euarchus* absence, and *Basilus* solitarinesse,
 10 which two Princes they knew to be in effect the whole strength of *Greece*) were
 euen ready to lay an vniust gripe vpon it, which after they might beautifie with
 the noble name of conquest. Which purpose though they made not knowne by
 any solemne denouncing of warre, but contrariwise gaue many tokens of conti-
 nuing still their former amitie: yet the staying of his subiectes shippes, traffiking
 15 as Marchants into those partes, together with the dayly preparation of shipping,
 and other warlike prouisions in Portes, most conuenient for the transporting of
 souldiers, occasioned *Euarchus* (not vnacquainted with such practises) first to su-
 spect, then to discern, lastly, to seeke to preuent the intended mischiefe. Yet thin-
 king warre neuer to be accepted, vntill it be offered by the hand of necessitie, he de-
 20 termined so long openly to hold them his friends, as open hostilitie bewrayed them
 not his enemies; not ceasing in the meane time by letters and messages to moue the
 States of *Greece* by vnitng their strength, to make timely prouision against this pe-
 rill: by many reasons making them see, that, though in respect of place some of them
 might seeme further remoued from the first violence of the storme, yet being im-
 25 barked in the same ship, the finall wracke must needs be common to them all. And
 knowing the mighty force of example, with the weake effect of faire discourfes not
 waited on with agreeable actions, what he perswaded them, himselfe performed,
 leauing in his owne realme nothing either vndone or vnprouided, which might be
 thought necessary for withstanding an inuasion. His first care was to put his people
 30 in a readinesse for warre, and by his experienced souldiers to traine the vnskilfull to
 martiall exercises. For the better effecting whereof, as also for meeting with other
 inconueniences in such doubtful times incident to the most settled states, making of
 the diuerse regions of his whole kingdome so many diuisions as he thought conue-
 nient, he appointed the charge of them to the greatest, and of greatest trust he had
 35 about him: arming them with sufficient authoritie to leaue forces within their se-
 uerall gouernements, both for resisting the inuading enemy, and punishing the dis-
 ordered subiect. Hauing thus prepared the body, and assured the heart of his coun-
 trey against any mischiefe that might attaint it, he then tooke into his carefull con-
 sideration the externall partes, giuing order both for the repairing and increasing
 40 his navy, and for the fortifying of such places, especially on the sea coast, as either
 commoditie of landing, weakenesse of the countrey, or any other respect of aduan-
 tage was likeliest to draw the enemy vnto. But being none of them who thinke all
 things done, for which they haue once giuen direction, he followed euery where his
 commandement with his presence, which witnesse of euery mans slacknesse or dili-
 45 gence, chastising the one, & encouraging the other, suffered not the fruite of any pro-
 fitable counsell for want of timely taking to be lost. And thus making one place
 succede another in the progresse of wisdom & vertue, he was now come to *Aulon*
 a principall port of his realme, when the poore *Plangus* extreamely wearied with his

long journey (desire of succouring *Erona* no more relieving, then feare of not succouring her in time aggrauating his trauell) by a lamentable narration of his childrens death, called home his cares from encountring forreine enemies, to suppress the insurrection of inward passions. The matter so hainous, the maner so villanous, the losse of such persons, in so vnripe yeares, in a time so dangerous to the whole state of *Greece*, how vehemētly it moued to griefe and cōpassiō others, only not blind to the light of vertue, nor deafe to the voyce of their country, might perchance by a more cuuning workman in liuely colours be deliuered. But the face of *Euarchus* sorrow, to the one in nature, to both in affection, a father, & iudging the world so much the more vnworthily depriued of those excellēcies, as himself was better iudge of so excellēt worthines, can no otherwise be shadowed out by the skilfullest pencell the by couering it ouer with the vaile of silēce. And indeed that way himself tooke, with so patient a quietnes receiuing this pitifull relation, that all words of weakenes suppressed, magnanimitie seemed to triumph ouer misery. Only receiuing of *Plangus* perfit instruction of all things cōcerning *Plexirtus* & *Artaxia*, with promise not only to aide him in deliuering *Erona*, but also with vehemēt protestatiō, neuer to returne into *Macedon*, till he had pursued the murtherers to death: he dispatched with speed a ship for *Byzantium*, cōmāding the gouernour to provide all necessaries for the war against his owne comming, which he purposed should be verie shortly. In this ship *Plangus* would needs go, impatient of stay, for that in many dayes before he had vnderstood nothing of his Ladies estate. Soone after whose departure, newes was brought to *Euarchus*, that all the ships detained in *Italie* were returned. For the *Latines* finding by *Euarchus* proceedings their intēt to be frustrate (as before by his soldaine returne they doubted it was discouered) deeming it no wisdome to shew the will, not hauing the abilitie to hurt, had not only in free & friendly maner dismissed them, but for the time wholly omitted their enterprise, attending the oportunitie of fitter occasion. By meanes wherof *Euarchus*, rid frō the cumber of that war (likely otherwise to haue stayed him longer) with so great a fleete as hast would suffer him to assemble, forthwith imbarqued for *Byzantium*. And now followed with fresh winds he had in short time run a long course, when on a night encountred with an extreame tempest, his ships were so scattered, that scarcely any two were left together. As for the Kings owne ship, depriued of all company, fore brusēd, and weather-beaten, able no longer to brooke the seas churlish entertainment, a litle before day it recouered the shore. The first light made the see it was the vnhappy coast of *Laconia*: for no other country could haue shown the like euidence of vnnaturall war. Which hauing long endured betweene the nobility and the *Helotes*, and once compounded by *Pyrocles*, vnder the name of *Daiphantus*, immediatly vpon his departure had broken out more violently then euer before. For the King taking the oportunitie of their Captaines absence, refused to performe the conditions of peace, as extorted from him by rebellious violence. Whereupon they were againe deeply entered into warre, with so notable an hatred towards the very name of a King, that *Euarchus* (though a straunger vnto them) thought it not safe there to leaue his person, where neither his owne force could be a defence, nor the sacred name of Maiestie, a protection. Therefore calling to him an *Arcadian* (one that comming with *Plangus* had remained with *Euarchus*, desirous to see the warres) he demaunded of him for the next place of suretie, where he might make his stay, vntill he might heare somewhat of his fleete, or cause his ship to be repaired. The Gentleman glad to haue this occasion of doing seruice to *Euarchus*, and honour to *Basilus* (to whom he

he knew he should bring a most welcome guest) told him, that if it pleased him to commit himselfe to *Arcadia*, (a part whereof lay open to their vew) he would vnder- take ere the next night were far spent to guide him safely to his master *Basilus*. The present necessitie much preuailed with *Euarchus*, yet more a certaine vertuous desire
5 to trie, whether by his authoritie he might withdraw *Basilus* from burying himselfe aliue, and to imploy the rest of his old yeares in doing good, the onely happie action of mans life. For besides the vniuersall case of *Greece*, depriued by this meanes of a principall pillar, he weighed and pitied the pitifull state of the *Arcadian* people, who were in worse case then if death had taken away their Prince. For so yet their neces-
10 sitie would haue placed some one to the helme: now, a Prince being, and not doing like a Prince, keeping and not exercising the place, they were in so much more euill case, as they could not prouide for their euil. These rightly wise & vertuous consid- erations especially moued *Euarchus* to take his iourney towards the desert, where ar- riuing within night, and vnderstanding to his great griefe, the newes of the Princes
15 death, he wayted for his safe conduct from *Philanax*: in the meane time taking his rest vnder a tree, with no more affected pompes, then as a man that knew, howsoe- uer he was exalted, the beginning and end of his body was earth. But *Philanax* as soone as he was in sight of him, lighting from his horse, presented himselfe vnto him in all those humble behauiours, which not onely the great reuerence of the partie, but
20 the conceit of ones owne miserie, is wont to frame. *Euarchus* rase vp vnto him with so gracious a countenance, as the goodnesse of his minde had long exercised him vnto: carefull so much more to descend in all curtesies, as he saw him beare a low re- presentation of his afflicted state. But to *Philanax*, as soone as by neare looking on him, he might perfectly behold him, the grauitie of his countenance, & yeares, not
25 much vnlike to his late deceassed, but euer beloued master, brought his forme so liuely vnto his memorie, and reuiued so all the thoughts of his wonted ioyes within him, that in steede of speaking to *Euarchus*, he stood a while like a man gone a farre iourney frō himself, calling as it were with his minde an account of his losses: imagi- ning that this paine needed not, if nature had not bin violently stopped of her owne
30 course: & casting more louing then wise conceits, what a world this would haue bin, if this sudden accident had not interrupted it. And so far strayed he into his rauing melancholie, that his eyes nimbler then his tounge, let fall a floud of teares, his voyce being stopped with extremitie of sobbing, so much had his friendship caried him to *Basilus*, that he thought no age was timely for his death. But at length taking the oc-
35 cation of his owne weeping, he thus did speake to *Euarchus*. Let not my teares most worthily renowned Prince make my presence vnpleasant, or my speech vnmarked of you. For the iustnesse of the cause, takes away the blame of any weakenesse in me; and the affinitie that the same beareth to your greatnesse, seemes euen lawfully to claime pitie in you: A Prince of a Princes fall, a louer of iustice, of a most vniust vio-
40 lence. And giue me leaue excellēt *Euarchus* to say, I am but the representer of all the late flourishing *Arcadia*, which now with mine eyes doth weepe, with my tounge doth complaine, with my knees doth lay it self at your feete, which neuer haue bin vnrea- dy to carie you to the vertuous protecting of innocents. Imagine, vouchsafe to ima- gine, most wise and good King, that here is before your eyes, the pitifull spectacle of
45 a most dolorously ending tragedie: wherein I do but play the part of all the new miserable prouince, which being spoiled of their guide, doth lye like a ship without a Pilot, tumbling vp and downe in the vncertaine waues, till it either runne it selfe vpon the rockes of selfe-diuisiō, or be ouerthrowne by the stormie winde of for-

reine force. *Arcadia* finding her selfe in these desolate termes, doth speake, and I speake for her, to thee not vainly puissant Prince, that since now she is not onely robbed of the naturall support of her Lord, but so suddenly robbed, that she hath not breathing time to stand for her safetie: so vnfortunately, that it doth apall their mindes, though they had leifure: and so mischieuously, that it doth exceede both the suddenesse and infortunatenesse of it: thou wilt lend thine arme vnto her, and as a man, take compassion of mankind, as a vertuous man chaftice most abhominable vice, and as a Prince protect a people, which all haue with one voyce called for thy goodnesse: thinking, that as thou art onely able, so thou art fully able, to redresse their imminent ruines. They do therefore with as much confidence as necessity, flie vnto you for succour, they lay themselues open to you: to you, I meane your selfe, such as you haue euer bene: that is to say, one, that hath alwayes had his determinations bounded with equitie. They onely reserue the right to *Basilus* blood; the maner to the auncient prescribing of their lawes. For the rest without exception, they yeeld ouer vnto you, as to the elected protectour of this kingdome, which name and office they beseech you till you haue layd a sufficient foundation of tranquillitie to take vpon you; the particularitie both of their statutes and demaundes you shall presently after vnderstand. Now only I am to say vnto you, that this country falls to be a faire field, to prooue whether the goodlie tree of your vertue, will liue in all soiles. Here I say will be seene, whether either feare can make you short, or the likerousnesse of dominion make you beyond iustice. And I can for conclusion say no more but this, you must thinke vpon my wordes and your answer, depend not only the quiet, but the liues of so many thousands, which for their auncient confederacie, in this their extreame necessity, desire neither the expence of your treasure, nor hazard of your subiects, but onely the benefit of your wisdom, whose both glory and encrease standes in the exercising of it. The summe of this request was vtterly vnlooked for of *Euarchus*, which made him the more diligent in marking his speech, and after his speech take the greater pause for a perfect resolution. For as of the one side, he thought nature required nothing more of him then that he should be a helpe to them of like creation, and had his heart no whit commaundered with feare, thinking his life well passed, hauing satisfied the tyrannie of time with the course of many yeares, the expectation of the world with more then expected honour, lastly the tribute due to his owne minde with the dayly offering of most vertuous actions: so of the other he wayed the iust reproch that followed those who easily enter into other folkes businesse, with the opinion might be conceiued, loue of seignorie rather then of iustice, had made him embarke himselfe thus, into a matter nothing pertaining to him, especially in a time when earnest occasion of his owne businesse so greatly required his presence. But in the end wisdom being an essentiall and not an opinionate thing, made him rather to bend to what was in it selfe good, then what by euill mindes might be iudged not good. And therein did see, that though that people did not belong vnto him, yet doing good which is not inclosed within any termes of people did belong vnto him, & if necessity forced him for some time to abide in *Arcadia*, the necessitie of *Arcadia* might iustly demaund some fruite of abiding. To this secret assurance of his owne worthinesse (which although it be neuer so well cloathed in modestie, yet alwayes liues in the worthiest mindes) did much push him forward, saying vnto himselfe, the treasure of those inward giftes he had, were bestowed by the heauens vpon him, to be beneficiall and not idle. On which determination resting and yet willing before he waded

ded any further, to examine well the depth of the others proffer; he thus with that well appeased gesture, vnpassionate nature bestoweth vpon mankind, made answer to *Philanax* most vrgent petition. Although long experience hath made me know, all men (and so Princes which be but men) to be subiect to infinite casualties, the very constitution of our liues remaining in continuall chaunge: yet the affaires of this countrey, or at least my meeting so iumply with them, makes me abashed with the straungenesse of it. With much paine I am come hither to see my long approued friend, and now I finde if I will see him, I must see him dead: after, for mine owne security, I seeke to be warranted mine owne life: and there suddenly am I appointed to
10 be a iudge of other mens liues, though a friend to him, yet am I a straunger to the countrey, and now of a straunger you would suddenly make a director. I might obiect to your desire my weakenesse, which age perhaps hath wrought in minde and bodie: and iustly I may pretend the necessitie of mine owne affaires, which as I am by all true rules most nearly tyed, so can they not lbg beare the delay of my absence.
15 But though I would and could dispence with these difficulties, what assurance can I haue of the peoples will? Which hauing so many circles of imaginations can hardly be inclosed in one point. Who knowes a people, that knowes not sudden opinion makes them hope, which hope if it be not answered, they fall in hate? Chusing and refusing, erecting, and ouerthrowing, according as the presentnesse of any
20 fancie caries them. Euen this their hastie drawing to me, makes me thinke they will be as hastily withdrawen from me, for it is but one ground of inconstancie, soone to take or soone to leaue. It may be they haue heard of *Euarchus* more then cause: their own eyes wilbe perhaps more curious iudges, out of hearesay they may haue builded many conceits, which I can not, perchaunce will not performe, then will vn-
25 deserued repentance be a greater shame and iniurie vnto me, then their vnderdeserued proffer is honour. And to conclude I must be fully informed, how the patient is minded, before I can promise to vndertake the cure. *Philanax* was not of the moderne mindes, who make suters magistrates: but did euer thinke the vnwilling worthy man, was fitter then the vnderdeseruing desirer. Therefore the more *Euarchus* drew
30 backe, the more hee found in him that the cunningest pilot doth most dread the rockes, the more earnestly he pursued his publique request vnto him. He desired him not to make any weake excuses of his weakenesse, since so many examples had well proued his minde was strong to ouerpasse the greatest troubles, and his bodie strong inough to obey his minde; and that so long as they were ioyned together, he
35 knew *Euarchus* would thinke it no wearisome exercise, to make them vessels of vertuous actiōs. The dutie to his countrey, he acknowledged, which as he had so settled, as it was not to feare any sudden alteration, so since it did want him, as well it might endure a fruitfull as an idle absence. As for the doubt he conceiued of the peoples constancie in this their election, he sayd it was such a doubt as all humane acti-
40 ons are subiect vnto: yet as much as in politike matters, which receiue not Geometrical certainties, a man may assure himselfe there was euident likelyhood to be conceiued, of the continuance, both in their vnanimitie, and his worthinesse: whereof the one was apt to be held, and the other to hold, ioyned to the present necessitie, the firmeft band of mortall mindes. In summe, he alledged so many reasons to *Euarchus* his minde, (alreadie inclined to enter into any vertuous action) that he yeilded to take vpon himselfe the iudgement of the present cause, so as he might finde in deede that such was the peoples desire out of iudgement and not faction. Therefore mounting on their horses, they halted to the lodges, where they found, though late

in the night, the people wakefullie watching for the issue of *Philanax* Embassage. No man thinking the matter would be well done, without he had his voice in it, and each deeming his owne eyes the best gardiens of his throate in that vnaccustomed tumult. But whē they saw *Philanax* returne, hauing on his right hand the king *Euarchus*, on whom they had now placed the greatest burthen of their feares, with ioyfull shoutes and applauding acclamations, they made him and the world quickly know, that one mans sufficiencie is more available then ten thousands multitude. So euill ballanced be the extremities of popular mindes: and so much naturall imperiousnesse there restes in a well formed spirit. For as if *Euarchus* had bene borne of the Princelie blood of *Arcadia*, or that long and well acquainted prooffe had ingrafted him in their country, so flocked they about this straunger, most of them already, frō deiected feares, rising to ambitious considerations, who should catch the first hold of his fauour. And then from those crying welcomes to babling one with the other, some praying *Philanax* for his succeeding paine, others liking *Euarchus* aspect, and as they iudged his age by his face, so iudging his wisdom by his age, *Euarchus* passed through them like a man that did neither disdain a people not yet was anie thing tickled with their flatteries. But alwayes holding his owne, a man might reade a constant determination in his eyes. And in that sort dismounting among them, he forthwith demanded the cōuocation to be made, which accordinglie was done, with as much order and silence; as it might appeare, *Neptune* had not more force to appease the rebellious winde, then the admiration of an extraordinarie vertue hath, to temper a disordered multitude. He being raised vp vpon a place more high then the rest, where he might be best vnderstood, in this sort spake vnto them. I vnderstand said he, faithfull *Arcadians*, by my L. *Philanax*, that you haue with one consent, chosen me to be the iudge of the late euils hapned: orderer of the present disorders: and finallie protector of this countrie, till therein it be seene what the customes of *Arcadia* require. He could say no further, being stopped with a generall crie, that so it was giuing him all the honorable titles, and happie wishes they could imagine. He beckned vnto them for silence, and then thus againe proceeded, well said he, how good choise you haue made, the attending must be in you, the prooffe in me. But because it manytimes fals out, we are much deceiued in others, we being the first to deceiue our selues, I am to require you, not to haue an ouerhooting expectation of me, the most cruell aduersarie of all honourable doings. Nor promise your selues wonders out of a sudden liking: but remember I am a man, that is to say, a creature, whose reason is often darkned with error. Secondly, that you will lay your hearts voyde of foretaken opinions: else whatsoeuer I do or say, will be measured by a wrong rule, like them that haue the yellow Iaundise, euery thing seeming yellow vnto them. Thirdly, whatsoeuer debates haue risen among you, may be vtterly extinguished, knowing that euē among the best men are diuersities of opiniōs, which are no more in true reason to breed hatred, then one that loues black, should be angrie with him that is cloathed in white, for thoughts and conceits are the verie apparell of the minde. Lastly, that you do not easilie iudge of your iudge, but since you will haue me to commaund, thinke it is your part to obey. And in reward of this, I wil promise and protest vnto you, that to the vttermost of my skill; both in the generall lawes of nature, especially of *Greece*, and particular of *Arcadia* (wherein I must confesse I am not vnacquainted) I will not onely see the passed euils duly punished, and your weale hereafter established; but for your defence in it, if neede shall require, I wil imploy the forces and treasures of mine owne countrey. In the meane time,

time, this shalbe the first order I will take, that no man vnder paine of grieuous punishment, name me by any other name but Protector of *Arcadia*. For I will not leaue any possible colour, to any of my naturall successours, to make claime to this, which by free election you haue bestowed vpon me. And so I vow vnto you, to depose my selfe of it assoone as the iudgement is passed, the King buried, and his lawfull successour appointed. For the first whereof, I meane the trying which be guiltie of the Kings death, and these other haynous trespasses, because your customes require such hast I will no longer delay it, then till to morrow as soone as the Sunne shall giue vs fit oportunitie. You may therefore retire your selues to your rest, that

10 you may be readier to be present, at these so great important matters. With many allowing tokens was *Euarchus* speech heard, who now by *Philanax* (that tooke the principall care of doing all due seruices vnto him) was offered a lodging made readie for him, (the rest of the people aswell as the small commoditie of that place would suffer, yeelding their weary heads to sleepe) when loe the night thoroughly

15 spent in these mixed matters, was for that time banished the face of the earth, and *Euarchus* seeing the day begin to disclose his comfortable beauties, desiring nothing more, then to ioyne speed with iustice, willed *Philanax* presently to make the iudgement place be put in order: & assoone as the people (who yet were not fully dispersed) might be brought together, to bring forth the prisoners and the Kings bodie.

20 Which the maner was, should in such cases be held in sight, though couered with blacke veluet, vntill they that were accused to be the murtherers were quitted or condemned, whether the reason of the law were to shew the more gratefull loue to their Prince, or by that spectacle, the more to remember the iudge of his dutie. *Philanax* who now thought in himselfe, he approched by the iust reuenge he so much

25 desired, went with all care & diligence to performe his charge. But first it shalbe well to know, how the poore and Princely prisoners, passed this tedious night. There was neuer tyrant exercised his rage with more grieuous torments, vpon any he most hated, the afflicted *Gynecia* did crucifie her owne soule, after the guiltinesse of her heart was surcharged with the suddennesse of her husbands death, for although that effect

30 came not from her minde, yet her minde being euil, and the effect euil, she thought the iustice of God had for the beginning of her paines coupled them together. This incessantly boyled in her brest, but most of all, when *Philanax* hauing closely imprisoned her, she was left more freely to suffer the firebrands of her owne thoughts, especially when it grew darke, and had nothing left by her but a little lampe, whose

35 small light to a perplexed minde, might rather yeeld fearefull shadows, then any assured sight. Then began the heapes of her miseries, to weygh down the platforme of her iudgement, then began despaire to lay his ougly clawes vpon her, she began then, to feare the heauenly powers (she was wont to reuerence) not like a child, but like an enemy, neither kept she her selfe from blasphemous repyning against her

40 creation. O Gods would she cry out, why did you make me to destruction? If you loue goodnesse, why did you not giue me a good minde? Or if I cannot haue it without your gift, why do you plague me? Is it in me to resist the mightinesse of your power? Then would she imagine she saw strange sights, and that she heard the cries of hellish ghosts, then would she skritch out for succour, but no man comming vnto her she would faine haue killed her self, but knew not how. At sometimes againe, the very heauinesse of her imaginations would close vp her senses to a little sleepe: but then did her dreames become her tormentours. One time it would seeme vnto her, *Philanax* was haling her by the haire of the head, and hauing put out her eyes,

was ready to throw her into a burning fornace. Another time she would thinke she saw her husband making the complaint of his death to *Pluto*, and the magistrates of that infernall region, contending in great debate, to what eternall punishment they should allot her. But long her dreaming would not hold, but that it would fall vpon *Zelmane*: to whom she would thinke she was crying for mercy, and that she did passe away by her in silence without any shew of pitying her mischiefe. Then waking out of a broken sleepe, and yet wishing she might euer haue slept, new formes, but of the same miseries, would seaze her minde, she feared death, and yet desired death, she had passed the vttermost of shame, & yet shame was one of her cruellest assaulters, she hated *Pyrocles* as the originall of her mortall ouerthrow: & yet the loue she had conceived to him, had still a high authoritie of her passions. O *Zelmane*, would she say (not knowing how neare he himselfe was to as great a daunger) now shalt thou glut thy eyes, with the dishonoured death of thy enemy! Enemy alas enemy, since so thou hast well shewed, thou wilt haue me account thee, couldest thou not as well haue given me a determinate deniall, as to disguise thy first diguising, with a double dissembling? Perchaunce if I had bene vtterly hopelesse, the vertue was once in me, might haue called together his forces, and not haue bene led captiue to this monstrous thraldome of punished wickednesse. Then would her owne knowing of good inflame anew the rage of despaire: which becomming an vnresisted Lord in her breast, she had no other comfort but in death, which yet she had in horreur, when she thought of. But the wearisome detesting of her self, made her long for the dayes approach, at which time she determined to continue her former course, in acknowledging any thing which might haste her end: Wherein although she did not hope for the end of her torments, feeling already the beginning of hell agonies; yet according to the nature of paine, the present being most intollerable, she desired to change that, and put to aduerture the ensuing. And thus rested the restless *Gynecia*; no lesse sorrowfull, though lesse ragefull were the mindes of the Princeesse *Pamela*, & the Lady *Philoclea*, whose onely aduantages were, that they had not consented to so much euill, and so were at greater peace with themselves: and that they were not left alone, but might mutually beare part of each others woes. For when *Philanax* not regarding *Pamelas* Princely protestations, had by force left her vnder gard with her sister, and that the two sisters were matched, as well in the disgraces of fortune, as they had bene in the best beauties of nature: those things that till then, bashfulness and mistrust had made them hold reserued one from the other, now feare, the underminer of all determinations, and necessitie the victorious rebell of all lawes, forced them enterchangeably to lay open. Their passions then so swelling in them, as they would haue made Auditors of stones, rather then haue swallowed vp in silence, the choking aduenges were fallen vnto them. Truly the hardest hearts, which haue at any time thought womans teares to be a matter of sleight compassio (imagining that faire weather will quickly after follow) would now haue bene mollified: and bene compelled to confesse, that the fairer a Diamond it, the more pitie it is it should receiue a blemish. Although no doubt, their faces did rather beautifie sorrow, then sorrow could darken that, which even in darknesse did shine. But after they had so long, as their other afflictions would suffer them, with dolefull ceremonies bemoned their fathers death: they sate downe together apparrelled as their misaduentures had found them. *Pamela* in her iourning weedes now conuerted to another vse: *Philoclea* onely in her night gowne, which she thought should be the rayment of her funerals. But when the excellent creatures, had after much
panting

panting (with their inward travell) gotten so much breathing power, as to make a
 pitifull discourse one to the other, what had befallen them, & that by the plaine cō-
 paring the case they were in, they throughly found, that their grieues were not more
 like in regard of themselves, then like in respect of the subiect (the two Princes (as
 5 *Pamela* had learned of *Musidorus*) being so minded, as they would euer make both
 their fortunes one) it did more vnite, & so strengthen their lamentation: seeing the
 one could not be miserable, but that it must necessarily make the other miserable
 also. That therefore was the first matter their sweet mouthes deliuered, the decla-
 ring the passionate beginning, troublesome proceeding, and daungerous ending,
 10 their neuer ending loues had passed. And when at any time they entred into the
 prayes of the yong Princes, too long it would haue exercised their tongs, but that
 their memory forthwith warned them, the more prayseworthy they were, the more
 at that time they were worthy of lamentation. Then againe to crying and wringing
 of hands; & then a new, as vnquiet grieve sought each corner, to new discourses, frō
 15 discourses to wishes, from wishes to prayers. Especially the tender *Philoclea*, who as
 she was in yeares younger, and had neuer lifted vph her minde to any opinion of so-
 ueraignetic, so was she the apter to yeeld to her misfortune; hauing no stronger de-
 bates in her minde, then a man may say a most wittie childhood is wont to nourish:
 as to imagine with her selfe, why *Philanax* and the other noble men, should deale
 20 so cruelly by her, that had neuer deserued euill of any of them. And how they could
 finde in their hearts, to imprison such a personage, as she did figure *Pyrocles*, whom
 she thought all the world was bound to loue, as well as she did. But *Pamela*, although
 endued with a vertuous mildnesse, yet the knowledge of her selfe, and what was due
 vnto her, made her heart full of a stronger disdain, against her aduersitie.
 25 So that she ioyned the vexation for her friend, with the spite to see her selfe as
 she thought rebelliously detained, and mixed desirous thoughts to helpe, with
 reuengefull thoughts if she could not helpe. And as in pangs of death, the stronger
 heart feels the greater torment, because it doth the more resist to his oppressour;
 so her minde, the nobler it was set, and had already embraced the higher thoughts,
 30 so much more it did repine; and the more it repined, the more helpelesse wounds it
 gaue vnto it selfe. But when great part of the night was passed ouer the dolefull
 Musicke of these sweete Ladies complaints, and that leasure though with some
 strife, had brought *Pamela* to know, that an Eagle when she is in a Cage, must not
 thinke to do like an Eagle, remembring with themselves, that it was likely the next
 35 day, the Lords would proceede against those they had imprisoned. They imployed
 the rest of the night, in writing vnto them, with such earnestnesse as the matter re-
 quired, but in such stiles as the state of their thoughts was apt to fashion. In the
 meane time, *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, were recommended to so strong a guard, as
 they might well see it was meant, they should pay no lesse price then their liues,
 40 for the getting out of that place, which they like men indeede, (fortifying cou-
 rage with the true Rampier of patience) did so endure, as they did rather appeare
 gouernours of necessitie, then seruants to fortune. The whole summe of their
 thoughts resting vpon the safetie of their Ladies, and their care one for the other:
 wherein (if at all) their hearts did seeme to receiue some softnesse. For sometimes
 45 *Musidorus* would feelee such a motion to his friend, and his vnworthy case, that he
 would fall into such kinde speeches. My *Pyrocles* would he say, how unhappy may
 I thinke *Thessalia*, that hath bene as it were, the middle way to this euill estate of
 yours? For if you had not bene there brought vp, the Sea should not haue had

this power, thus to seuer you from your deare father. I haue therefore, (if complaints do at any time become a mans heart) most cause to complaine, since my countrey, which receiued the honour of *Pyrocles* education, should be a step to his ouerthrow, if humane chaunces can be counted an ouerthrow to him, that standes vpon vertue. Oh excellent *Musidorus* answered *Pyrocles*, how do you 5 teach me rather, to fall out with my selfe, and my fortune, since by you I haue receiued all good, you onely by me this affliction? to you and your vertuous mother, I in my tendrest yeares, and fathers greatest troubles, was sent for succour. There did I learne the sweete mysteries of Philosophie; there had I your liuely example, to confirme that which I learned; there lastly had I your friendship, which no vn- 10 happinesse can euer make you say, but that hath made me happy. Now see how my destinie (the Godsknow) not my will, hath rewarded you: my father sendes for you away out of your land, whence but for me you had not come: what after followed, you know. It was my loue not yours, which first stayed you here; and therefore if the heauens euer held a iust proportion, it were I and not you, that 15 should feele the smart. O blame not the heauens, sweete *Pyrocles* sayd *Musidorus*, as their course neuer alters, so is there nothing done by the vnreachable ruler of them, but hath an euerlasting reason for it. And to say the truth of these things, we should deale vngratefully with nature, if we should be forgetfull receiuers of her giftes, and diligent Auditors of the chaunces we like not. We haue liued, and haue 20 liued to be good to our selues, and others: our soules which are put into the stirring earth of our bodies, haue atchieued the causes of their hither comming: They haue knowne, and honored with knowledge, the cause of their creation, and to many men (for in this time, place, and fortune, it is lawfull for vs to speake gloriously) it hath bene behouefull, that we should liue. Since then eternitie is not to be had in this 25 coniunction, what is to be lost by the separation, but time? which since it hath his end, when that is once come, all what is past is nothing: and by the protracting nothing gotten, but labour and care. Do not me therefore that wrong, (who somthing in yeares, but much in all other desertes, am fitter to dye then you) as to say, you haue brought me to any euill: since the loue of you, doth ouerballance all bodily 30 mischiefes, and those mischiefes be but mischiefes to the baser mindes, too much delighted with the kennell of this life. Neither will I any more yeeld to my passiō of lamenting you, which howsoeuer it might agree to my exceeding friendship, surely it would nothing to your exceeding vertue. Adde this to your noble speech my deare Cousin, sayd *Pyrocles*, that if we complaine of this our fortune, or seeme to 35 our selues faultie, in hauing one hurt the other, we shewe a repentaunce of the loue we beare to these matchlesse creatures, or at least a doubt, it should be ouer dearly bought, which for my part (and so dare I answere for you) I call all the Gods to witnesse, I am so farre from, that no shame, no torment, no death, would make me forgo the least part of the inward honour, essentiall pleasure, and liuing life, I haue 40 enioyed in the presence of the faultlesse *Philoclea*. Take the preheminence in all things, but in true louing, answered *Musidorus*, for the confession of that no death shall get of me. Of that answered *Pyrocles* soberly smiling, I perceiue we shall haue a debate in the other world, if at least there remaine any thing of remembraunce in that place. I do not thinke the contrarie sayd *Musidorus*, although you know, 45 it is greatly held, that with the death of bodie and senses (which are not onely the beginning, but dwelling and nourishing of passions, thoughts and imaginations) they sayling, memorie likewise failes, which riseth onely out of them: & then is there left

left nothing, but the intellectuall part or intelligence, which voide of all morall vertues, which stand in the meane of perturbations, doth only liue in the contemplatiue vertue, and power of the omnipotent good, the soule of soules, and vniuersall life of this great worke, & therefore is vterly void, from the possibility of drawing to it selfe, these sensible considerations. Certainly answered *Pyrocles*, I easily yeeld, that we shall not know one another, and much lesse these passed things, with a sensible or passionate knowledge. For the cause being taken away, the effects followe. Neither do I thinke, we shall haue such a memory, as now we haue, which is but a relieke of the senses, or rather a print the senses haue left of things passed in our thoughts, but
 10 it shall be a vitall power of that very intelligence; which as while it was here, it held the chiefe seate of our life, and was as it were the last resort, to which of all our knowledges, the highest appeale came, and so by that meanes was neuer ignorant of our actions, though many times rebelliously resisted, alwayes with this prison darkened: so, much more being free of that prison, and returning to the life of all things, where
 15 all infinite knowledge is, it cannot but be a right intelligence, which is both his name and being, of things both present and passed, though voide of iniaging to it selfe any thing, but euen growne like to his Creator, hath all things, with a spirituall knowledge before it. The difference of which is as hard for vs to conceiue, as it had for vs, when we were in our mothers wombes, to comprehend (if any body
 20 would haue tolde vs) what kind of light we now in this life see, what kind of knowledge we now haue, yet now we do not only feele our present being, but we conceiue what we were before we were borne, though remembrance make vs not do it, but knowledge, and though we are vterly without any remorse of any misery we might then suffer. Euen such and much more ods, shall there be at that second deliury of
 25 ours; when voide of sensible memory, or memoratiue passion, we shall not see the colours, but lifes of all things that haue bene or can be: and shall (as I hope) knowe our friendship, though exempt from the earthly cares of friendship, hauing both vnited it, and our selues, in that high and heavenly loue of the vnquencheable light. As hee had ended his speech, *Musidorus* looking with a heavenly ioy vpon him,
 30 sang this song vnto him, hee had made before loue turned his muse to another subiect.

Since natures workes be good, and death doth serue
 35 As natures worke: why should we feare to die?
 Since feare is vaine, but when it may preserue,
 Why should we feare, that which we cannot flie?

Feare is more paine, then is the paine it feares,
 40 Disarming humane minds, of natiue might:
 While each conceite, an ougly figure beares,
 Which were not euill, well view'd in reasons light.

Our owly eyes, which dimm'd with passions be,
 And scarce discern the dawne of comming day,
 45 Let them be clearde, and now begin to see,
 Our life is but a step, in dustie way.
 Then let vs hold, the blisse of peacefull mind,
 Since this we feele, great losse we cannot find.

Thus did they like quiet Swannes, sing their owne obsequies, and vertuously enable their minds against all extremities, which they did thinke would fall vpon them, especially resoluing, that the first care they would haue, should be by taking the fault vpon themselues, to cleare the two Ladies, of whose case (as of nothing else that had happened) they had not any knowledge. Although their friendly hoste, the honest gentleman *Kalander*, seeking all meanes how to helpe them, had endeouored to speake with them, and to make them know who should be their iudge. But the curious seruant of *Philanax* forbad him the entry, vpon paine of death. For so it was agreed vpon, that no man should haue any conference with them, for feare of new tumults. Infomuch that *Kalander* was constrained to retire himselfe, hauing yet obtained thus much, that he would deliuer vnto the two Princes, their apparell and iewels, which being left with him at *Mantineia* (wisely considering that their disguised weedes, which were all as then they had, would make them more odious in the sight of the iudges) he had that night sent for, and now brought vnto them. They accepted their owne, with great thankfulness, knowing from whence it came, and attired themselues in it against the next day, which being indeed rich and Princely, they accordingly determined to maintaine the names of *Palladius* and *Daiphantus*, as before it is mentioned. Then gaue they themselues to consider, in what sort they might defend their causes, for they thought it no lesse vaine to wish death, then cowardly to feare it, till something before morning, a small slumber taking them, they were by and by after called vp to come to the aunswere, of no lesse then their liues imported. But in this sort was the iudgement ordered. As soone as the morning had taken a full possession of the Element, *Euarchus* called vnto him *Philanax*, and willed him to draw out into the midst of the greene (before the chiefe lodge) the throne of iudgement seate, in which *Basilus* was wont to sit, and according to their customes, was euer carried with the Prince. For *Euarchus* did wisely consider, the people to be naturally taken with exterior shewes, farre more then with inward consideration of the materiall points. And therefore in this new entrie into so entangled a matter, hee would leaue nothing which might be either an armour or ornament vnto him, and in these pompous ceremonies he well knew a secret of gouernment much to consist. That was performed by the diligent *Philanax*, and therein *Euarchus* did set himselfe all cloathed in blacke, with the principall men, who could in that suddennesse provide themselues of such mourning rayments. The whole people commaunded to keepe an orderly silence of each side, which was duly obserued of them, partly for the desire they had to see a good conclusion of these matters, and partly stricken with admiration, as well at the graue and Princely presence of *Euarchus*, as at the greatnesse of the cause, which was then to come in question. As for *Philanax*, *Euarchus* would haue done him the honour to sit by him, but hee excused himselfe, desiring to be the accuser of the prisoners in his maisters behalfe; and therefore since hee made himselfe a partie, it was not conuenient for him to sit in the iudiciall place. Then was it a while deliberated, whether the two young Ladies, should be brought forth in open presence, but that was stopped by *Philanax*, whose loue and faith, did descend from his maister to his children, and only desired, the smart should light vpon the others, whom hee thought guiltie of his death and dishonour, alleaging for this, that neither wisdom would, they should bee brought in presence of the people, which might hereupon grow to new vprores: nor iustice required, they should be drawne to any shame, till some body accused them. And as for *Pamela*, he

he protested the lawes of *Arcadia*, would not allow any iudgement of her, although she her selfe were to determine nothing till age or marriage enabled her. Then the Kings body being layd vpon a Table, iust before *Euarchus*, and all couered ouer with blacke, the prisoners, namely the Queene, and two young Princes, were sent for to
 5 appeare in the Protectors name: which name was the cause they came not to knowledge, how neare a kinsemā was to iudge of them, but thought him to be some Nobleman, chosen by the Country, in this extremity. So extraordinary course, had the order of the heauens produced at this time, that both nephew and son, were not only prisoners, but vnkowne, to their vncle and father, who of many yeares had not
 10 seene thē. And *Pyrocles* was to pleade for his life before that throne, in which throne lately before he had saued the Kings life. But first was *Gynecia* led forth, in the same weeds that the day and night before she had worne, sauing that instead of *Zelmanes* garment in which she was found, she had cast on a long cloak, which reached to the ground of rusled course cloath, with a poore felt hat, which almost couered all her
 15 face, most part of her goodly haire (on which her hands had layd many a spitefull hold) so lying vpon her shoulders, as a man might well see, had no artificiall carelesnesse. Her eyes downe on the ground, of purpose not to looke on *Pyrocles* face, which she did not so much shun, for the vnkindnesse she conceiued of her owne ouerthrow, as for the feare, those motions in this short time of her life, should be re-
 20 uiued, which she had with the passage of infinit sorowes mortified. Great was the compassion the people felt, to see their Princeesse state, and beauty, so deformed by fortune and her owne desert, whom they had euer found a Lady most worthy of all honour. But by and by the sight of the other two prisoners, drew most of the eyes to that spectacle. *Pyrocles* came out led by *Sympathus*, cloathed after the Greeke maner,
 25 in a long coate of white veluet, reaching to the small of his legge, with great buttons of Diamonds all along vpon it: His neck without any coller, not so much as hidde with a ruffe, did passe the whitenesse of his garments, which was not much in fashion vnlike to the crimson rayment, our Knights of the order first put on. On his feet he had nothing but slippers, which after the auncient maner, were tied vp with cer-
 30 taine laces, which were fastened vnder his knee, hauing wrapped about (with many pretty knots) his naked legs. His faire auberne haire (which hee ware in great length, and gaue at that time a delightfull shew, with being sturd vp & downe with the breath of a gentle wind) had nothing vpon it, but a white Ribbin, in those dayes vsed for a Diademe. Which rolled once or twice about the vppermost part of his
 35 forehead, fell downe vpon his backe, cloased vp at each end with the richest pearle were to be seene in the world. After him followed another Nobleman, guiding the noble *Musidorus*, who had vpon him a long cloake, after the fashion of that which we call the Apostles mantle, made of purple Satten; not that purple which we now haue, and is but a counterfet of the *Getulian* purple (which yet was
 40 farre the meaner in price and estimation) but of the right *Tyrian* purple, which was nearest to a colour betwixt our murry and scarlet. On his head, which was blacke and curled, he ware a *Persian Tiara*, all set downe with rowes of so rich Rubies, as they were inough to speake for him, that they had to iudge of no meane personage.
 45 In this sort with erected countenances, did these vnfortunate Princes suffer themselues to be ledde, shewing aright by the comparifon of them and *Gynecia*, how to diuers persons, compassion is diuersly to be stirred. For as to *Gynecia*, a

Lady knowne 'of great estate, and greatly esteemed, the more miserable representation was made of her sudden ruine, the more mens hearts were forced to bewaile such an euident witnesse of weake humanity: so to these men, not regarded because vnknowne, but rather (besides the detestation of their fact) hated as strangers, the more they should haue fallen downe in an abiect semblance, the more in steed of compassion they should haue gotten contempt: but therefore, were to vse (as I may terme it) the more violence of magnanimitie, and so to conquer the expectation of the lookers, with an extraordinarie vertue. And such effect indeede it wrought in the whole assemblie, their eyes yet standing as it were in ballance, to whether of them they should most direct their sight. *Musidorus* was in stature so much higher 10 then *Tyrocles*, as commonly is gotten by one yeares growth. His face now beginning to haue some tokens of a beard, was composed to a kinde of manlike beautie. His colour was of a well pleasing brownenesse, and the features of it such, as they caried both delight and maiestie: his countenance seuer, and promising a minde much giuen to thinking. *Tyrocles* of a pure complexion, and of such a chearefull fa- 15 uour, as might seeme either a womans face on a boy, or an excellent boyes face in a woman. His looke gentle and bashfull, which bred the more admiration, hauing shewed such notable proofes of courage. Lastly, though both had both, if there were any oddes, *Musidorus* was the more goodly, and *Tyrocles* the more louely. But as soone as *Musidorus* saw himselfe so farre forth led among the people, that he knew 20 to a great number of them his voyce should be heard, misdoubting their intention to the Princessse *Pamela*, (of which he was more carefull then of his owne life,) euen as he went (though his leader sought to interrupt him) he thus with a lowde voyce spake vnto them. And is it possible o *Arcadians*, sayd he, that you can forget the naturall dutie you owe to your Princessse *Pamela*? hath this foyle bene so 25 little beholding to her noble Auncesters? hath so long a time rooted no surer loue in your hearts to that line? Where is that faith to your Princes bloud, which hath not onely preserued you from all daungers heretofore, but hath spread your fame to all the nations in the world? Where is that iustice the *Arcadians* were wont to flourish in, whose nature is to render to euery one his owne? Will you now keepe 30 the right from your Prince, who is the onely giuer of iudgement, the key of iustice, and life of your lawes? Do you hope in a few yeares, to set vp such another race, which nothing but length of time can establisth? Will you reward *Bassius* children with vngratefullnesse, the verie poyson of manhood? Will you betray your long settled reputation, with the fowle name of traytours? Is this your mourning for your 35 Kings death, to encrease his losse with his daughters miserie? Imagine your Prince do looke out of the heauens vnto you, what do you thinke he could wish more at your handes then that you do well by his children? And what more honour I pray you can you do to his obsequies, then to satisfie his soule with a louing memorie, as you do his body with an vnfelt solemnitie? What haue you done with the Prin- 40 cessse *Pamela*? *Pamela* the iust inheretrix of this Countrey, *Pamela* whom this earth may be happie, that it shall be hereafter sayd, she was borne in *Arcadia*, *Pamela* in her selfe your ornament, in her education your foster child, and euery way your onely Princessse, what account can you render to your selues of her? Truly I do not thinke that you all know what is become of her: so soone may a Diamond be 45 lost? so soone may the fayrest light in the world be put out? But looke, looke vnto it, o *Arcadians*, be not so wilfully robbed of your greatest treasure, make not your selues ministers to priuate ambitions, who do but vse your selues to put on
 your

your owne yokes. Whatsoever you determine of vs (who I must confesse are but strangers) yet let not *Basilus* daughters be strangers vnto you. Lastly, howsoever you barre her from her publike soueraignie, (which if you do, little may we hope of equitie where rebellion raignes) yet deny not that childes right vnto her, that she
5 may come and do the last duties to her fathers body. Deny not that happines (if in such a case there be any happinesse) to your late King, that his body may haue his last touch of his dearest child. With such like broken maner of questions and speeches, was *Musidorus* desirous as much as in passing by them he could, to moue the people to tender *Pamelas* fortune. But at length, by that they came to the iudgement place, both *Sympathus* and his guider had greatly satisfied him, with the assurance they gaue him, this assembly of people had neither meaning nor power, to do any hurt to the Princeesse, whom they all acknowledged as their soueraigne Lady. But that the custome of *Arcadia* was such, till she had more yeares, the state of the countrey to be guided by a Protector, vnder whom, he and his fellow were
10 to receiue their iudgement. That eased *Musidorus* hart of his most vehement care, when he found his beloued Ladie to be out of daunger. But *Pyrocles* as soone as the Queene of the one side, he and *Musidorus* of the other, were stayed before the face of their iudge, (hauing onely for their barre the Table on which the Kings bodie lay) being nothing lesse vexed with the doubt of *Philoclea*, then *Musidorus*
20 was for *Pamela*, in this sort with a lowly behauiour, and onely then like a suppliant, he spake to the Protector. Pardon me most honoured Iudge, saith he, that vncommanded I begin my speech vnto you, since both to you and me, these wordes of mine shall be most necessary. To you hauing the sacred exercise of iustice in your hand, nothing appertaines more properly, then truth nakedly and freely set downe.
35 To me, being enuironed round about with many daungerous calamities, what can be more conuenient, then at least, to be at peace with my selfe, in hauing discharged my conscience, in a most behouefull veritie. Vnderstand therefore, and truly vnderstand, that the Lady *Philoclea* (to whose vnstained vertue it hath bene my vspeakeable miserie, that my name should become a blot) if she be accused,
30 is most vniustly accused of any dishonorable fact, which by my meanes she may be thought to haue yeelded vnto. Whatsoever hath bene done, hath bene my only attempt, which notwithstanding was neuer intended against her chastitie. But whatsoever hath bene informed, was my fault. And I attest the heauens, to blaspheme which I am not now in fit tune, that so much as my comming into her
35 chamber, was wholly vnnitting vnto her. This your wisdom may withall consider, if I would lye, I would lye for mine owne behoofe, I am not so olde, as to be wearie of my selfe; but the verie sting of my inward knowledge ioyned with the consideration I must needes haue, what an infinite losse it should be to all those who loue goodnesse in good folkes, if so pure a child of vertue should wrong-
40 fully be destroyed, compels me to vse my tongue against my selfe, and receiue the burden of what euill was, vpon mine owne doing. Looke therefore with pittifull eyes vppon so faire beames, and that misfortune which by me hath fallen vppon her, helpe to repayre it with your publike iudgement, since whosoever deales cruelly with such a creature, shewes himselfe a hater of mankind, and an enuier of the worlds blisse. And this petition I make, euen in the name of iustice, that before you proceed further against vs, I may know how you conceiue of her noble,
45 though vnfortunate action, and what iudgement you will make of it. He had not spoken his last word, when all the whole people both of great and low estate, con-

firmed with an vnited murmure *Pyrocles* demaund, longing (for the loue generally
 was borne *Philoclea*) to know what they might hope of her. *Euarchus* though nei-
 ther regarding a prisoners passionate prayer, nor bearing ouerplausible cares to a
 many headed motion, yet well enough content, to winne their liking with things
 in themselves indifferent, he was content: first, to seeke as much as might be of
*Philoclea*s behauiour in this matter: which being cleared by *Pyrocles*, & but weakly
 gainfayd by *Philanax* (who had framed both his owne and *Damet*s euidence most
 for her fauour, and in truth could haue gone no further then coniecture,) yet find-
 ing by his wisdom, that she was not altogether faultlesse, he pronounced, she
 should all her life long, be kept prisoner among certaine women of religion like
 the *Vestall* Nunnes, (to repay the touched honour of her house, with well obser-
 uing a strict profession of chastitie. Although this were a great preiudicating of
Pyrocles case, yet was he exceedingly ioyous of it, being assured of his Ladies life;
 and in the depth of his mind not sorie, that what end soeuer he had, none should
 obtaine the after enioying that lewell, whereon he had set his liues happines. After
 it was by publike sentence deliuered, what should be done with the sweete *Phi-
 loclea*, the lawes of *Arcadia* bearing, that what was appointed by the Magistrates
 in the noneage of the Prince, could not afterwards be repealed) *Euarchus* still vsing
 to himselfe no other name but protector of *Arcadia*, commaunded those that had
 to say against the Queene *Gynecia* to proceed, because both her estate required she
 should be first heard, and also for that she was taken to be the principall, in the
 greatest matter they were to iudge of. *Philanax* incontinently stepped forth, and
 shewing in his greedie eyes, that he did thirst for her blood, began a well thought
 on discourse of her (in his iudgement) execrable wickednesse. But *Gynecia* standing
 vp before the iudge, casting abroad her armes, with her eyes hiddē vnder the bredth
 of her vnseemely hat, laying open in all her gestures the despairefull affliction, to
 which all the might of her reason was conuerted, with such like words stopped *Phi-
 lanax*, as he was entring into his inuectiue oration. Stay, stay *Philanax*, said she,
 do not defile thy honest mouth, with those dishonorable speeches thou art about
 to vtter, against a woman, now most wretched, lately thy Mistresse. Let either the
 remembrance how great she was, moue thy hart to some reuerence; or the seeing
 how low she is, stirre in thee some pitie. It may be truth doth make thee deale vn-
 truly; and loue of iustice frames vniustice in thee, do not therefore (neither shalt
 thou neede tread vpon my desolate ruines. Thou shalt haue that thou seekest; and
 yet shalt not be oppressour of her, who cannot choose but loue thee, for thy singu-
 lar faith to thy maister. I do not speake this to procure mercie, or to prolong my
 life, no no, I say vnto you I will not liue, but I am onely loth, my death should be
 engreued with any wrong thou shouldest do vnto me. I haue bene too painefull
 a iudge ouer my selfe, to desire pardon in others iudgement. I haue bene too cruell
 an executioner of mine owne soule, to desire that execution of iustice should be
 stayed for me. Alas, they that know how sorow can rent the spirits, they that know
 what fire hels are cōtained in a self condemning mind, need not feare that feare can
 keepe such a one, from desiring to be separated from that, which nothing but death
 can separate. I therefore say to thee (ô iust Iudge) that I and only I, was the worker
 of *Basilus* death. They were these hands that gaue vnto him that poisonous po-
 tion, that hath brought death to him, and losse to *Arcadia*, it was I and none but I,
 that hastened his aged yeares, to an vnnaturall end, and that haue made all his peo-
 ple orphans of their royall father. I am the subiect that haue killed my Prince, I am
 the

the wife that haue murdered my husband, I am a degenerate woman, an vndoer of this countrey, a shame of my children. What wouldst thou haue sayd more, oh *Philanax*? and all this I graunt, there resteth then nothing else to say, but that I desire you, you will appoint quickly some to rid me of my life, rather then these
 5 hands, which else are destenied vnto it, and that indeed it may be done with such speed as I may not long die in this life, which I haue in so great horrore: with that she crossed her armes, and fate downe vpon the ground, attending the Iudges answer. But a great while it was, before anie bodie could be heard speake, the whole people concurring in a lamentable crie, so much had *Gynecias* words and
 10 behauiour stirred their hearts to a dolefull compassion, neither in troath could most of them in their iudgements tell, whether they should be more sorie for her fault or her miserie: for the losse of her estate, or losse of her vertue. But most were most moued, with that which was vnder their eyes: the sense most subiect to pitie. But at length the reuerent awe they stood in of *Euarchus*, brought them
 15 to a silent wayting his determination, who hauing well considered the abomination of the fact, attending more the manifest prooue of so horrible a trespassse; confessed by her selfe, and proued by others; then any thing relenting to those tragicall phrascs of hers (aptcr to stirre a vulgar pitie, then his mind, which hated euil, in what colours so euer he found it) hauing considered a while with the principall
 20 men of the countrey, and demaunded their allowance, he definitinely gaue this sentence. That whereas both in priuate and publike respects, this woman had most hainously offended, (in priuate, because mariage being the most holy coniunction that fals to mankind, out of which all families, and so consequently all societies do proceede, which not onely by communitie of goods, but communitie of children,
 25 is to knit the minds in a most perfect vnion, which who so breakes, dissolues all humanitie, no man liuing free from the daunger of so neare a neighbour, she had not onely broken it, but broken it with death, and the most pretended death that might be: In publike respect, the Princes persons; being in all monarchall gouernements the very knot of the peoples welfare, and light of all their doings, to
 30 which they are not only in conscience, but in necessitie bound to be loyal, she had traiterously empoisoned him, neither regarding her countreys profite, her owne dutie, nor the rigor of the lawes.) That therefore, as well for the due satisfaction to eternal iustice, and accomplishment of the *Arcadian* statutes, as for the euerlasting example to all wiues and subiects, she should presently be conueyed to close prison, and there be kept with such food as might serue to sustaine her aliue, vntill the
 35 day of her husbands buriall, at which time, she should be buried quicke, in the same tombe with him: that so his murder might be a murder to her selfe, and she forced to keepe companie with the body from which she had made so detestable a seruance; and lastly death might redresse their disioyned coniunction of marriage.
 40 His iudgement was receiued of the whole assembly, as not with disliking, so with great astonishmet, the greatnesse of the matter and person as it were ouerpressing the might of their conceits. But when they did set it to the beame, with the monstrousnesse of her ougly misdeed, they could not but yeeld in their harts, there was no ouerballancing. As for *Gynecia*, who had already settled her thoughts, not onely
 45 to looke but long for this euent, hauing in this time of her vexation, found a sweetness in the rest she hoped by death, (with a countenance witnessing she had beforehand so passed through all the degrees of sorow, that she had no newe looke to figure forth any more) rase vp, and offered forth her faire hands to be bound or led

as they would, being indeed troubled with no part of this iudgement, but that her death was as she thought long delayed. They that were appointed for it conueyed her to the place she was in before, where the guard was releued, and the number encreased to keepe her more sure for the time of her execution: None of them all that led her, though most of them were such, whose harts had bene long hardened 5 with the often exercising such offices, being able to barre teares frō their eyes, and other manifest tokens of compassionate sorrow. So goodly a vertue is a resolute constancie, that euen in euill deseruers, it seemes that partie might haue bene notably well deseruing. Thus the excellent Lady *Gynecia*, hauing passed fīue and thirtie yeares of her age, euen to admiration of her beautifull mind and bodie, and ha- 10 uing not in her owne knowledge, euer spotted her soule with any wilfull vice, but her immoderat loue of *Zelmaue*, was brought, first by the violence of that ill answered passion, and then by the despairing conceit she tooke of the iudgement of God in her husbands death and her owne fortune, purposely to ouerthrow her selfe, and confirme by a wrong confession, that abhominable shame, which with her 15 wisdome, ioyned to the truth, perhaps she might haue refelled. Then did *Euar-chus* aske *Philanax*, whether it were he that would charge the two yong prisoners, or that some other should do it, and he sit according to his estate, as an assistant in the iudgement. *Philanax* told him as before he had done, that he thought no man could lay manifest the naughtinesse of those two yong men, with so much ei- 20 ther truth or zeale as himselfe, and therefore he desired he might do this last seruice to his faithfully beloued master, as to prosecute the traiterous causers of his death and dishonour; which being done, for his part he meant to giue vp all dealing in publike affaires, since that man was gone who had made him loue them. *Philanax* thus being readie to speake, the two Princes were commanded to tell their names, 25 who answered according to their agreements, that they were *Daiphantus* of *Lycia*, and *Palladius* Prince of *Iberia*. Which when they had said, they demanded to know by what authoritie they could iudge of them, since they were not onely forreiners and so not borne vnder their lawes, but absolute Princes, and therefore not to be touched by lawes. But aunswer was presently made them, that *Arcadia* lawes, 30 were to haue their force vpon any were found in *Arcadia*: since strangers haue scope to know the customes of a countrey, before they put themselues in it: & when they once are entred, they must know, that what by many was made, must not for one be broken. And so much lesse for a straunger, as he is to looke for no priuiledge in that place, to which in time of neede, his seruice is not to be expected. As 35 for their being Princes, whether they were so or no, the beleefe stood in their own words, which they had so diuersely falsified, as they did not deserue beleefe. But what so euer they were, *Arcadia* was to acknowledge them but as private men, since they were neither by magistracy nor alliance to the princely blood, to claime any thing in that region. Therefore if they had offended, (which now by the plain- 40 tife and their defence was to be iudged) against the lawes of nations; by the lawes of nations they were to be chastised: if against the peculiar ordinances of the prouince, those peculiar ordinances were to lay hold of them. The Princes stood a while vpon that, demaunding leasure to giue perfect knowledge of their greatnes; but when they were answered, that in a case of a Princes death, the lawe of that 45 countrey had euer bene, that immediate triall should be had: they were forced to yeeld, resolved that in those names, they would as much as they could, couer the shame of their royall parentage, and keepe as long as might be (if euill were deter- mined

mined against them) the euill newes from their carefull kinsfolke, wherein the
 chiefe man they considered was *Euarchus*: whom the straunge and secret working
 of iustice had brought to be the iudge ouer them, in such a shadow, or rather pit
 of darkenesse, the wormish mankind liues, that neither they know how to foresee,
 5 nor what to feare: and are but like tennisbals, tossed by the racket of the higher pow-
 ers. Thus both sides ready, it was determined, because their cases were separated.
 First *Philanax* should be heard against *Pyrocles*, whom they termed *Daiphantus*, and
 that heard, the others cause should follow, and so receiue together such iudge-
 ment, as they should be found to haue deserued. But *Philanax* that was euen short
 10 breathed at the first, with the extreame vehemencie he had to speake against them,
 stroking once or twise his forehead, and wiping his eyes, (which either wept, or he
 would at that time haue them seeme to weepe,) looking first vpon *Pyrocles*, as if he
 had proclaimed all hatefulnesse against him, humbly turning to *Euarchus*, (who
 with quiet grauitie, shewed great attention) he thus began his oration. That which
 15 all men, who take vpon them to accuse another, are wont to desire (most wor-
 thy Protector) to haue many proofes of faultes in them they seeke to haue condem-
 ned: that is to me in this present action, my greatest comber, and annoyance. For the
 number is so great, and the qualitie so monstros, of the enormities this wretched
 young man hath committed, that neither I in my selfe, can tell where to begin (my
 20 thoughts being confused with the horrible multitude of them) neither do I thinke
 your vertuous eares will be able to endure the report: but will rather imagine, you
 heare some tragedy inuented of the extremitie of wickednesse, then a iust recitall of
 a wickednes indeed committed, for such is the dispositiō of the most sincere iudge-
 ments, that as they can beleue meane faults, and such as mans nature may slide in-
 25 to, so when they passe to a certaine degree, nay when they passe all degrees of vn-
 speakeable naughtinesse, then finde they in themselues a hardnesse to giue credit,
 that humane creatures can so from all humanitie be transformed. But in my selfe, the
 strength of my faith to my dead master will helpe the weakenesse of my memorie;
 in you, your excellent loue of iustice will force you to vouchsafe attention: and as
 30 for the matter, it is so manifest, so pitifull evidences lye before your eyes of it, that
 I shall neede to be but a brieue recounter, and no rhetoricall enlarger of this most
 harmefull mischiefe. I will therefore, in as few wordes, as so huge a trespasse can be
 cōteined, deliuer ynto you the summe of this miserable fact: leauing out a great nū-
 ber of particular tokens of his naughtines, and only touching the essentiall points
 35 of this dolefull case. This man, whom to begin withall I know not how to name,
 since being come into this countrey, vnaccompanied like a lost pilgrime, from a mā
 grew a woman, from a woman a rauisher of women, thence a prisoner, and now a
 Prince. But this *Zelmane*, this *Daiphantus*, this what you will, (for any shape or title he
 can take vpon him, that hath no restraint of shame) hauing vnderstood the solitarie
 40 life my late master liued, and considering how open he had laid himselfe to any trai-
 terous attempt, for the first maske of his falsehood, disguised himselfe like a woman:
 which being the more simple & hurtlesse sexe, might easier hide his subtle harme-
 fulnesse. And presenting himself to my master, the most curteous Prince that liued,
 was receiued of him with so great graciousnesse, as might haue bound not only any
 45 gratefull minde, but might haue mollified any enemies rancour. But this venomous
 serpent, admitted thus into his bosome, as contagion will easily finde a fit body for
 it, so had he quickly fallē into so neare acquaintance with this naughty womā, who
 eue now you haue most iustly condēned, that this was her right hand, she saw with

no eyes but his, nor seemed to haue any life but in him, so glad she was to find one more cunning then her selfe, in couering wickednesse with a modest vaile. What is to be thought passed betwixt two such vertuous creatures, whereof the one hath confessed murder, and the other rape, I leaue to your wise consideration. For my hart hastēs to the miserable point of *Basilus* murder, for the executing of which with more facilitie, this yong nimph of *Dianas* bringing vp, fained certaine rites she had to performe, so furious an impiety had caried him from all remembrance of goodnes, that he did not only not feare the Gods, as the beholders and punishers of so vngodly a villany, but did blasphemously vse their sacred holy name, as a minister vnto it. And forsooth a Caue hereby was chosen, for the temple of his deuotions, a Caue of such darkenesse, as did prognosticate, he meant to please the infernall powers, for there this accursed caytife, vpon the altar of falshood, sacrificed the life of the vertuous *Basilus*. By what meanes he trayned him thither, alas I know not, for if I might haue knowne it, either my life had accompanied my maister, or this fellowes death had preserued him. But this may suffice, that in the mouth of this Caue, where this 15
traytor had his lodging and chappell, when already maister sheepeheard his companion, had conueyed away the vndoubted enheritrix of this cuntry, was *Gynecia* found by the dead corps of her husband, newly empoysoned, apparelled in the garments of the young Lady, and ready no question to haue fled to some place, according to their consort, but that she was by certaine honest shepheards arrested; while 20
in the meane time, because there should be left no reuenger of this bloody mischiefe, this noble *Amazon*, was violently gottē into the chāber of the Lady *Philoclea*, whereby the mingling (as much as in him lay) of her shame with his misdeede, he might enforce her to be the accessory to her fathers death, & vnder the countenance of her and her sister (against whom they knew we would not rebell) seaze as it were 25
with one gripe into their treacherous hands, the regiment of the mightie province. But the almighty eye preuented him of the end of his mischiefe, by vsing a villaine *Dametas* hand, to inclose him in there, where with as much fortification as in a house could be made, he thought himselfe in most securitie. Thus see you most iust iudge, a short & simple story of the infamous misery, false vpon this country. Indeed 30
infamous, since by an effeminate man, we should suffer a greater ouerthrow, then our mightiest enemies haue bin euer able to lay vpon vs. And that all this, which I haue sayd is most manifest, aswell of the murdering of *Basilus*, as the rauishing of *Philoclea* (for those two parts I establish of my accusation) who is of so incredulous a mind, or rather who will so stoppe his eyes from seeing a thing clearer then the 35
light, as not to hold for assured so palpable a matter. For to begin with his most cruell misdeed, is it to be imagined, that *Gynecia* (a woman though wicked, yet witty) wold haue attempted and atchieued an enterprife, no lesse hazardous then horrible, without hauing some counsellor in the beginning, and some comforter in the performing? Had she, who shewed her thoughts were so ouerruled with some 40
strange desire, as in despite of God, nature and womanhood, to execute that in deedes, which in words we cannot heare without trembling? had she I say no practise to leade her vnto it? Or had she a practise without conspiracy? Or could she conspire without some body to conspire with? And if one were; who so likely as this, to whom she communicated I am sure her mind, the world thinkes her bodie? Neither let her words taking the whole fault vpon her selfe, bee herein 45
anything auailable. For to those persons who haue vomited out of their soules all remnants of goodnesse, there restes a certaine pride in euill, and hauing else no shadow

shadow of glorie left them, they glorie to be constant in iniquitie, and that God knowes must be held out to the last gaspe, without reuealing their accomplices. As thinking great courage is declared, in being neither asfeard of the heauens, nor ashamed of the world. But let *Gynecias* action die with her selfe, what can all the earth aunswere for his comming hither? Why alone, if he be a Prince? How so richly Jewelled if he be not a Prince? Why then a woman if now a man? Why now *Daiphantus*, if then *Zelmanc*? Was all this play for nothing, or if it had an ende, what ende but the ende of my deare maister? Shall we doubt so many secrete conferences with *Gynecia*, such fained fauour to the ouer-soone beguiled *Basilus*, 10 a Cane made a lodging, and the same lodging made a temple of his religion, lastly such changes and trauerses, as a quiet Poet could scarce fill a poeme withall, were directed to any lesse scope, then to this monstrous murder? O snake ambition, which can wind thy selfe in so many figures, to slide thither thou desirest to come! O corrupted reason of mankind, that can yeeld to deforme thy selfe with 15 so filthie desires! And o hopelesse be those minds, whom so vnnaturall desires do not, with their owne ouglinesse sufficiently terrifie! But yet euen offauour let vs graunt him thus much more, as to fancie that in these foretold things, fortune might be a great Actor, perchance to an euill end, yet to a lesse euill ende all these entangled deuises were entended. But I beseech your Ladishippe, my Lady 20 *Daiphantus* tell me, what excuse can you find for the chaunging your lodging with the Queene, that very instant shee was to finish her execrable practise? How can you cloake the lending of our cloake vnto her, was all that by chance too? Had the starres sent such an influence vnto you, as you should bee iust wearie of your lodging and garments, when your Prince was destenied to the slaughter? What 25 say you to this, o shamefull and shamelesse creature? fit indeede to bee the dishonour of both sexes. But alas, I spend too many words in so manifest and so miserable a matter. They must be foure wild horses (which according to our lawes are the executioners of men which murder our Prince) which must decide this question with you. Yet see so farre had my zeale to my beloued Prince transported me, 30 that I had almost forgotten my second part, and his second abomination, I meane his violence offred to the Lady *Philoclea*: wherewith as if it had well become his womanhood, he came brauing to the iudgement seat, indeed our lawes appoint not so cruell a death (although death too) for this fact as for the other. But whosoener well wayes it, shall find it sprong out of the same fountaine of mischieuous naughtiness, the killing of the father, dishonouring the mother, and rauishing the child. 35 Alas could not so many benifits receiued of my Prince, the iustice of nature, the right of hospitalitie, be a bridle to thy lust, if not to thy cruelty? Or if thou hadst as surely thou hast) a heart recompensing goodnesse with hatred, could not his death, which is the last of reuenges, satisfie thy malice, but thou must heape vpon it 40 the shame of his daughter? Were thy eyes so stonie, thy breast so tygrish, as the sweete and beautifull shewes of *Philocleas* vertue, did not astonish thee? O wofull *Arcadia*, to whom the name of this mankind curtisan, shall euer be remembred as a procurer of thy greatest losse! But too farre I find my passion, yet honest passion hath guided mee; the case is euery way too too much vnanswerable. It resteth 45 in you o excellent protector to pronounce iudgement, which if there bee hope that such a young man may proue profitable to the world, who in the first exercise of his owne determination, farre passed the arrantest strumpet in luxuriousnesse, the cunningest forger in falsehood, a player in disguising, a Tyger in cruelty,

a Dragon in ingratelnes; let him be preferred like a iewel, to do greater mischief. If his youth be not more defiled with trecherie, then the eldest mans age, let I say his youth, be some cause of compassion. If he haue not euery way fought the overthrow of humane society, if he haue done any thing like a Prince, let his naming himselfe a Prince, breede a reuerence of his base wickednesse. If he haue not broken all lawes of hospitalitie, and broken them in the most detestable degree that can be, let his being a guest, be a sacred protection of his more then sauage doings: or if his whorish beauty, haue not bene as the hie way of his wickednesse, let the picture drawne vpon so poysonous a wood, be referred to shew how greatly colours can please vs. But if it is as it is, what should I say more, a very spirit of hellish naughtinesse, if his act be to be punished, and his defiled person not to be pittied, then restore vnto vs our Prince, by duly punishing his murderers, for then we shall thinke him and his name to liue, when we shall see his killers to die. Restore to the excellent *Philotea* her honour, by taking out of the world her dishonour, and thinke that at this day, in this matter are the eyes of the world vpon you, whether any thing can sway your mind from a true administration of iustice. Alas though I haue much more to say, I can say no more, for my teares and sighes interrupt my speech, and force me to giue my selfe ouer to my priuate sorrow. Thus when *Philanax* had vttered the vttermost of his malice, he made sorrow the cause of his conclusion. But while *Philanax* was in the course of his speech, and did with such bitter reproches defame the Princely *Pyrocles*, it was well to be scene, his heart was vnused to beare such injuries, and his thoughts such, as could arme themselves better against any thing then shame. For sometimes blushing, his bloud with diuerse motions coming and going, sometimes cloasing his eyes, and laying his hand ouer them, sometimes giuing such a looke to *Philanax*, as might shew he assured himselfe, he durst not so haue spoken if they had bene in indifferent place: with some impatiencie he bare the length of his Oration: which being ended, with as much modest humblenesse to the Iudge, as despitefull scorne to the accuser, with words to this purpose, he defended his honour.

My accusers tale, may well beare witnesse with me, most rightfull Iudge, in how hard a case, and inuironed with how many troubles, I may esteeme my selfe. For if he, who shewes his tongue is not vnacquainted with rayling, was in an agony in the beginning of his speech, with the multitude of matters he had to lay vnto me, wherein notwithstanding the most euill could fall vnto him, was, that he should not do so much euill as he would; how combred do you thinke may I acknowledge my selfe, who in things no lesse importing then my life, must be mine owne advocate, without leasure to answer, or foreknowledge what should be objected? In things I say promoted with so cunning confusion, as hauing mingled truths with falsehoods, surmises with certainties, causes of no moment with matters capitall, scolding with complayning, I can absolute neither graunt nor denie, neither can I tell, whether I come hither to be iudged, or before iudgement to be punished, being compelled to beare such vnworthy words, farre more grieuous then any death vnto me. But since the forme of this gouernment, allowes such tongue liberty vnto him, I will picke as well as I can out of his inuestiue those few points, which may seeme of some purpose in the touching of me, hoping that by your easie hearing of me, you will shew, that though you hate euill, yet you wish men may proue themselves not euill; so in that he hath sayd, you will not way so much what he hath sayd, as what he hath proued, remembring, that truth is simple and naked, and that if he had

had guided himselfe vnder that banner, he needed not out of the way haue sought
 so vilde and false disgracings of mee, enough to make the vnttruest accusation be-
 leened. I wil therefore, vsing truth as my best eloquence, repeate vnto you as much
 as I know in this matter, and then by the only cleerenesse of the discourse, your
 5 wisdome I know will find, the difference betwixt caulling supposition, and direct
 declaration. This Prince *Paladius* and I being enflamed with loue, (a passion farre
 more easily reprehended then refrained) to the two peerelesse daughters of *Basilus*,
 and vnderstanding, how he had secluded himselfe from the world, that like Princes,
 there was no accessse vnto him, we disguised our selues, in such forms, as might soo-
 10 nest bring vs to the reuealing of our affections. The Prince *Palladius*, had such
 euent of his doings, that with *Pamelas* consent he was to conuey her out of the thral-
 dome she liued in, to receiue the subiection of a greater people then her owne,
 vntill her fathers consent might be obtayned. My fortune was more hard, for I bare
 no more loue to the chaste *Philoclea*, then *Basilus* deceiued in my sexe, shewed to
 15 me, inso much that by his importunacy, I could haue no time to obtayne the like fa-
 uour of the pure *Philoclea*, till this policie I found, taking vnder colour of some
 deuotions, my lodging, to drawe *Basilus* thither, with hope to enioy me, which
 likewise I reuealed to the Queene, that she might keepe my place, and so make her
 husband see his error. While I in the meane time, being deliuered of them both,
 20 & hauing lockt so the dores as I hoped if the immaculate *Philoclea* would condif-
 cend to go with me, there should be none to hinder our going. I was made pri-
 soner there, I know not by what meanes, when being repelled by her diuine ver-
 tue, I would fainest haue escaped. Here haue you the thread to guide you in the
 Labyrinth, this man of his toung, had made so monstrous. Here see you the true
 25 discourse, which he mountebanke fashion doth make so wide a mouth ouer. Here
 may you conceiue the reason, why the Queene had my garment, because in her go-
 ing to the caue, in the Moone-shine night, she might be taken for me, which he
 vseth as the knot of all his wise assertions: so that as this double minded fellowes
 accusation was double, double likewise my answer must perforce be, to the mur-
 30 ther of *Basilus*, & violence offred to the inuiolate *Philoclea*. For the first, O hea-
 uenly gods, who would haue thought any mouth could haue bene found so mer-
 cenarie, as to haue opened so sleight proofes of so horrible matters? his first
 argument is a question who would imagine that *Gynecia* would accomplish
 such an Acte, without some accessaries? and if any, who but I? Truly I
 35 am so farre from imagining any thing, that till I sawe these mourning tokens,
 and heard *Gynecias* confession, I neuer imagined the King was deade. And for
 my part so vehemently, and more like the manner of passionate, then guiltie folks,
 I see the Queene persecute her selfe, that I thinke condemnation may goe too
 hastily ouer her, considering the vnlkelyhood, if not impossibilitie, her wise-
 40 dome, and vertue so long nourished, should in one moment throw downe it selfe
 to the vttermost end of wickednesse. But whatsoeuer she hath done (which as I say,
 I neuer beleeued) yet how vniustly should that aggrauate my fault. She found
 abroad, I within dores, (for as for the wearing my garment I haue tolde you the
 cause) she seeking as you say to escape, I locking my selfe in a house: without
 45 perchaunce the conspiracie of one poore straunger, might greatly enable her at-
 tempt, or the fortification of the Lodge (as the trimme man alleaged) might
 make me hope to resist all *Arcadia*. And see how trecherously he seekes to draw
 from me, my chiefe clearing, by preuenting the credit of her words, wherewith

she had wholie taken the fault vpon her selfe. An honest and vnpartiall examiner, her words may condemne her, but may not absolue me. Thus voide of all probable allegation, the crauen crowes vpon my affliction, not leauing out any euill, that euer he hath felt in his owne soule, to charge my youth withall. But who can looke for a sweeter breath out of such a stomacke? or for honny from so filthie a Spyder? What should I say more? if, in so inhumane a matter, which he himselfe confesseth, sincerest iudgements are loathest to beleue, & in the seuerest lawes proofes clearer then the Sunne are required, his reasons are onely the skumme of a base malice, my answers most manifest, shining in their owne truth, there remaine any doubt of it, because it stands betwixt his affirming and my denyall, I offer, nay I desire, and humbly desire I may be graunted the tryall by combat, wherein let him be armed and me in my shirt, I doubt not Iustice will be my shield, & his hart will shew it selfe as faint as it is false.

Now come I to the second part of my offence towards the young Lady, which howsoeuer you tearme it, so farre forth as I haue told you, I confesse, and for her sake hartily lament. But if herein I offered force to her, loue offered more force to me. Let her beautie be compared to my yeares, and such effects will be found no miracles. But since it is thus as it is, and that iustice teacheth vs not to loue punishment, but to fly to it for necessitie: the salue of her honour (I meane as the world will take it, for else in truth it is most vntouched) must be my marriage, and not my death, since the one stoppes all mouthes, the other becomes a doubtfull fable. This matter requires no more words, and your experience I hope in these cases shall neede no more, for my selfe me thinks I haue shewed alreadie too much loue of my life to bestow so manie. But certainly, it hath bene loue of truth, which could not beare so vnworthie falshood, and loue of iustice, that would brooke no wrong to my selfe nor other, and makes me now, euen in that respect to desire you, to be moued rather with pittie at a iust cause of teares, then with the bloudie teares this Crocodile spends, who weepes to procure death, and not to lament death. It will be no honour to *Basilus* tombe, to haue guiltlesse bloud sprinckled vpon it, and much more may a Iudge ouer-weigh himselfe in crueltie, then in clemencie. It is hard, but it is excellent, where it is found, a right knowledge, when correction is necessarie, when grace doth more auaille. For mine owne respect, if I thought in wisdome I had deserued death, I would not desire life: for I know nature will condemne me to dye, though you do not; and longer I would not wish to draw this breath, then I may keepe my selfe vnspotted of any horrible crime; onely I cannot, nor euer will deny the loue of *Philoclea*, whose violence wrought violent effects in me: with that he finished his speech, casting vp his eyes to the Iudge, & crossing his hands, which he held in their length before him, declaring a resolute patience in whatsoeuer should be done with him. *Philanax* like a watchfull aduersarie curiously marked all that he said, sauing that in the beginning he was interrupted by two Letters were brought him from the Princessse *Pamela*, and the Lady *Philoclea*: who hauing all that night considered and bewailed their estate, carefull for their mother likewise, of whome they could neuer thinke so much euill, but considering with themselues that she assuredly should haue so due tryall by the lawes, as either she should not neede their help, or should be past their help, They looked to that which neere liest touched them, and each wrote in this sort for him, in whome their liues ioy consisted,

The humble hearted Philoclea wrate much after this maner.

MY Lords, what you will determine of me, it is to me vncertaine, but what I
 5 haue determined of my selfe I am most certaine, which is no longer to enioy
 my life, then I may enioy him for my husband, whom the heauens for my highest
 glorie, haue bestowed vpon me. Those that iudge him, let them execute me. Let
 my throate satisfie their hunger of murder. For alas what hath he done, that had
 not his originall in me? Looke vpon him I beseech you with indifferencie, and see
 10 whether in those eyes all vertue shines not. See whether that face could hide a
 murder. Take leasure to know him, and then your selues will say, it hath bene too
 great an inhumanitie, to suspect such excellencie. Are the gods thinke you decei-
 ued in their workmanship? Artificers will not vse Marble but to noble vses.
 Should those powers be so ouershot, as to frame so precious an Image of their
 15 owne, but to honorable purposes? O speake with him, o heare him, o know him,
 and become not the putters out of the worlds light. Hope you to ioy my fathers
 soule with hurting him he loued aboue all the world? Shall a wrong suspicion
 make you forget the certaine knowledge of those benefits, this house hath recei-
 ued by him? Alas, alas, let not *Arcadia* for his losse, be accursed of the whole
 20 earth and of all posteritie. He is a great Prince, I speake vnto you that which I
 know, for I haue seene most euident testimonies. Why should you hinder my ad-
 uauncement? who if I haue past my childhood hurtlesse to any of you, if I haue re-
 fused no bodie to do what good I could, if I haue often mitigated my fathers an-
 ger, euer sought to maintaine his fauour towards you, nay if I haue held you all as
 25 fathers and brothers vnto me, rob me not of more then my life comes vnto. Teare
 not that which is inseparably ioyned to my soule; but if he rest misliked of you,
 (which o God, how can it be) yet geue him to me, let me haue him, you knowe I
 pretend no right to your state. Therefore is it but a priuate petition I make vnto
 you. Or if you be hard hartedly bent, to appoint otherwise (which oh sooner let
 30 me dye, then know) then to end as I began, let me by you be ordered to the same
 end: without for more crueltie, you meane to force *Philoclea* to vse her owne hands
 to kill one of your Kings children.

35 *Pamelas Letter (which she meant to send to the generall assembly of the Arcadian
 Nobilitie,) (for so closely they were kept, as they were utterly ignorant of the new
 taken orders) was thus framed.*

IN such a state my Lords you haue placed me, as I can neither write nor be silent;
 for how can I be silent, since you haue left me nothing but my solitarie words to
 40 testifie my miserie? and how should I write (for as for speech I haue none but my
 laylor, that can heare me) who neither can resolue what to write, nor to whom
 to write? What to write is as hard for me to say, as what I may not write, so little
 hope haue I of any successe, and so much hath no iniurie bene left vndone to me-
 wards. To whom to write, where may I learne, since yet I wot not how to entitle
 45 you? Shall I call you my Soueraignes? set downe your lawes that I may do you
 homage. Shall I fall lower, and name you my fellowes? shew me I beseech you the
 Lord and maister ouer vs. But shall *Basilus* heire, name her selfe your Princeesse?
 Alas I am your prisoner. But whatsoeuer I be, or whatsoeuer you be, o all you

„ beholders of these dolefull lines, this do I signifie vnto you, and signifie it with a
 „ hart, that shall euer remaine in that opinion. The good or euill you do to the excel-
 „ lent Prince was taken with me, and after by force from me, I will euer impute it as
 „ either way done to mine owne person. He is a Prince, and worthie to be my hus-
 „ band, and so is he my husband by me worthily chosen. Beleeue it, beleeue it, either
 „ you shall be traytors for murdering of me, or if you let me liue, the murderers of
 „ him shall smart as traytors. For what do you thinke I can thinke? Am I so childish,
 „ as not to see, wherein you touch him you condemne me? Can his shame be with-
 „ out my reproach? no nor shall be, since nothing he hath done, that I will not a-
 „ uowe. Is this the comfort you bring me in my fathers death, to make me fuller of
 „ shame then sorow? Would you do this if it were not with full intention to preuent
 „ my power with slaughter? And so do I pray you, it is hye time for me, to be weary
 „ of my life too long led, since you are weary of me, before you haue me? I say again,
 „ I say it infinitely vnto you, I will not liue without him, if it be not to reuenge him:
 „ either do iustly in sauing both, or wisely in killing both. If I be your Princesse, I
 „ commaund his preferuation; if but a priuate person, then are we both to suffer.
 „ I take all truth to witnesse, he hath done no fault but in going with me. Therefore
 „ to conclude, in iudging him you iudge me, neither conceiue with your selues, the
 „ matter you treat, is the life of a stranger, though euen in that name he deserued
 „ pitie, nor of a shepheard, to which estate loue of me made such a Prince descēd, but
 „ determine most assuredly, the life that is in question is of *Pamela*, *Basilus* daughter.

Many blots had the teares of the sweet Ladies made in their letters, which many
 times they had altred, many times torne and written anewe, euer thinking some
 thing either wanted, or were too much, or would offend, or which was worst,
 would breede denyall: but at last, the daye warned them to dispatch, which they ac-
 cordingly did, and calling one of their guard (for no body els was suffered to come
 neere them) with great entreaty, they requested him, that he would present them
 to the principall Noblemen and Gentlemen together. For they had more confi-
 dence in the numbers fauour, then in any one, vpon whom they would not laye the
 liues they held so precious. But the fellow trustie to *Philanax*, who had placed him
 there, deliuered them both to him, (what time *Pyrocles* began to speake) which
 he sodainly opened, and seeing to what they tended, by the first words, was so
 farre from publishing them (whereby he feared in *Euarchus* iust minde, either the
 Princesses might be endangered, or the prisoners preferued, of which choise he
 knew not which to thinke the worst) that he would not himselfe reade them ouer,
 doubting his owne hart might be mollified, so bent vpon reuenge. Therefore vt-
 terly suppressing them, he lent a spitefull eare to *Pyrocles*, and as soone as he had
 ended, with a verie willing heart desired *Euarchus* he might accept the combat: al-
 though it would haue framed but euill with him. *Pyrocles* hauing neuer found any
 match neere him, besides *Musidorus*. But *Euarchus* made aunswere, since bodily
 strength is but a seruant to the minde, it were verie barbarous and preposterous,
 that force should be made iudge ouer reason. Then would he also haue replied in
 words vnto him, but *Euarchus* who knew what they could say, was alreadie said,
 taking their arguments into his minde, commaunded him to proceede against the
 other prisoner, and that then he would sentence them both together. *Philanax* no-
 thing the milder for *Pyrocles* purging himselfe, but rather (according to the nature
 of arguing, especially when it is bitter) so much the more vehemēt, entred thus into
 his speech against *Musidorus*, being so ouergone with rage, that he forgate in this
 oration

oration his precise methode of oratorie. Behold most noble protector, to what a state *Arcadia* is come, since such manner of men, may chalenge in combat the faithfulllest of the nobilitie, and hauing merited the shamefulllest of all deaths, dare name in marriage the Princesses of this countrie. Certainly my maisters, I must say,
 5 you were much out of taste, if you had not rather enioy such Ladies, then be hanged. But the one you haue as much deserued, as you haue dishonoured the other. But now my speech must be directed to you good maister *Dorus*, who with *Pallas* help pardie, are lately growne *Palladius*. Too much this sacred seate of iustice graunts vnto such a fugitiue bondslawe, who in steede of these examinatio^{ns}, should be made
 10 confesse with a whippe, that which a halter should punish. Are not you he Sir, whose sheepehooke was prepared to be our Scepter? In whom lay the knot of all this tragedie? or els perchance, they that should gaine little by it were dealers in the murder, you onely that had prouided the fruits for your selfe, knewe nothing of it, knewe nothing: hath thy companioⁿ here infected thee with such impudencie,
 15 as euen in the face of the world to denie that which al the world perceiueth? The other pleads ignorance, & you I doubt not will alleage absence. But he was ignorant, when he was hard by, and you had framed your absence, iust againe the time the acte should be committed, so fit a lieutenant he knew he had left of his wickednesse, that for himselfe his safest meane, was to couey away the Lady of vs all,
 20 who once out of the countrie, he knew we wold come with oliue brāches of intercession vnto her, and fall at his feete to beseech him to leaue keeping of sheepe, and vouchsafe the tyrannizing ouer vs, for to think they are Princes, as they say (although in our lawes it behoues them nothing) I see at all no reason. These iewels certainly with their disguising sleights, they haue pilfred in their vagabonding race. And
 25 thinke you such Princes should be so long without some followers after them? Truly if they be Princes, it manifestly shewes their vertues such, as all their subiects are glad to be rid of them. But be they as they are, for we are to cōsider the matter, and not the men. *Basilus* murder hath bin the cause of their comming, *Basilus* murder they haue most trecherously brought to passe; yet that I doubt not, you will deny as well as your fellow. But how will you denie the stealing away the Princess of
 30 this Prouince, which is no lesse then treason? So notably hath the iustice of the gods prouided for the punishing of these malefactors, as if it were possible, men would not beleue the certaine euidences of their principall mischief, yet haue they discovered them selues sufficiently for their most iust ouerthrow. I say therefore (to
 35 omit my chiefe matter of the Kings death) this wooluish sheepeheard, this counterfeit Prince hath trayterously contrary to his alleageance (hauing made himselfe a seruant & subiect) attempted the depriuing this cuntry of our naturall Princess: and therefore by all right must receiue the punishment of traytors. This matter is so assured as he himselfe will not deny it, being taken and brought back in the fact.
 40 This matter is so odious in nature, so shameful to the world, so cōtrarie to all lawes, so hurtfull to vs, so false in him, as if I should stand further in declaring or defacing it, I should either shewe great doubts in your wisdom, or in your iustice. Therefore I will transferre my care vpon you, & attend to my learning and comfort) the eternall example you will leaue to all mankind of disguisers, falsifiers,
 45 adulterers, rauishers, murderers, and traitors. *Musidorus* while *Philanax* was speaking against his cosin and him, had looked round about him, to see whether by any meanes he might come to haue caught him in his armes, and haue killed him; so much had his disgracing words filled his breast with rage. But perceiuing himself

so garded as he should rather shewe a passionate act, then performe his reuenge,
 his hand trembling with desire to strike, & all the veines in his face swelling, casting
 his eyes ouer the iudgement seat: O Gods said he, and haue you spared my life to
 beare these iniuries of such a driuel? Is this the iustice of this place, to haue such
 men as we are, submitted not only to apparent falsehood, but most shameful reni- 5
 ling? But marke I pray you the vngatefulnesse of the wretch, how vtterly he hath
 forgotten the benefitis both he & all this countrey hath receiued of vs. For if euer
 men may remember their own noble deeds, it is then when their iust defence, and
 other vniust vnkindnesse doth require it. I omit our seruices done to *Basilus* in the
 late warre with *Amphialus*, importing no lesse then his daughters liues, & his states 10
 preferuatiō: were not we the men that killed the wilde beasts which otherwise had
 killed the Princesses, if we had not succoured them? Cōsider if it please you, where
 had bene *Daiphantus* rape, or my treason, if the sweete beauties of the earth, had
 then bin deuoured? Either thinke them now dead, or remēber they liue by vs. And
 yet full often this teitale can acknowledge the losse they should haue by their ta- 15
 king away, while maliciously he ouerpasseth who were their preferuers, neither let
 this be spoken of me, as if I meant to ballance this euill with that good, for I must
 confesse that sauing of such creatures was rewarded in the acte it selfe: but onely to
 manifest the partial iangling of this vile pickthanke. But if we be the traytors, where
 was your fidelitie, O onely tounge-valiant Gentleman, when not onely the young 20
 Princessie, but the King himselfe was defended from vttermost perill, partly by me,
 but principally by this excellent yong mans both wisdom and valure? Were we
 that made our selues against hundreds of armed men, openly the shields of his life,
 like secretly to be his impoysoners? Did we then shewe his life to be dearer to vs
 then our owne, because we might after robbe him of his life, to dye shamefully? 25
 Truely, truely maister orator, who soeuer hath hyred you to be so busie in their mat-
 ters, who keepe honest seruants then your selfe, he should haue bid you in so
 manie raylings, bring some excuse for your selfe, why in the greatest neede of
 your Prince, to whome you pretend a miraculous good will, you were not then
 as forward to do like a man your selfe, or at least to accuse them that were slacke 30
 in that seruice, but commonly they vse their feete for their defence, whose tounge
 is their weapon. Certainly a verie simple subtiltie it had bene in vs, to repose our
 liues in the daughters, when we had killed the father. But as this Gentleman
 thinkes to winne the reputation of a copious talker by leauing nothing vnfaide
 which a filthie minde can imagine, so thinke I (or els all words are vaine) that to 35
 wise mens iudgement, our cleerenesse in the Kings death is sufficiently notorious.
 But at length when the marchant hath set out his gilded baggage, lastly he comes
 to some stufte of importance, & saith, I conueyed away the Princessie of this coun-
 trie. And is she in deede your Princessie? I pray you then whom should I wait of els,
 but her that was my mistres by my professed vow, & Princessie ouer me while I li- 40
 ued in this soile? Aske her why she went; aske not me why I serued her. Since ac-
 counting me as a Prince, you haue not to do with me, taking me as her seruant, then
 take withall that I must obey her. But you wil say, I perswaded her to flie away, cer-
 tainly I wil for no death deny it, knowing to what honor I should bring her frō the
 thraldome by such fellowes counsell as you, she was kept in. Shall perswasion to a 45
 Prince grow treason to a Prince? It might be error in me, but falsehood it could
 not be, since I made my selfe partaker of whatsoeuer I wished her vnto, who will e-
 uer counsell his King, if his counsell be iudged by the euent, and if it be not found
 wise,

wife, shall therefore be thought wicked. But if I be a traitor, I hope you will grant me a correlatiue, to whom I shall be the traitor. For the Princesse against whom the treasons are considered, I am sure will auow my faithfullnesse, without you will say that I am a traitor to her, because I left the countrie; & a traitor to the countrie, because I went with her. Here do I leaue out my iust excuses of loues force, which as thy narrow hart hath neuer had noble roome enough in it to receiue, so yet to those manlike courages, that by experience know how subiect the vertuous minds are to loue a most vertuous creature, (witnessed to be such by the most excellent giftes of nature) will deeme it a veniall trespasse, to seeke the satisfaction of honourable desires. Honourable euen in the curioslest points of honour, whereout there can no disgrace nor disparagement come vnto her. Therefore o Iudge, who I hope doest know what it is to be a Iudge, that your end is to preserue, and not to destroy mankind, that lawes are not made like lime-twigges or nets, to catch euerie thing that toucheth them, but rather like sea-markes, to auoid the shipwracke of ignorant passengers, since that our doing in the extreamest interpretation is but a humane error, and that of it you may make a profitable euent (we being of such estate, as their parents would not haue misliked the affinitie) you will not I trust at the perswasion of this brabler, burne your house to make it cleane, but like a wise father, turne euē the fault of your children to anie good that may come of it: since that is the fruit of wisdom, and end of all iudgements. While this matter was thus handling, a silent and as it were astonished attention, possesst all the people. A kindlie compassion moued the noble Gentleman *Simpatheus*, but as for *Kalander*, euerie thing was spoken either by or for his owne deare guests, moued an affect in him: sometimes teares, sometimes hopefull lookes, sometimes whispering perswasions in their eares, that stood by him, to seeke the sauing the two yong Princes. But the generall multitude waited the iudgement of *Euarchus*, who shewed in his face no motions, either at the ones or other speech, letting passe the flowers of rhetorike, and onlie marking whether their reasons tended, hauing made the question to be asked of *Gynecia*, who continued to take the whole fault vpon her selfe, and hauing caused *Dametas*, with *Miso* and *Mopsa* (who by *Philanax* order had bene held in most cruell prison) to make a full declaration, how much they knew of these passed matters, and then gathering as assured satisfaction to his owne mind as in that case he could, not needing to take leasure for that, whereof a long practise had bred a well grounded habite in him, with a voice and gesture directed to the vniuersall assemblie, in this forme pronounced sentence. This waightie matter, wherof presentlie we are to determine, doth at the first consideration yeeld two important doubts. The first, whether these men be to be iudged: the second, how they are to be iudged. The first doubt ariseth, because they giue themselves out for Princes absolute: a sacred name, & to which anie violence seemes to be an impietie. For how can any lawes, which are the bonds of all humane societie be obserued, if the law-giuers, and law-rulers be not held in an vntouched admiration? But hereto although already they haue bene sufficientlie answered, yet thus much againe I will repeat vnto you. That whatsoever they be or be not, here they be no Princes, since betwixt Prince and subiect there is as necessarie a relation as betweene father and sonne, and as there is no man a father, but to his child, so is not a Prince a Prince, but to his owne subiects. Therefore is not this place to acknowledge in them anie principallitie, without it should at the same time by a secret consent confesse subiection. Yet hereto may be objected, that the vniuersall ciuilitie, the law of nations (all mankind being as it were

cohabitators or world-citizens together) hath euer required publike persons should be of all parties especially regarded, since not only in peace, but in warre, not only princes, but heralds and trumpets, are with great reason exempted from iniuries. This point is true, but yet so true, as they that will receiue the benefit of a custome, must not be the first to breake it. For then can they not complaine, if they bee 5 not helpt by that which they themselues hurt. If a Prince do actes of hostilitie, without denouncing warre, if he breake his oath of amitie, or innumerable such other things contrary to the law of armes, he must take heed how he fall into their hands whom he so wrongeth, for then is curtesie the best custome he can claime; much more these men, who haue not only left to do like Princes, but to be like Princes, 10 not onely entred into *Arcadia*, and so into the *Arcadian* orders, but into domesticall seruices, and so by making themselues priuate, depriued themselues of respect due to their publike calling. For no proportion it were of iustice, that a man might make himselfe no Prince when he would do euill, and might anew create himselfe a Prince, when he would not suffer euill. Thus therefore by all lawes of nature and 15 nations, and especiallie by their owne putting themselues out of the sanctuarie of them, these young men cannot in iustice auoide the iudgement: but like priuate men must haue their doings either cleared, excused, or condemned. There resteth then the second point, how to iudge well. And that must vndoubtedly be done, not by a free discourse of reason and skill of philosophie: but must be tied to the lawes 20 of *Greece*, and municipall statutes of this kingdome. For although out of them these came, and to them must indeed referre their off-spring, yet because philosophicall discourses stand in the generall consideration of things, they leaue to euerie man a scope of his owne interpretation. Where the lawes applying themselues to the necessarie vse, folde vs within assured bounds, which once broken, mans nature in- 25 finitely rargeth. Iudged therefore they must be, and by your lawes iudged. Now the action offereth it selfe to due ballance, betwixt the accusers twofold accusation and their answer accordinglie applied. The questions being the one of a fact simple, the other of the qualitie of a fact. To the first they vse direct deniall, to the second qualification and excuse. They deny the murther of the king; and mighty a- 30 gainst presumptions bring forth some probable answers, which they do principally fortifie with the Queenes acknowledging her selfe only culpable. Certainly as in equalitie of coniectures, we are not to take hold of the worse, but rather to bee glad we may find any hope that mankind is not growne monstrous (being vndoubtedly lesse euill a guiltie man should escape, then a guiltlesse perish) so if in the rest they 35 be spotlesse, then is no farther to be remembered. But if they haue aggravated these suspitions with new euils, then are those suspitions so farre to shew themselues, as to cause the other points to be thoroughly examined, and with lesse fauour wayed, since this no man can denie, they haue bene accidentall, if not principall causes of the kings death. Now then we are to determine of the other matters, which are 40 laid to them, wherein they do not denie the fact, but denie, or at least diminish the fault, but first I may remember (though it were not first alleaged by them) the seruices they had before done, truly honorable, and worthie of great reward, but not worthy to counteruaile with a following wickednesse. Reward is proper to well doing, punishment to euill doing, which must not be confounded, no more then 45 good and euill are to be mingled. Therefore hath bene determined in all wisdomes, that no man because he hath done well before, should haue his present euils spared, but rather so much the more punished, as hauing shewed he knew how to be good

good, would against his knowledge be naught. The fact then is nakedly without passion, or partiality to be viewed: wherein without all question they are equally culpable. For though he that tearmes himselfe *Daiphantus*, were sooner disappointed of his purpose of conueying away the Lady *Philoclea*, then he that perswaded the Princeesse *Pamela* to flie her countrie, and accompanied her in it: yet seeing in causes of this nature, the will by the rules of iustice standeth for the deed, they are both alike to be found guiltie, and guiltie of hainous rauishment. For though they rauished them not from themselues, yet they rauished the from him that owed them, which was their father. An act punished by all the Grecian lawes, by the losse of the head, as a most execrable theft. For if they must die, who steale from vs our goods, how much more they, who steale from vs that, for which we gather our goods, and if our lawes haue it so in the priuate persons, much more forcible are they to be in Princes children, where one steals as it were the whole state and well being of that people, being tied by the secret of a long vse, to be gouerned by none but the next of that blood. Neither let any man maruell, our ancestors haue bene so seuer in these cases, since the example of the *Phenician Europa*, but especially of Grecian *Helene*, hath taught them, what destroying fires haue growne of such sparkles. And although *Helene* was a wife, & this but a child, that booteth not; since the principall cause of marrying wiues is, that we may haue childre of our own. But now let vs see how these yong men (truly for their persons worthie of pitie, if they haue rightlie pitied themselues) do go about to mitigate the vehemencie of their errorrs. Some of their excuses are common to both, some peculiar onely to him that was the shepheard. Both remember the force of loue, and as it were the mending vp of the matter by their mariage: if that vnbrideled desire which is intituled loue, might purge such a sicknesse as this, surely we should haue many louing excuses of hatefull mischiefe. Nay rather no mischiefe should be committed, that should not be vailed vnder the name of loue. For as well he that steales might alleage the loue of mony; he that murders the loue of reuenge, he that rebels, the loue of greatnesse, as the adulterer the loue of a woman. Since they do in all speeches affirme they loue that, which an ill gouerned passion maketh them to follow: but loue may haue no such priuiledge. That sweet and heauenly vniting of the minds, which properly is called loue, hath no other knot but vertue, and therefore if it be a right loue, it can neuer slide into any action that is not vertuous. The other, and indeed more effectuall reason is, that they may be married ynto them, & so honorably redresse the dishonor of them, whō this matter seemeth most to touch. Surely if the questiō were, what were conuenient for the parties, and not what is iust in the neuer changing iustice, there might much be said in it. But herein we must consider, that the lawes looke how to preuent by due examples, that such things be not done: and not how to salue such things whē they are done. For if the gouernors of iustice shall take such a scope, as to measure the foote of the law by a shew of conueniency, and measure that conueniency not by the publike societie, but by that which is fittest for them which offend: young men, strong men, and rich men, shall euer find priuate conueniencies how to palliate such committed disorders, as to the publike shall not onely be inconuenient, but pestilent. The mariage perchance might be fit for them, but verie vnfit were it to the state, to allow a patterne of such procurations of mariage. And thus much do they both alleage. Further goes hee that went with the Princeesse *Pamela*, and requireth the benefit of a Counsellor, who hath place of free perswasion; & the reasonable excuse of a seruant, that did but wait of his mistresse.

Without all question, as counsellours haue great cause to take heed how they ad-
 uise any thing, directly opposit to the forme of that present gouernement, especial-
 ly when they do it singlie without publike allowance, so yet is the case much more
 apparant: since neither she was an effectuall Princeesse, her father being then alieue,
 and though he had bene dead, she not come to the yeares of authoritie, nor he her
 seruant in such maner to obey her, but by his own preferment first belonging to *Da-*
metas, and then to the king, and therefore if not by *Arcadia* lawes, yet by household
 orders, bound to haue done nothing without his agreement. Thus therefore since
 the deeds accomplished by these two, are both abhominable and inexcusable, I do
 in the behalfe of iustice, and by the force of *Arcadia* lawes pronounce, that *Dai-*
phantus shall be throwne out of a high tower to receiue his death by his fall. *Palladi-*
us shall be beheaded, the time before the sunne set: the place, in *Mantineia*: the exe-
 cutioner, *Damet*: which office he shall execute all the dayes of his life, for his
 beastly forgetting the carefull duty he owed to his charge. This said, he turned
 himselfe to *Philanax*, and two of the other Noblemen, commanding them to see
 the iudgement presently performed. *Philanax* more greedie then any hunter of his
 praie, went straight to lay hold of the excellent prisoners, who casting a farewell
 looke one vpon the other, represented in their faces as much vnappalled constancy,
 as the most excellent courage can deliuer in outward graces. Yet if at all there were
 any shew of change in them, it was that *Pyrocles* was somewhat nearer to bashful-
 nesse, and *Musidorus* to anger; both ouer-ruled by reason & resolution. But as with
 great number of armed men, *Philanax* was descending vnto them, and that *Musido-*
rus was beginning to say something in *Pyrocles* behalfe, behold *Kalander*, that with
 armes cast abroad, and open mouth came crying to *Euarchus*, holding a stranger in
 his hand that cryed much more then he, desiring they might be heard speake before
 the prisoners were remoued, euen the noble Gentleman *Simpatrus* aided them in
 it, and taking such as he could commaund, stopped *Philanax* betwixt entreaty and
 force, from carying away the Princes, vntill it were heard what new matters these
 men did bring. So againe mounting to the Tribunall, they hearkened to the stran-
 gers vehement speech, or rather appassionate exclaiming. It was indeed *Kalodulus*,
 the faithfull seruant of *Musidorus*, to whom his maister, when in despite of his best
 grounded determinations he first became a slaue to affection, had sent the shep-
 heard *Menalcas* to be arrested: by the help of whose rayment in the meane time he
 aduanced himselfe to that estate, which he accompted most high, because it might
 be seruiceable to that fancie, which he had placed most high in his mind. For *Me-*
nalcas hauing faithfully performed his errand, was as faithfully imprisoned by *Ka-*
lodulus. But as *Kalodulus* perfourmed the first part of his dutie in doing the com-
 mandement of his Prince: so was he with abundance of sincere loyaltie extreame-
 ly perplexed when he vnderstood of *Menalcas* the straunge disguising of his belo-
 ued maister. For as the acts he and his cousin *Pyrocles* had done in *Asia*, had fil-
 led all the eares of the *Theffalians* and *Macedonians* with no lesse ioy then admira-
 tion: so was the feare of their losse no lesse grieuous vnto them, when by the noise
 of report they vnderstood of their lonely committing themselues to the sea, the is-
 sue of which they had no way learned. But now that by *Menalcas* he perceiued
 where he was, getting the like of *Pyrocles*, comparing the vnusednesse of this act
 with the vnripenesse of their age, seeing in generall coniecture they could do it for
 nothing that might not fall out dangerous: he was somewhile troubled with him-
 selfe, what to do, betwixt doubt of their hurt, and doubt of their displeasure. Often
 he

he was minded (as his safest and honestest way) to reueale it to the king *Euarchus*:
 that both his authoritie might preuent anie damage to them, and vnder his wings
 he himselfe might remaine safe. But considering a iourney to *Byzantium* (where as
 yet he supposed *Euarchus* lay) would require more time, then he was willing to re-
 5 maine doubtfull of his Princes estate, he resolued at length to write the matter to
Euarchus, and himselfe the while to go into *Arcadia*: vncertaine what to do when
 he came thither, but determined to do his best seruice to his deare maister, if by
 anie good fortune he might finde him. And so it happened, that being euen this
 day come to *Mantineæ*, and as warily and attentiuely as he could, giuing eare to
 10 all reports, in hope to heare something of them he sought, he straight receiued a
 strange rumour of these things: but so vncertainlie, as popular reports carie so
 rare accidents. But this by all men he was willed, to seeke out *Kalander* a great Gen-
 tleman of that countrie, who wold soonest satisfie him of all these occurrents. Thus
 instructed he came euen about the midst of *Euarchus* iudgement to the desert:
 15 where seeing great multitudes, and hearing vnkowne names of *Palladius* and
Daiphantus, and not able to presse to the place where *Euarchus* fate, he enquired for
Kalander, and was soone brought vnto him, partly because he was generally knowne
 vnto all men, and partlie because he had withdrawne himselfe from the prease,
 when he perceiued by *Euarchus* words whither they tended, being not able to en-
 20 dure his guests condemnation. He enquired forthwith of *Kalander* the cause of
 the assemblie; and whether the same were true of *Euarchus* presence: who with ma-
 nie teares made a dolefull recitall vnto him, both of the *Amazon* and shepheard,
 setting forth their naturall graces, and lamenting their pitifull vndoing. But his
 description made *Kalodulus* immediately know the shepheard was his Duke, and
 25 so iudging the other to be *Pyrocles*, and speedilie communicating it to *Kalander*,
 who he saw did fauour their case, they brake the prease with astonishing euerie
 man with their cries. And being come to *Euarchus*, *Kalodulus* fell at his feet, telling
 him those he had iudged, were his owne Sonne and Nephew; the one the com-
 fort of *Macedon*, the other the only stay of *Thessalia*. With many such like words,
 30 but as from a man that assured himselfe in that matter he should need small speech.
 While *Kalander* made it knowne to all men, what the prisoners were to whom
 he cried they should salute their father, and ioy in the good hap the gods had sent
 them; who were no lesse glad, then all the people amazed at the strange euent of
 these matters. Euen *Philanax* owne reuengefull heart was mollified, when he saw
 35 frō diuerse parts of the world so neare kinsmen should meete in such a necessitie.
 And withall the fame of *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, greatly drew him to a compas-
 sionate conceit, and had already vnclouthed his face of all shew of malice. But *Euar-*
chus staid a good while vpon himselfe, like a valiant man that should receiue a no-
 table encounter, being vehementlie stricken with the fatherlie loue of so excellent
 40 children, and studying with his best reason, what his office required: at length
 with such a kind of grauitie, as was neare to sorow, he thus vttered his mind: I take
 witnesse of the immortall gods (said he) ô *Arcadians*, that what this day I haue
 said, hath bene out of my assured perswasion, what iustice it selfe and your iust
 lawes require. Though strangers then to me, I had no desire to hurt them, but lea-
 45 uing aside all considerations of the persons, I weighed the matter which you com-
 mitted into my hands, with my most vnpartiall and farthest reach of reason. And
 thereout haue condemned them to lose their liues, contaminated with so manie
 foule breaches of hospitality, ciuility & vertue. Now contrary to all expectations,

I find them to be my onely sonne and nephew, such vpon whom you see what gifts nature hath bestowed: such who haue so to the wonder of the world heretofore behaued themselues, as might giue iust cause to the greatest hopes, that in an excellent youth may be conceiued. Lastly, in few words, such, in whom I placed all my mortall ioyes, and thought my selfe now neare my graue, to recouer a new life. But alas, shall iustice halte? Or shall she winke in ones cause, which had *Lynxes* eyes in anothers? Or rather shall all priuate respects giue place to that holy name? Be it so, be it so, let my gray haire be laid in the dust with sorow, let the small remnant of my life be to me an inward and outward desolation, and to the world a gazing stocke of wretched misery: but neuer, neuer let sacred rightfulness fall: it is immortal, and immortally ought to be preserved. If rightly I haue iudged, then rightly I haue iudged mine owne children: vnlesse the name of a child should haue force to change the neuer changing iustice. No, no, *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, I preferre you much before my life, but I preferre iustice as farre before you, while you did like your selues, my body should willingly haue bene your shield, but I cannot keep you from the effects of your one doing: nay, I cannot in this case acknowledge you for mine: for neuer had I shepheard to my nephew, nor euer had woman to my son, your vices haue degraded you from being Princes, and haue disanuld your birthright. Therefore, if there be any thing left in you of Princely vertue, shew it in cōstant suffering, that your vnprincely dealing hath purchased vnto you. For my part I must tell you, you haue forced a father to rob himselfe of his children. Do you therefore, *Philanax*, and you my other Lords of this cōtrie, see the iudgement be rightly perfourmed in time, place and maner, as before appointed. With that, though he would haue refrained them, a man might perceiue the teares drop downe his long white beard. Which moued not only *Kalodulus* and *Kalander* to roring lamentations, but all the assembly dolefully to record that pitifull spectacle, *Philanax* himselfe could not abstaine from great shewes of pitying sorow, and manifest withdrawing from performing the kings commandement. But *Musidorus* hauing the hope of his safety, and recouering of the Princeesse *Pamela*, which made him most desirous to liue, so sodainly dashed; but especially moued for his deare *Pyrocles*, for whom he was euer resolued his last speech should be, and stirred vp with the rage of vnkindnesse, he thus spake: Enioy thy bloudy cōquest tyrannicall *Euarchus*, said he; for neither is conuenient the title of a king to a murtherer, nor the remembrance of kindred to a destroyer of his kindred. Go home and glory, that it hath bene in thy power, shamefully to kill *Musidorus*. Let thy flattering Orators dedicate Crownes of Lawrell vnto thee, that the first of thy race, thou hast overthrowne a Prince of *Thessalia*. But for me I hope the *Thessalians* are not so degenerate from their ancestors, but that they will reuenge my iniurie, and their losse vpon thee. I hope my death is no more vniust to me, the it shall be bitter to thee; how-soeuer it be, my death shall triumph ouer thy cruelty, neither as now would I liue, to make my life beholding vnto thee. But if thy cruelty hath not so blinded thine eyes, that thou canst not see thine owne hurt, if thy heart be not so diuellish, as thou hast no power but to torment thy selfe; then looke vpon this young *Pyrocles* with a manlike eye, if not with a pitifull: Giue not occasion to the whole earth to say, see how the Gods haue made the tyrant teare his owne bowels! Examine the eyes and voyces of all this people. and what all men see, be not blind in thine owne cause. Looke, I say, looke vpon him, in whom the most curious searcher is able to find no fault: but that he is thy sonne. Beleeue it, thy owne subiects will detest thee, for robbing

robbing the of such a Prince, in whō they haue right as well as thy self. Some more
 words to that purpose he wold haue spokē, but *Pyrocles* who often had cald to him,
 did now fully interrupt him, desiring him not to do him the wrōg to giue his father
 ill words before him, willing him to consider it was their owne fault, & not his in-
 5 iustice, and withal, to remēber their resolution of well suffering all accidents, which
 this impatiencie did seeme to varie frō: & then kneeling downe with all humb-
 nes, he took the speech in this order to *Euarchus* If my dayly praier to the almigh-
 ty Gods, had so far preuailed, as to haue granted me the end whereto I haue dire-
 cted my actions; I should rather haue bene now a comfort to your mind, then an
 10 example of your iustice; rather a preseruer of your memorie by my life, then a no-
 numēt of your iudgemēt by my death. But since it hath pleased their vnsearchable
 wisdōs to ouerthrow all the desires I had to serue you, & make me become a shame
 vnto you; since the last obedience I can shew you is to die: vouchsafe yet o father (if
 my fault haue not made me altogether ynworthy so to tearme you) vouchsafe I say
 15 to let the few and last words your sonne shall euer speake, not be tedious vnto you.
 And if the remembrance of my vertuous mother, who once was deare vnto you,
 may beare any sway with you, if the name of *Pyrocles* haue at any time bin pleasant;
 let one request of mine, which shal not be for mine own life, be graciously accepted
 of you. What you owe to iustice is performed in my death: a father to haue execu-
 20 ted his only son, will leaue a sufficiēt exāple for a greater crime then this. My bloud
 will satisfie the highest point of sequitie, my bloud will satisfie the hardest hearted
 in this countrie. O saue the life of this Prince; that is the only all I will with my last
 breath demand of you. With what face will you looke vpon your sister, when in re-
 ward of nourishing me in your greatest need, you take away, and in such sort take
 25 away that which is more deare to her then all the world, and is the onely comfort
 wherewith she nourisheth her old age? O giue not such an occasion to the noble
Theſſalians, for euer to curse the match that their Prince did make with the *Mace-*
don bloud. By my losse there follows no publike losse, for you are to hold the seate,
 and to prouide your selfe perchance of a worthier successour. But how can you or
 30 all the earth recompence that damage that poore *Theſſalia* shall sustaine? who sen-
 ding out (whom otherwise they would no more haue spared then their owne eyes)
 their Prince to you, and you requesting to haue him, by you he should thus dis-
 honorably be extinguished. Set before you I beseech you, the face of that miserable
 people, when no sooner shall the newes come that you haue met your Nephew,
 35 but withall they shall heare that you haue beheaded him. How many teares they
 shall spend, how many complaints they shall make, so many iust execrations will
 light vpon you. And take heed o father, (for since my death answers my fault, while
 I liue I will call vpon that deare name) least seeking too precise a course of iustice,
 you be not thought most vniust in weakning your neighbours mightie estate, by ta-
 40 king away their only pillar. In me, in me this matter began, in me let it receiue his
 ending. Assure your self no man will doubt your seuerē obseruing the lawes, when
 it shall be knowne *Euarchus* hath killed *Pyrocles*. But the time of my euer farewell
 approacheth, if you do thinke my death sufficient for my fault, and do not desire to
 make my death more miserable then death: let these dying words of him, that was
 45 once your sonne, pierce your eares. Let *Musidorus* liue, and *Pyrocles* shall liue in
 him, and you shall not want a child. A child, cried out *Musidorus*, to him that
 killes *Pyrocles*? with that he fel againe to intreate for *Pyrocles*, and *Pyrocles* as fast for
Musidorus, each employing his wit how to shew himselfe most worthie to die, to

such an admiration of all the beholders, that most of the examining the matter by
 their owne passions, thought *Euarchus* (as often extraordinary excellencies, not be-
 ing rightly conceiued, do rather offend then please) an obstinate hearted man, and
 such an one, who being pitilesse, his dominion must needs be insupportable. But
Euarchus that felt his owne miserie more then they, and yet loued goodnesse more
 then himselfe, with such a sad assured behauiour as *Cato* killed himselfe withall, 5
 when he had heard the vttermost of that their speech tended vnto: he commaun-
 ded againe they should be caried away, rising vp from the seate (which he would
 much rather haue wished should haue bene his graue) and looking who would
 take the charge, whereto euerie one was exceeding backward. But as this pitifull 10
 matter was entring into, those that were next the Dukes bodie, might heare from
 vnder the veluet wherewith he was couered, a great voice of groning. Whereat
 euerie man astonished (and their spirits appalled with these former miseries, apt
 to take any strange conceit) when they might perfectly perceiue the bodie stirre.
 Then some began to feare spirits, some to looke for a miracle, most to imagine they 15
 knew not what. But *Philanax* and *Kalander*, whose eyes honest loue (though to
 diuerse parties) held most attentue, leapt to the table, and putting off the veluet
 couer, might plainly discerne, with as much wonder as gladnesse, that the Duke
 liued. For so it was, that the drinke he had receiued, was neither as *Gynecia* first i-
 magined, a loue potion, nor as it was after thought a deadly poison, but a drinke 20
 made by notable Arte, and as it was thought not without naturall magicke, to pro-
 cure for thirtie houres such a deadly sleepe, as should oppresse all shew of life. The
 cause of the making of this drinke had first bene, that a Princeesse of *Cyprus*, grand-
 mother to *Gynecia*, being notable learned, (and yet not able with all her learning
 to answer the obiections of *Cupid*) did furiously loue a yong nobleman of her fathers 25
 Court. Who fearing the kings rage, and not once daring either to attempt or ac-
 cept so high a place, she made that sleeping drinke, and found meanes by a trusty
 seruant of hers (who of purpose inuited him to his chamber) to procure him, that
 suspected no such thing, to receiue it. Which done, he no way able to resist, was
 secretly caried by him into a pleasant chamber, in the midst of a garden she had of 30
 purpose provided for this enterprise, where that space of time, pleasing her selfe
 with seeing and cherishing of him, when the time came of the drinckes end of wor-
 king, and he more astonished then if he had falne from the cloudes, she bad him
 choose either then to marie her, and to promise to flie away with her in a barke she
 had made ready, or else she would presently crie out, and shew in what place he 35
 was, with oth he was come thither to rauish her. The Nobleman in these straights,
 her beautie preuailed, he married her, and escaped the realme with her. And after
 many strange aduentures, were reconciled to the king her father, after whose
 death they reigned. But she gratefully remembring the seruice that drinke had done
 her, preserued in a bottle (made by singular Arte long to keepe it without peri- 40
 shing) great quantity of it, with the foretold inscription, which wrong interpre-
 ted by her daughter in law the Queene of *Cyprus*, was giuen by her to *Gynecia* at the
 time of her marriage; and the drinke finding an old bodie of *Basilus*, had kept him
 some houres longer in the trance, then it wold haue done a yonger But a good while
 it was, before good *Basilus* could come againe to himselfe: in which time *Euarchus* 45
 more glad the of the whole worlds Monarchy, to be rid of his miserable magistracy,
 which euen in iustice he was now to surrender to the lawfull Prince of that country;
 came from the Throne vnto him, and there with much ado made him vnderstand
 how

how these intricate matters had fallen out. Many garboyles passed through his fancie before he could be perswaded *Zelmane* was other then a woman. At length remembring the Oracle which now indeed was accomplished (not as before he had imagined) considering all had fallen out by the highest prouidence, & withall weighing in all these matters his owne fault had bene the greatest. The first thing he did, was with all honorable pompe to send for *Gynecia*: who (poore Lady) thought she was leading forth to her liuing buriall: and (when she came) to recount before all the people, the excellēt vertue was in her, which she had not only maintained all her life most vnspotted, but now was cōtēted so miserably to die, to follow her husband.

10 He told thē how she had warned him to take heed of that drinke: and so with all the exaltings of her that might be, he publikely desired her pardon for those errors he had cōmitted. And so kissing her, left her to receiue the most honorable fame of a nie Princeesse throughout the world, all men thinking (sauiing onely *Pyrocles* and *Philoclea*, who neuer bewrayed her) that she was the perfect mirrour of all wisely loue. Which though in that point vnderferued, she did in the remnant of her life

15 daylie purchase, with obseruing all dutie and faith to the example and glorie of *Greece*: so vn certaine are mortall iudgements, the same person most infamous, and most famous, and neither iustly. Then with Princely entertainment to *Euarchus*, and manie kind words to *Pyrocles*, whō still he dearly loued though in a more vertuous kind, the mariage was concluded, to the inestimable ioy of *Euarchus*, (towards whom now *Musidorus* acknowledged his fault) betwixt the peerelesse Princes and Princeesses. *Philanax* for his singular faith euer held deare of *Basilus* while he liued, and no lesse of *Musidorus*, who was to inherite that kingdome, and therein confirmed to him and his the second place of that Prouince, with great increase of his li-

20 uing to maintaine it. Which like proportion he vsed to *Kalodulus* in *Thessalia*: highlie honouring *Kalander* while he liued: and after his death continuing in the same measure to loue & aduāce his son *Clitophon*. But as for *Sympathus*, *Pyrocles* (to whom his father in his owne time gaue the whole kingdome of *Thrace*) held him alwaies about him, giuing him in pure gift, the great Citie of *Abdera*. But the solemnities

30 of these mariages with the *Arcadian* pastorales, full of manie comickall aduentures hapning to those rurall louers; the strange stories of *Artaxia* and *Plexirtus*, *Erona* and *Plangus*, *Helene* and *Amphialus*, with the wonderfull chances that befell them: The shepheardish loues of *Menalcas* with *Kalodulus* daughter; the poore hopes of the poore *Philisides* in the pursuit of his affections; the strange cōtinuance of *Klains* and *Strephons* desire. Lastly, the sonne of *Pyrocles*, named *Pyrophilus*, and *Melidora*, the faire daughter of *Pamela* by *Musidorus*, who euen at their birth entred into admirable fortunes; may awake some other spirit to exercise his pen in that, where-

35 with mine is already dulled.

*The end of the fifth and last booke
of Arcadia.*



CERTAINE SONETS VRITTEN
BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEY:

Neuer before printed.



Ince shunning paine, I ease can neuer find:
Since bashfull dread seekes where he knowes me harmed:
Since will is won, and stopped eares are charmed:
Since force doth faint, and sight doth make me blind.

Since loosing long, the faster still I bind:
Since naked sence can conquer reason armed:
Since heart in chilling feare with yce is warmed:
In fine, since strife of thought but marres the mind,

I yeeld, ô Loue, unto thy loathed yoke,
Yet craving law of armes, whose rule doth teach,
That hardly vsde, who euer prison broke,
In iustice quit, of honour made no breach:
Whereas if I a gratefull gardien haue,
Thou art my Lord, and I thy vowed slaue.

When Loue pust vp with rage of hy disdain,
Resolu'd to make me patterne of his might,
Like foe, whose wits inclin'd to deadly spite,
Would often kill to breed more feeling paine.

He would not arm'd with beautie, only raigne
On those affectes which easily yeeld to sight,
But vertue sets so high, that reasons light,
For all his strife can onlie bondage gaine.

So that I lime to pay a mortall fee,
Dead palse sicke of all my chiefeſt parts:
Like those whom dreames make vglie monsters see,
And can crie helpe with nought but grones and starts:
Longing to haue, hauing no wit to wish,
To staruing minds such is God Cupids dish.

To the tune of Non credo gia che piu infelice amante.

THe fire to see my wrongs for anger burneth:
 The aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:
 The sea to ebbe for grieve his flowing turneth:
 The earth with pitte dull the center keepeth:
 Fame is with wonder blazed:
 Time runnes away for sorow:
 Place standeth still amazed
 To see my night of evils, which hath no morow.
Alas, a lonly she no pitie taketh,
 To know my miseries, but chaste and cruell:
 My fall her glorie maketh,
 Yet still her eyes giue to my flames their fuell.

Fire burne me quite, till sense of burning leaue me:
 Aire let me draw no more thy breath in anguish:
 Seadrownd in thee, of tedious life bereaue me:
 Earth take this earth, wherein my spirits languish.
 Fame say I was not borne:
 Time haste my dying hower:
 Place see my grame vptorne:
 Fire, aire, sea, earth, fame, time, place, shew your power.
Alas, from all their helpe I am exiled,
 For hers am I, and death feares her displeasure.
 Fie death, thou art beguiled,
 Though I be hers, she makes of me no treasure.

To the same tune.

THe Nightingale as soone as Aprill bringeth
 Vnto her rested sense a perfect waking,
 While late bare earth, proud of new clothing springeth,
 Sings out her woes, a thorne her song-booke making:
 And mournfully bewailing,
 Her throate in tunes expresseth
 What grieve her breast oppresseth,
 For Thereus force on her chaste will preuailing.
 O Philomela faire, ô take some gladnesse,
 That here is iuster cause of plaintfull sadnesse:
 Thine earth now springs, mine fadeth,
 Thy thorne without, my thorne my heart inuadeth.

Alas she hath no other cause of anguish
 But Thereus loue, on her by strong hand wrokne,
 wherein she suffring all her spirits languish,
 Full womanlike complaines her will was brokne.

But I who dayly crauing,
 Cannot haue to content me,
 Haue more cause to lament me,
 Since wanting is more woe then too much hauing.
 O Philomela faire, ô take some gladnesse,
 That here is iuſter cause of plaintfull ſadneſſe:
 Thine earth now ſprings, mine ſadeth:
 Thy thorne without, my thorne my heart innadeth.

To the tune of Balciarni vita mia.

Sleepe Babie mine, Deſire nurſe Beautie ſingeth:
 Thy cries, ô Babie, ſet mine head on aking:
 The Babe cries way, thy loue doth keepe me waking.

Lully, lully, my babe, hope cradle bringeth
 Vnto my children alway good reſt taking:
 The babe cries way, thy loue doth keepe me waking.

Since babie mine, from me thy watching ſpringeth,
 Sleepe then a litle, pap content is making:
 The babe cries nay, for that abide I waking.

To the tune of the Spaniſh ſong, Se tu ſcñora no
 dueles demi.

O Faire, ô ſweet, when I do looke on thee,
 In vvhom all ioyes ſo well agree,
 Heart and ſoule do ſing in me.

This you heare is not my tongue,
 Which once ſaid what I conceaued,
 For it was of uſe bereaued,
 With a cruell answer ſong.

No, though tongue to rooſe be cleaued,
 Fearing leaſt he chaſtiſe be,
 Heart and ſoule do ſing in me.

O faire, O ſweete, &c.
 Juſt accord all muſike makes;
 In thee juſt accord excelleth,
 Where each part in ſuch peace dwelleth,
 One of other beautie takes.

Since then truth to all minds telleth,
 That in thee lines harmonic,
 Heart and ſoule do ſing in me.

O faire, O ſweet, &c.
 They that bea'n haue knowne, do ſay

(That

That who so that grace obtaineth,
 To see what faire sight there raigneth,
 Forced are to sing alway;
 So then since that heauen remaineth,
 In thy face I plainly see,
 Heart and soule do sing in me.

O faire, O sweete, &c.
 Sweete thinke not I am at ease,
 For because my cheefe part singeth,
 This song from deathes sorrow springeth:
 As to Swanne in last disease:
 For no dumbnesse nor death bringeth
 Stay to true loues melody:
 Heart and soule do sing in me.

These foure following Sonnets were made when
 his Ladie had paine in her face.

THE scourge of life, and deaths extreame disgrace,
 The smoke of hell, the monster called paine,
 Long sham'd to be accurst in enery place,
 By them who of his rude resort complaine.
 Lyke crafty wretch by time and trauell taught,
 His vgly euill in others good to hide,
 Late harbers in her face whom nature wrought,
 As treasure house where her best gifts do bide.
 And so by priuiledge of sacred seate,
 A seate where beauty shines and vertue raignes,
 He hopes for some small praise since she hath great,
 Within her beames wrapping his cruell staines.
 Ah saucy paine let not thy error last,
 More louing eyes she draws, more hate thou hast.

VO, no, to me, on me returne the smart:
 My burning tongue hath bred my mistresse paine,
 For oft in paine to paine my painefull heart
 With her due praise did of my state complaine.
 I praise her eyes whom neuer chance doth moue,
 Her breath which makes a sower answer sweete,
 Her milken breasts the nurse of child-like loue,
 Her legges (O legges) her ay well stepping seete.
 Paine heard her praise, and full of inward fire,
 (First scaling vp my heart as pray of his)
 He flies to her, and boldned with desire,
 Her face (thus ages praise) the thiefe doth kisse.
 O paine I now recant the praise I gaue,
 And sweare she is not worthy thee to haue.

SONETS.

Thou paine the onely guest of loath'd constraint,
 The child of curse, mans weaknesse foster-child,
 Brother to woe, and father of complaint:
 Thou paine, thou hated paine, from heau'n exile,
 How holdst thou her, whose eyes constraint doth feare,
 Whom curst do blesse, whose weaknesse vertues arme,
 Who others woes and plaints can chally beare:
 In whose sweete heau'n Angels of high thoughts swarme.
 What courage strange hath caught thy caitife hart,
 Fear'st not a face that oft whole harts deuowres,
 Or art thou from aboue bid play this part,
 And so no helpe gainst enny of those powers?
 If thus alas: yet while those partes haue wo,
 So stay her tounge, that she no more say no.

And haue I heard her say? ô cruell paine!
 And doth she know what mould her beautie beares?
 Mournes she in trush, and thinks that others faine?
 Feares she to feele, and feesles not others feares?
 Or doth she thinke al paine the minde forbeares?
 That heauie earth, not fierie sprites may plaine?
 That eyes weepe worse then hart in bloodie teares?
 That sense feesles more then what doth sense containe?
 No, no, she is too wise, she knowes her face
 Hath not such paine as it makes others haue:
 She knows the sicknesse of that perfect place
 Hath yet such health, as it my life can saue.
 But this she thinks, our paine hye cause excuseth,
 Where her who should rule paine, false paine abuseth.

Translated out of Horace, which beginnes
Rectius vines.

You better sure shall liue, not euer more
 Trying high seas, nor while seas rage you flee;
 Pressing too much vpon ill harbourd shore.

The golden meane who loues, liues safely free
 From filth of foreworne house, and quiet liues,
 Releas't from Court, where enuie needes must be.

The windes most oft the hugest Pine-tree greenes:
 The stately towers come downe with greater fall:
 The highest hills the bolts of thunder cleenes:

Enill happes do fill with hope, good happes appall
 With feare of change, the courage well prepare:
 Fowle winters as they come, away they shall.

T hough

Though present times and past with evils be snar'd,
They shall not last: with Citherne silent muse,
Apollo wakes, and bow hath sometime spar'd.

5

In hard estate with stowt shew valor use,
The same man still in whom wise doome preuailes,
In too full winde draw in thy swelling sailes.

10

Out of
Cathullus.

Nulli se dicit mulier mea nubere malle,
Quam mihi non si se Iupiter ipse petat,
Dicit sed mulier Cupido quæ dicit amanti,
In vento aut rapida scribere optet aqua.

15

Vnto no body my woman saith she had rather a wife be,
Then to my selfe, not though loue grew a suter of hers.
These be her words, but a womans words to a loue that is eager,
In wind or waters streame do require to be writ.

20

Qui sceptræ sæuus duro imperio regit,
Timet timentes, metus in Authorem redit.

Faire seeke not to be feard, most lonely beloued by thy seruants,
For true it is, that they feare many whom many feare.

25

L like as the Dove which seeled vp doth flie,
Is neither freed, nor yet to seruice bound,
But hopes to gaine some helpe by mounting hie,
Till want of force do force her fall to ground.

30

Right so my minde caught by his guiding eye,
And thence cast off, where his sweete hurt he found,
Hath neuer leaue to line, nor doome to dye,
Nor held in euill, nor suffered to be found.

35

But with his wings of fancies vp he goes,
To hie conceits whose fruits are oft but small,
Till wounded, blind, and wearied spirite, lose
Both force to flie and knowledge where to fall.
O happie Dove if she no bondage tried:
More happie I, might I in bondage bide.

E. D.

Prometheus when first from heauen hie,
He brought downe fire, ere then on earth not scene,
Fond of Delight, a Satyre standing by,
Gauc it a kisse, as it like sweete had beene.

SONETS.

*Feeling forthwith the other burning power,
Wood with the smart with shows and shryking shrill,
He sought his ease in riuer, field, and bower,
But for the time his grieve went with him still.*

*So silly I with that vnwonted sight
In humane shape an Angell from above,
Feeding mine eyes the impresson there did light,
That since I runne and rest as pleaseth loue,
The difference is, the Satires lippes, my hart,
He for a while, I euermore haue smart.*

*A Satyre once did runne away for dread,
With sound of horne, which he him selfe did blow,
Fearing and feared thus from him selfe he fled,
Deeming strange euill in that he did not know.*

*Such causelesse feares when coward minds do take,
It makes them flie that which they faine would haue:
As this poore beast who did his rest forsake,
Thinking not why, but how him selfe to saue.*

*Euen thus might I for doubts which I conceaue
Of mine owne wordes, my owne good hap betray,
And thus might I for feare of may be, leaue
The sweete pursute of my desired pray.
Better like I thy Satyre deereft Dyer,
Who burnt his lips to kisse faire shining fire.*

*My mistresse lowers and saith I do not loue:
I do protest and seeke with seruice due,
In humble mind a constant faith to proue,
But for all this I can not her remoue
From deepe vaine thought that I may not be true.*

*If othes might serue, euen by the Stygian lake,
Which Poets say, the gods them selues do feare,
I neuer did my vowed word forsake:
For why should I, whom free choise slaue doth make?
Else what in face, then in my fancie beare.*

*My Muse therefore for onely thou canst tell,
Tell me the cause of this my causelesse woe,
Tell how ill thought disgrac'd my doing well:
Tell how my ioyes and hopes thus fowly fell
To so lowe ebbe that wanted were to flowe.*

*O this it is, the knotted straw is found
 In tender harts, small things engender hate:
 A horses worth laid wast the Troyan ground:
 A three foote stoole in Greece, made Trumpets sound,
 An Asses shade ere now hash bred debate.*

*If Greekes themselves were mou'd with so small cause,
 To twist those broyles, which hardly would untwine:
 Should Ladies faire be tyed to such hard lawes,
 As in their moodes to take a lingring pause?
 I would it not, their mettall is too fine.*

*My hand doth not beare witnesse with my hart,
 She saith, because I make no wofull laies,
 To paint my liuing death, and endlesse smart:
 And so for one that felt god Cupids dart,
 She thinks I leade and liue too merrie daies.*

*Are Poets then the onely louers true?
 Whose hearts are set on measuring a verse:
 Who thinke themselves well blest, if they renew
 Some good old dumpe, that Chaucers mistresse knew,
 And vse but you for matters to rehearse.*

*Then good Apollo do away thy bowe:
 Take harp and sing in this our versing time:
 And in my braine some sacred humour flowe:
 That all the earth my woes, sighes, teares may know,
 And see you not that I fall now to ryme.*

*As for my mirth, how could I but be glad,
 whilst that me thought I iustly made my host
 That onely I the onely Mistresse had:
 But now, if ere my face with ioy be clad:
 Thinke Hanniball did laugh when Carthage lost.*

*Sweet Ladie, as for those whose sullen cheare,
 Compar'd to me, made me in lightnesse found:
 who Stoick-like in clowdie hew appeare:
 who silence force to make their words more deare:
 whose eyes seeme chaste, because they looke on ground:
 Beleeue them not for Phisicke true doth finde,
 Choler adust is ioyed in woman-kinde.*

*IN wonted walkes, since wonted fancies change,
 Some cause there is, which of strange cause doth rise:
 For in each thing wherto mine eye doth range,
 Part of my paine me seemes engrained lyes.*

*The Rockes which were of constant mind, the marke
In clyming steepe, now hard refusall show:
The shading woods seeme now my Sunne to darke,
And stately hilles disdaine to looke so low.*

5

*The restfull Canes now restlesse visions giue,
In Dales I see each way a hard assent:
Like late mowne meades, late cut from ioy I liue.
Alas sweete Brookes do in my teares augment:
Rockes, woods, hilles, caues, dales, meads, brookes, answere me,
Infected mindes infect each thing they see.*

10

*IF I could thinke how these my thoughts to leaue,
Or thinking still my thoughts might haue good end:
If rebell sence would reasons law receaue;
Or reason foyle would not in vaine contend:
Then might I thinke what thoughts were best to thinke:
Then might I wisely swimme or gladly sinke.*

15

20

*If either you would change your cruell hart,
Or cruell (still) time did your beantie staine:
If from my soule this lone would once depart,
Or for my loue some loue I might obtaine,
Then might I hope a change or ease of minde,
By your good helpe, or in my selfe to finde.*

25

*But since my thoughts in thinking still are spent,
VVith reasons strife, by senses ouerthrowne,
You fairer still, and still more cruell bent,
I louing still a loue that loueth none.
I yeeld and strine, I kisse and curse the paine:
Thought, reason, sense, time, you, and I, maintaine.*

30

35

A Farewell.

*OF T haue I musde, but now at length I finde,
Why those that die, men say they do depart:
Depart, a word so gentle to my minde,
Weakely did seeme to paint deaths ugly dart.*

40

*But now the starres with their strange course do binde
Me one to leaue, with whome I leaue my hart.
I heare a crye of spirits faint and blinde,
That parting thus my chiefeſt part I part.*

45

*Part of my life, the loathed part to me,
Liues to impart my wearie clay some breath.*

But

SONETS.

481

But that good part, wherein all comforts be,
Now dead, doth shew departure is a death,
Tea worse then death, death parts both woe and ioy,
From ioy I part still liuing in annoy.

Finding those beames, which I must euer loue,
To marre my minde, and with my hurt to please,
I deemd it best some absence for to prone,
If further place might further me to ease.

My eyes thence drawne, where liued all their light,
Blinded forthwith in darke dispaire did lye,
Like to the Molde with want of guiding sight,
Deepe plunged in earth, depriv'd of the skie.

In absence blind, and wearied with that woe,
To greater woes by presence I returne,
Euen as the flye, which to the flame doth goe,
Pleased with the light, that his small corse doth burne.
Faire choice I haue, either to liue or dye
A blinded Molde, or else a burned flye.

The 7. Wonders of England.

Neere VVilton sweete, huge heapes of stones are found,
But so confus'd, that neither any eye
Can count them iust, nor reason reason trye,
What force brought them to so vnlkely ground.

To stranger weights my mindes waste soile is bound,
Of passion hilles reaching to reasons skie,
From fancies earth passing all numbers bound,
Iassing all ghesse, whence into me should fly
So made a masse, or if in me it growes,
A simple soule should breed so mixed woes.

The Bruertons haue a Lake, which when the Sunne,
Approching warmes (not else) dead logges up sends,
From hideous depth, which tribute when it ends,
Sore signe it is, the Lords last thred is spun.

My lake is sense, whose still streames neuer runne,
But when my Sunne her shining twinnes there bends,
Then from his depth with force in her begunne,
Long drowned hopes to watrie eyes it lends:
But when that failes, my dead hopes up to take,
Their master is faire warn'd his will to make.

SONETS.

*we haue a fish, by strangers much admire,
which caught, to cruell search yeelds his chiefe part:
(with gall cut out) close vp againe by art,
Yet lines untill his life be new requirde.*

*A stranger fish, my selfe not yet expirde,
Though rapt with beauties hooke, I did impart
My selfe vnto th' Anatomy desirde,
In steed of gall, leauing to her my hart:
Yet line with thoughts close vp, till that she will
By conquests right in steed of searching kill.*

*Peake hath a Caue, whose narrow entrie finde,
Large roomes within, where droppes distill amaine:
Till knit with cold, though there vknowne remaine,
Decke that poore place with Alabaster linde.*

*Mine eyes the streight, the roomie caue, my minde,
Whose cloydie thoughts, let fall an inward raine
Of sorrowes droppes till colder reason binde
Their running fall into a constant vaine
Of truth, farre more then Alabaster pure,
Which though despisde, yet still doth truth endure.*

*A field there is, where if a stake be prest,
Deepe in the earth, what hath in earth receipt,
Is chang'd to stone, in hardnesse, cold, and weight,
The wood, aboue doth soone consuming rest.*

*The earth, her cares: the stake is my request:
Of which, how much may pierce to that sweet seate,
To honor turnd, doth dwell in honors nest,
Keeping that forme, though void of wonted heate:
But all the rest, which feare durst not applie,
Failing themselues, with withered conscience dye.*

*Of ships, by shipwrack cast on Albion coast,
which rotting on the rockes, their death do dye:
From wodden bones, and bloud of pitch doth flie
A bird which gets more life then ship had lost.*

*My ship, desire, with winde of lust long tost,
Brake on faire cleenes of constant chastitie:
where plagu'd for rash attempt, giues vp his ghost,
So deepe in seas of vertue beauties ly.
But of this death flies vp a purest loue,
which seeming lesse, yet nobler life doth moue.*

These

*These wonders England breedes, the last remaines,
A Ladie in despite of nature chaste.
On whome all loue, in whom no loue is plasht,
Where fairenesse yeelds to wisdomes shorrest raines.*

*An humble pride, a skorne that fauour staines:
A womans mould, but like an Angell graste,
An Angells mind, but in a woman caste:
A heauen on earth, or earth that heauen containes:
Now thus this wonder to my selfe I frame,
She is the cause that all the rest I am.*

To the tune of *wilhemus van Nassaw*, &c.

W*Ho hath his fancie pleased,
With fruits of happie sight,
Let here his eyes be raised
On natures sweetest light.
A light which doth dissem,
And yet unite the eyes,
A light which dying neuer,
Is cause the looker dyes.*

*She neuer dies but lasteth
In life of louers hart,
He euer dies that wasteth
In loue, his chiefeest part.
Thus is her life still guarded,
In neuer dying faith:
Thus is his death rewarded,
Since she liues in his death.*

*Looke then and dye, the pleasure
Doth answere well the paine:
Small losse of mortall treasure,
Who may immortall gaine.
Immortall be her graces,
Immortall is her minde:
They fit for heauenly places,
This heauen in it doth binde.*

*But eyes these beauties see not,
Nor sence that grace descryes:
Yet eyes deprived be not,
From sight of her faire eyes:
Which as of inward glorie
They are the outward scale:
So may they liue still sorie
Which die not in that weale.*

SONETS.

*But who hath fancies pleased,
With fruits of happie sight,
Let here his eyes be rayed
On natures sweetest light.*

The smokes of Melancholy.

V*Ho hath euer felt the change of lone,
And knowne those pangs that the loosers prone,
May paint my face without seeing mee,
And write the state how my fancies bee,
The lothsome buds growne on sorrowes tree.*

*But who by hearesay speakes, and hath not fully felt
What kind of fires they be in which those spirits melt,
Shall gesse, and faile, what doth displease,
Feeling my pulse, misse my disease.*

*O no, O no, tryall onely shewe
The bitter iuice of forsaken woes,
Where former blisse present euils do staine,
Nay former blisse addes to present paine,
While remembrance doth both states containe.*

*Come learners then to me, the modell of mishappe,
Engulfed in despaire, slid downe from fortunes lappe:
And as you like my double lot,
Tread in my steppe s, or follow not.*

*For me alas I am full resolu'd,
Those bands alas shall not be dissolu'd,
Nor breake my word though reward come late,
Nor faile my faith in my failing fate,
Nor change in change, though change change my state.*

*But alwayes one my selfe with eagle eyde trueth to flie,
Up to the sunne, although the sunne my wings do frie:
For if those flames burne my desire,
Yet shall I die in Phœnix fire.*

V*Hen to my deadlie pleasure,
When to my liuelie torment,
Ladie mine eyes remained,
Ioynd alas to your beames.*

*With violence of heau'nly
Beautie tied, to vertue,*

Reason

SONETS.

435

*Reason abasht retyred,
Gladly my senses yeelded.*

*Gladly my senses yeelding,
Thus to betray my harts fort,
Left me deuoid of all life.*

*They to the beemie Sunnes went,
where by the death of all deashts,
Finde to what harme they hastned.*

*Like to the silly Syluan,
Burn'd by the light he best liked,
when with a fire he first met.*

*Yet, yet, a life to their death,
Lady you haue reserved,
Lady the life of all lone.*

*For though my sense be from me,
And I be dead who want sense,
Yet do we both liue in you.*

*Turned anew by your meanes,
Vnto the flowre that ay turnes,
As you, alas, my Sunne bends.*

*Thus do I fall to rise thus,
Thus do I dye to liue thus,
Changed to a change, I change not.*

*Thus may I not be from you :
Thus be my senses on you:
Thus what I thinke is of you:
Thus what I seeke is in you:
All what I am, it is you.*

*To the tune of a Neapolitan song, which
beginneth : No, no, no, no.*

*NO, no, no, no, I cannot hate my foe,
Although with cruell fire,
First throwne on my desire,
She sackes my rendred sprite.
For so a faire, a flame embraces
All the places,*

SONETS.

where that heat of all heates springeth,
That it bringeth
To my dying heart some pleasure,
Since his treasure
Burneth bright in fairest light. No, no, no, no.

25

No, no, no, no, I cannot hate my foe,
Although, &c.
Since our lines be not immortall,
But to mortall
Fetters tyed, do waite the hower
of deathes power.
They haue no cause to be sorie,
who with glorie
End the way, where all men stay. No, no, no, no.

30

35

No, no, no, no, I cannot hate my foe,
Although, &c.
No man doubts, whom beantie killeth,
Faure death feeleth,
And in whome faure death proce edeth,
Glorie breedeth:
So that I in her beames dying,
Glorie trying,
Though in paine, cannot complaine. No, no, no, no.

30

35

To the tune of a Neapolitan Villanell.

AL my sense thy sweetnesse gained,
Thy faire haire my heart enchained,
My poore reason thy words moued,
So that thee like heauen I loued.

30

Fa la la leridan, dan dan dan deridan:
Dan dan dan deridan deridan dei:
While to my minde the out side stood,
For messenger of inward good.

35

Now thy sweetnesse sowre is deemed,
Thy haire not worth a haire esteemed:
Reason hath thy words remoued,
Finding that but words they proued.

40

Fa la la leridan dan dan dan deridan,
Dan dan dan deridan deridan dei,
For no faire signe can credit winne,
If that the substance faile within.

40

No

SONETS.

187

No more in thy sweetnesse glorie,
For thy knitting haire be sorie:
Vse thy words but to bewaile thee,
That no more thy beames auaille thee.

5

Dan, dan,

Dan, dan,

Lay not thy colours more to view,
Without the picture be found true.

10

Wo to me, alas she weepeth!
Foole in me, what follie creepeth,
Was I to blaspheme enraged,
Where my soule I haue engaged.

15

Dan, dan,

Dan, dan,

And wretched I must yeeld to this,
The fault I blame her chastnesse is.

20

Sweetnesse sweetly pardon folly,
Tyme haire your captiue holly,
Words, ô vwords of heauenlie knowledge,
Know my words their faults acknowledge.

Dan, dan,

Dan, dan.

25

And all my life I will confesse,
The lesse I loue, I line the lesse,

Translated out of the *Diana* of Montemaior in Spanish. VVhere *Sireno* a shepheard
pulling out a litle of his Mistresse *Dianas* haire, wrapt about with greene
filke, who now had vtterlie forsaken him: to the haire he thus bewaild him-
selfe.

30

What changes here, ô haire,
I see since I saw you:

35

How ill fits you this greene to weare,
For hope the colour aue.

Inaeced I well did hope,

Though hope were mixt with feare,

40

No other shepheard should haue scope,
Once to approch this heare.

Ah haire, how many dayes,

My Diane made me shew,

45

VVith thousand pretty childish plaies,

If I ware you or no,

Alas how oft with teares,

O teares of guilefull breast,

*She seemed full of iealous feares,
whereat I did but ieast.*

*Tell me ô haire of gold,
If I then faultie be,
That trust those killing eyes, I would,
Since they did warrant me.
Haue you not seene her mood,
What streames of teares she spent,
Till that I sware my faith so stood,
As her words had it bent?*

*Who hath such beautie seene
In one that changeth so?
Or where ones loue so constant bene?
Who euer saw such woe?
Ah haire are you not grieu'd,
To come from whence you be,
Seeing how once you saw I liu'd,
To see me as you see?*

*On sandie banke of late,
I saw this woman sit,
Where sooner die then change my state,
She with her finger writ:
Thus my beleefe was staid,
Behold Lones mightie hand
On things, were by a woman said,
And written in the sand.*

*The same Sireno in Montemaior holding his mistresse glasse
before her, looking vpon her while she viewed
her selfe, thus sang:*

*OF this high grace with blisse conioyn'd
No further debt on me is laid,
Since that in selfe same mettall coin'd,
Sweet Ladie you remaine well paid.
For if my place giue me great pleasure,
Hauing before me Natures treasure,
In face and eyes vnmatched being,
You haue the same in my hands seeing,
What in your face mine eyes do measure.*

*Nor thinke the match vneuenly made,
That of those beames in you do tarie:
The glasse to you but giues a shade,
To me mine eyes the true shape carie.*

SONETS.

489

For such a thought most highlie prized,
Which euer hath Loues yoke despised:
Better then one captiu'd perceineth,
Though he the linely forme receiueth:
The other sees it but disguised.

Ring out your belles, let mourning shewes be spread,
For loue is dead:

All Loue is dead, infected
With plague of deepe disdaine:
Worth as nought worth reiected,
And Faith faire scorne doth gaine.
From so vngratefull fancie,
From such a femall franzie,
From them that vse men thus,
Good Lord deliuer vs.

Weepe neighbours, weepe, do you not heare it said,
That Loue is dead:

His death-bed peacocks follie,
His winding sheete is shame,
His will false-seeming holie,
His sole expectour blame.
From so vngratefull, &c.

Let Dirge be sung, and T rentals rightly read,
For Loue is dead:

Sir wrong his tombe ordaineth:
My mistresse Marble-heart,
Which Epitaph containeth,
Her eyes were once his dart.
From so vngratefull, &c.

Alas, I lie: rage hath this errour bred,
Loue is not dead.

Loue is not dead, but sleepeth
In her vnmatched mind:
Where she his counsell keepeth,
Till due desert she find.
Therefore from so vile fancie,
To call such wit a franzie,
Who loue can temper thus,
Good Lord deliuer vs.

Thou blind mans marke, thou fooles selfe chosen nare,
Fond fancies scum, and dregs of scattred thoughts,
Band of all euils, cradle of causelesse care,
Thou web of will, whose end is neuer wrought,

SONETS.

*Desire, desire I haue too dearely bought,
With priſe of mangled mind thy worthleſſe ware,
Too long, too long aſleepe thou haſt me brought,
Who ſhould my mind to higher things prepare.*

*But yet in vaine thou haſt my ruine ſought,
In vaine thou madeſt me to vaine things aſpire,
In vaine thou kindeſt all thy ſmokie fire.*

*For vertue hath this better leſſon taught,
Within my ſelfe to ſeek my onelie hire:
Deſiring nought but how to kill deſire.*

*L*eaue me ô Loue, which reacheſt but to duſt,
And thou my mind aſpire to higher things:
Grow rich in that which neuer taketh ruſt:
What euer fades, but fading pleaſure brings.

*Draw in thy beames, and humble all thy might,
To that ſweet yoke, where laſting freedomes be:
Which breakes the clowdes and opens forth the light.
That doth both ſhine and giue vs ſight to ſee.*

*O take faſt hold, let that light be thy guide,
In this ſmall courſe which birth drawes out to death,
And thinke how euill becommeth him to ſlide,
Who ſeeketh heau'n, and comes of heau'nly breath.
Then farewell world, thy uttermoſt I ſee,
Eternall Loue maintaine thy life in me.*

Splendidis longum valedico nugis.

THE





THE DEFENCE OF POESIE,

by Sir PHILIP SIDNEY Knight.

(..)

15 **W**Hen the right vertuous E. W. and I were at the Emperours
 Court together, we gaue our selues to learne horfmanship
 of *Ion Pietro Pugliano*, one that with great commendation had
 the place of an Esquire in his stable: and he acording to the
 20 fertlneffe of the Italian wit, did not onely affoord vs the
 demonstration of his practife, but sought to enrich our minds
 with the contemplations therein, which he thought most
 precious. But with none I remember mine eares were at
 any time more loaden, then when (either angred with slow paiment, or moued
 with our learnerlike admiration) he exercised his speech in the praise of his facul-
 tie. Hee saide souldiers were the noblest estate of mankind, and horfmen the no-
 25 blest of souldiers. Hee saide they were the maisters of warre, and ornamentes
 of peace, speedie goers, and strong abiders, triumphers both in Campes and
 Courtes: nay to so vnbeleueed a point he proceeded, as that no earthly thing
 bred such wonder to a Prince, as to be a good horse-man. Skill of gouernment
 was but a *Pedanteria* in comparison: then would he adde certaine praises, by tel-
 30 ling what a peerelesse beast the horse was, the onely seruiceable Courtier with-
 out flatterie, the beast of most beautie, faithfulnessse, courage, and such more,
 that if I had not bene a peece of a *Logician* before I came to him, I thinke he would
 haue perswaded me to haue wished my selfe a horse. But thus much at least with
 his no few words he draue into me, that selfe-loue is better then any guilding,
 35 to make that seeme gorgeous wherein our selues be parties. Wherin if *Puglianos*
 strong affection and weake arguments will not satisfie you, I will giue you a nea-
 rer example of my selfe, who I know not by what mischaunce in these my not
 old yeares and idlest times, hauing slipt into the title of a Poet, am prouoked to
 say something vnto you in the defence of that my vnelected vocation, which if I
 40 handle with more good will, then good reasons, beare with me, since the schol-
 ler is to be pardoned that followeth the steps of his maister. And yet I must say, that
 as I haue more iust cause to make a pitifull defence of poore Poetrie, which
 from almost the highest estimation of learning, is false to be the laughing stocke of
 children, so haue I need to bring some more auailable proofes, since the for-
 45 mer is by no man bard of his deserued credite, the sillie later hath had euen the
 names of *Philosophers* vsed to the defacing of it, with great daunger of ciuill warre
 among the Muses. And first trulie to all them that professing learning inueigh

against Poetrie may iustlie be objected, that they go verie neare to vngratefulnesse, to seeke to deface that which in the noblest nations and languages that are known, hath bene the first light giuer to ignorance, & first nurse, whose milk litle & litle enabled the to feed afterwards of tougher knowledges. And will you play the Hedgehogge, that being receiued into the denne, draue out his holte? or rather the Vipers, that with their birth kill their parents? Let learned *Greece* in any of his manifold Sciences, be able to shew me one booke before *Musaeus*, *Homer* and *Hesiod*, all three nothing else but Poets. Nay, let anie Historie be brought, that can say any writers were there before them, if they were not men of the same skill, as *Orpheus*, *Linus*, and some other are named, who hauing bene the first of that countrie that made pennes deliuerers of their knowledge to the posteritie, may iustly challenge to be called their Fathers in learning. For not onely in time they had this prioritie, (although in it selfe antiquitie be venerable) but went before them, as causes to draw with their charming sweetnesse the wild vntamed wits to an admiration of knowledge. So as *Amphion* was said to moue stones with his Poetrie to build *Thebes*, and *Orpheus* to be listened to by beasts, indeed stony and beastly people. So among the *Romans* were *Linus*, *Andronicus*, and *Ennius*, so in the Italian language, the first that made it to aspire to be a treasure-house of Science were the Poets *Dante*, *Bocace*, and *Petrarch*. So in our English were *Gower* and *Chaucer*, after whom, encouraged and delighted with their excellent foregoing, others haue followed to beautifie our mother tongue, as well in the same kind as other artes. This did so notably shew it selfe, that the *Philosophers* of *Greece* durst not a long time appeare to the world, but vnder the maske of Poets. So *Thales*, *Empedocles*, and *Parmenides*, sang their naturall Philosophie in verses. So did *Pythagoras* and *Phocillides* their morall Counsels. So did *Tirtens* in warre matters, and *Solon* in matters of policie, or rather they being Poets, did exercise their delightfull veine in those points of highest knowledge, which before them lay hidden to the world. For that wise *Solon* was directlie a Poet, it is manifest, hauing written in verse the notable Fable of the *Atlanticke* Island, which was continued by *Plato*. And trulie euen *Plato* whosoeuer well considereth, shall find that in the bodie of his workethough the inside and strength were Philosophie, the skinne as it were and beautie, depended most of Poetrie. For all stands vpon Dialogues, wherein he faignes manie honest Burgeesses of *Athens* speake of such matters, that if they had bene set on the racke, they would neuer haue confessed them: besides his Poeticall describing the circumstances of their meetings, as the well ordering of a banquet, the delicacie of a walke, with enterlacing meere Tales, as *Gyges Ring* and others, which, who knowes not to be flowers of Poetrie, did neuer walke into *Apollos* Garden. And euen *Historiographers*, although their lippes sound of things done, and verity be written in their foreheads, haue bene glad to borow both fashion and perchaunce weight of the Poets. So *Herodotus* entituled his Historie by the name of the nine Muses, & both he and all the rest that followed him, either stale, or vsurped of Poetrie, their passionate describing of passions, the many particularities of battels which no man could affirme, or if that be denied me, long Orations put in the mouths of great kings and Captaines, which it is certaine, they neuer pronounced. So that trulie neither *Philosopher*, nor *Historiographer* could at the first haue entred into the gates of popular iudgmets, if they had not takē a great passport of Poetrie, which in all Nations at this day, where learning flourisheth not,

is plaine to be seene: in all which they haue some feeling of Poetrie. In *Turkie*, besides their Law-giuing Diuines, they haue no other writers but Poets. In our neighbour countrie *Ireland*, where truely learning goes verie bare, yet are their Poets held in a deuout reuerence. Euen among the most barbarous and simple
 5 *Indians*, where no writing is, yet haue they their Poets, who make and sing songs, which they call *Arentos*, both of their Ancestors deeds, and praises of their Gods. A sufficient probabilitie, that if euer learning come among them, it must be by hauing their hard dull wittes softened and sharpened with the sweet delights of Poetrie, for vntill they find a pleasure in the exercise of the mind, great
 10 promises of much knowledge, will little perswade them that know not the fruits of knowledge. In *Wales*, the true remnant of the ancient *Brittons*, as there are good authorities to shew, the long time they had Poets which they called *Bardes*: so thorough all the conquests of *Romanes*, *Saxons*, *Danes*, and *Normans*, some of whome did seeke to ruine all memorie of learning from among them,
 15 yet do their Poets euen to this day last: so as it is not more notable in the seone beginning, then in long continuing. But since the Authours of most of our Sciences, were the *Romanes*, and before them the *Greekes*, let vs a little stand vpon their authorities, but euen so farre as to see what names they haue giuen vnto this now scorned skill. Among the *Romanes* a Poet was called *Vates*, which is as
 20 much as a Diuiner, foreseer, or Prophet, as by his conioyned words *Vaticinium*, and *Vaticinari*, is manifest, so heauenly a title did that excellent people bestow vpon this heart-rauishing knowledge, and so farre were they caried into the admiration thereof, that they thought in the chaunceable hitting vpon of any such verses, great foretokens of their following fortunes were placed. Wherevpon
 25 grew the word of *Sortes Virgiliana*, when by sodaine opening *Virgils* booke, they lighted vpon some verse of his, as it is reported by manie, whereof the Histories of the *Emperours* liues are full. As of *Albinus* the Gouvernour of our Iland, who in his childhood met with this verse:

Arma amens capio, nec sat rationis in armis.

30 And in his age performed it, although it were a very vaine and godlesse superstition as also it was, to thinke spirits were commanded by such verses, wherevpon this word *Charmes* deriued of *Carmina*, commeth: for yet serueth it to shew the great reuerence those wits were held in, and altogether not without ground, since both the Oracles of *Delpbos* and *Sybillas* prophecies, were wholly deliuered in verses,
 35 for that same exquisite obseruing of number and measure in the words, and that high flying libertie of conceit proper to the Poet, did seeme to haue some diuine force in it. And may not I presume a little farther, to shew the reasonablenesse of this word *Vates*, and say that the holy *Dauids* Psalmes are a diuine Poeme? If I do, I shall not do it without the testimonie of great learned men both ancient and
 40 moderne. But euen the name of Psalmes will speake for me, which being interpreted, is nothing but songs: then that it is fullie written in meeter, as all learned *Hebritians* agree, although the rules be not yet fully found. Lastly and principally, his handling his prophecie, which is meerely Poeticall. For what else is the awaking his muscicall Instruments, the often and free changing of persons, his
 45 notable *Prosopopæias*, when he maketh you as it were see God comming in his maiestie, his telling of the beasts ioyfulness, and hilles leaping, but a heauenly Poesie, wherein almost he sheweth himselfe a passionate louer of that vspeakable

and euerlasting beautie, to be seene by the eyes of the mind, onely cleared by faith? But truly now hauing named him, I feare I seeme to prophane that holie name, applying it to Poetrie, which is among vs throwne downe to so ridiculous an estimation. But they that with quiet iudgements will looke a litle deeper into it, shall find the end and working of it such, as being rightly applied, deserueth not to be scourged out of the Church of God. But now let vs see how the Greekes haue named it, and how they deemed of it. The Greekes named him ποιητήν, which name hath, as the most excellent, gone through other languages, it commeth of this word ποιεῖν, which is to make: wherein I know not whether by lucke or wisdome, wee Englishmen haue met with the Greekes in calling him a Maker. Which name, how high and incomparable a title it is, I had rather were knowne by marking the scope of other sciences, then by any partiall allegation. There is no Arte deliuered vnto mankind, that hath not the workes of nature for his principall obiekt, without which they could not consist, and on which they so depend, as they become Actors and Players, as it were, of what Nature will haue set forth. So doth the *Astronomer* looke vpon the starres, and by that he seeth, set downe what order Nature hath taken therein. So doth the *Geometrician* and *Arithmetician* in their diuerse sorts of quantities. So doth the *Musitian* in times tell you, which by Nature agree, which not. The naturall *Philosopher* thereon hath his name, and the morall *Philosopher* standeth vpon the naturall vertues, vices, or passions of man: and follow nature faith he, therein, and thou shalt not erre. The *Lawyer* faith, what men haue determined. The *Historian*, what men haue done. The *Grammarians*, speaketh onely of the rules of speech, and the *Rhetoritian* and *Logitian*, considering what in nature will soonest proue, and perswade thereon, giue artificiall rules, which still are compassed within the circle of a question, according to the proposed matter. The *Physitian* weigheth the nature of mans bodie, and the nature of things helpfull or hurtfull vnto it. And the *Metaphysicke* though it bee in the second and abstract notions, and therefore be counted supernaturall, yet doth he indeed build vpon the depth of Nature. Onely the *Poet* disdainng to be tied to anie such subiection, lifted vp with the vigour of his owne inuention, doth grow in effect into another nature: in making things either better then Nature bringeth forth, or quite anew, formes such as neuer were in nature: as the *Heroes*, *Demi-gods*, *Cyclops*, *Chimeras*, *Furies*, and such like; so as he goeth hand in hand with Nature, not inclosed within the narrow warrant of her gifts, but freely ranging within the Zodiacke of his owne wit. Nature neuer set forth the earth in so rich Tapistrie as diuerse Poets haue done, neither with so pleasant riuers, fruitfull trees, sweete-sinelling flowers, nor whatsoever else may make the too much loued earth more louely: her world is brassen, the Poets onely deliuer a golden. But let those things alone, and go to man, for whom as the other things are, so it seemeth in him her vttermost cunning is imployed: and know whether thee haue brought forth so true a louer as *Theagenes*, so constant a friend as *Pylades*, so valiant a man as *Orlando*, so right a Prince as *Xenophons Cyrus*, and so excellent a man euery way, as *Virgils Aeneas*. Neither let this be iestingly conceiued, because the works of the one be essentiall, the other in imitation or fiction: for euery vnderstanding knoweth the skill of each Artificer standeth in that *Idea*, or foreconceit of the worke, & not in the worke it selfe. And that the Poet hath that *Idea*, is manifest, by the deliivering the forth in such excellency

as he had imagined them : which deliuering forth, also is not whollie imaginatiue, as wee are wont to say by them that build Castles in the aire : but so farre substantiallie it worketh, not onely to make a *Cyrus*, which had bene but a particular excellencie, as nature might haue done, but to bestow a *Cyrus* vpon the world to make many *Cyrusses*, if they will learne aright, why and how that maker made him. Neither let it be deemed too sawcie a comparison, to ballance the highest point of mans wit with the efficacie of nature: but rather giue right honour to the heauenly maker of that maker, who hauing made man to his owne likenesse, set him beyond, and ouer all the workes of that second nature, which in nothing he sheweth so much as in Poetrie; when with the force of a diuine breath, he bringeth things forth surpassing her doings: with no small arguments to the incredulous of that first accursed fall of *Adam*, since our erected wit maketh vs know what perfection is, and yet our infected wil keepeth vs from reaching vnto it. But these arguments will by few be vnderstood, and by fewer graunted: thus much I hope will be giuen me, that the Greekes with some probabilitie of reason, gaue him the name aboue all names of learning. Now let vs go to a more ordinarie opening of him, that the truth may bee the more palpable: and so I hope, though wee get not so vnmached a praise, as the *Etimologie* of his names will graunt, yet his verie description, which no man will denie, shall not iustly be barred from a principall commendation. *Poesie* therefore, is an Arte of *imitation*: for so *Aristotle* tearmeth it in the word *μimesis*, that is to say, a representing, counterfeiting, or figuring forth to speake metaphorically. A speaking *Picture*, with this end, to teach and delight. Of this haue bene three generall kinds, the chiefe both in antiquitie and excellencie, were they that did imitate the vnconceiuable excellencies of God, such were *Dauid* in his *Psalmes*, *Salomon* in his *Song of Songs*, in his *Ecclesiastes* and *Prouerbes*. *Moses* and *Deborah* in their Hymnes, and the writer of *Iob*. Which beside other, the learned *Emanuel Tremelius*, and *Fr. Iunius* do entitle the Poeticall part of the Scripture: against these none will speake that hath the holie Ghost in due holie reuerence. In this kind, though in a full wrong Diuinitie, were *Orpheus*, *Amphion*, *Homer* in his Hymnes, and manie other both *Greekes* and *Romanes*. And this *Poesie* must be vsed by whosoever will follow Saint *Paules* counsaile, in singing *Psalmes* when they are merie, and I know is vsed with the fruit of comfort by some, when in sorowfull pangs of their death-bringing sinnes, they find the consolation of the neuer-leauing goodnesse. The second kind is of them that deale with matter Philosophicall, either morall, as *Tirteus*, *Phocilides*, *Cato*: or naturall, as *Lucretius*, and *Virgils Georgikes*; or Astronomicall, as *Manilius* and *Pontanus*; or Historicall, as *Lucan*: which who mislike, the fault is in their iudgement, quite out of taste, and not in the sweet food of sweetly vttered knowledge. But because this second sort is wrapped within the folde of the proposed subiect, and takes not the free course of his owne inuention, whether they properly bee Poets or no, let *Grammarians* dispute; and go to the third indeed right Poets, of whom chieflie this question ariseth: betwixt whom and these second, is such a kinde of difference, as betwixt the meaner sort of Painters, who counterfeit onely such faces as are set before them, and the more excellent, who hauing no law but wit, bestow that in colours vpon you, which is fittest for the eye to see, as the constant, though lamenting looke of *Lucretia*, when shee punished in her selfe

anothers fault: wherein he painteth not *Lucretia*, whom he neuer saw, but painteth the outward beautie of such a vertue. For these third be they, which most properlie do imitate to teach and delight: and to imitate, borow nothing of what is, hath bene, or shall be, but range only, reyned with learned discretion, into the diuine consideration of what may be & should be. These bee they that as the first and most noble sort, may iustly bee termed *Vates*: so these are wayted on in the excellentest languages and best vnderstandings, with the fore described name of *Poets*. For these indeed do meerely make to imitate, and imitate both to delight and teach, and delight to moue men to take that goodnesse in hand, which without delight they would flie as from a stranger; and teach to make them know that goodnesse whereunto they are mooued: which being the noblest scope to which euer any learning was directed, yet want there not idle tongues to barke at them. These be subdivided into sundry more speciall denominations. The most notable be the *Heroicke*, *Lyricke*, *Tragicke*, *Comicke*, *Satyricke*, *Iambicke*, *Elegiacke*, *Pastorall*, and certaine others: some of these being tearmed according to the matter they deale with, some by the sort of verse they liked best to write in: for indeed the greatest part of Poets, haue apparelled their Poeticall inuentions, in that numbrous kind of writing which is called *Verse*. Indeed but apparelled Verse, being but an ornament, and no cause to Poetrie, since there haue bene manie most excellent Poets that neuer versified, and now swarme many versifiers that need neuer answer to the name of Poets. For *Xenophon* who did imitate so excellentlie as to giue vs *Effigiem iusti imperij*, the portraiture of a iust Empire, vnder the name of *Cyrus*, as *Cicero* saith of him, made therein an absolute heroicall Poeme. So did *Heliodorús* in his sugred inuention of that picture of loue in *Theagenes* and *Chari-clea*, and yet both these wrote in Prose: which I speake to shew, that it is not ryiming and versing that maketh a Poet, (no more then a long gowne maketh an Aduocate, who though hee pleaded in armour, should bee an Aduocate and no Souldier:) but it is that faining notable images of vertues, vices, or what else, with that delightfull teaching, which must be the right describing note to know a Poet by. Although indeed the Senate of Poets haue chosen verse as their fittest rayment: meaning as in matter they passed all in all, so in manner to go beyond them: not speaking table-talk fashion, or like men in a dreame, wordes as they chanceable fall from the mouth, but peasing each sillable of each word by iust proportion, according to the dignity of the subiect. Now therefore it shall not be amisse, first to weigh this latter sort of Poetrie by his workes, and then by his parts; and if in neither of these Anatomies hee be condemnable, I hope we shall receiue a more fauourable sentence. This purifying of wit, this enriching of memorie, enabling of iudgement, and inlarging of conceit, which commonly we call learning, vnder what name so euer it come forth, or to what immediate end soeuer it be directed, the finall end is, to leade and draw vs to as high a perfection, as our degenerate soules, made worse by their clay lodgings, can be capable of. This according to the inclination of man, bred many formed impressions: for some that thought this felicity principallie to be gotten by knowledge, and no knowledge to be so high or heavenly, as acquaintance with the starres; gaue themselves to *Astronomie*: others perswading themselves to be *Demi-gods*, if they knew the causes of things, became naturall and supernaturall *Philosophers*. Some an admirable delight drew to *Musicke*: and some the certaintie of demon-

demonstration to the *Mathematikes*: but all one and other hauing this scope to know, and by knowledge to lift vp the mind from the dungeon of the bodie, to the enioying his owne diuine essence. But when by the ballance of experience it was found, that the *Astronomer* looking to the starres might fall in a ditch: that the enquiring *Philosopher* might bee blind in himselfe: and the *Mathematician* might draw forth a straight line with a crooked heart. Then loe did Prooue, the ouer-ruler of opinions make manifest, that all these are but seruing sciences; which as they haue a priuate end in themselues, so yet are they all directed to the highest end of the mistresse knowledge, by the Greekes ἀρχιτεκτονική, which stands as I thinke, in the knowledge of a mans selfe, in the Ethicke and Politicke consideration, with the end of well doing, and not of well knowing onely. Euen as the Saddlers next end is to make a good saddle, but his further end, to serue a nobler facultie, which is horfmanship: so the horfmans to souldierie: and the souldier not onely to haue the skill, but to perfourme the practise of a souldier. So that the ending end of all earthly learning, being vertuous action, those skilles that most serue to bring forth that, haue a most iust title to be Princes ouer all the rest: wherein if wee can shew, the Poet is worthy to haue it before any other competitors, among whom principallie to challenge it, step forth the morall *Philosophers*, whom me thinkes, I see comming towards me, with a fullen grauitie, as though they could not abide vice by day-light, rudely cloathed, for to witnesse outwardly their contempt of outward things, with bookes in their hands against glorie, whereto they set their names: sophistically speaking against subtiltie, and angrie with any man in whom they see the foule fault of anger. These men casting larges as they go of definitions, diuisions, and distinctions, with a scornfull interrogatiue, do soberly aske, whether it be possible to finde any path so ready to leade a man to vertue, as that which teacheth what vertue is, and teacheth it not onely by deliuering forth his verie being, his causes and effects, but also by making knowne his enemy vice, which must be destroyed: and his cumbersome seruuant Passion, which must be mastered: by shewing the generalities that containes it, and by the specialities that are deriued from it. Lastly, by plaine setting downe how it extends it selfe out of the limits of a mans owne little world, to the gouernment of families, and maintaining of publike societies. The *Historian* scarcely giues leasure to the *Moralist* to say so much, but that he loaden with old Mousse-eaten Records, authorising himselfe for the most part vpon other Histories, whose greatest authorities are built vpon the notable foundation *Heare-say*, hauing much ado to accord differing writers, and to picke truth out of partiality; better acquainted with a thousand yeares ago, then with the present age, and yet better knowing how this world goes, then how his owne wit runnes; curious for Antiquities, and inquisitiue of Nouelties, a wonder to young folkes, and a Tyrant in table-talke; denyeth in a great chafe, that any man for teaching of vertue, and vertuous actions, is comparable to him. I am *Testis temporum, lux veritatis, vita memoria, magistra vita, nuncia vetustatis*. The *Philosopher*, saith hee, teacheth a disputatiue vertue, but I do an actiue. His vertue is excellent in the daungerlesse *Academie* of Plato: but mine sheweth forth her honourable face in the battels of *Marathon*, *Pharsalia*, *Poitiers*, and *Agincourt*. Hee teacheth vertue by certaine abstract considerations: but I onely bid you follow the footing of them that haue gone before you. Old aged experience goeth beyond the fine witted

Philosopher: but I giue the experience of manie ages. Lastly, if he make the song booke, I put the learners hand to the Lute, and if he be the guide, I am the light. Then would he alleage you innumerable examples, confirming storie by stories, how much the wisest Senators and Princes haue bene directed by the credite of Historie, as *Brutus*, *Alphonſus of Aragon*, (and who not if need be.) At length, 5 the long line of their disputation makes a point in this, that the one giue the precept, and the other the example. Now whom shall we find, since the question standeth for the highest forme in the schoole of learning to be moderator? Trulie as me seemeth, the Poet, and if not a moderator, euen the man that ought to carie the title from them both: and much more from all other seruing sciences. There- 10 fore compare we the *Poet* with the *Historian*, and with the morall *Philosopher*: and if he go beyond them both, no other humane skill can match him. For as for the *Diuine*, with all reuerence he is euer to be excepted, not onely for hauing his scope as farre beyond anie of these, as Eternitie exceedeth a Moment: but euen for passing each of these in themselves. And for the *Lawyer*, though *Ius* be the daughter of *Iustice*, the chiefe of vertues; yet because he seekes to make men good, rather *formidine pœna*, then *virtutis amore*: or to say righte, doth not endeuer to make men good, but that their euill hurt not others, hauing no care so he be a good citizen, how bad a man he be. Therefore as our wickednesse maketh him necess- 15 farie, and necessitie maketh him honourable, so is he not in the deepest truth to stand in ranke with these, who all endeuer to take naughtinesse away, and plant goodnesse euen in the secretest cabinet of our soules: & these foure are all that any way deale in the consideration of mens manners, which being the supreame knowledge, they that best breed it, deserue the best commendation. The *Philosopher* therefore, and the *Historian*, are they which would win the goale, the one by 25 precept, the other by example: but both, not hauing both, do both halte. For the *Philosopher* setting downe with thornie arguments the bare rule, is so hard of vtterance, and so mystie to be conceiued, that one that hath no other guide but him, shall wade in him till he be old, before he shall find sufficient cause to be honest. For his knowledge standeth so vpon the abstract and generall, that happie is that 30 man who may vnderstand him, and more happy that can applie what he doth vnderstand. On the other side, the *Historian* wanting the precept, is so tied not to what should be, but to what is, to the particular truth of things, and not to the generall reason of things, that his example draweth no necessary consequence, and therefore a lesse fruitfull doctrine. Now doth the peerelesse Poet performe both: for 35 whatsoeuer the *Philosopher* saith should be done, he giues a perfect picture of it by someone, by whom he presupposeth it was done, so as hee coupleth the generall notion with the particular example. A perfect picture (I say) for he yeeldeth to the powers of the mind an image of that whereof the *Philosopher* bestoweth but a wordish description, which doth neither strike, pierce, nor possesse the sight of the 40 soule so much, as that other doth. For as in outward things to a man that had neuer seene an *Elephant*, or a *Rinoceros*, who should tell him most exquisitely all their shape, colour, bignesse and particular marks, or of a gorgeous pallace an *Architecture*, who declaring the full beauties, might well make the hearer able to repeate as it were by roat all he had heard, yet should neuer satisfie his inward conceit, with being witness to it selfe of a true liuing knowledge: but the same man, 45 as soone as he might see those beasts well painted, or that house well in modell, should

should straightwaies grow without neede of any description to a iudicial compre-
 hending of them, so (no doubt) the *Philosopher* with his learned definitions, be it of
 vertues or vices, matters of publike policie or priuate gouernement, replenisheth
 the memorie with many infallible grounds of wisdom, which notwithstanding
 lye darke before the imaginatiue and iudging power, if they be not illuminated or
 5 figured forth by the speaking picture of *Poesie*. *Tully* taketh much paines, and ma-
 nie times not without Poeticall helps to make vs know the force, loue of our coun-
 trey hath in vs. Let vs but heare old *Anchises*, speaking in the middest of *Troyes*
 flames, or see *Vlisses* in the fulnesse of all *Calipsoes* delights, bewaile his absence
 10 from barraine and beggarly *Itheca*. Anger (the *Stoikes* said) was a short madnesse:
 let but *Sophocles* bring you *Aiax* on a stage, killing or whipping sheepe and oxen,
 thinking them the Armie of Greekes, with their chieftaines *Agamemnon*, and *Me-
 nelaus*: and tell me if you haue not a more familiar insight into Anger, then finding
 in the schoolemen his *Genus* and *Difference*. See whether wisdom & temperance
 15 in *Vlisses* and *Diomedes*, valure in *Achilles*, friendship in *Nisus* and *Eurialus*, euen
 to an ignorant man carie not an apparant shining: and contrarily, the reomrse of
 conscience in *Oedipus*; the soone repenting pride in *Agamemnon*; the selfe deuou-
 ring crueltie in his father *Atreus*; the violence of ambition in the two *Theban* bro-
 20 thers; the sowre sweetnesse of reuenge in *Medea*; and to fall lower, the *Terentian*
Gnato, and our *Chaucers* *pander* so exprest, that we now vse their names, to signi-
 fie their Trades: And finally, all vertues, vices, and passions, so in their owne natu-
 rall states, laid to the view, that we seeme not to heare of them, but clearly to see
 through them. But euen in the most excellent determination of goodnesse, what
 25 *Philosophers* counsell can so readily direct a Prince, as the faigned *Cyrus* in *Xeno-
 phon*, or a vertuous man in all fortunes: as *Aeneas* in *Virgill*, or a whole Common-
 wealth, as the Way of Sir Thomas Moores *Eutopia*. I say the Way, because where
 Sir Thomas Moore erred, it was the fault of the man, and not of the Poet: for that
 Way of patterning a Common-wealth, was most absolute, though he perchance
 hath not so absolutely performed it. For the question is, whether the faigned image
 30 of Poetrie, or the regular instruction of Philosophie, hath the more force in tea-
 ching. Wherein if the *Philosophers* haue more rightly shewed themselves *Philo-
 sophers*, then the *Poets* haue attained to the high toppe of their profession (as in
 truth, *Mediocribus esse poetis non Dij, non homines, non concessere columnæ*.) it is (I
 say againe) not the fault of the Art, but that by fewe men that Art can be accom-
 35 plished. Certainly, euen our Sauour Christ could as well haue giuen the morall
 common places of vncharitablenesse and humblenesse, as the diuine narration of
Dines and *Lazarus*, or of disobedience and mercie, as that heauenly discourse of
 the lost child and the gracious Father, but that his thorough searching wisdom,
 knew the estate of *Dines* burning in hell, and of *Lazarus* in *Abrahams* bosome,
 40 would more constantly as it were, inhabit both the memorie and iudgement. Tru-
 ly for my selfe (me seemes) I see before mine eyes, the lost childe disdainfull pro-
 digalitie turned to enuy a Swines dinner: which by the learned *Diuines* are thought
 not historicall acts, but instructing parables. For conclusion, I say the *Philosopher*
 teacheth, but he teacheth obscurely, so as the learned onely can vnderstand him,
 45 that is to say, he teacheth them that are already taught. But the Poet is the foode
 for the tendrest stomachs, the Poet is indeed, the right popular *Philosopher*. Where-
 of *Esope*s Tales giue good prooffe; whose prettie Allegories stealing vnder the for-
 mall Tales of beastes, makes many more beastly then beastes: begin to heare the

found of vertue frō those dumbe speakers. But now may it be alleaged, that if this
 imagining of matters be so fit for the imagination, then must the *Historian* needes
 surpasse, who brings you images of true matters, such as indeed were done, and not
 such as fantastically or falsly may be suggested to haue bin done. Truly *Aristotle* him
 self in his discourse of *Poesie*, plainly determineth this questiō, saying, that *Poesie* is
 φιλοσοφώτερον & σπουδαίτερον, that is to say, it is more Philosophical, & more then histo- 5
 ry. His reason is, because *Poesie* dealeth with καδ' ἅπαν, that is to say, with the vniuerfall
 consideratiō, & the History with καδ' ἑαυτὸν the particullar. Now saith he, the vniuer-
 fall wayes what is fit to be said or done, either in likelihood or necessitie, which the
Poesie cōsidereth in his imposed names: & the particullar only marketh whether *Al-* 10
cibiades did or suffered this or that. Thus far *Aristotle*. Which reason of his, as al his
 is most full of reason. For indeed if the questiō were, whether it were better to haue
 a particullar act truly or falsly set downe, there is no doubt which is to be chosen, no
 more then whether you had rather haue *Vespasians* Picture right as he was, or at the
 Painters pleasure nothing relēbling. But if the questiō be for your own vse and lear- 15
 ning, whether it be better to haue it set down as it should be, or as it was; then cer-
 tainly is more doctrinable, the fained *Cyrus* in *Xenophon*, then the true *Cyrus* in *Iustin*:
 & the fained *Aeneas* in *Virgil*, then the right *Aeneas* in *Dares Phrygius*: as to a Ladie
 that desired to fashion her countenāce to the best grace, a Painter should more be-
 nefit her to portraitt a most sweet face, writing *Canidia* vpon it, then to paint *Canidia* 20
 as she was, who *Horace* sweareth was ful ill fauored. If the *Poet* do his part aright, he
 wil shew you in *Tantalus Atreus*, & such like, nothing that is not to be shunned: in *Cy-*
rus, *Aeneas*, *Ulysses*, each thing to be followed: where the *Historian* bound to tel things
 as things were, cannot be liberall, without he wil be Poeticall of a perfect patterne,
 but as in *Alexander* or *Scipio* himself, shew doings, some to be liked, some to be mis- 25
 liked; & then how will you discerne what to follow, but by your owne discretion,
 which you had without reading *Q. Curtius*. And whereas a man may say, though in
 vniuerfall consideration of doctrine, the *Poet* preuaileth, yet that the Historie in
 his saying such a thing was done, doth warrant a man more in that he shall follow.
 The answer is manifest, that if he stand vpon that was, as if he should argue, because 30
 it rained yesterday, therefore it should raine to day, then in deede hath it some ad-
 uantage to a grosse conceit. But if he know an example onely enformes a coniectu-
 red likelihood, & so go by reason, the *Poet* doth so far exceed him, as he is to frame
 his example to that which is most reasonable, be it in warlike, politike, or private
 matters, where the *Historian* in his bare, was, hath many times that which we call 35
 fortune, to ouerrule the best wisdom. Many times he must tell euent, whereof
 he can yeeld no cause, or if he do, it must be poetically. For that a fained example
 hath as much force to teach, as a true example (for as for to moue, it is cleare, since
 the fained may be tuned to the highest key of passion) let vs take one exāple wherein
 an *Historian* & a *Poet* did concur. *Herodotus* & *Iustin* do both testifie, that *Zopirus*, 40
 King *Darius* faithfull seruant, seeing his maister long resisted by the rebellious *Babi-*
lonians, fained himselfe in extreame disgrace of his King, for verifing of which, he
 caused his owne nose & eares to be cut off, & so flying to the *Babylonians* was recei-
 ued, & for his known valure so farre credited, that he did find meanes to deliuer the
 ouer to *Darius*. Much like matter doth *Livy* record of *Tarquinius* & his sonne *Xeno-* 45
phon excellently fained such another stratagem, performed by *Abradates* in *Cyrus*
 behalfe. Now would I faine know, if occasion be presented vnto you, to serue your
 Prince by such an honest dissimulatiō, why you do not as wel learne it of *Xenophons*
 fiction, as of the others veritie: and truly so much the better, as you shall saue your

nose by the bargain. For *Abradates* did not counterfet so far. So then the best of the *Historian* is subiect to the *Poet*, for whatsoeuer actiō or factiō, whatsoeuer counsell, pollicie, or warre stratagem the *Historian* is bound to recite, that may the *Poet* if he list with his imitation make his owne; beautifying it both for further teaching, & more delighting as it please him: hauing all frō *Dante* his heauē to his hell, vnder the authority of his pen. Which if I be asked what *Poets* haue done so? as I might wel name some, so yet say I, and say againe, I speake of the Art and not of the Artificer. Now to that which commonly is attributed to the praise of Historie, in respect of the notable learning is got by marking the successe, as though therein a man should see vertue exalted & vice punished: truly that commendation is peculiar to Poetrie, and farre off from Historie; for indeed Poetrie euer sets vertue so out in her best colours, making fortune her wel-waiting handmaid, that one must needs be enamoured of her. Well may you see *Vlisses* in a storme and in other hard plights, but they are but exercises of patience & magnanimity, to make thē shine the more in the neare following prosperitie. And of the contrary part, if euil men come to the stage, they euer goe out (as the Tragedie writer answered to one that misliked the shew of such persons) so manicked, as they litle animate folkes to follow them. But the Historie being captiued to the truth of a foolish world, is many times a terror from wel-doing, & an encouragement to vnbridled wickednesse. For see we not valiant *Milciades* rot in his fetters? The iust *Phocion* & the accomplished *Socrates* put to death like traytors? The cruell *Seuerus* liue prosperously? The excellent *Seuerus* miserably murdered? *Sylla* & *Marinus* dying in their beds? *Pompey* & *Cicero* flaine then when they would haue thought exile a happinesse? See we not vertuous *Cato* driuen to kill himselfe, & Rebell *Cesar* so aduanced, that his name yet after 1600 yeares lasteth in the highest honor? And marke but euen *Cesars* owne words of the forenamed *Sylla*, (who in that onely did honestly to put downe his dishonest tyrannie) *Literas nesciuit*: as if want of learning caused him to do wel. He meant it not by Poetrie, which not content with earthly plagues, deuise new pnnishments in hell for tyrants: nor yet by Philosophy, which teacheth *Occidentese esse*, but no doubt by skil in Historie, for that indeed can afford you *Cipselus*, *Periander*, *Phalaris*, *Dionisius*, & I know not how many more of the same kennel, that speed wel inough in their abominable iniustice of vsurpatiō. I cōclude therefore that he excelleth historie, not only in furnishing the mind with knowledge, but in setting it forward to that which deserues to be called & accounted good: which setting forward & mouing to wel-doing, indeed setteth the Lawrel crown vpon the *Poets* as victorious, not onely of the *Historian*, but ouer the *Philosopher*, howsoeuer in teaching; it may be questionable. For suppose it be graunted, that which I suppose with great reason may be denied, that the *Philosopher* in respect of his methodicall proceeding, teach more perfectly then the *Poet*, yet do I think, that no man is so much *εὐλογιστότερος*, as to compare the *Philosopher* in mouing with the *Poet*. And that mouing is of a higher degree then teaching; it may by this appeare, that it is well nigh both the cause and effect of teaching. For who will be taught, if he be not moued with desire to be taught? And what so much good doth that teaching bring forth, (I speake still of morall doctrine) as that it moueth one to do that which it doth teach. For as *Aristotle* saith, it is not *γνῶσις* but *πράξις* must be the frute: & how *πράξις* can be without being moued to practise, it is no hard matter to consider. The *Philosopher* sheweth you the way, he informeth you of the particularities, as well of the tediousnesse of the way, as of the pleasant lodging you shall haue when your iourney is ended, as of the manie by-turnings that may diuert you from your way.

But this is to no man but to him that will reade him, & reade him with attentive studious painfulnesse, which constant desire whosoeuer hath in him, hath alreadie past halfe the hardnesse of the way: and therefore is beholding to the *Philosopher*, but for the other halfe. Nay truely learned men haue learnedly thought, that where once reason hath so much ouer-mastered passion, as that the minde hath a free desire to do well, the inward light each minde hath in it selfe, is as good as a *Philosophers* booke, since in Nature we know it is well, to do well, and what is well, and what is euill, although not in the words of Art which *Philosophers* bestow vpon vs: for out of naturall conceit the *Philosophers* drew it; but to be moued to do that which we know, or to be moued with desire to know. *Hoc opus, hic labor est*. Now therein of all Sciences I speake still of humane (and according to the humane conceit) is our *Poet* the *Monarch*. For he doth not onely shew the way, but giueth so sweete a prospect into the way, as will intice any man to enter into it: Nay he doth as if your iourney should lye thorough a faire vineyard, at the verie first, giue you a cluster of grapes, that full of that taste, you may long to passe further. He be-
 ginneth not with obscure definitions, which must blurre the margent with interpretations, and load the memorie with doubtfulnesse: but he commeth to you with words set in delightfull proportion, either accompanied with, or prepared for the well enchaunting skill of *Musike*, and with a tale forsooth he commeth vnto you, with a tale, which holdeth children from play, and old men from the Chimney corner; and pretending no more, doth intend the winning of the minde from wickednesse to vertue; euen as the child is oftē brought to take most wholsome things by hyding them in such other as haue a pleasant taste: which if one should begin to tell them the nature of the *Alloes* or *Rhabarbarum* they should receiue, would sooner take their phisicke at their eares then at their mouth, so is it in men (most of which are childish in the best things, till they be cradled in their graues) glad they will be to heare the tales of *Hercules*, *Achilles*, *Cyrus*, *Aeneas*, & hearing them, must needes heare the right description of wisdom, valure, and iustice; which if they had bene barely (that is to say Philosophically) set out, they would sweare they be brought to schoole againe; that imitation whereof *Poetrie* is, hath the most conueniencie to nature of all other: in so much that as *Aristotle* saith, those things which in themselues are horrible, as cruell battels, vnnaturall monsters, are made in poeticall imitation, delightfull. Truely I haue knowne men, that euen with reading *Amadis de Gaule*, which God knoweth, wanteth much of a perfect *Poesie*, haue found their hearts moued to the exercise of curtesie, liberalitie, and especially courage. Who readeth *Aeneas* carying old *Anchises* on his backe, that wisheth not it were his fortune to performe so excellent an Act? Whom doth not those words of *Turnus* moue, (the Tale of *Turnus* hauing planted his image in the imaginatiō) *fugientem hac terra videbit? Vsq̃ue adeone mori miserum est?* Where the *Philosophers* (as they thinke) scorne to delight, so must they be content little to moue; sauing wrangling whether *Virtus* be the chiefe or the only good; whether the contemplatiue or the actiue life do excell; which *Plato* & *Boetius* wel knew: and therefore made mistresse *Philosophie* verie often borrow the masking raiment of *Poesie*. For euen those hard harted euill men, who thinke vertue a schoole name, & know no other good but *indulgere genio*, & therefore despise the austere admonitions of the *Philosopher*, & feele not the inward reason they stand vpon, yet will be content to be delighted, which is all the good, fellow *Poet* seemes to promise; & so steale to see the forme of goodnesse, (which scene, they cannot but loue) ere themselues be aware,

aware, as if they tooke a medicine of Cheries. Infinite proofes of the strange effects of this Poeticall inuention might be alleaged: onely two shall serue, which are so often remembred, as I thinke all men know them. The one of *Menemus Agrippa*, who, when the whole people of *Rome* had resolutely deuided themselves from the *Senate*, with apparant shew of vtter ruine, though he were for that time an excellent Orator, came not among them vpon trust either of figuratiue speeches, or cunning insinuations, and much lesse with far fet *Maximes* of *Philosophie*, which especially if they were *Platonike*, they must haue learned *Geometrie* before they could well haue conceiued: but forsooth, he behaueth himselfe like a homely and familiar *Poet*. He telleth them a tale, that there was a time, when all the parts of the bodie made a mutinous conspiracie against the belly, which they thought deuoured the frutes of each others labour: they concluded they would let so vnprofitable a spender starue. In the end, to be short, for the tale is notorious, and as notorious that it was a tale, with punishing the belly they plagued themselves; this applied by him, wrought such effect in the people, as I neuer read, that only words brought forth: but then so sudden and so good an alteration, for vpon reasonable conditions, a perfect reconcilment ensued. The other is of *Nathan* the Prophet, who when the holie *Dauid*, had so farre forsaken God, as to confirme adulteric with murther, when he was to do the tendrest office of a friend, in laying his owne shame before his eyes; sent by God to call againe so chosen a seruant, how doth he it? but by telling of a man whose beloued lambe was vngratefully taken from his bosome. The application most diuinely true, but the discourse it selfe fained; which made *Dauid* (I speake of the second & instrumental cause) as in a glasse see his owne filthinesse, as that heauenly Psalme of mercie well testifieth. By these therefore examples and reasons, I thinke it may be manifest, that the *Poet* with that same hand of delight, doth draw the minde more effectually then any other *Arte* doth. And so a conclusion, not vnfitly ensue, that as vertue is the most excellent resting place for all worldly learning to make his end of, so *Poetry* being the most familiar to teach it, & most Princely to moue towards it, in the most excellent worke, is the most excellent workeman. But I am content not onely to decipher him by his workes (although workes in commendation and dispraise, must euer hold a high authoritie) but more narrowly will examine his parts, so that (as in a man) though altogether may carrie a presence full of maiestie & beauty, perchance in some one defectuous peece we may finde blemish: Now in his parts, kindes, or *species*, as you list to terme them, it is to be noted, that some *Poesies* haue coupled together two or three kindes, as the *Tragicall* and *Comickall*, whereupon is risen the *Tragicomicall*, some in the maner haue mingled prose and verse, as *Sanazara* and *Boetius*; some haue mingled matters *Heroicall* and *Pastorall*, but that commeth all to one in this question, for if seuered they be good, the coniunctiō cannot be hurtfull: therefore perchance forgetting some, and leauing some as needlesse to be remembred. It shall not be amisse, in a word to cite the speciall kindes, to see what faults may be found in the right vse of them. Is it then the *Pastorall Poeme* which is misliked? (For perchance where the hedge is lowest they wil soonest leap ouer) is the poore pipe disdained, which sometimes out of *Malibeus* mouth, can shewe the miserie of people, vnder hard Lords and rauening souldiers? And againe by *Titerus*, what blessednesse is deriued to them that lye lowest, from the goodnesse of them that sit highest? Sometimes vnder the prettie tales of *Wolues* & *sheepe*, can include the whole considerations of wrong doing, & patience; sometimes shew

that contentions for trifles, can get but a trifling victorie, where perchance a man may see, that euen *Alexander & Darius*, when they straued who should be Cocke of this worlds dunghill, the benefit they got, was, that the after-liuers may say, *Hæc meministi & victum frustra contendere T hirsim. Ex illo Coridon, Coridon est tempore nobis.* Or is it the lamenting *Elgiack*, which in a kinde heart would moue rather pittie then blame, who bewaileth with the great Philosopher *Heracitus*, the weaknesse of mankind, and the wretchednesse of the world: who surely is to be praised either for compassionate accompanying iust causes of lamentations, or for rightly painting out how weake be the passions of wofulnesse? Is it the bitter but wholesome *Iambick*, who rubbes the galled minde, in making shame the Trumpet of villanie, with bold and open crying out against naughtinesse? Or the *Satirick*, who *Omne vaser vitium ridenti tangit amico*, who sportingly neuer leaueth, til he make a man laugh at follie; and at length ashamed, to laugh at himselfe; which he cannot auoid, without auoiding the follie? who while *Circum praeordia ludit*, giueth vs to feele how many headaches a passionate life bringeth vs to? How when all is done, *Est Vlubris animus si nos non deficit aquus.* No perchance it is the *Comick*, whom naughtie Play-makers and stage-keepers, haue iustly made odious. To the arguments of abuse, I will after answer, onely thus much now is to be said, that the *Comædy* is an imitation of the common errors of our life, which he representeth in the most ridiculous and scornefull sort that may be: so as it is impossible that any beholder can be content to be such a one. Now as in *Geometrie*, the oblique must be knowne as well as the right, and in *Arithmesick*, the odde as well as the euen, so in the actions of our life, who seeth not the filthinesse of euill, wanteth a great foile to perceiue the beautie of vertue. This doth the *Comædie* handle so in our priuate and domesticall matters, as with hearing it, we get as it were an experience what is to be looked for of a niggardly *Demea*, of a craftie *Dannus*, of a flattering *Gnato*, of a vain-glorious *Thraso*: and not onely to know what effects are to be expected, but to know who be such, by the signifying badge giuen them by the *Comædient*. And litle reason hath any man to say, that men learne the euill by seeing it so set out, since as I said before; there is no man liuing, but by the force truth hath in nature, no sooner seeth these men play their parts, but witheth them in *Fislrinum*, although perchance the sack of his owne faults lie so behind his back, that he seeth not himselfe to dance the same measure: whereto yet nothing can more open his eyes, then to see his owne actions contemptibly set forth. So that the right vse of *Comædie*, will I thinke, by no bodie be blamed; and much lesse of the high and excellent *Tragedie*, that openeth the greatest wounds, and sheweth forth the *Vlcers* that are couered with *Tissue*, that maketh Kings feare to be Tyrants, and Tyrants manifest their tyrannicall humors, that with stirring the affects of *Admiracion & Commiseration*, teacheth the vncertaintie of this world, & vpon how weake foundations gilden rooves are builded: that maketh vs know, *Qui sceptrasenuis duro imperio regit, Timet timentes, metus in authorem redit.* But how much it can moue, *Plutarch* yeeldeth a notable testimony of the abhominable Tyrant *Alexander Pheræus*, from whose eyes a *Tragedie* well made and represented, drew abundance of teares, who without all pittie had murdered infinite numbers, & some of his own blood: so as he that was not ashamed to make matters for *Tragedies*, yet could not resist the sweete violence of a *Tragedie*. And if it wrought no further good in him, it was, that he in despight of himselfe, withdrew himselfe from hearkening to that which might mollifie his hardened heart. But it is not the *Tragedie* they do mislike, for

for it were too absurd to cast out so excellent a representation of whatsoeuer is most worthie to be learned. Is it the *Lyricke* that most displeaseth; who with his tuned *Lyre*, and well accorded voice, giueth praise, the reward of vertue, to vertuous acts? who giueth morall precepts and natural Problemes, who sometime raiseth vp his voyce to the height of the heauens, in singing the laudes of the immortall God? Certainly I must confesse mine owne barbarousnesse, I neuer heard the old Song of *Percy* and *Douglas*, that I found not my heart moued more then with a Trumpet; and yet is it sung but by some blind Crowder, with no rougher voice, then rude stile: which being so euill apparelled in the dust and Cobweb of that vnciuill age, what would it worke, trimmed in the gorgeous eloquence of *Pindare*? In *Hungarie* I haue seene it the manner at all Feastes and other such like meetings, to haue songs of their ancestors valure, which that right souldierlike nation, thinke one of the chiefeest kindlers of braue courage. The incōparable *Lacedemonians* did not only carrie that kind of *Musicke* euer with them to the field, but euen at home, as such songs were made, so were they all content to be singers of them: when the lustie men were to tell what they did, the old men what they had done, and the young what they would do. And where a man may say, that *Pindare* many times praiseth highly Victories of small moment, rather matters of sport then vertue, as it may be answered, it was the fault of the *Poet*, and not of the *Poetrie*; so indeed the chiefe fault was, in the time and custome of the *Greekes*, who set those toyes at so high a price, that *Philip* of *Macedon* reckened a horse-race wonne at *Olympus*, among his three fearefull felicities. But as the vnimitable *Pindare* often did, so is that kind most capable and most fit, to awake the thoughts from the sleepe of idlenesse, to embrace honourable enterprises. Their rests the *Heroicall*, whose verie name I thinke should daunt all backbiters. For by what conceit can a tongue be directed to speake euil of that which draweth with him no lesse champions then *Achilles*, *Cyrus*, *Aeneas*, *Turnus*, *Tideus*, *Rinaldo*, who doeth not onely teach and moue to a truth, but teacheth and mooueth to the most high and excellent truth: who maketh magnanimitie and iustice, shine through all mistie fearefulnesse and foggie desires. Who if the saying of *plato* and *Tully* be true, that who could see vertue, would be wonderfully rauished with the loue of her beautie. This man setteth her out to make her more louely in her holliday apparell, to the eye of anie that will daine, not to disdaine vntill they vnderstand. But if any thing be alreadie said in the defence of sweete *Poetrie*, all concurrerh to the maintaining the *Heroicall*, which is not onely a kinde, but the best and most accomplished kindes of *Poetrie*. For as the Image of each Action stirreth and instructeth the minde, so the lostie Image of such worthies, most enflameth the minde with desire to be worthie: and enformes with counsaile how to be worthie. Onely let *Aeneas* be worne in the Tablet of your memorie, how he gouerneth himselfe in the ruine of his Countrie, in the preseruing his olde Father, and carying away his religious Ceremonies, in obeying Gods Commandement, to leaue *Dido*, though not onely all passionate kindnesse, but euen the humane consideration of vertuous gratefulnesse, would haue craued other of him: how in stormes, how in sports, how in warre, how in peace, how a fugitiue, how victorious, how besieged, how besieging, how to straungers, how to Allies, how to enemies, how to his owne. Lastly, how in his inward selfe, and how in his outward gouernment, and I thinke in a minde most preiudiced with a preiudicating humor, He will be found in excellencie

fruitfull. Yea as *Horace* saith, *Melius, Chrysippo, & Crantore*: but truly, I imagine it falleth out with these Poet-whippers, as with some good womē, who often are sicke, but in faith they cannot tell where. So the name of *Poetrie* is odious to them, but neither his cause nor effects, neither the summe that containes him, nor the particularities descending from him, giue any fast handle to their carping dispraise. Since then *Poetrie* is of all humane learnings the most ancient, and of most fatherly antiquitie, as from whence other learnings haue taken their beginnings; Since it is so vniuersall, that no learned nation doth despise it, nor barbarous nation is without it. Since both *Romane* and *Greeke* gaue such diuine names vnto it, the one of prophesying, the other of making; and that in deede 10 that name of making is fit for him, considering; that where all other Arts retaineth themselues within their subiect, and receiue as it were their being from it. The *Poet* onely, onely bringeth his owne stuffe, and doth not learne a Conceit out of a matter, but maketh matter for a Conceit. Since neither his description, nor end, containing any euill, the thing described cannot be euill; since his effects be so good as to teach goodnesse, and delight the learners of it; since there- 15 in (namely in morall doctrine the chiefe of all knowledges) he doth not onely farre passe the *Historian*, but for instructing is well nigh comparable to the *Philosopher*, for mouing, leaueth him behind him. Since the holy Scripture (wherein there is no vncleannesse) hath whole parts in it Poeticall, and that euen our 20 Sauour Christ vouchsafed to vse the flowers of it: since all his kindes are not onely in their vnited formes, but in their seuered dissections fully commendable, I thinke, (and thinke I thinke rightly) the Laurell Crowne appointed for triumphant Captaines, doth worthily of all other learnings, honour the *Poets* triumph. But because we haue eares as well as rounes, and that the lightest reasons that 25 may be, will seeme to waigh greatly, if nothing be put in the counterbalance, let vs heare, and as well as we can, ponder what obiections be made against this Art, which may be worthie either of yeelding, or answering. First, truly I note, not onely in these *μωρῶτα* Poet-haters, but in all that kinde of people who seeke a praise, by dispraising others, that they do prodigally spend a great 30 many wandring words in quips and scoffes, carping and taunting at each thing, which by stirring the spleene, may stay the braine from a through beholding the worthinesse of the subiect. Those kinde of obiections, as they are full of a verie idle easinesse, since there is nothing of so sacred a maiestie, but that an itching tongue may rub it selfe vpon it, so deserue they no other answer; but in steed of laughing 35 at the ieast, to laugh at the ieafter. We know a playing wit can praise the discretion of an Assie, the comfortablenesse of being in debt, and the iolly commodities of being sicke of the plague. So of the contrarie side, if we will turne *Ouids* verse, *Vt lateat virtus, proximitate mali*, that good lye hid in nearnesse of the euil. *Agrippa* will be as mery in the shewing the vanitie of Sciēce, as *Erasmus* was in the commending 40 of folly: neither shall any man or matter, escape some touch of these smiling Raylers. But for *Erasmus* and *Agrippa*, they had an other foundation then the superficial part would promise. Marry these other plesant fault-finders, who will correct the *Verbe* before they vnderstand the *Nonne*, and confute others knowledge, before they confirme their owne, I would haue them onely remember, that 45 scoffing commeth not of wisdome? so as the best titlē in true English they get with their meriments, is to be called good fooles: for so haue our graue fore-

forefathers euer termed that humorous kinde of iesters. But that which giueth
 greatest scope to their scorning humour, is ryiming and versing. It is alreadie said,
 (and as I thinke truly said) it is not ryiming and versing that maketh *Poesie*: One
 may be a *Poet* without versing, and a versifier without *Poetrie*. But yet presup-
 5 pole it were inseparable, as indeed it seemeth *Scalliger* iudgeth truly, it were an in-
 separable commendation. For if *Oratio*, next to *Ratio*, Speech next to Reason, be
 the greatest gift bestowed vpon *Mortalitie*, that cannot be praiselesse, which doth
 most pollish that blessing of speech; which considereth each worde, not onely as
 a man may say by his forcible qualitie, but by his best measured quantitie: carying
 10 euen in themselues a *Harmonie*, without perchaunce number, measure, order, pro-
 portion, be in our time growne odious. But laie aside the iust praise it hath, by be-
 ing the onely fit speech for *Musicke*, (*Musicke* I say, the most diuine striker of the
 senses.) Thus much is vndoubtedly true, that if reading be foolish without re-
 membring, *Memorie* being the onely treasure of knowledge, those words which
 15 are fittest for memorie, are likewise most conuenient for knowledge. Now that
Verse farre exceedeth *Prose*, in the knitting vp of the memorie, the reason is ma-
 nifest, the wordes (besides their delight, which hath a great affinitie to memorie)
 being so set as one cannot be lost, but the whole worke failes: which accusing it selfe,
 calleth the remembrance back to it selfe, & so most strongly confirmeth it. Besides
 20 one word, so as it were begetting an other, as be it in rime or measured verse, by the
 former a man shall haue a neere gesse to the follower. Lastly, euen they that haue
 taught the Art of memory, haue shewed nothing so apt for it, as a certaine roome
 deuided into many places, well & thoroughly knowne: Now that hath the verse in
 effect perfectly, euery word hauing his naturall seat, which seat must needs make
 25 the word remembred. But what needes more in a thing so knowne to all men?
 Who is it that euer was scholler, that doth not carry away some verses of *Virgil*,
Horace, or *Cato*, which in his youth he learned, and euen to his old age serue
 him for hourelly lessons; as *Percontatorem fugito nam garrulus idem est, Dum tibi*
quisq; placet credula turba sumas. But the fittest it hath for memorie, is notably
 30 proued by all deliery of Artes, wherein for the most part, from *Grammer*, to *Lo-*
gike, *Mathematikes*, *Phisike*, and the rest, the Rules chiefly necessarie to be
 borne away, are compiled in verses. So that verse being in it selfe sweete and or-
 derly, and being best for memorie, the onely handle of knowledge, it must be
 in iest that any man can speake against it. Now then goe we to the most impor-
 35 tant imputations laid to the poore *Poets*, for ought I can yet learne, they are these.
 First, that there being manie other more fruitfull knowledges, a man might
 better spend his time in them, then in this. Secondly, that it is the mother of
 lies. Thirdly, that it is the nurse of abuse, infecting vs with many pestilent de-
 sires, with a *Sirene* sweetnesse, drawing the minde to the Serpents taile of sinfull
 40 fantasies; and herein especially *Comedies* giue the largest field to eare, as *Chaucer*
 saith, how both in other nations and in ours, before *Poets* did soften vs, we were
 full of courage, giuen to martiall exercises, the pillers of manlike libertie, and
 not lulled asleepe in shadie idlenesse with *Poets* pastimes. And lastly and chiefly,
 they cry out with open mouth, as if they had ouer-shot *Robinhood*, that *Plato* ba-
 45 nished them out of his Common wealth. Truly, this is much, if there be much
 trueth in it. First to the first. That a man might better spend his time, is a reason
 in deede: but it doth as they say, but *petere principium*. For if it be, as I affirme,
 that no learning is so good, as that which teacheth & moueth to vertue, and that

none can both teach and moue thereto so much as *Poesie*, then is the conclusion manifest; that inke and paper cannot be to a more profitable purpose employed. And certainly though a man should graunt their first assumption, it should follow (me thinke) verie vnwillingly, that good is not good, because better is better. But I still and vterly deny, that there is sprung out of earth a more fruitfull knowledge. 5
 To the second therefore, that they should be the principall lyers, I answer *Paradoxically*, but truely, I thinke truely: that of all writers vnder the Sunne, the *Poet* is the least lyer: and though he would, as a *Poet* can scarcely be a lyer. The *Astronomer* with his cousin the *Geometrician*, can hardly escape, when they take vpon them to measure the height of the starres. How often thinke you do the *Physicians* lie, 10
 when they auerre things good for sicknesses, which afterwards send *Charon* a great number of soules drownd in a potion, before they come to his Ferrie? And no lesse of the rest, which take vpon them to affirme. Now for the *Poet*, he nothing affirmeth, and therefore neuer lieth: for as I take it, to lie, is to affirme that to be true, which is false. So as the other *Artistes*, and especially the *Historian*, affirming many 15
 things, can in the clowdie knowledge of mankind, hardly escape from manie lies. But the *Poet* as I said before, neuer affirmeth, the *Poet* neuer maketh any Circles about your imagination, to coniure you to belecue for true, what he writeth: he citeth not authorities of other histories, but euen for his entrie, calleth the sweete *Muses* to inspire vnto him a good inuention. In troth not labouring to tel you what 20
 is, or is not, but what should, or should not be. And therefore though he recount things not true, yet because he telleth them not for true, he lieth not: without we will say, that *Nathan* lied in his speech before alleaged to *Dauid*, which as a wicked man durst scarce say, so think I none so simple, would say, that *Esope* lied in the tales of his beasts: for who thinketh that *Esope* wrote it for actually true, were wel wor- 25
 thie to haue his name Chronicled among the beasts he writeth of. What child is there, that comming to a play, and seeing *Thebes* written in great letters vpon an old doore, doth belecue that it is *Thebes*? If then a man can arriue to the chilles age, to know that the *Poets* persons and doings, are but pictures, what should be, and not stories what haue bin, they will neuer giue the lie to things not affirmatiue- 30
 ly, but allegorically and figuratiuely written; and therefore as in historie looking for truth, they may go away full fraught with falshood: So in *Poesie*, looking but for fiction, they shall vse the narration but as an imaginatiue groundplat of a profitable inuention. But hereto is replied, that the *Poets* giue names to men they write of, which argueth a conceit of an actuall truth, and so not being true, prooueth a fal- 35
 shood. And doth the *Lawyer* lye then, when vnder the names of *John* of the *Stile*, & *John* of the *Nokes*, he putteth his Case? But that is easily answered, their naming of men, is but to make their picture the more liuely, and not to build anie Historie. Painting men, they cannot leaue men namelesse: we see we cannot plaie at Chests, but that we must giue names to our Chessmen; and yet me thinkes he were a verie 40
 partiall Champion of truth, that would say we lyed, for giuing a peece of wood the reuerend title of a Bishop. The *Poet* nameth *Cyrus* and *Aeneas*, no other way, then to shew what men of their fames, fortunes, and estates, should do. Their third is, how much it abuseth mens wit, training it to wanton sinfulnessse, and lustfull loue. For in deede that is the principall if not onely abuse, I can heare al- 45
 leaged. They say the *Comedies* rather teach then reprehend amorous conceits. They say the *Lirike* is larded with passionate *Sonets*, the *Elegiacke* weepes the want of his mistresse, and that euen to the *Heroicall*, *Cupid* hath ambitiously climed.

climed. Alas Loue, I would thou couldest as well defend thy selfe, as thou canst offend others: I would those on whom thou doest attend, could either put thee away, or yeeld good reason why they keepe thee. But graunt loue of beautie to be a beastlie fault, although it be very hard, since onely man and no beast hath that
 5 gift to discern beautie, graunt that louely name of loue to deserue all hatefull reproches, although euē some of my maisters the *Philosophers* spent a good deale of their Lampoyle in setting forth the excellencie of it, graunt I say, what they will haue graunted, that not onely loue, but lust, but vanitie, but if they list scurrilitie, possesse many leaues of the *Poets* bookes, yet thinke I, when this is graunted, they
 10 will finde their sentence may with good maners put the last wordes foremost; and not say, that *Poetrie* abuseth mans wit, but that mans wit abuseth *Poetrie*. For I will not denie, but that mans wit may make *Poesie*, which should be *εἰκασιν*, which some learned haue defined figuring forth good things to be *παρὰ τινος*: which doth contrariwise infect the fancie with vnworthy obiectes, as the Painter should giue
 15 to the eye either some excellent perspective, or some fine Picture fit for building or fortification, or containing in it some notable example, as *Abraham* sacrificing his sonne *Isaack*, *Judith* killing *Holofernes*, *Dauid* fighting with *Goliath*, may leaue those, & please an ill pleased eye with wanton shewes of better hidden matters. But what, shall the abuse of a thing, make the right vse odious? Nay truly though I yeeld that
 20 *Poesie* may not onely be abused, but that being abused by the reason of his sweete charming force, it can do more hurt then any other armie of words, yet shall it be so farre from concluding, that the abuse should giue reproch to the abused, that contrariwise, it is a good reason, that whatsoeuer being abused, doth most harme, being rightly vied (and vpon the right vse, each thing receiues his title) doth
 25 most good. Do we not see skill of Phisicke the best rampier to our often assaulted bodies, being abused, teach poyson the most violent destroyer? Doth not knowledge of Law, whose end is, to euen and right all things, being abused grow the crooked fosterer of horrible iniuries? Doth not (to go in the highest) Gods word abused, breede heresie, and his name abused, become blasphemie? Truly a Needle cannot do much hurt, and as truely (with leaue of Ladies
 30 be it spoken) it cannot do much good. With a sword thou mayest kill thy Father, and with a sword thou mayest defend thy Prince and Countrey: so that, as in their calling *Poets*, fathers of lyes, they sayd nothing, so in this their argument of abuse, they proue the commendation. They alledge herewith, that before *Poets* began to be in price, our Nation had set their hearts delight vpon
 35 action, and not imagination, rather doing things worthie to be written, then writing things fit to be done. What that before time was, I thinke scarcely *Sphinx* can tell: since no memorie is so auncient, that hath not the precedence of *Poetrie*. And certaine it is, that in our plainest homeliness, yet neuer was the *Albion* Nation
 40 without *Poetrie*. Marry this Argument, though it be leuelled against *Poetrie*, yet is it indeed a chain-shot against all learning or bookishnesse, as they commōly terme it. Of such mind were certaine *Gothes*, of whom it is written, that hauing in the spoyle of a famous citie, taken a faire Librarie, one hangman belike fit to execute the fruits of their wits, who had murdered a great number of bodies, would haue set fire in it.
 45 No sayd another very grauely, take heed what you do, for while they are busie about those toyes, we shall with more leisure conquer their countries. This indeed is the ordinary doctrine of ignorance, and many wordes sometimes I haue heard spent in it: but because this reason is generally against all learning, as well as *Poetrie*, or rather

all learning but *Poetrie*, because it were too large a digression to handle it, or at least too superfluous, since it is manifest that all gouernement of action is to be gotten by knowledge, & knowledge best, by gathering many knowledges, which is reading; I onely with *Horace*, to him that is of that opinion, *Iubeo stultum esse libenter*: for as for *Poetrie* it self, it is the freest from this obiection, for *Poetrie* is the Companion of Camps. I dare vndertake, *Orlando Furioso*, or honest king *Arthur*, will neuer displease a souldier: but the quidditie of *Ens* and *Prima materia*, will hardly agree with a Corceler. And therefore as I sayd in the beginning, euen *Turkes* and *Tartars*, are delighted with *Poetes*. *Homer* a *Greeke*, flourished, before *Greece* flourished: and if to a slight coniecture, a coniecture may be apposed, truly it may seeme, that as by him their learned men tooke almost their first light of knowledge, so their actiue men receiued their first motions of courage. Onely *Alexanders* example may serue, who by *Plutarch* is accounted of such vertue, that fortune was not his guide, but his footestoole, whose Actes speake for him, though *Plutarch* did not: indeede the *Phoenix* of warlike Princes. This *Alexander*, left his Scholemaster liuing, *Aristotle* behind him, but tooke dead *Homer* with him. He put the Philosopher *Callisthenes* to death, for his seeming Philosophicall, indeede mutinous stubburnesse, but the chiefe thing he was euer heard to wish for, was, that *Homer* had bene aliue. He well found he receiued more brauerie of minde by the patterne of *Achilles*, then by hearing the definition of fortitude. And therefore if *Cato* misliked *Fuluius* for carrying *Ennius* with him to the field, it may be answered, that if *Cato* misliked it, the Noble *Fuluius* liked it, or else he had not done it, for it was not the excellent *Cato Uticensis*, whose authoritie I would much more haue reuerenced: but it was the former, in truth a bitter punisher of faultes, but else a man that had neuer sacrificed to the *Graces*. He misliked and cried out against all *Greeke* learning, and yet being fourescore yeares old, began to learne it, belike fearing that *Pluto* vnderstood not Latine. Indeed the *Romane* lawes allowed no person to be carried to the warres, but he that was in the souldiers Role. And therefore though *Cato* misliked his vnmustred person, he misliked not his worke. And if he had, *Scipio Nasica* (iudged by common consent the best *Romane*) loued him: both the other *Scipio* brothers, who had by their vertues no lesse surnames then of *Asia* and *Affricke*, so loued him, that they caused his bodie to be buried in their Sepulture. So as *Catoes* authoritie being but against his person, and that answered with so farre greater then himselfe, is herein of no validitie. But now indeede my burthen is great, that *Plato* his name is layd vpon me, whom I must confesse of all *Philosophers*, I haue euer esteemed most worthie of reuerence; and with good reason, since of all *Philosophers* he is the most *Poeticall*: yet if he will defile the fountaine out of which his flowing streames haue proceeded, let vs boldly examine with what reasons he did it. First truly a man might maliciously obiect, that *Plato* being a *Philosopher*, was a naturall enemy of *Poets*. For indeede after the *Philosophers* had picked out of the sweete mysteries of *Poetrie*, the right discerning true points of knowledge, they forthwith putting it in methode, and making a Schoole Art of that which the *Poets* did onely teach by a diuine delightfulnesse, beginning to spurne at their guides, like vngratefull Prentices, were not content to set vp shop for themselues, but sought by all meanes to discredit their maisters, which by the force of delight being barred them, the lesse they could overthrow them, the more they hated them. For indeed they found for *Homer*, seuen Cities straue who should haue him for their Citizen, where many Cities banished *Philosophers*,

as not fit members to liue among them. For onely repeating certaine of *Enripides* Verses, many *Athenians* had their liues saued of the *Syracusans*, where the *Athenians* themselues thought many *Philosophers* vnworthie to liue. Certaine *Poets*, as *Simonides*, and *Pindarus*, had so preuailed with *Hiero* the first, that of a Tyrant they
5 made him a iust King: where *Plato* could do so little with *Dionisius*, that he himselve of a *Philosopher*, was made a slaue. But who should do thus, I confesse should requite the obiections made against *Poets*; with like cauillations against *Philosophers*: as likewise one should do, that should bid one reade *Phadrus* or *Simpofium* in *Plato*, or the discourse of loue in *Plutarch*, and see whether any *Poet* do authorise
10 abhominable filthinesse as they do. Againe, a man might aske, out of what Common-wealth *Plato* doth banish them, in sooth, thence where he himselve alloweth communitie of women. So as belikethis banishment grew not for effeminate wantonnesse, since little should Poeticall *Sonets* be hurtfull, when a man might haue what woman he listed. But I honour Philosophicall instructions, and blesse the
15 wittes which bred them: so as they be not abused, which is likewise stretched to *Poetrie*. Saint *Paule* himselve sets a watch-word vpon *Philosophie*, indeede vpon the abuse. So doth *Plato* vpon the abuse, not vpon *Poetrie*. *Plato* found fault that the *Poets* of his time, filled the world with wrōg opiniōs of the Gods, making light tales of that vnspotted essence; and therefore would not haue the youth depraued with
20 such opinions: herein may much be sayd; let this suffice. The *Poets* did not induce such opinions, but did imitate those opinions already induced. For all the *Greeke* stories can well testifie, that the verie religion of that time, stood vpon many, and many fashioned Gods: not taught so by *Poets*, but followed according to their nature of imitation. Who list may reade in *Plutarch*, the discourses of *Isis*
25 and *Osiris*, of the cause why Oracles ceased, of the diuine prouidence, and see whether the *Theologie* of that nation, stood not vpon such dreames, which the *Poets* indeede superstitiously obserued. And truely since they had not the light of *Christ*, did much better in it then the *Philosophers*, who shaking off superstition, brought in *Atheisme*. *Plato* therefore, whose authoritie, I had much rather iustlie
30 construe then vniustlie resist, meant not in generall of *Poets*, in those words of which *Iulius Scaliger* sayth; *Quæ autoritate barbari quidam atque insipidi abuti velint ad Poetas à Republica exigendos*. But onely meant to driue out those wrong opinions of the Deitie: whereof now without further law, *Christianitie* hath taken away all the hurtfull beliefe, perchaunce as he thought, nourished by then esteemed *Poets*.
35 And a man neede go no further then to *Plato* himselve to know his meaning: who in his Dialogue called *Ion*, giueth high, and rightly, diuine commendation vnto *Poetrie*. So as *Plato* banishing the abuse, not the thing, not banishing it, but giuing due honour to it, shall be our Patron, and not our aduersarie. For indeede, I had much rather, since truely I may do it, shew their mistaking of *Plato*, vnder
40 whose Lyons skinne they would make an Asse-like braying against *Poesie*; then go about to ouerthrow his authoritie; whom the wiser a man is, the more iust cause he shall finde to haue in admiration: especially since he attributeth vnto *Poesie* more then my selfe do; namely, to be a verie inspiring of a diuine force, farre aboue mans wit, as in the forenamed Dialogue is apparant. Of the other side,
45 who would shew the honours haue bene by the best sort of iudgementes graunted them, a whole sea of examples would present themselues; *Alexanders*, *Caesars*, *Scipioes*, all fauourers of *Poets*: *Lelius*, called the *Romane Socrates* himselve a *Poet*; so as part of *Heautontimeroumenon* in *Terence*, was supposed to be made by him.

And euen the *Greeke Socrates*, whom *Appollo* confirmed to be the onely wise man, is sayd to haue spent part of his old time in putting *Esopes* Fables into Verses. And therefore full euill should it become his Scholler *Plato*, to put such wordes in his maisters mouth against *Poets*. But what needes more? *Aristotle* writes the Arte of *Poesie*, and why, if it should not be written? *Plutarch* teacheth the vse to be gathered of them, and how, if they should not be read? And who reades *Plutarches* either Historie or *Philosophie*, shall finde he trimmeth both their garmentes with gardes of *Poesie*. But I list not to defend *Poesie* with the helpe of his vnderling *Historiographie*. Let it suffice to haue shewed, it is a fit soyle for prayse to dwell vpon: & what dispraye may set vpō it, is either easily ouercome, or transformed into iust commendation. So that since the excellencies of it may be so easily and so iustlic confirmed, and the low creeping obiections so soone trodden downe, it not being an Art of lyes, but of true doctrine; not of effeminate nesse, but of notable stirring of courage; not of abusing mans wit, but of strengthening mans wit; not banished, but honored by *Plato*; let vs rather plant more Laurels for to ingarland the *Poets* heades (which honour of being Laureate, as besides them onely triumphant Captaines were, is a sufficient authoritie to shew the price they ought to be held in) then suffer the ill fauoured breath of such wrong speakers once to blow vpon the cleare springs of *Poesie*. But since I haue runne so long a Carreir in this matter, me thinkes before I giue my penne a full stop, it shall be but a little more lost time, to inquire why England the Mother of excellent mindes should be growne so hard a stepmother to *Poets*, who certainly in wit ought to passe all others, since all onely proceedes from their wit, being indeed makers of themselues, not takers of others. How can I but exclaime, *Musa mihi causas memora quo numine lase*. Sweet *Poesie* that hath aunciently had Kings, Emperours, Senatours, great Captaines, such as besides a thousands others, *Dauid*, *Adrian*, *Sophocles*, *Germanicus*, not onely to fauour *Poets*, but to be *Poets*: and of our nearer times, can present for her Patrons, a *Robert* King of *Sicill*, the great King *Fraunces* of *Fraunce*, King *James* of *Scotland*; such Cardinals as *Bembus*, and *Bibiena*; such famous Preachers & Teachers, as *Beza* and *Melanchthon*; so learned *Philosophers*, as *Fracastorius*, and *Sealiger*; so great Orators, as *Pontanus*, & *Muretus*; so piercing wits, as *George Buchanan*; so graue Counsellours, as besides many, but before all, that *Hospital* of *Fraunce*; then whom I thinke that Realme neuer brought forth a more accōplished iudgemēt, more firmly builded vpō vertue: I say these with nūbers of others, not only to reade others *Poesies*, but to *Poetise* for others reading; that *Poesie* thus embraced in all other places, should onely finde in our time a hard welcome in England. I thinke the very earth laments it, & therefore deckes our soyle with fewer Laurels thē it was accustomed. For heretofore, *Poets* haue in England also flourished: & which is to be noted, euen in those times whē the Trūpet of *Mars* did sound lowdest. And now that an ouer faint quietnesse should seeme to strow the house for *Poets*, they are almost in as good reputation, as the *Montebanches* at *Venice*. Truly euen that, as of the one side it giueth great praise to *Poesie*, which like *Venus* (but to better purpose) had rather be troubled in the net with *Mars*, thē enioy the homely quiet of *Vulcā*. So serueth it for a peece of a reason, why they are lesse grateful to idle *Englād*, which now cā scarce endure the paine of a pen. Vpon this necessarily followeth, that base mē with seruile wits vndertake it, who thinke it enough if they can be rewarded of the Printer: and so as *Epaminondas* is sayd with the honour of his vertue to haue made an office, by his exercising it, which before was contēptible, to become highly respected: so these mē no more but setting

setting their names to it, by their owne disgracefulnesse, disgrace the most gracefull *Poesie*. For now as if all the *Muses* were got with child, to bring forth bastard Poets: without any cōmission, they do post ouer the banks of *Helicon*, til they make the Readers more wearie then post-horses; while in the meane time, they *Quæis meliore luto finxit præcordia Titan*, are better contēt to suppress the out-flowings of their wit, then by publishing them, to be accounted Knights of the same order. But I that before euer I durst aspire vnto the dignitie, am admitted into the companie of the *Paper-blurrsers*, do find the verie true cause of our wanting estimation, is want of desert, taking vpon vs to be *Poets* in despite of *Pallas*. Now wherein we want desert, were a thank-worthy labour to expresse. But if I knew I should haue mended my selfe, but as I neuer desired the title, so haue I neglected the meanes to come by it, onely ouer-mastered by some thoughts, I yeelded an inckie tribute vnto them. Marie they that delight in *poesie* it selfe, should seeke to know what they do: & how they do especially looke thēselues in an vnflattering glasse of reason, if they be inclinable vnto it. For *Poesie* must not be drawn by the ears, it must be gētly led, or rather it must leade, which was partly the cause that made the anciēt learned affirme, it was a diuine gift and no humane skill; since all other knowledges lie readie for anie that haue strength of wit: A *Poet* no industrie can make, if his owne *Genius* be not caried into it. And therefore is an old prouerb, *Orator fit, Poeta nascitur*. Yet confesse I alwayes, that as the fertilest ground must be manured, so must the highest flying wit haue a *Dedalus* to guide him. That *Dedalus* they say both in this and in other, hath three wings to beare it selfe vp into the aire of due commendation: that is, *Arte*, *Imitation* and *Exercise*. But these neither *Artificiall Rules*, nor *imitatiue patternes*, we much comber our selues withall. Exercise indeed wee do, but that verie fore-backwardly; for where we should exercise to know, we exercise as hauing knowne: and so is our braine deliuered of much matter, which neuer was begotten by knowledge. For there being two principall parts, Matter to be expresse by words, and words to expresse the matter: In neither, we vse *Arte* or *Imitation* rightly. Our matter is, *Quodlibet*, indeed though wrongly perfourming *Ouids* Verse:

Quicquid conabor dicere, Versus erit.

Neuer marshalling it into any assured ranke, that almost the Readers cannot tell where to find themselves. *Chawcer* vndoubtedly did excellently in his *Troilus* and *Crescid*: of whom truly I know not whether to maruell more, either that he in that mystie time could see so clearely, or that we in this cleare age, go so stumblingly after him. Yet had he great wants, fit to be forgiuen in so reuerent an Antiquitie. I account the *Mirroure of Magistrates*, meetly furnished of beautifull parts. And in the Earle of *Surreis* *Lirickes*, many things tasting of a noble birth, and worthy of a noble mind. The Shepheards *Kalender* hath much *Poetrie* in his *Eclogues*, indeed worthy the reading if I be not deceiued. That same framing of his stile to an old rusticke language, I dare not allow: since neither *Theocritus* in Greeke, *Virgil* in Latine, nor *Sanazara* in Italian did affect it. Besides these, I do not remember to haue seene but few (to speake boldly) printed that haue *Poeticall* sinewes in them. For prooffe whereof, let but most of the Verses be put in *Prose*, and then aske the meaning, and it will be found, that one Verse did but beget another, without ordering at the first, what should be at the last, which becomes a confused masse of wordes, with a tingling sound of rime, barely accompanied with reason. Our *Tragedies* and *Comedies*, not without cause cried out against, obseruing rules

neither of honest ciuilitie, nor skilfull *Poesie*. Excepting *Gorboduck* (againe I say of those that I haue seene) which notwithstanding, as it is full of statelie speeches, & well sounding phraes, climbing to the height of *Seneca* his stile, and as full of notable moralitie, which it doth most delightfully teach, and so obtaine the verie end of *Poesie*. Yet in truth, it is verie defectious in the circumstances, which grieues me, 5 because it might not remaine as an exact modell of all Tragedies. For it is faulty both in place and time, the two necessarie companions of all corporall actions. For where the Stage should alway represent but one place; and the vttermost time presupposed in it, should be both by *Aristotles* precept, and common reason, but one day; there is both many dayes and many places, inartificiallie imagined. But if it be 10 so in *Gorboducke*, how much more in all the rest, where you shall haue *Asia* of the one side, and *Affricke* of the other, and so many other vnder-kingdomes, that the Player when he comes in, must euer begin with telling where he is, or else the tale will not be conceiued. Now you shall haue three Ladies walke to gather flowers, and then we must beleue the stage to be a garden. By and by we heare newes of 15 shipwracke in the same place, then we are too blame if we accept it not for a rocke. Vpon the backe of that comes out a hideous monster with fire and smoke, and then the miserable beholders are bound to take it for a caue: while in the meane time two armies flie in, represented with foure swords and bucklers, and then what hard hart will not receiue it for a pitched field. Now of time, they are much more liberal. 20 For ordinarie it is, that two yong Princes fall in loue, after many trauerfes she is got with child, deliuered of a faire boy: he is lost, groweth a man, falleth in loue, & is ready to get another child; & all this in 2 houres space: which how absurd it is in sence, euen sence may imagine: & Art hath taught, & all ancient exâples iustified, & at this day the ordinary players in *Italie* wil not erre in. Yet will some bring in an exâple of 25 *Eunuch* in *Terence*, that containeth matter of 2 dayes, yet far short of twentie yeares. True it is, & so was it to be played in two dayes, and so fitted to the time it set forth. And though *Plautus* haue in one place done amisse, let vs hit it with him, and not misse with him. But they will say, how then shall we set forth a storie which contains both many places, and many times? And do they not know that a Tragedie 30 is tied to the lawes of *Poesie*, and not of *Historie*: not bound to follow the storie, but hauing libertie either to faine a quite new matter, or to frame the *Historie* to the most tragical conueniencie. Againe many things may be told, which cannot be shewed: if they know the difference betwixt reporting and representing. As for example, I may speake though I am here, of *Peru*, and in speech digresse from that, to the description of *Calecut*: but in action I canot represent it without *Pacolets* horse. 35 And so was the maner the anciëts took, by some *Nuntius*, to recount things done in former time or other place. Lastly, if they will represent an *Historie*, they must not (as *Horace* saith) begin *ab ouo*, but they must come to the principal point of that one action which they will represent. By exâple this will be best expressed. I haue a story of young *Polydorus*, deliuered for safeties sake with great riches by his father 40 *Priamus*, to *Polymnestor* king of *Thrace*, in the *Troian* warre time. He after some yeares, hearing of the ouerthrow of *Priamus*, for to make the treasure his owne, murdereth the child, the body of the child is taken vp, *Hecuba*, she the same day findeth a sleight to bee reuenged most cruelly of the Tyrant. Where now would 45 one of our Tragedy-writers begin, but with the deliuerie of the child? Then should he faile ouer into *Thrace*, and so spend I know not how many yeares, and trauell numbers of places. But where doth *Euripides*? euen with the finding of the bodie, the

the rest leauing to be told by the spirit of *Polydorus*. This needs no further to be enlarged, the dullest wit may conceiue it. But besides these grosse absurdities, how all their Playes be neither right Tragedies, nor right Comedies, mingling Kings and Clownes, not because the matter so carrieth it, but thrust in the Clowne by head and shoulders to play a part in Maiesticall matters, with neither decencie nor discretion: so as neither the admiration and commiseration, nor the right sportfulness is by their mongrell Tragicomedie obtained. I know *Apuleius* did somewhat so, but that is a thing recounted with space of time, not represented in one moment: and I know the Ancients haue one or two examples of Tragicomedies, as *Plautus* hath *Amphitrio*. But if we marke them well, we shall find that they neuer or verie daintilie match horne-pipes and funeralles. So falleth it out, that hauing indeed no right Comedie in that Comicall part of our Tragedie we haue nothing but scurrilitie vnworthie of anie chaste eares, or some extreme shew of doltishnesse, indeed fit to lift vp a lowd laughter and nothing else: where the whole tract of a Comedie should be full of delight, as the Tragedie, should be still maintained in a well raised admiration. But our Comedients thinke there is no delight without laughter, which is verie wrong, for though laughter may come with delight, yet commeth it not of delight, as though delight should be the cause of laughter: but well may one thing breed both together. Nay in themselves, they haue as it were a kind of contrarietie: For delight we scarcely do, but in things that haue a conueniency to our selues, or to the generall nature. Laughter almost euer cometh of things most disproportioned to our selues & nature. Delight hath a ioy in it either permanent or present. Laughter hath only a scornfull tickling. For example, we are rauished with delight to see a faire woman, and yet are farre from being moued to laughter. We laugh at deformed creatures, wherein certainly we cannot delight. We delight in good chaunces: we laugh at mischaunces. We delight to heare the happinesse of our friends and Countrie, at which he were worthie to be laughed at that wold laugh: we shall contrarily sometimes laugh to find a matter quite mistaken, & go downe the hill against the byas, in the mouth of some such men, as for the respect of them, one shal be heartily forie, he cannot chooseth but laugh, and so is rather pained, then delighted with laughter. Yet denie I not, but that they may go well together: for as in *Alexanders* picture well set out, we delight without laughter, and in twenty mad Antickes we laugh without delight: So in *Hercules* painted with his great beard and furious countenance in a womans attire, spinning at *Omphales* commandement, it breeds both delight and laughter: for the representing of so strange a power in Loue, procures delight, and the scornfullnes of the action stirreth laughter. But I speake to this purpose, that all the end of the Comical part, be not vpo such scornful matters as stir laughter only, but mixe with it that delightful teaching, which is the end of *Poesie*. And the great fault euen in that point of laughter, and forbidden plainly by *Aristotle*, is, that they stir laughter in sinfull things, which are rather execrable then ridiculous: or in miserable, which are rather to be pitied then scorned. For what is it to make folkes gape at a wretched begger, and a beggerly Clowne: or against law of hospitality, to iest at strangers, because they speake not English so well as we do? What do we learne, since it is certain, *Nil habet infelix paupertas durius in se, Quam quod ridiculos homines facit*. But rather a busie louing Courtier, and a hartlesse threatening *Thraso*; a selfe-wise seeming schoolemaister; a wrie transformed Traueller: these if we saw walke in stage names, which we play naturallie, therein were delightfull laughter,

and teaching delightfulnesse, as in the other the Tragedies of *Buchanan* do iustly bring forth a diuine admiration. But I haue laished out too many words of this play-matter; I do it, because as they are excelling parts of *Poesie*, so is there none so much vsed in *England*, and none can be more pitifully abused; which like an vnman-
 nerly daughter, shewing a bad education, causeth her mother *Poesies* honesty to be
 called in question. Other sort of *Poetrie* almost haue we none, but that *Lyrical* kind
 of Songs and Sonets; which Lord, if he gaue vs so good minds, how well it might
 be employed, and with how heauenly fruits, both priuate & publike, in singing the
 praises of the immortall beauty, the immortall goodnesse of that God, who giueth
 vs hands to write, and wits to conceiue: of which we might well want words, but
 neuer matter: of which we could turne our eyes to nothing, but we should euer
 haue new budding occasions. But trulie many of such writings as come vnder the
 banner of vnresistable loue, if I were a mistresse, would neuer perswade me they
 were in loue: so coldly they apply fiery speeches, as men that had rather read louers
 writings, & so caught vp certaine swelling phrases, which hang together, like a man
 that once told me the wind was at Northwest and by South, because he would bee
 sure to name winds enough, then that in truth they feele those passions, which easi-
 ly as I thinke, may be bewrayed by that same forciblenesse or *Energia* (as the Greeks
 call it) of the writer. But let this be a sufficient, though short note, that we misse the
 right vse of the material point of *Poesie*. Now for the outside of it, which is words, or
 (as I may tearme it) *Diction*, it is euen wel worse: so is it that hony-flowing matron
Eloquence, apparelled, or rather disguised in a Curtisan-like painted affectatiō. One
 time with so farre-fetcht words, that many seeme monsters, but must seeme stran-
 gers to any poore Englishman: another time with coursing of a letter, as if they
 were bound to follow the methode of a Dictionarie: another time with figures &
 flowers, extreame ly winter-starued. But I would this fault were onely peculiar to
 Versifiers, and had not as large possession among Prose-Printers: and which is to
 be maruelled among many Schollers, and which is to be pitied among some Prea-
 chers. Truly I could wish, if at least I might be so bold to wish, in a thing beyond the
 reach of my capacitie, the diligent imitators of *Tully* and *Demosthenes*, most worthy
 to be imitated, did not so much keep *Nizolian* paper-books of their figures & phra-
 ses, as by attentiu translation, as it were, deuour them whole, & make the wholly
 theirs. For now they cast suger and spice vpon euery dish that is serued at the table:
 like those *Indians*, not content to weare eare-rings at the fit and naturall place of the
 eares, but they will thrust iewels through their nose and lips, because they will bee
 sure to be fine. *Tully* whē he was to driue out *Catiline*, as it were with a thunderbolt
 of eloquence, often vseth the figure of repetition, as *Viuat & vincit, imo in senatum*
venit, imo in senatum venit, &c. Indeed inflamed, with a well grounded rage, he
 would haue his words (as it were) double out of his mouth, and so do that artificially,
 which we see men in choller do naturallie. And we hauing noted the grace of those
 words hale them in sometimes to a familiar Epistle, when it were too much chol-
 ler to be chollerike. How well store of *Similiter Cadenses* doth sound with the graui-
 tie of the Pulpit, I would but inuoke *Demosthenes* soule to tell, who with a rare dain-
 tinesse vseth them. Truly they haue made me thinke of the *Sophister*, that with too
 much subtilty would proue two Egges three, & though he might be counted a *So-*
phister, had none for his labour. So these men bringing in such a kind of eloquence,
 well may they obtaine an opinion of a seeming finenesse, but perswade few, which
 shold be the end of their finenesse. Now for similitudes in certain printed discourses
 I thinke

I think al Herberists, all stories of beasts, foules & fishes are rised vp, that they may come in multitudes to waite vpon any of our cōceits, which certainly is as absurd a surfet to the eares as is possible. For the force of a similitude not being to proue any thing to a contrarie disputer, but only to explaine to a willing hearer, when that is done, the rest is a most tedious prating, rather ouerwaying the memorie from the purpose wherto they were applyed, then anie whit enforming the iudgement already either satisfied, or by similitudes not to be satisfied. For my part, I do not doubt, when *Antonius* and *Craſſus*, the great forefathers of *Cicero* in eloquence, the one (as *Cicero* testifieth of them) pretended not to know *Arte*, the other not to set by it (because with a plaine sensiblenesse they might win credit of popular eares, which credite is the nearest step to perswasion, which perswasion is the chiefe marke of *Oratorie*) I do not doubt, I say, but that they vsed these knacks verie sparingly, which who doth generally vse, anie man may see, doth daunce to his owne musike, and so to be noted by the audience, more carefull to speake curiously then truly. Vndoubtedly (at least to my opinion vndoubtedly) I haue found in diuerse small learned courtiers a more sound stile, then in some professors of learning, of which I cā guesse no other cause, but that the courtier following that, which by practise he findeth fittest to nature, therein (though he know it not) doth according to *Art*, though not by *Arte*: where the other vsing *Arte* to shewe *Art*, & not hide *Art* (as in these cases he should do) flyeth from nature, and indeed abuseth *Arte*. But what me thinks I deserue to be pounded for straying from *Poetrie* to *Oratorie*: but both haue such an affinity in the wordish consideration, that I thinke this digression will make my meaning receiue the fuller vnderstanding: which is not to take vpon me to teach *Poets* how they should do, but only finding my selfe sicke among the rest, to shew some one or two spots of the common infection growne among the most part of writers; that acknowledging our selues somewhat awrie, we may bend to the right vse both of matter and maner. Vhereto our language giueth vs great occasion, being indeed capable of any excellent exercising of it. I know some will say it is a mingled language: and why not so much the better, taking the best of both the other? Another will say, it wanteth *Grāmer*. Nay truly it hath that praise that it wants not *Grāmer*; for *Grammer* it might haue, but it needs it not, being so easie in it selfe, and so void of those cumbersome differences of *Cases*, *Genders*, *Moods* and *Tenses*, which I thinke was a peece of the tower of *Babylons* curse, that a mā should be put to schoole to learne his mother tongue. But for the vttering sweetly and properly the conceit of the mind, which is the end of speech, that hath it equally with anie other tongue in the world: and is particularly happie in compositions of two or three words together, neare the Greeke, farre beyond the Latine, which is one of the greatst beauties can be in a language. Now of versifying there are two sorts, the one ancient, the other moderne: the ancient marked the quantitie of each sillable, and according to that framed his verse: the moderne, obseruing only number, with some regard of the accent; the chiefe life of it standeth in that like sounding of the words, which we call *Rime*. Whether of these be the more excellent, would beare manie speeches, the ancient no doubt more fit for Musicke, both words and time obseruing quantity, & more fit, liuely to expresse diuerse passions by the low or loftie sound of the well weighed sillable. The latter likewise with his rime striketh a certaine musicke to the eare: & in fine, since it doth delight, though by another way, it obtaineth the same purpose, there being in either sweetnesse, & wanting in neither maiesty. Truly the English before any Vulgare lāguage, I know is fit for both sorts: for, for the ancient,

the *Italian* is so full of vowels, that it must euer be cumbered with *Elisions*. The *Dutch* so of the other side with Consonants, that they cannot yeeld the sweet sliding, fit for a verse. The *French* in his whole language hath not one word that hath his accent in the last syllable sauing two, called *Antepenultima*; and little more hath the *Spanish*, and therefore verie gracelesly may they vse *Dactiles*. The *English* is subiect to none of these defects. Now for Rime, though we do not obserue quantity, yet we obserue the accent verie precisely, which other languages either cannot do, or will not do so absolutely. That *Casura*, or breathing place in the midst of the verse neither *Italian* nor *Spanish* haue: the *French* and we neuer almost faile of. Lastly, euen the verie Rime it selfe the *Italian* cannot put it in the last syllable, by the *French* named the *Masculine* Rime, but still in the next to the last, which the *French* call the *Femal*; or the next before that, which the *Italian* *Sdrucchiola*: the example of the former, is *Euono, Suono*, of the *Sdrucchiola*, is *Femina, Semina*. The *French* of the other side hath both the Male, as *Bon, Son*; & the Female, as *Plaise, Taise*; but the *Sdrucchiola* he hath not: where the *English* hath al three, as *Due, True; Father, Rather; Motion, Potion*, with much more which might be said, but that already I find the triflings of this discourse is much too much enlarged. So that since the euer praise-worthy *Poesie* is full of vertue, breeding delightfulness, & voyd of no gift that ought to be in the noble name of learning, since the blames laid against it are either false or feeble, since the cause why it is not esteemed in *England*, is the fault of Poet-apes, not Poets. Since lastly, our tongue is most fit to honour *Poesie*, & to be honoured by *Poesie*, I coniure you all that haue had the euill lucke to reade this inke-wasting toy of mine, euen in the name of the nine *Muses*, no more to scorne the sacred mysteries of *Poesie*: no more to laugh at the name of *Poets*, as though they were next inheritors to fooles; no more to iest at the reuerent title of a Rimer, but to beleue with *Aristotle*, that they were the ancient Treasurers of the Grecians diuinity, to beleue with *Bembus*, that they were first bringers in of all ciuility: to beleue with *Scalliger*, that no *Philosophers* precepts can sooner make you an honest man, then the reading of *Virgill*; to beleue with *Clauserus*, the Translator of *Cornutus*, that it pleased the heauely deity by *Hesiod* & *Homer*, vnder the vaile of Fables to giue vs all knowledge, *Logicke, Rhetoricke, Philosophy* naturall & morall, & *Quid non*? To beleue with me, that there are many mysteries contained in *Poesy*, which of purpose were written darklie, least by prophane wits it should be abused: to beleue with *Landin*, that they are so beloved of the gods, that whatsoever they write, proceeds of a diuine fury. Lastly, to beleue themselves when they tell you they will make you immortall by their verses. Thus doing, your name shall flourish in the Printers shops: thus doing you shall be of kin to many a Poeticall Preface: thus doing, you shall be most faire, most rich, most wise, most all: you shall dwell vpon Superlatives: thus doing, though you be *Liber-tino patre natus*, you shall sodainly grow *Herculeae proles. Si quid mea Carmina possunt*. Thus doing, your soule shall be placed with *Dantes Beatrix*, or *Virgils Anchises*. But if (sic of such a But) you be borne so neare the dul-making *Cataract* of *Nilus*, that you cannot heare the Planet-like musike of *Poesy*, if you haue so earth-creeping a mind, that it cannot lift it self vp to leole to the skie of *Poesy*, or rather by a certain rusticall disdain will become such a mome, as to be a *Momus* of *Poesie*: the though I wil not wish vnto you the Asses eares of *Midas*, nor to be driue by a *Poets* verses as *Bubonax* was to hang himself, nor to be rimed to death, as is said to be done in *Ireland*, yet thus much curse I must send you in the behalfe of all *Poets*, that while you liue, you liue in loue, and neuer get fauour, for lacking skill of a Sonet, and when you die, your memorie die from the earth for want of an Epitaph.

ASTRO-



ASTROPHEL AND STELLA
VVITTEN BY THE NOBLE KNIGHT
SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

I

Mouing in truth, and faine in verse my loue to show,
That the (deare she) might take some pleasure of my paine:
Pleasure might cause her reade, reading might make her know,
Knowledge might pitie winne, and pitie grace obtaine;

I sought fit words to paint the blackest face of woe,
Studying inuentions fine, her wits to entertaine:
Oft turning others leaues, to see if thence would flow
Some fresh and fruitfull showers vpon my sunne-burn'd braine.

But words came halting forth, wanting Inuentions stay,
Inuention Natures child, fled step-dame Studies blowes,
And others feete still seem'd but strangers in my way.

Thus great with child to speake, and helplesse in my throwes,
Biting my trewand pen, beating my selfe for spite,
Foole, said my Muse to me, looke in thy heart and write.

2

Not at the first sight, nor with a dribbed shot
Loue gaue the wound, which while I breathe will bleed:
But knowne worth did in mine of time proceed,
Till by degrees it had full conquest got.

I saw and liked, I liked but loued not,
I loued, but straight did not what *Loue* decreed:
At length to *Loues* decrees, I forc'd, agreed,
Yet with repining at so partiall lot.

Now euen that footstep of lost libertie
Is gone, and now like slaue-borne *Muscovite*,
I call it praise to suffer Tyrannie;

And now employ the remnant of my wit,
To make me selfe belecue, that all is well,
While with a feeling skill I paint my hell.

X x z

3

Let daintie wits crie on the Sisters nine,
That brauely maskt, their fancies may be told:
Or *Pindares* Apes, flaunt they in phrases fine,
Enam'ling with pied flowers their thoughts of gold:

Or else let them in statelier glorie shine,
Ennobling new found Tropes with problemes old,
Or with strange similies enrich each line,
Of herbes or beastes, which *Inde* or *Afrike* hold.

For me in sooth, no Muse but one I know:
Phrases and Problemes from my reach do grow,
And strange things cost too deare for my poore sprites.

How then? euen thus: in *Stellas* face I reed,
What Loue and Beautie be, then all my deed
But Copying is, what in her Nature writes.

4

Vertue alas, now let me take some rest,
Thou setst a bate betweene my will and wit,
If vaine loue haue my simple soule opprest:
Leaue what thou likest not, deale not thou with it.

Thy scepter vse in some old *Catoes* brest;
Churches or schooles are for thy seate more fit:
I do confesse, pardon a fault confest:
My mouth too tender is for thy hard bit.

But if that needs thou wilt vsurping be,
The litle reason that is left in me,
And still th'effect of thy perswasions proue:

I sweare, my heart such one shall shew to thee,
That shrines in flesh so true a Deitie,
That *Vertue*, thou thy selfe shalt be in loue.

5

It is most true, that eyes are form'd to serue
The inward light: and that the heavenly part
Ought to be king, from whose rules who do swerue,
Rebels to Nature striue for their owne smart.

It is most true, what we call *Cupids* dart,
An image is, which for our selues we carue;
And, fooles, adore in temple of our hart,
Till that good God make Church & Churchman starue.

True, that true Beautie *Vertue* is indeed,
Whereof this Beautie can be but a shade,
Which elements with mortall mixture breed:

True, that on earth we are but pilgrims made,
And should in soule vp to our countrey moue:
True, and yet true that I must *Stella* loue.

Some

6

Some Louers speake when they their Muses entertaine,
Of hopes begot by feare, of wot not what desires:
Of force of heau'nly beames, infusing hellish paine:
Of liuing deaths, deare wounds, faire stormes & freeing fires:

Some one his song in *Ioue*, and *Ioues* strange tales attires,
Bordred with buls & swans, powdred with golden raine:
Another humbler wit to shepheards pipe retires,
Yet hiding royall bloud full oft in rurall vaine.

To some a sweetest plaint, a sweetest stile affords,
While teares powre out his inke, & sighs breathe out his words:
His paper pale dispaire, and paine his pen doth moue.

I can speake what I feele, and feele as much as they,
But thinke that all the Map of my state I display,
When trembling voice brings forth that I do *Stella* loue.

7

When Nature made her chiefe worke, *Stellas* eyes,
In colour blacke, why wrapt she beames so bright?
Would she in beemie blacke, like painter wife,
Frame daintiest lustre, mixt of shades and light?

Or did she else that sober hue deuise,
In obiekt best to knit and strength our sight,
Least if no vaile these braue gleames did disguise,
They sun-like should more dazle then delight?

Or would she her miraculous power show,
That whereas blacke seemes Beauties contrary,
She euen in blacke doth make all beauties flow?

Both so and thus, she minding *Loue* should be
Placed euer there, gaue him this mourning weed,
To honor all their deaths, who for her bleed.

8

Loue borne in *Greece*, of late fled from his natie place,
Forc'd by a tedious prooffe, that Turkish hardned hart,
Is no fit marke to pierce with his fine pointed dart:
And pleas'd with our soft peace, staid here his flying race

But finding these North clymes do coldly him embrace,
Not vsde to frozen clips, he straued to find some part,
Where with most ease & warmth he might employ his art:
At length he perch'd himself in *Stellas* ioyfull face,

Whose faire skin, beamy eyes like morning sun on snow,
Deceiu'd the quaking boy, who thought from so pure light,
Effects of liuely heat, must needs in nature grow.

But she most faire, most cold, made him thence take his flight
To my close heart, where while some firebrands he did lay,
He burnt vnwares his wings, and cannot fly away.

9

Queene *Vertues* court, which some call *Stellas* face,
 Prepar'd by Natures choicest furniture,
 Hath his front built of Alabaster pure;
 Gold is the covering of that stately place.

The doore by which sometimes comes forth her Grace,
 Red Porphir is, which locke of pearle makes sure:
 Whose porches rich (which name of cheekes endure)
 Marble mixt red and white do enterlace.

The windowes now through which this he au'nly guest
 Looks ouer the world, and can find nothing such,
 Which dare claime from those lights the name of best.

Of touch they are that without touch doth touch,
 Which *Cupids* selfe from Beauties mind did draw:
 Of touch they are, and poore I am their str aw.

10

Reason, in faith thou art well seru'd, that still
 Wouldst bragging be with sence and loue in me:
 I rather wisht thee clime the Muses hill,
 Or reach the fruite of Natures choicest tree,

Or seeke heau'ns course, or heau'ns inside to see:
 Why shouldst thou toyle our thornie soile to till?
 Leaue sence, and those which senses obiects be:
 Deale thou with powers of thoughts, leaue loue to will.

But thou wouldst needs fight both with loue and sence,
 With sword of wit, giuing wounds of dispraife,
 Till downe-right blowes did foyle thy cunning fence:

For soone as they strake thee with *Stellas* rayes,
 Reason thou kneel'dst, and offeredst straight to proue
 By reason good, good reason her to loue.

11

In truth, ô Loue, with what a boyish kind
 Thou doest proceed in thy most serious wayes:
 That when the heau'n to thee his best displayes,
 Yet of that best thou leau'st the best behind.

For like a child that some faire booke doth find,
 With gilded leaues or colourd Volume playes,
 Or at the most on some fine picture staves,
 But neuer heeds the fruit of writers mind:

So when thou saw'st in Natures cabinet
Stella, thou straight lookst babies in her eyes,
 In her cheekes pit thou didst thy pitfould set:

And in her breast bopeepe or couching lyes,
 Playing and shining in each outward part:
 But, foole, seekst not to get into her hart.

Cupid

12

Cupid, because thou shin'st in *Stellas* eyes,
 That from her lockes, thy daunces none scapes free,
 That those lips sweld, so full of thee they bee,
 That her sweete breath makes oft thy flames to rise,
 That in her breast thy pap well sugred lies,
 That her Grace gracious makes thy wrongs, that she
 What words so ere she speake perswades for thee,
 That her cleare voyce lifts thy fame to the skies.
 Thou countest *Stella* thine, like those whose powers
 Hauing got vp a breach by fighting well,
 Crie, Victorie, this faire day all is ours.
 Ono, her heart is such a Cittadell,
 So fortified with wit, stor'd with disdaine,
 That to win it, is all the skill and paine.

13

Phæbus was Iudge betweene *Ioue*, *Mars*, and *Loue*,
 Of those three gods, whose armes the fairest were:
Ioues golden shield did Eagle fables beare,
 Whose talents held young *Ganimed* about:
 But in Vert field *Mars* bare a golden speare,
 Which through a bleeding heart his point did shoue:
 Each had his creast, *Mars* caried *Venus* gloue,
Ioue on his helme the thunderbolt did reare.
Cupid then smiles, for on his creast there lies
Stellas faire haire, her face he makes his shield,
 Where roses gueuls are borne in siluer field.
Phæbus drew wide the curtaines of the skies,
 To blaze these last, and sware deuoutly then,
 The first, thus matcht, were scanty Gentlemen.

14

Alas haue I not paine enough my friend,
 Vpon whose breast a fiercer Gripe doth tire,
 Then did on him who first stale downe the fire,
 While *Loue* on me doth all his quiuer spend,
 But with your Rubarb words ye must contend,
 To grieue me worse, in saying that Desire
 Doth plunge my wel-form'd soule euen in the mire
 Of sinfull thoughts, which do in ruine end?
 If that be sinne which doth the maners frame,
 Well staid with truth in word and faith of deed,
 Readie of wit and fearing nought but shame:
 If that be sinne which in fixt hearts doth breed
 A loathing of all loose vnchastitie,
 Then *Loue* is sinne, and let me sinfull be.

15

You that do search for euerie purling spring,
 VVhich from the ribs of old *Parnassus* flowes,
 And euerie floure not sweet perhaps, which growes
 Neare thereabouts, into your Poetic wring.

You that do Dictionaries methode bring
 Into your rimes, running in ratling rowes:
 You that poore *Petrarchs* long deceased woes,
 VVith new-borne fighes and denisend wit do sing.

You take wrong waies those far-fet helpes be such,
 As do bewray a want of inward tuch:
 And sure at length stolne goods do come to light.

But if (both for your loue and skill) your name
 You seeke to nurse at fullest breasts of Fame,
Stella behold, and then begin to endite.

16

In nature apt to like when I did see
 Beauties, which were of manie Carrets fine,
 My boiling sprites did thither soone incline,
 And, Loue, I thought that I was full of thee:

But finding not those restlesse flames in me,
 Which others said did make their soules to pine:
 I thought those babes of some pinnes hurt did whine,
 By my soule iudging what Loues paine might be.

But while I thus with this Lyon plaid;
 Mine eyes (shall I say curst or blest) beheld
Stella; now she is nam'd, need more be said?

In her sight I a lesson new haue speld,
 I now haue learn'd Loue right, and learn'd euen so,
 As who by being poifond doth poison know.

17

His mother deare *Cupid* offended late,
 Because that *Mars* growne slacker in her loue,
 With pricking shot he did not throughly moue,
 To keepe the pace of their first louing state.

The boy refused for feare of *Marses* hate,
 VVho threatned stripes, if he his wrath did proue:
 But she in chafe him from her lap did shoue,
 Brake bow, brake shafts, while *Cupid* weeping fate:

Till that his grandame *Nature* pitying it,
 Of *Stellas* browes made him two better bowes,
 And in her eyes of arrowes infinit.

O how for ioy he leapes, ô how he crowes,
 And straight therewith like wags new got to play,
 Fals to shrewd turnes, and I was in his way.

With

18

With what sharpe checkes I in my selfe am shent,
 When into Reasons audite I do go:
 And by iust counts my selfe a banckrout know
 Of all those goods, which heau'n to me haue lent:

Vnable quite to pay euen Natures rent,
 Which vnto it by birthright I do ow:
 And which is worse, no good excuse can show,
 But that my wealth I haue most idly spent.

My youth doth waste, my knowledge brings forth toyes,
 My wit doth striue those passions to defend,
 Which for reward spoile it with vaine annoyes.

I see my course to loose my selfe doth bend:
 I see and yet no greater sorow take,
 Then that I loose no more for *Stellas* sake.

19

On *Cupids* bow how are my heart-strings bent,
 That see my wracke, and yet embrace the same?
 When most I glorie, then I feele most shame:
 I willing run, yet while I run, repent.

My best wits still their owne disgrace inuent:
 My verie inke turnes straight to *Stellas* name;
 And yet my words, as them my pen doth frame,
 Auise themselues that they are vainely spent.

For though she passe all things, yet what is all
 That vnto me, who fare like him that both
 Lookes to the skies, and in a ditch doth fall?

O let me prop my mind yet in his growth,
 And not in Nature, for best fruits vnfit:
 Scholler, saith *Loue*, bend hitherward your wit.

20

Flie, fly, my friends, I haue my death wound; fly,
 See there that boy, that murthring boy I say,
 Who like a theefe, hid in darke bush doth ly,
 Till bloudie bullet get him wrongfull pray.

So Tyran he no fitter place could spie,
 Nor so faire leuell in so secret stay,
 As that sweete blacke which vailles the heau'nly eye:
 There himselfe with his shot he close doth lay.

Poore passenger, passe now thereby I did,
 And staid pleas'd with the prospect of the place,
 While that blacke hue from me the bad guest hid:

But straight I saw motions of lightning grace,
 And then descried the glistring of his dart:
 But ere I could flie thence, it pierc'd my heart.

21

Your words my friend (right healthfull caustiks) blame
 My young mind marde, whom *Loue* doth windlas so,
 That mine owne writings like bad seruants show
 My wits, quicke in vaine thoughts, in vertue lame:

That *Plato* I read for nought, but if he tame
 Such coltish yeeres, that to my birth I owe
 Nobler desires, least else that friendly foe,
 Great expectation, weare a traine of shame.

For since mad March great promise made of me,
 If now the May of my yeares much decline,
 What can be hoped my haruest time will be?

Sure you say well, your wisdomes golden mine,
 Dig deepe with learnings spade, now tell me this,
 Hath this world ought so faire as *Stella* is?

22

In highest way of hea'n the Sunne did ride,
 Progressing then from faire twinnes gold'n place:
 Hauing no scarfe of cloudes before his face,
 But shining forth of heate in his chiefe pride;

When some faire Ladies by hard promise tied,
 On horsebacke met him in his furious race,
 Yet each prepar'd with fannes wel-shading grace,
 From that foes wounds their tender skinnies to hide.

Stella alone with face vnarmed marcht,
 Either to do like him which open shone,
 Or carelesse of the wealth because her owne:

Yet were the hid and meaner beauties parcht,
 Her daintiest bare went free; the cause was this,
 The Sunne which others burn'd, did her but kisse.

23

The curious wits seeing dull pensiuenesse
 Bewray it selfe in my long setled eyes,
 Whence those same fumes of melancholy rise,
 With idle paines, and missing ayme, do guesse.

Some that know how my spring I did addresse,
 Deeme that my Muse some fruit of knowledge plies:
 Others, because the Prince my seruice tries,
 Thinke that I thinke state errours to redresse.

But harder Iudges iudge ambitions rage,
 Scourge of it selfe, still climbing slippry place,
 Holds my young braine captiu'd in golden cage.

O fooles, or ouer-wise, alas the race
 Of all my thoughts hath neither stop nor start,
 But only *Stellas* eyes and *Stellas* hart.

Rich

24

Rich fooles there be, whose base and filthy hart
Lies hatching still the goods wherein they flow:
And damning their owne selues to *Tantals* smart,
Wealth breeding want, more blist, more wretched grow.

Yet to those fooles heau'n such wit doth impart,
As what their hands do hold, their heads do know,
And knowing *Loue*, and louing lay apart,
As sacred things, far from all daungers show.

But that rich foole who by blind Fortunes lot,
The richest gemme of *Loue* and life enioyes,
And can with foule abuse such beauties blot;

Let him depriued of sweet but vnfelt ioyes,
(Exil'd for ay from those high treasures, which
He knowes not) grow in only follie rich.

25

The wisest scholler of the wight most wise,
By *Phaebus* doome, with sugred sentence sayes,
That Vertue if it once met with our eyes,
Strange flames of *Loue* it in our soules would raise.

But for that man with paine this truth descries,
Whiles he each thing in senses ballance wayes,
And so nor will, nor can behold those skies,
Which inward sunne to *Heroicke* minde displaies.

Vertue of late with vertuous care to ster
Loue of her selfe, tooke *Stellas* shape, that she
To mortall eyes might sweetly shine in her.

It is most true, for since I her did see,
Vertues great beautie in that face I proue,
And find th'effect, for I do burne in loue.

26

Though dustie wits dare scorne Astrologie,
And fooles can thinke those Lampes of purest light,
Whose numbers weighs greatnesse eternitie,
Promising wonders, wonder do inuite:

To haue for no cause birthright in the skie,
But for to spangle the blacke weeds of night:
Or for some brawle, which in that chamber hie,
They should still daunce to please a gazers sight.

For me, I do Nature vnidle know,
And know great causes, great effects procure:
And know those Bodies high raigne on the low.

And if these rules did faile, prooue makes me sure,
Who oft fore-iudge my after-following race,
By only those two starres in *Stellas* face.

27

Because I oft in darke abstracted guise,
 Seeme most alone in greatest companie:
 With dearth of words, or answers quite awrie,
 To them that would make speech of speech arise.

They deeme, and of their doome the rumour flies,
 That poison foule of bubling pride doth lie:
 So in my swelling breast that only I
 Fawne on me selfe, and others do despise:

Yet pride I thinke doth not my soule possesse,
 Which lookes too oft in his vnflattering glasse:
 But one worse fault *Ambition* I confesse,

That makes me oft my best friends ouerpasse,
 Vnscene, vnheard, while thought to highest place
 Bends all his powers, euen vnto *Stellas* grace.

28

You that with allegories curious frame,
 Of others children changelings vse to make,
 With me those paines for Gods sake do not take
 I list not dig so deepe for brasen fame.

When I say, *Stella*, I do meane the same
 Princeesse of Beautie, for whose only sake,
 The raines of *Loue* I loue, though neuer flake,
 And ioy therein, though Nations count it shame.

I beg no subiect to vse eloquence,
 Nor in hid wayes do guide Philosophie:
 Looke at my hands for no such quintessence;

But know that I in pure simplicitie,
 Breathe out the flames which burne within my heart,
Loue onely reading vnto me this art.

29

Like some weake Lords, neighbord by mighty kings,
 To keepe themselues and their chiefe cities free,
 Do easly yeeld, that all their coasts may be
 Ready to store their campes of needfull things:

So *Stellas* heart finding what power *Loue* brings,
 To keepe it selfe in life and liberty,
 Doth willing graunt, that in the frontiers he
 Vse all to helpe his other conquerings:

And thus her heart escapes, but thus her eyes
 Serue him with shot, her lips his heralds arre:
 Her breasts his tents, legs his triumphall carre:

Her flesh his food, her skin his armour braue,
 And I, but for because my prospect lies
 Vpon that coast, am giu'n vp for a slaue.

Whether

30

Whether the Turkish new-moone minded be
To fill his hornes this yeare on Christian coast:
How *Poles* right king meanes without leaue of hoast,
To warme with ill-made fire cold *Moscony*.

If French can yet three parts in one agree,
What now the Dutch in their full diets boast,
How *Holland* hearts, now so good townes be lost,
Trust in the shade of pleasing *Orange* tree.

How *Vlster* likes of that same golden bit,
Wherewith my father once made it halfe tame,
If in the *Scottish* Court be no weltring yet.

These questions busie wits to me do frame;
I cumbred with good maners, answer do,
But know not how, for still I thinke of you.

31

With how sad steps, *o* Moone, thou climb'st the skies,
How silently, and with how wanne a face,
What may it be, that euen in heau'nly place
That busie archer his sharpe arrowes tries?

Sure if that long with *Loue* acquainted eyes
Can iudge of *Loue*, thou feel'st a Louers case;
I reade it in thy lookes, thy languisht grace
To me that feeles the like, thy state describes.

Then eu'n of fellowship, *o* Moone, tell me
Is constant *Loue* deem'd there but want of wit?
Are Beauties there as proud as here they be?

Do they aboue loue to be lou'd, and yet
Those Louers scorne whom that *Loue* doth possesse?
Do they call *Virtue* there vngratefulnessse.

32

Morpheus the liuely sonne of deadly sleepe,
Witnesse of life to them that liuing die:
A Prophet oft, and oft an historie,
A Poet eke, as humours fly or creepe,

Since thou in me so sure a power doest keepe,
That neuer I with close vp sense do lie,
But by thy worke (my *Stella*) I descrie,
Teaching blind eyes both how to smile and weepe.

Vouchsafe of all acquaintance this to tell,
Whence hast thou *Iuorie*, Rubies, pearle and gold;
To shew her skin, lips, teeth and head so well?

Foole, answers he, no *Indes* such treasures hold,
But from thy heart, while my fire charmeth thee,
Sweet *Stella* image I do steale to mee.

33

I might, vnhappy word, ô me, I might,
 And then would not, or could not see my blisse:
 Till now wrapt in a most infernall night,
 I find how heau'nly day wretch I did misse.

Hart rent thy selfe, thou doest thy selfe but right,
 No louely *Paris* made thy *Hellen* his:
 No force, no fraud, robd thee of thy delight,
 Nor Fortune of thy fortune author is:

But to my selfe my selfe did giue the blow,
 While too much wit (forsooth) so troubled me,
 That I respects for both our sakes must show:

And yet could not by rising Morne foresee
 How faire a day was neare, ô punisht eyes,
 That I had bene more foolish or more wise.

34.

Come let me write, and to what end? to ease
 A burthned hart, how can words ease, which are
 The glasses of thy dayly vexing care?
 Oft cruell fights well pictured forth do please.

Art not asham'd to publish thy disease?
 Nay, that may breed my fame, it is so rare:
 But will not wise men thinke thy words fond ware?
 Then be they close, and so none shall displease.

What idler thing, then speake and not be hard?
 What harder thing then smart, and not to speake?
 Peace foolish wit, with wit my wit is mard.

Thus write I while I doubt to write, and wreake
 My harmes on Inks poore losse, perhaps some find
Stellas great powrs, that so confuse my mind,

35

What may words say, or what may words not say,
 Where truth it selfe must speake like flatterie?
 Within what bounds can one his liking stay,
 Where Nature doth with infinite agree?

What *Nessors* counsell can my flames alay,
 Since Reason selfe doth blow the cole in me?
 And ah what hope, that hope should once see day,
 Where *Cupid* is sworne page to Chastity?

Honour is honour'd, that thou doest possesse
 Him as thy slaue, and now long needy Fame
 Doth euen grow rich, naming my *Stellas* name.

Wit leames in thee perfection to expresse,
 Not thou by praise, but praise in thee is raise:
 It is a praise to praise, when thou art praise,

Stella

36

Stella, whence doth this new assault arise,
 A conquerd golden ranfackt heart to winne?
 Whereto long since through my long battred eyes,
 Whole armies of thy beauties entred in.

And there long since, *Loue* thy Lieutenant lies,
 My forces razde, thy banners raisd within:
 Of conquest, do not these effects suffice,
 But wilt now warre vpon thine owne begin?

With so sweete voice, and by sweete Nature so
 In sweetest strength, so sweetly skild withall,
 In all sweete stratagems, sweete Arte can show,
 That not my soule, which at thy foot did fall,
 Long since forc'd by thy beames, but stone nor tree
 By Sences priuiledge, can scape from thee.

37

My mouth doth water, and my breast doth swell,
 My tongue doth itch, my thoughts in labour be:
 Listen then Lordings with good eare to me,
 For of my life I must a riddle tell.

Toward *Auroras* Court a Nymph doth dwell,
 Rich in all beauties which mans eye can see:
 Beauties so farre from reach of words, that we
 Abuse her praise, saying she doth excell:

Rich in the treasure of deseru'd renowne,
 Rich in the riches of a royall hart,
 Rich in those gifts which giue th'eternall crowne;

Who though most rich in these and euerie part,
 Which make the patents of true worldly blisse,
 Hath no misfortune, but that Rich she is.

38

This night while sleepe begins with heavy wings
 To hatch mine eyes, and that vnbitted thought
 Doth fall to stray, and my chiefe powres are brought
 To leaue the scepter of all subiect things.

The first that straight my fancies error brings
 Vnto my mind, is *Stellas* image, wrought
 By *Loues* owne selfe, but with so curious drought,
 That she, me thinks, not onely shines but sings.

I start, looke, hearke, but what in closde vp sence
 Was held, in opend sence it flies away,
 Leauing me nought but wailing eloquence:

I seeing better sights in sights decay,
 Cald it anew, and wooed sleepe againe:
 But him her host that vnkind guest had slaine.

39

Come sleepe, o sleepe, the certaine knot of peace,
The bairing place of wit, the balme of woe,
The poore mans wealth, the prisoners release,
Th'indifferent Iudge betweene the high and low;

With shield of prooffe shield me from our the prease
Of those fierce darts, dispaire at me doth throw:
O make in me those ciuill warres to cease;
I will good tribute pay if thou do so.

Take thou of me smooth pillowes, sweetest bed,
A chamber deafe to noise, and blind to light:
A rosie garland, and a wearie hed:

And if these things, as being thine by right,
Moue not thy heauy grace, thou shalt in me
Liuclier then else-where *Stellas* image see.

40

As good to write as for to lie and grone,
O *Stella* deare, how much thy power hath wrought,
That hast my mind, none of the basest, brought
My still kept course, while other sleepe to mone.

Alas, if from the height of Vertues throne,
Thou canst vouchsafe the influence of a thought
Vpon a wretch, that long thy grace hath sought;
Weigh then how I by thee am ouerthrowne.

And then, thinke thus, although thy beautie be
Made manifest by such a victorie,
Yet noblest Conquerours do wreckes auoid.

Since then thou hast so farre subdued me,
That in my heart I offer still to thee,
O do not let thy temple be destroyed.

41

Hauing this day my horse, my hand, my launce
Guided so well, that I obtain'd the prize,
Both by the iudgement of the English eyes,
And of some sent from that sweet enimie *Fraunce*.

Horsmen my skill in horfmanship aduance:
Towne-folkes my strength, a daintier iudge applies
His praise to sleight, which from good vse doth rise:
Some luckie wits impute it but to chaunce:

Others, because of both sides I do take
My bloud from them, who did excell in this,
Thinke Nature me a man of armes did make.

How farre they shot awrie? the true cause is,
Stella lookt on, and from her hau'nly face
Sent forth the beames, which made so faire my race.

O eyes

42

O eyes, which do the Spheares of beautie mone,
 Whose beames be ioyes, whose ioyes all vertues be,
 Who while they make *Loue* conquer, conquer *Loue*,
 The schooles where *Venus* hath learn'd Chastitie.

O eyes, where humble looks most glorious proue,
 Only lou'd Tyrants, iust in cruelty,
 Do not, ô do not from poore me remoue,
 Keepe still my Zenith, euer shine on me.

For though I neuer see them, but straight wayes
 My life forgets to nourish languisht sprites;
 Yet still on me, ô eyes, dart downe your rayes :

And if from Maiestie of sacred lights,
 Oppressing mortall sense, my death proceed,
 Wrackes Triumphs be, which *Loue* (high set) doth breed.

43

Faire eyes, sweet lips, deare heart, that foolish I
 Could hope by *Cupids* helpe on you to pray;
 Since to himselfe he doth your gifts apply,
 As his maine force, choise sport, and easfull stay.

For when he will see who dare him gaine say,
 Then with those eyes he looks, lo by and by
 Each soule doth at *Loues* feet his weapons lay,
 Glad if for her he giue them leaue to die.

When he will play, then in her lips he is,
 Where blushing red, that *Loues* selfe them doth loue,
 With either lip he doth the other kisse:

But when he will for quiets sake remoue
 From all the world, her heart is then his rome,
 Where well he knowes, no man to him can come.

44

My words I know do well set forth my mind,
 My mind bemones his sense of inward smart;
 Such smart may pitie claime of any hart,
 Her heart, sweete heart, is of no Tygres kind :

And yet she heares, and yet no pitie I find;
 But more I crie, lesse grace she doth impart,
 Alas, what cause is there so ouerthwart,
 That Nobleneffe it selfe makes thus vnkind ?

I much do guesse, yet find no truth saue this,
 That when the breath of my complaints doth tuch
 Those daintie dores vnto the Court of blisse,

The heau'nly nature of that place is such,
 That once come there, the sobs of mine annoyes
 Are metamorphosd straight to tunes of ioyes.

Y y 3

45

Stella oft sees the verie face of wo
 Painted in my beclouded stormie face:
 But cannot skill to pitie my disgrace,
 Not though thereof the cause her selfe she knowe

Yet hearing late a fable, which did show
 Of Louers neuer knowne, a grieuous case,
 Pitie thereof gate in her breast such place,
 That from that sea deriu'd teares spring did flow.

Alas, if Fancy drawne by imag'd things,
 Though false, yet with free scope more grace doth breed
 Then seruants wracke, where new doubts honor brings;

Then thinke my deare, that you in me do reed
 Of Louers ruine some sad Tragedie:
 I am not I, pitie the tale of me.

46

I curst thee oft, I pitie now thy case,
 Blind-hitting boy, since she that thee and me
 Rules with a becke, so tyrannizeth thee,
 That thou must want or food, or dwelling place.

For she protests to banish thee her face,
 Her face? O *Loue*, a Rogue thou then shouldst be!
 If *Loue* learne not alone to loue and see,
 Without desire to feed of further grace.

Alas poore wag, that now a scholler art
 To such a schoole-mistresse, whose lessons new
 Thou needs must misse, and so thou needs must smart.

Yet Deare, let me his pardon get of you,
 So long (though he fro his booke myche to desire)
 Till without fewell you can make hot fire.

47

What haue I thus betrayed my libertie?
 Can those blacke beames such burning markes engraue
 In my free side? or am I borne a slaue,
 Whose necke becomes such yoke of tyranny?

Or want I sense to feele my miserie?
 Or sprite, disdaine of such disdaine to haue?
 Who for long faith, tho dayly helpe I craue,
 May get no almes but scorne of beggerie.

Vertue awake, Beautie but beautie is,
 I may, I must, I can, I will, I do
 Leaue following that, which it is gaine to misse.

Let her do: soft, but here she comes, go to,
 Vnkind, I loue you not: O me, that eye
 Doth make my heart giue to my tongue the lie.

Soules

48

Soules ioy, bend not those morning starres from me,
Where Vertue is made strong by Beauties might,
Where *Loue* is chastnesse, Paine doth learne delight,
And Humblenesse growes one with Maiestie.

What euer may ensue, ô let me be
Copartner of the riches of that sight:
Let not mine eyes be hel-driu'n from that light:
O looke, ô shine, ô let me die and see.

For though I oft my selfe of them benone,
That through my heart their beamic darts be gone:
Whose curelesse wounds euen now most freshly bleed:

Yet since my death-wound is already got,
Deare Killer, spare not thy sweet cruell shot:
A kind of grace it is to slay with speed.

49

I on my horse, and *Loue* on me doth trie
Our horsemanships, while by strange worke I proue
A horsman to my horse, a horse to *Loue*;
And now mans wrongs in me poore beast descrie.

The raine wherewith my Rider doth me tie,
Are humbled thoughts, which bit of Reuerence moue,
Curb'd in with feare, but with guilt bosse aboue
Of Hope, which makes it seeme faire to the eye.

The Wand is Will, thou Fancie Saddle art,
Girt fast by memorie, and while I spurre
My horse, he spurres with sharpe desire my hart:

He sits me fast, how euer I do sturre:
And now hath made me to his hand so right,
That in the Manage my selfe takes delight.

50

Stella, the fulnesse of my thoughts of thee
Cannot be staide within my panting breast,
But they do swell and struggle forth of me,
Till that in words thy figure be exprest.

And yet as soone as they so formed be,
According to my Lord *Loues* owne behest:
With sad eyes I their weake proportion see,
To portraitt that which in this world is best.

So that I cannot chuse but write my mind,
And cannot chuse but put out what I write,
While these poore babes their death in birth do find:

And now my pen these lines had dashed quite,
But that they stopt his furie from the same,
Because their forefront bare sweet *Stellas* name.

51

Pardon mine eares, both I and they do pray,
 So may your tongue still fluently proceed,
 To them that do such entertainment need,
 So may you still haue somewhat new to say.

On filly me do not the burthen lay,
 Of all the graue conceits your braine doth breed;
 But find some *Hercules* to beare, in steed
 Of *Atlas* tyr'd, your wisedomes heau'nly sway.

For me, while you discourse of courtly tides,
 Of cunning fishers in most troubled streames,
 Of straying wayes, when valiant errorr guides:

Meane while my heart confers with *Stellas* beames,
 And is euen irkt that so sweet Comedie,
 By such vnfuted speech should hindred be.

52

A strife is growne betweene *Vertue* and *Loue*,
 While each pretends that *Stella* must be his:
 Her eyes, her lips, her all, saith *Loue* do this,
 Since they do weare his badge, most firmly proue.

But *Vertue* thus that title doth disproue,
 That *Stella* (ô deare name) that *Stella* is
 That vertuous soule, sure heire of heau'nly blisse:
 Not this faire outside, which our hearts doth moue.

And therefore, though her beautie and her grace
 Be *Loues* indeed, in *Stellas* selfe he may
 By no pretence claime any maner place.

Well *Loue*, since this demurre our sute doth stay,
 Let *Vertue* haue that *Stellas* selfe; yet thus,
 That *Vertue* but that body graunt to vs.

53

In Martiall sports I had my cunning tride,
 And yet to breake more staues did me addresse:
 While with the peoples shouts I must confesse,
 Youth, lucke, and praise, euen fild my veines with pride.

When *Cupid* hauing me his slaue descride,
 In *Marses* liuerie, prauncing in the presse:
 What now sir foole, said he, I would no lesse,
 Looke here, I say, I look'd and *Stella* spide:

Who hard by made a window send forth light,
 My heart then quak'd, then dazled were mine eyes,
 One hand forgot to rule, th'other to fight.

Nor trumpets sound I heard, nor friendly cries;
 My Foe came on, and beat the aire for me,
 Till that her blush taught me my shame to see.

Because

54

Because I breathe not loue to euerie one,
 Nor do not vse set colours for to weare,
 Nor nourish speciall lockes of vowed haire,
 Nor giue each speech a full point of a grone.
 The courtly Nymphs, acquainted with the mone
 Of them, who in their lips *Loues* standerd beare;
 What he? say they of me, now I dare sweare,
 He cannot loue: no, no, let him alone.
 And thinke so still, so *Stella* know my mind,
 Professe in deed I do not *Cupids* art;
 But you faire maides, at length this true shall find,
 That his right badge is but worne in the hart:
 Dumb Swannes, not chattering Pies, do Louers proue,
 They loue indeed, who quake to say they loue.

55

Muses, I oft inuoked your holy ayde,
 With choicest flowers my speech to engarland so;
 That it despisde in true but naked shew,
 Might winne some grace in your sweet grace arraid.
 And oft whole troupes of saddest words I flaid,
 Striuing abroad a foraging to go;
 Vntill by your inspiring I might know,
 How their blacke banner might be best displaid.
 But now I meane no more your helpe to trie,
 Nor other sugring of my speech to proue,
 But on her name incessantly to crie:
 For let me but name her whom I do loue,
 So sweete sounds straight mine eare and heart do hit,
 That I well find no eloquence like it.

56

Fy schoole of Patience, Fy, your lesson is
 Far far too long to learne it without booke:
 What, a whole weeke without one peece of looke,
 And thinke I should not your large precepts misse?
 When I might reade those letters faire of blisse,
 Which in her face teach vertue, I could brooke,
 Somewhat thy lead'n counsels, which I tooke,
 As of a friend that meant not much amisse:
 But now that I alas do want her sight,
 What, dost thou thinke that I can euer take
 In thy cold stufte a flegmatike delight?
 No Patience, if thou wilt my good, then make
 Her come, and heare with patience my desire,
 And then with patience bid me beare my fire.

57

Wo, hauing made with many fights his owne
 Each fence of mine, each gift, each power of mind,
 Growne now his slaues, he forst them out to find
 The thorowest words, fit for woes selfe to grone,
 Hoping that when they might find *Stella* alone,
 Before she could prepare to be vnkind,
 Her soule arm'd but with such a dainty rind,
 Should soone be pierc'd with sharpnesse of the mone.
 She heard my plaints, and did not only heare,
 But them (so sweete is she) most sweetly sing,
 With that faire breast making woes darknesse cleare:
 A pretie case I hoped her to bring
 To feele my griefes, and she with face and voice,
 So sweets my paines, that my paines me reioyce.

58

Doubt there hath bene when with his golden chaine;
 The Oratour so farre mens harts doth bind,
 That no pace else their guided steps can find,
 But as he them more short or slacke doth raine.
 Whether with words this soueraignty he gaine,
 Cloth'd with fine tropes, with strongest reasons lin'd,
 Or else pronouncing grace, wherewith his mind
 Prints his owne liuely forme in rudest braine:
 Now iudge by this, in piercing phrases late,
 The anatomy of all my woes I wate,
Stellas sweete breath the same to me did reed.
 O voice, o face, maugre my speeches might,
 Which wooed wo, most rauishing delight,
 Euen those sad words, euen in sad me did breed.

59

Deare, why make you more of a dog then me?
 If he do loue, I burne, I burne in loue:
 If he waite well, I neuer thence would moue:
 If he be faire, yet but a dog can be.
 Little he is, so little worth is he;
 He barks, my songs thine owne voyce oft doth proue:
 Bid'n perhaps he fetcheth thee a gloue,
 But I vnbid, fetch euen my soule to thee.
 Yet while I languish, him that bosome clips,
 That lap doth lap, nay lets in spite of spite,
 This sowe-breath'd mate tast of those sugred lips.
 Alas, if you graunt only such delight
 To witlesse things, then *Loue*, I hope (since wit
 Becomes a clog) will soone ease me of it.

When

60

When my good Angell guides me to the place,
Where all my good I do in *Stella* see,
That heau'n of ioyes throwes onely downe on me
Thundred disdaines and lightnings of disgrace:

But when the ruggedst step of Fortunes race
Makes me fall from her sight, then sweetly she
With words, wherein the Muses treasures be,
Shewes loue and pitie to my absent case.

Now I wit-beaten long by hardest Fate,
So dull am, that I cannot looke into
The ground of this fierce *Loue* and louely hate:

Then some good body tell me how I do,
Whose presence, absence, absence presence is;
Bliss in my curse, and cursed in my blisse.

61

Oft with true sighes, oft with vncalled teares,
Now with slow words, now with dumbe eloquence
I *Stellas* eyes assaid, inuade her eares;
But this at last is her sweet breath'd defence:

That who indeed infelt affection beares,
So captiues to his Saint both soule and sence,
That wholly hers, all selfnesse he forbears;
Then his desires he learns his liues course thence.

Now since her chaste mind hates this loue in me,
With chastned mind, I straight must shew that she
Shall quickly me from what she hates remoue.

O Doctor *Cupid*, thou for me reply,
Driu' n'esse to graunt by Angels sophistrie,
That I loue not, without I leaue to loue.

62

Late tyr'd with wo, euen ready for to pine
With rage of *Loue*, I cald my Loue vnkind;
She in whose eyes *Loue* though vnfelt doth shine,
Sweet said that I true loue in her should find,

I ioyed, but straight thus watred was my wine,
That loue she did, but loued a Loue not blind,
Which would not let me, whom she loued, decline
From nobler course, fit for my birth and mind:

And therefore by her Loues authority,
Wild me these tempests of vaine loue to flie,
And anchor fast my selfe on *Vertues* shore.

Alas, if this the only mettall be
Of *Loue*, new-coind to helpe my beggery,
Deare, loue me not, that ye may loue me more.

O Grammer rules, ô now your vertues show;
 So children still reade you with awfull eyes,
 As my young Doue may in your precepts wise
 Her graunt to me, by her owne vertue know.

For late with heart most high, with eyes most low;
 I crau'd the thing which euer she denies:
 She lightning *Loue*, displaying *Venus* skies,
 Least once should not be heard, twise said, No, No.

Sing then my Muse, now *Io Pean* sing,
 Heau'ns enuy not at my high triumphing:
 But Grammers force with sweet successe confirme:

For Grammer sayes (ô this deare *Stella* nay)
 For Grammer sayes (to Grammer who sayes nay)
 That in one speech two Negatiues affirme.

First song.

*Doubt you to whom my Muse these notes entendeth,
 which now my breast orchard to Musicke lendeth:
 To you, to you, all song of praise is due,
 Only in you my song begins and endeth.*

*who hath the eyes which marrie state with pleasure,
 who keepes the key of Natures chiefeft treasure:
 To you, to you, all song of praise is due,
 Only for you the heau'n forgate all measure.*

*who hath the lips, where wit in fairenesse raigneth,
 who womankind at once both deckes and stayneth:
 To you, to you, all song of praise is due,
 Onely by you Cupid his crowne maintaineth.*

*who hath the feet, whose step of sweetnesse planteth,
 who else for whom Fame worthy trumpets wanteth:
 To you, to you, all song of praise is due,
 Onely to you her Scepter Venus granteth.*

*who hath the breast, whose milke doth passions nourish,
 whose grace is such, that when it chides doth cherish,
 To you, to you all song of praise is due,
 Onely through you the tree of life doth flourish.*

*who hath the hand which without stroke subdueth,
 who long dead beautie with increase reneweth:
 To you, to you, all song of praise is due,
 Onely at you all ennie hopelesse rueth.*

*who hath the haire which loosest fastest tieth,
 Whom makes a man liue then glad when he dieth:
 To you, to you, all song of praise is due:
 Only of you the flatterer neuer lieth.*

*who hath the voyce, which soule from senses sunders,
 whose force but yours the bolts of beauties thunders:
 To you, to you, all song of praise is due:
 Only with you not miracles are wonders.*

*Doubt you to whom my Muse these notes intendeth,
 which now my breast orecharg'd to Musicke lendeth:
 To you, to you, all song of praise is due:
 Only in you my song begins and endeth.*

64

No more, my deare, no more these counsels trie,
 O giue my passions leaue to run their race:
 Let Fortune lay on me her worst disgrace,
 Let folke orecharg'd with braine against me crie.

Let clouds bedimme my face, breake in mine eye,
 Let me no steps but of lost labour trace:
 Let all the earth with scorne recount my case,
 But do not will me from my *Loue* to flie.

I do not enuie *Aristotles* wit,
 Nor do aspire to *Cesars* bleeding fame;
 Nor ought do care, though some about me sit:

Nor hope, nor with another course to frame,
 But that which once may win thy cruell hart
 Thou art my Wit, and thou my Vertue art.

65

Loue by sure prooffe I may call thee vnkind,
 That giu'st no better eare to my iust cries:
 Thou whom to me such my good turnes should bind,
 As I may well recount, but none can prize:

For when nak'd boy thou couldst no harbour find
 In this old world, growne now so too too wise:
 I lodg'd thee in my heart, and being blind
 By Nature borne, I gaue to thee mine eyes.

Mine eyes, my light, my heart, my life, alas,
 If so great seruices may scorn'd be:
 Yet let this thought thy Tygrish courage passe:

That I perhaps am somewhat kinne to thee;
 Since in thine armes, if learnd fame truth hath spread,
 Thou bear'st the arrow, I the arrow head.

Zz

And do I see some cause a hope to feede,
Or doth the tedious burd'n of long wo
In weakened minds, quicke apprehending breed,
Of euerie image, which may comfort show?

I cannot brag of word, much lesse of deed,
Fortunes wheelles still with me in one sort flow,
My wealth no more, and no whit lesse my need,
Desire still on the stilts of feare doth go.

And yet amid all feares a hope there is,
Stolne to my heart since last faire night, nay day,
Stella eyes sent to me the beames of blisse,

Looking on me, while I lookt other way:
But when mine eyes backe to their heau'n did moue,
They fled with blush, which guiltie seem'd of loue.

Hope, art thou true, or doest thou flatter me?
Doth *Stella* now begin with piteous eye,
The ruines of her conquest to espie:
Will she take time, before all wracked be?

Her eyes-speech is translated thus by thee:
But faillst thou not in phrase so heau'nly hie?
Looke on againe, the faire text better trie:
What blushing notes doest thou in margine see?

What sighes stolne out, or kild before full borne?
Hast thou found such and such like arguments?
Or art thou else to comfort me forsworne?

Well, how so thou interpret the contents,
I am resolu'd thy error to maintaine,
Rather then by more truth to get more paine.

Stella, the onely Planet of my light,
Light of my life, and life of my desire,
Chiefe good, whereto my hope doth only aspire,
World of my wealth, and heau'n of my delight.

Why doest thou spend the treasures of thy sprite,
With voice more fit to wed *Amphions* lyre,
Seeking to quench in me the noble fire,
Fed by thy worth, and blinded by thy fight?

And all in vaine, for while thy breath most sweet,
With choifest words, thy words with reasons rare,
Thy reasons firmly set on *Vertues* feet,

Labour to kill in me this killing care:
O thinke I then, what paradise of ioy
It is, so faire a Vertue to enioy.

69

O ioy, too high for my low stile to show:
 O blisse, fit for a nobler state then me:
 Enuie, put out thine eyes, least thou do see
 What Oceans of delight in me do flow.

My friend, that oft saw through all maskes my wo,
 Come, come, and let me powre my selfe on thee;
 Gone is the winter of my miserie,
 My spring appeares, ô see what here doth grow.

For *Stella* hath with words where faith doth shine,
 Of her high heart giu'n me the monarchie:
 I, I, ô I may say, that she is mine.

And though she giue but thus conditionly
 This realme of blisse, while vertuous course I take,
 No kings be crown'd, but they some couenants make,

70

My Muse may well grudge at my heau'nly ioy,
 If still I force her in sad rimes to creepe:
 She oft hath drunke my teares, now hopes to enioy
 Nectar of Mirth, since *Ioues* cup do keepe.

Sonets be not bound prentise to annoy:
 Trebles sing high, as well as bases deepe:
 Griefe but *Loues* winter liuerie is, the Boy
 Hath cheekes to simile, as well as eyes to weepe.

Come then my Muse, shew thou height of delight
 In well raifde notes, my pen the best it may
 Shall paint out ioy, though but in blacke and white.

Cease eager Muse, peace pen, for my sake stay,
 I giue you here my hand for truth of this,
 Wise silence is best musicke vnto blisse.

71

Who will in fairest booke of Nature know,
 How Vertue may best lodg'd in beautie be,
 Let him but learne of *Loue* to reade in thee
Stella, those faire lines, which true goodnesse show.

There shall he find all vices ouerthrow,
 Not by rude force, but sweetest soueraigntie
 Of reason, from whose light those night-birds flie;
 That inward sunne in thine eyes shineth so.

And not content to be Perfections heire
 Thy selfe, doest striue all minds that way to moue:
 Who marke in thee what is in thee most faire.

So while thy beautie drawes the heart to loue,
 As fast thy Vertue bends that loue to good:
 But ah, Desire still cries, giue me some food.

Z z z

Desire, though thou my old companion art,
 And oft so clings to my pure Loue, that I
 One from the other scarcely can descric,
 While each doth blow the fier of my hart;
 Now from thy fellowship I needs must part,
Venus is taught with *Dians* wings to flie:
 I must no more in thy sweet passions lie;
Vertues gold now must head my *Cupids* dart.
 Seruice and Honor, wonder with delight,
 Feare to offend, will worthie to appeare,
 Care shining in mine eyes, faith in my sprite.
 These things are left me by my only Deare;
 But thou Desire, because thou wouldst haue all,
 Now banisht art, but yet alas how shall?

Second song.

*Haue I caught my heau'nly iewell,
 Teaching sleepe most faire to be?
 Now will I teach her that she,
 When she wakes, is too too cruell.*

*Since sweet sleep her eyes hath charmed,
 The two only darts of Loue:
 Now will I with that boy proue
 Some play, while he is disarmed.*

*Her tongue waking still refuseth,
 Giuing frankly niggard No:
 Now will I attempt to know,
 What No her tongue sleeping vseth.*

*See the hand which waking gardeth,
 Sleeping, grants a free resort:
 Now will I inuade the fort,
 Cowards Loue with losse rewardeth.*

*But o foole, thinke of the danger,
 Of her iust and high disdain:
 Now will I alas refraine,
 Loue feares nothing else but anger.*

*Yet those lips so sweetly swelling,
 Do inuite a stealing kisse:
 Now will I but venture this,
 who will read must first learne spelling.*

*Oh sweet kisse, but ah she is waking,
 Lowring beantie chastens me:
 Now will I away hence flee:
 Foole, more foole, for no more taking.*

73

Lone still a boy, and oft a wanton is,
 School'd onely by his mothers tender eye:
 What wonder then if he his lesson misse,
 When for so soft a rod deare play he trie?
 And yet my *Starre*, because a sugred kisse
 In sport I suckt, while she asleepe did lie,
 Doth lowre, nay, chide; nay, threat for only this:
 Sweet, it was faucie *Lone*, not humble I.
 But no excuse serues, she makes her wrath appeare
 In Beauties throne, see now who dares come neare
 Those scarlet iudges, threatening bloody paine?
 O heau'nly foole, thy most kisse-worthie face,
 Anger inuests with such a louely grace,
 That Anger selfe I needs must kisse againe.

74

I neuer dranke of *Aganippe* well,
 Nor euer did in shade of *Tempe* sit:
 And Muses scorne with vulgar braines to dwell,
 Poore Layman I, for sacred rites vnfit.
 Some do I heare of Poets furie tell,
 But (God wor) wor not what they meane by it:
 And this I sweare by blackest brooke of hell,
 I am no pick-purse of anothers wit.
 How falles it then, that with so smooth an ease
 My thoughts I speake, and what I speake doth flow
 In verse, and that my verse best wits doth please?
 Guesse we the cause, what is it thus? fie no:
 Or so? much lesse: how then? sure thus it is:
 My lips are sweet, inspired with *Stellas* kisse.

75

Of all the kings that euer here did raigne,
Edward named fourth, as first in praise I name,
 Nor for his faire outside, nor well lined braine;
 Although lesse gifts impe feathers oft on Fame
 Nor that he could young-wife, wife-valiant frame
 His Sires reuenge, ioyn'd with a kingdomes gaine:
 And gain'd by *Mars*, could yet mad *Mars* so tame,
 That Ballance weigh'd what sword did late obtaine.
 Nor that he made the Flouredeluce so fraid,
 Though strongly hedg'd of bloody Lyons pawes,
 That wittie *Lewis* to him a tribute paid.
 Nor this, nor that, nor any such small cause,
 But only for this worthy knight durst proue
 To loose his Crowne, rather then faile his *Lone*.

76

She comes, and streight therewith her shining twins do moue
 Their rayes to me, who in her tedious absence lay
 Benighted in cold wo, but now appears my day,
 The onely light of ioy, the onely warmth of *Lone*.

She comes with light and warmth, which like *Aurora* proue
 Of gentle force, so that mine eyes dare gladly play
 With such a rosie morne, whose beames most freshly gay
 Scorch not, but onely do darke chilling sprites remoue.

But lo, while I do speake, it groweth noone with me,
 Her flamie glistring lights increase with time and place;
 My heart cries ah, it burnes, mine eyes now dazled be:

No wind, no shade can coole, what helpe then in my case,
 But with short breath, long lookes, staid feet and walking hed,
 Pray that my sunne go downe with meeker beames to bed.

77

Those lookes, whose beames be ioy, whose motion is delight,
 That face, whose lecture shewes what perfect beautie is:
 That presence, which doth giue darke hearts a liuing light:
 That grace, which *Venus* weepes that she her selfe doth misse:
 That hand, which without touch holds more then *Atlas* might;
 Those lips, which make deaths pay a meane price for a kisse:
 That skin, whose passe-praise hue scorns this poore terme of white:
 Those words, which do sublime the quintessence of blisse:
 That voyce, which makes the soule plant himselfe in the eares:
 That conuersation sweet, where such high comforts be,
 As consterd in true speech, the name of heau'n it beares,
 Makes me in my best thoughts and quietst iudgement see,
 That in no more but these I might be fully blest:
 Yet ah, my Mayd'n Muse doth blush to tell the best.

78

O how the pleasant aires of true loue be
 Infected by those vapours, which arise
 From out that noysome gulse, which gaping lies
 Betweene the iawes of hellish Iealousie.

A monster, others harme, selfe-miserie,
 Beauties plague, Vertues scourge, succour of lies:
 Who his owne ioy to his owne hurt applies,
 And onely cherish doth with iniurie.

Who since he hath, by Natures speciall grace,
 So piercing pawes, as spoyle when they embrace,
 So nimble feet as stirre still, though on thornes:

So manie eyes ay seeking their owne woe,
 So ample eares as neuer good newes know:
 Is it not euill that such a Deuill wants hornes?

Sweet

79

Sweet kisse, thy sweets I faine would sweetly endite,
Which euen of sweetnesse sweetest sweetner art:
Pleasingst consort, where each sence holds a part,
Which coupling Doues guides *Venus* chariot right.

Best charge, and brauest retrait in *Cupids* fight,
A double key, which opens to the heart,
Most rich, when most his riches it impart:
Neast of young ioyes, schoolmaster of delight,
Teaching the meane, at once to take and giue
The friendly fray, where blowes both wound and heale,
The prettie death, while each in other liue.

Poore hopes first wealth, ostage of promist weale,
Breakfast of *Loue*, but lo, lo, where she is,
Cease we to praise, now pray we for a kisse.

80

Sweet swelling lip, well maist thou swell in pride,
Since best wits thinke it wit thee to admire;
Natures praise, Vertues stall, *Cupids* cold fire,
Whence words, not words, but heau'nly graces slide.

The new *Pernassus*, where the Muses bide,
Sweetner of musicke, wisedomes beautifier:
Breather of life, and fastner of desire,
Where Beauties blush in Honours graine is dide.

Thus much my heart compeld my mouth to say,
But now spite of my heart my mouth will stay,
Loathing all lies, doubting this Flatterie is:

And no spurre can his resty race renew,
Without how farre this praise is short of you,
Sweet lip, you teach my mouth with one sweet kisse.

81

Okisse, which doest those ruddie gemmes impart,
Or gemmes, or frutes of new-found *Paradise*,
Breathing all blisse and sweetning to the heart,
Teaching dumbe lips a nobler exercise.

Okisse, which soules, euen soules together ties
By linkes of *Loue*, and only Natures art:
How faine would I paint thee to all mens eyes,
Or of thy gifts at least shade out some part.

But she forbids, with blushing words, she sayes,
She builds her fame on higher seated praise:
But my heart burnes, I cannot silent be.

Then since (deare life) you faine would haue me peace,
And I, mad with delight, want wit to cease,
Stop you my mouth with still still kissing me.

Z z 4

Nymph of the gard'n, where all beauties be:
 Beauties which do in excellencie passe:
 His who till death lookt in a wat'rie glasse,
 Or hers whom naked the *Trojan* boy did see.

Sweet gard'n Nymph, which keeps the Cherrie tree,
 Whose fruit doth farre th'*Esperian* tast surpassè:
 Most sweet-faire, most faire-sweet, do not alas,
 From comming neare those Cherries banish me:

For though full of desire, emptie of wit,
 Admitted late by your best-graced grace,
 I caught at one of them a hungrie bit;

Pardon that fault, once more graunt me the place,
 And I do sweare even by the same delight,
 I will but kisse, I neuer more will bite.

Good brother *Philip*, I haue borne you long,
 I was content you should in fauour creepe,
 While craftily you seem'd your cut to keepe,
 As though that faire soft hand did you great wrong.

I bare (with *Ènuie*) yet I bare your song,
 When in her necke you did *Loue* ditties peepe;
 Nay, more foole I, oft suffered you to sleepe
 In Lillies nest, where *Loues* selfe lies along.

What, doth high place ambitious thoughts augment?
 Is sawcinesse reward of curtesie?

Cannot such grace your silly selfe content,
 But you must needs with those lips billing be?
 And through those lips drinke Nectar from that toong;
 Leaue that fir *Phip*, least off your necke be wroong.

Third song.

*If Orpheus voyce had force to breathe such musickes loue
 Through pores of sencelesse trees, as it could make them moue:
 If stones good measure daunc'd, the Theban walles to build,
 To cadence of the tunes, which Amphyons lyre did yeeld,
 More cause a like effect at leastwise bringeth:
 O stones, o trees, learne hearing, Stella singeth.*

*If Loue might sweet'n so a boy of shepherd brood,
 To make a Lizard dull to taste Loues daintie food:
 If Eagle fierce could so in Grecian Mayd delight,
 As his light was her eyes, her death his endlesse night:
 Earth gae that Loue, heau'n I trow Loue refineth:
 O beafts, o birds looke, Loue, lo, Stella shineth.*

*The birds, beasts, stones and trees feele this, and feeling Loue:
And if the trees, nor stones stirre not the same to prone,
Nor beasts, nor birds do come unto this blessed gaze,
Know, that small Loue is quicke, and great Loue doth amaze:
They are amaz'd, but you with reason armed,
O eyes, ô cares of men, how are you charmed!*

84

High way since you my chiefe *Pernassus* be,
And that my Muse to some eares not vnswear,
Tempers her words to trampling horses feet,
More oft then to a chamber melodie.

Now blessed you, beare onward blessed me
To her, where I my heart safe left shall meet,
My Muse and I must you of dutie greet
With thanks and wishes, wishing thankfully.

Be you still faire, honourd by publike heed,
By no encroachment wrongd, nor time forgot:
Nor blam'd for bloud, nor sham'd for sinfull deed.

And that you know, I enuy you no lot
Of highest wish, I wish you so much blisse,
Hundreds of yeares you *Stellas* feet may kisse.

85

I see the house, my heart thy selfe containe,
Beware full sailes drowne not thy tottring barge:
Least ioy by Nature apt sprites to enlarge,
Thee to thy wracke beyond thy limits straine.

Nor do like Lords, whose weake confused braine,
Not pointing to fit folkes each vndercharge,
While euerie office themselves will discharge,
With doing all, leaue nothing done but paine.

But giue apt seruants their due place, let eyes
See Beauties totall summe summ'd in her face:
Let eares heare speech, which wit to wonder ties.

Let breath sucke vp those sweetes, let armes embrace
The globe of weale, lips *Loues* indentures make:
Thou but of all the kingly Tribute take.

Fourth song.

*Onely ioy, now here you are,
Fit to beare and ease my care:
Let my whispering voyce obtaine,
Sweete reward for sharpest paine:
Take me to thee, and thee to me.
No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.*

Night hath closd all in her cloke,
 Twinkling starres Loue-thoughts pronoke:
 Danger hence good care doth keepe,
 Iealousie it selfe doth sleepe:
 Take me to thee, and thee to me.
 No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.

Better place no wit can find,
 Cupids yoke to loose or bind:
 These sweet flowers on fine bed too,
 Vs in their best language woo:
 Take me to thee, and thee to me.
 No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.

This small light the Moone bestowes,
 Serues thy beames but to disclose,
 So to raise my hap more hie;
 Feare not else, none can vs spie:
 Take me to thee, and thee to me.
 No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.

That you heard was but a Mouse,
 Dumbe sleepe holdeth all the house:
 Tet a sleepe, me thinkes they say,
 Tong folkes, take time while you may:
 Take me to thee, and thee to me.
 No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.

Niggard Time threats, if we misse
 This large offer of our blisse:
 Long stay ere he graunt the same:
 Sweet then, while each thing doth frame:
 Take me to thee, and thee to me.
 No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.

Your faire mother is a bed,
 Candles out, and curtaines spread:
 She thinks you do letters write:
 VVrite, but let me first endite:
 Take me to thee, and thee to me.
 No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.

Sweet alas, why strine you thus?
 Concord better fitch vs:
 Leauē to Mars the force of hands,
 Your power in your beantie stands:
 Take thee to me, and me to thee.
 No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.

*VVo to me, and do you sweare
 Me to hate, but I forbear,
 Cursed be my destines all,
 That brought me so high to fall:
 Soone with my death I will please thee.
 No, no, no, no, my Deare, let be.*

86

*Alas, whence came this change of lookes? if I
 Haue chang'd desert, let mine owne conscience be
 A still felt plague, to selfe condemning me:
 Let wo gripe on my heart, shame load mine eye.
 But if all faith, like spotlesse Ermine ly
 Safe in my soule, which only doth to thee
 (As his sole obiect offelicitie)
 With wings of Love in aire of wonder flie.
 Oease your hand, treat not so hard your slaue:
 In iustice paines come not till faults do call,
 Or if I needs (sweet Iudge) must torments haue,
 Use something else to chaste'n me withall,
 Then those blest eyes, where all my hopes do dwell,
 No doome should make once heau'n become his hell.*

Fift song.

*While fauour fed my hope, delight with hope was brought,
 Thought waited on delight, and speech did follow thought:
 Then grew my tongue and pen records vnto thy glory:
 I thought all words were lost, that were not spent of thee:
 I thought each place was darke but where thy lights would be,
 And all cares worse then deafe, that heard not out thy storie.*

*I said, thou wert most faire, and so indeed thou art:
 I said, thou art most sweet, sweet poison to my heart:
 I said, my soule was thine (o that I then had lyed)
 I said, thine eyes were starres, thy breasts the milk'n way,
 Thy fingers Cupids shafts, thy voyce the Angels lay:
 And all I said so well, as no man it denied.*

*But now that hope is lost, vnkindnesse kills delight,
 Yet thought and speech do liue, though metamorphos'd quite:
 For rage now rules the raines, which guided were by Pleasure.
 I thinke now of thy faults, who late thought of thy praise,
 That speech falles now to blame, which did thy honour raise,
 The same key op'n can, which can locke vp a treasure.*

*Thou then whom partiall heauens conspir'd in one to frame,
The prooffe of Beauties worth, th'enheritrix of fame,
The mansion seat of blisse, and iust excuse of Louers;
See now those feathers pluckt, wherewith thou flew most high:
See what clouds of reproch shall darke thy honours skie,
Whose owne fault casts him downe, hardly high seat recouers.*

*And o my Muse, though oft you luld her in your lap,
And then a heau'nly child gaue her Ambrosian pap:
And to that braine of hers your hidnest gifts infused,
Since she disdain'ing me, doth you in me disdain:
Suffer not her to laugh, while both we suffer paine:
Princes in subiects wrongd, must deeme themselves abused.*

*Your Client poore my selfe, shall Stella handle so?
Reuenge, reuenge, my Muse. Despance trumpet blow:
Threat'n what may be done, yet do more then you threat'n.
Ah, my sute granted is, I feele my breast doth swell:
Now child, a lesson new you shall begin to spell:
Sweet babes must babies haue, but shrewd gyrls must be beat'n.*

*I thinke now no more to heare of warme fine odour'd snow,
Nor blushing Lillies, nor pearles ruby-hidden row,
Nor of that golden sea, whose waues in curles are brok'n:
But of thy soule, so fraught with such vngratefulnesse,
As where thou soone mightst helpe most faith dost most oppresse,
Vngratefull who is cald the worst of euils is spok'n:*

*Yet worse then worst, I say thou art a theefe, a theefe?
Now God forbid. A theefe, and of worst theeues the cheefe:
Theeues steal for need, & steale but goods, which paine recouers,
But thou rich in all ioyes, doest rob my ioyes from me,
Which cannot be restor'd by time nor industrie:
Of foes the spoile is euill, far worse of constant louers.*

*Yet gentle English theeues do rob, but will not slay;
Thou English murdering theefe, wilt haue harts for thy pray:
The name of murderer now on thy faire forehead sitteth:
And euen while I do speake, my death wounds bleeding be:
Which (I protest) proceed from only Cruell thee,
Who may and will not saue, murder in truth committeth.*

*But murder priuate fault seemes but a toy to thee,
I lay then to thy charge vniustest Tyrannie,
If kule by force without all claime a Tyran sheweth,
For thou doest lord my heart, who am not borne thy slaue,
And which is worse, makes me most guiltlesse torments haue,
A rightfull Prince by vnright deeda Tyran groweth.*

*To you grow proud with this, for tyrans make folke bow:
Of foule rebellion then I do appeach thee now;
Rebell by Natures law, Rebell by law of reason,
Thou sweetest subiect wert borne in the realme of Loue,
And yet against thy Prince thy force dost dayly proue:
No vertue merits praise, once toucht with blot of Treason.*

*But valiant Rebels oft in fooles moutnes purchase fame:
I now then staine thy white with vagabunding shame,
Both Rebell to the Sunne, and Vagrant from the mother;
For wearing Venus badge, in euery part of thee,
Vnto Dianæ traine thou runaway didst flie:
Who faileth one, is false, though trusty to another.*

*What is not this enough? nay farre worse commeth here;
A witch I say thou art, though thou so faire appeare;
For I protest, my sight neuer thy face enioyeth,
But I in me am chang'd, I am alieue and dead:
My feete are turn'd to rootes, my hart becommeth lead,
No witchcraft is so euill, as which mans mind destroyeth.*

*Yet witches may repent, thou art far worse then they,
Alas, that I am forst such euill of thee to say,
I say thou art a Deuill though cloth'd in Angels shining:
For thy face tempts my soule to leaue the heau'n for thee,
And thy words of refuse, do powre euen hell on mee:
Who tempt, and tempted plague, are Demils in true defining.*

*You then vngreatfull thiefe, you murdering Tyrant you,
You Rebell run away, to Lord and Lady untrue,
You witch, you Diuill (alas) you still of me beloued,
You see what I can say; mend yet your froward mind,
And such skill in my Muse you reconcil'd shall find,
That all these cruell words your praises shall be proued.*

Sixt song.

*O you that heare this voice,
O you that see this face,
Say whether of the choice
Deserues the former place:
Feare not to iudge this bate,
For it is void of hate.*

*This side doth beauty take,
For that doth Musike speake,
Fit oratours to make
The strongest iudgements weake:
The barre to plead their right,
Is only true delight.*

*Thus doth the voice and face,
These gentle Lawyers wage,
Like louing brothers case,
For fathers heritage.
That each while each contends,
It selfe to other lends.*

*For beautie beautifies,
VVith beaumenly hew and grace,
The heavenly harmonies;
And in this faultlesse face,
The perfect beauties be
A perfect harmony.*

*Musike more loftly swels
In speeches nobly placed:
Beauty as farre excels,
In action aptly graced:
A friend each party draws,
To countenance his cause:*

*Loue more affected seemes
To beauties lonely light,
And wonder more esteemes
Of Musike wondrous might:
But both to both so bent,
As both in both are spent.*

*Musike doth witnesse call
The eare, his truth to trie:
Beauty brings to the hall,
Eye-indgement of the eye,
Both in their objects such,
As no exceptions tutch.*

*The common sence, which might
Be Arbiter of this,
To be forsooth vpright,
To both sides partiall is:
He layes on this side chiefe praise,
Chiefe praise on that he laies.*

The

*Then reason Princeſſe hy,
 VVhoſe throne is in the mind,
 VVhich Muſicke can in ſky
 And hidden beauties find,
 Say whether thou wilt crowne,
 VVith limitleſſe renowne.*

Seuenth ſong.

*whoſe ſenſes in ſo euill conſort, their ſtepdame Nature laies,
 That rauishing delight in them moſt ſweete tunes do not raiſe,
 Or if they do delight therein, yet are ſo cloſe with wit,
 As with ſententious lips to ſet a title vaine on it:
 O let them heare theſe ſacred tunes, & learne in wonders ſchools,
 To be in things paſt bounds of wit fooles, if they be not fooles.*

*Who haue ſo leaden eyes, as not to ſee ſweet beauties ſhow,
 Or ſeeing, haue ſo wodden wits, as not that worth to know,
 Or knowing, haue ſo muddy minds, as not to be in loue;
 Or louing, haue ſo frothy thoughts, as eaſy thence to moue:
 O let them ſee theſe heauenly beames, and in faire letters reede
 A leſſon fit, both ſight and ſkill, loue and firme loue to breede.*

*Heare then, but then with wonder heare; ſee but adoring ſee,
 No mortall gifts, no earthly fruites, now here deſcended be:
 See, do you ſee this face? a face? nay image of the ſkies,
 Of which the two life-gining lights are figured in her eyes:
 Heare you this ſoule-inuading voice, and count it but a voice?
 The very eſſence of their tunes, when Angels do reioyce.*

Eight ſong.

*In a grone moſt riſh of ſhade,
 Where birds wanton muſicke made,
 May then yong his pide weedes ſhowing,
 New perfumed with flowers freſh growing,*

*Aſtrophel with Stella ſweete,
 Did for mutuall comfort meete,
 Both within themſelues oppreſſed,
 But each in the other bleſſed.*

*Him great harmes had taught much care,
 Her faire necke a foule yoke bare,
 But her ſight his cares did baniſh,
 In his ſight her yoke did vaniſh.*

*Wept they had, alas the while,
 But now teares themſelues did ſmile,
 While their eyes by loue directed,
 Enterchangeably reflected.*

*Sigh they did, but now betwixt
Sighs of woes were glad sighs mixt,
With armes crost, yet testifying
Restlesse rest, and liuing dying.*

*Their eares hungry of each word,
Which the deere tongue would afford,
But their tongues restrained from walking,
Till their harts had ended talking.*

*But when their tongues could not speake,
Loue it selfe did silence breake,
Loue did set his lips asunder,
Thus to speake in loue and wonder.*

*Stella soueraigne of my ioy,
Faire triumph'her of annoy,
Stella starre of heauenly fier,
Stella loadstar of desier.*

*Stella, in whose shining eyes,
Are the lights of Cupids skies,
Whose beames where they once are darted,
Loue therewith is streight imparted.*

*Stella, whose voice when it speakes,
Senses all asunder breakes;
Stella, whose voice when it singeth,
Angels to acquaintance bringeth.*

*Stella, in whose body is
Writ each character of blisse,
Whose face all, all beauty passeth,
Saue thy mind which yet surpasseth.*

*Graunt, ô graunt, but speech alas,
Failes me, fearing on to passe,
Graunt, ô me, what am I saying?
But no fault there is in praying.*

*Graunt, ô deere, on knees I pray,
(Knees on ground he then did stay)
That not I, but since I loue you,
Time and place for me may moue you.*

*Neuer season was more fit,
Neuer roome more apt for it;
Smiling ayre allowes my reason,
These birds sing, now vse the season.*

This

*This small wind which so sweete is,
See how it the leaues doth kisse,
Ech tree in his best attiring,
Sense of loue to loue inspiring.*

*Loue makes earth the water drinke,
Loue to earth makes water sinke;
And if dumbe things be so witty,
Shall a heauenly grace want pittie?*

*There his hands in their speech, faine
VVould haue made tongues language plaine;
But her hands his hands repelling,
Gane repulse all grace excellling.*

*Then she spake; her speech was such,
As not eares but hart did tuch;
VVhile such wise she loue denied,
As yet loue she signified.*

*Astrophel sayd she, my loue
Cease in these effects to prone:
Now be still, yet still belecue me,
Thy grieffe more then death would grieue me.*

*If that any thought in me,
Can tast comfort but of thee,
Let me fed with hellish anguish,
Ioylesse, hopelesse, endlesse languish.*

*If those eyes you praised, be
Half so deere as you to me,
Let me home returne, starke blinded
Of those eyes, and blinder minded.*

*If to secret of my hart,
I do any wish impart,
Where thou art not formost placed,
Be both wish and I defaced.*

*If more may be sayd, I say,
All my blisse in thee I lay;
If thou loue, my loue content thee,
For all loue, all faish is meant thee.*

*Trust me while I thee deny,
In my selfe the smart I try,
Tyran, honour doth thus vse thee,
Stellas selfe might not refuse thee.*

*Therefore, Deere, this no more moue,
Least though I leaue not thy loue,
Which too deep in me is framed,
I should blush when thou art named.*

*Therewithall away she went,
Leauing him to passion rent,
With what she had done and spoken,
That therewith my song is broken.*

Ninth song.

*Go my flocke, go get you hence,
Seeke a better place of feeding;
VVhere you may haue some defence
Fro the stormes in my breast breeding,
And showers from mine eyes proceeding.*

*Leaue a wretch, in whom all wo
Can abide to keepe no measure,
Merry flocke, such one forgo,
Vnto whom mirth is displeasure,
Only rich in mischiefes treasure.*

*Yet alas before you go,
Heare your wofull maisters story,
VVhich to stones I els would show,
Sorrow onely then hath glory:
VVhen tis excellently sory.*

*Stella fiercest shepherdesse,
Fiercest but yet fairest euer;
Stella whom o heauens do blesse,
Tho against me shee perseuer,
Tho I blisse enherit neuer.*

*Stella hath refused me,
Stella who more lone hath proued,
In this caistife hart to be,
Then can in good eaves be moued
Toward Lamkins best beloued.*

*Stella hath refused me,
Altrophel that so wel serued,
In this pleasant spring must see
VVhile in pride flowers be preserued,
Himselfe onely winter-sterued.*

*VVhy alas doth she then sweare,
That she loueth me so dearely,
Seing me so long to beare
Coles of loue that burne so clearely;
And yet leaue me helpleffe meereely?*

*Is that loue? forsooth I trow,
If I saw my good dog griened,
And a helpe for him did know,
My loue should not be beleued,
But he were by me releued.*

*No, she bates me, wellaway,
Faining loue, somewhat to please me:
For she knowes, if she display
All her hate, death soone would seaze me,
And of hideous torments ease me.*

*Then adieu, deere flocke adieu:
But alas, if in your straying
Heauenly Stella meete with you,
Tell her in your piteous blaying,
Her poore slaues vniust decaying.*

87

*When I was forst from Stella euer deere,
Stella food of my thoughts, hart of my hart,
Stella whose eyes make all my tempests cleere,
By iron lawes of duty to depart:*

*Alas I found, that she with me did smart,
I saw that teares did in her eyes appeare;
I saw that sighes her sweetest lips did part,
And her sad words my saddest sence did heare.*

*For me, I wept to see pearles scattered so,
I sighd her sighes, and wailed for her wo,
Yet swam in ioy, such loue in her was seene.*

*Thus while the effect most bitter was to me,
And nothing then the cause more sweet could be,
I had bene vext, if vext I had not beene.*

88

*Out traytour absence, darrest thou counsell me,
From my deare Captainnesse to run away?
Because in braue array heere marcheth she,
That to win me, oft shewes a present pay?*

*Is faith so weake? or is such force in thee?
When Sun is hid, can starres such beames display?
Cannot heau'ns food once felt, keepe stomakes free,
From base desire on earthly cates to pray.*

*Tush absence while thy mistes eclipse that light,
My Orphan sence flies to the inward sight,
Where memory sets forth the beames of loue.*

Aaa 4

ASTROPHEL

That where before hart loued and eyes did see,
In hart both sight and loue now coupled be;
Vnited powers make each the stronger proue.

89

Now that of absence the most irksome night,
With darkeſt ſhade doth ouercome my day;
Since *Stellas* eyes wont to giue me my day,
Leauing my Hemisphere, leaue me in night,

Each day ſeemes long, and longs for long-ftaid night;
The night as tedious, wooes th'approch of day;
Tired with the duſty toiles of buſie day,
Languiſht with horrors of the ſilent night;

Suffering the euils both of the day and night,
While no night is more darke then is my day,
Nor no day hath leſſe quiet then my night:

With ſuch bad mixture of my night and day;
That liuing thus in blackeſt winter night,
I feele the flames of hotteſt ſommer day.

90

Stella thinke not that I by verſe ſeeke fame,
Who ſeeke, who hope, who loue, who liue but thee;
Thine eyes my pride, thy lips mine hiſtory:
If thou praiſe not, all other praiſe is ſhame.

Nor ſo ambitious am I, as to frame
A neſt for my yong praiſe in Lawrell tree:
In truth I ſweare, I wiſh not there ſhould be
Graued in mine Epiraph a Poets name:

Ne if I would, I could iuſt title make,
That any laud to me thereof ſhould grow,
Without my plumes from others wings I take,

For nothing from my wit or will doth flow,
Since all my words thy beauty doth endite,
And loue doth hold my hand, and makes me write.

91

Stella, while now by honours cruell might,
I am from you, light of my life miſ-led,
And that faire you my Sunne, thus ouerſpred,
With abſence Vaile, I liue in Sorowes night.

If this darke place yet ſhew like candle light,
Some beauties peece as amber colourd hed,
Milke hands, roſe cheeks, or lips more ſweet, more red,
Or ſeeing gets blacke, but in blackneſſe bright.

They

They please I do confesse, they please mine eyes,
But why? because of you they models be,
Models such be wood-globes of glistring skies.

Deere, therefore be not iealous ouer me,
If you heare that they seeme my hart to moue,
Not them, ô no, but you in them I loue.

92

Be your words made (good Sir) of Indian ware,
That you allow me them by so small rate?
Or do you cutted Spartanes imitate,
Or do you meane my tender cares to spare?

That to my questions you so totall are,
When I demaund of *Phenix Stellas* state,
You say forsooth, you left her well of late,
O God, thinke you that satisfies my care?

I would know whether she sit or walke,
How cloth'd, how waited on, sighd she or smilde,
Whereof, with whom, how often did she talke,

With what pastime, times iourney she beguilde,
If her lips daignd to sweeten my poore name,
Say all, and all, well sayd, still say the same.

Tenth song.

O deare life, when shall it be,
That mine eyes thine eyes may see?
And in them thy mind discouer,
VVhether absence haue had force
Thy remembrance to diuorce,
From the image of the louer?

Or if I me selfe find not,
After parting ought forgot,
Nor debar'd from beauties treasure,
Let no tongue aspire to tell,
In what high ioyes I shall dwell,
Only thought aymes at the pleasure.

Thought therefore I will send thee,
To take vp the place for me,
Long I will not after tary,
There vnseene thou maist be bold,
Those faire wonders to behold,
VVhich in them my hopes do cary.

A STROPHEL

That where before hart loued and eyes did see,
In hart both sight and loue now coupled be;
Vnited powers make each the stronger proue.

89

Now that of absence the most irksome night,
With darkeſt ſhade doth ouercome my day;
Since *Stellas* eyes wont to giue me my day,
Leauing my Hemisphere, leaue me in night,
Each day ſeemes long, and longs for long ſtaid night;
The night as tedious, wooes th'approch of day;
Tired with the duſty toiles of buſie day,
Languiſht with horrors of the ſilent night,
Suffering the euils both of the day and night,
While no night is more darke then is my day,
Nor no day hath leſſe quiet then my night:
With ſuch bad mixture of my night and day;
That liuing thus in blackeſt winter night,
I feele the flames of hotteſt ſommer day.

90

Stella thinke not that I by verſe ſeeke fame,
Who ſeeke, who hope, who loue, who liue but thee;
Thine eyes my pride, thy lips mine hiſtory:
If thou praiſe not, all other praiſe is ſhame.

Nor ſo ambitious am I, as to frame
A neſt for my yong praiſe in Lawrell tree:
In truth I ſweare, I wiſh not there ſhould be
Graued in mine Epiraph a Poets name:

Ne if I would, I could iuſt title make,
That any laud to me thereof ſhould grow,
Without my plumes from others wings I take,

For nothing from my wit or will doth flow,
Since all my words thy beauty doth endite,
And loue doth hold my hand, and makes me write.

91

Stella, while now by honours cruell might,
I am from you, light of my life miſ-led,
And that faire you my Sunne, thus ouerſpred,
With abſence Vaile, I liue in Sorowes night.

If this darke place yet ſhew like candle light,
Some beauties peece as amber colourd hed,
Milke hands, roſe cheeks, or lips more ſweet, more red,
Or ſeeing gets blacke, but in blackneſſe bright.

They

They please I do confesse, they please mine eyes,
But why? because of you they models be,
Models such be wood-globes of glistring skies.

Deere, therefore be not iealous ouer me,
If you heare that they seeme my hart to moue,
Not them, ô no, but you in them I loue.

92

Be your words made (good Sir) of Indian ware,
That you allow me them by so small rate?
Or do you cutted Spartanes imitate,
Or do you meane my tender cares to spare?

That to my questions you so totall are,
When I demaund of *Phenix Stellas* state,
You say forsooth, you left her well of late,
O God, thinke you that satisfies my care?

I would know whether she sit or walke,
How cloth'd, how waited on, sighd she or smilde,
Whereof, with whom, how often did she talke,

With what pastime, times iourney she beguilde,
If her lips daignd to sweeten my poore name,
Say all, and all, well sayd, still say the same.

Tenth song.

*O deare life, when shall it be,
That mine eyes thine eyes may see?
And in them thy mind discover,
VVhether absence hane had force
Thy remembrance to diuorce,
From the image of the louer?*

*Or if I me selfe find not,
After parting ought forgot,
Nor debar'd from beauties treasure,
Let no tongue aspire to tell,
In what high ioyes I shall dwell,
Only thought aymes at the pleasure.*

*Thought therefore I will send thee,
To take up the place for me,
Long I will not after tary,
There vnseene thou maist be bold,
Those faire wonders to behold,
VVhich in them my hopes do cary.*

*Thought see thou no place forbear,
Enter brauely euery where,
Seaze on all to her belonging;
But if thou wouldst garded be,
Fearing her beames, take with thee
Strength of liking, rage of longing.*

*Thinke of that most gratefull time,
When my leaping hart will clime,
In my lips to haue his biding,
There those roses for tokisse,
Which do breath a sugred blisse,
Opening rubies, pearles deuinding.*

*Thinke of my most Princely power,
When I blessed shall deuowr,
With my greedy licorous fences,
Beauty, musicke, sweetnesse, loue
While she doth against me proue
Her strong parts, but weake defences.*

*Thinke thinke of those dalyings,
When with Douelike murmurings,
With glad moning passed anguish,
We change eyes, and hart for hart,
Each to other do depart,
Ioying till ioy make vs languish.*

*O my thought my thoughts surcease,
Thy delights my woes increase,
My life melts with too much thinking;
Thinke no more but die in me,
Till thou shalt reuiued be,
At her lips my Nectar drinking.*

93

*O fate, ô fault, ô curse, child of my blisse,
What sobs can giue words grace my grieffe to show?
What inke is blacke inough to paint my wo?
Through me, wretch me, euen *Stella* vexed is.*

*Yet truth (if *Caitifs* breath may call thee) this
Witnesse with me, that my foule stumbling so,
From carelesnesse did in no maner grow,
But wit confus'd with too much care did misse.*

*And do I then my selfe this vaine scuse giue?
I haue (liue I and know this) harmed thee,
Tho worlds quite me, shall I me selfe forgieue?*

Onely

Only with paines my paines thus eased be,
 That all thy hurts in my harts wracke I reede;
 I cry thy sighs; my deere, thy teares I bleede.

94

Griefe find the words, for thou hast made my braine
 So darke with misty vapors, which arise
 From out thy heavy mould, that in bent eyes
 Can scarce discern the shape of mine owne paine.

Do thou then (for thou canst) do thou complaine,
 For my poore soule, which now that sicknesse tries,
 Which euen to sence, sence of it selfe denies,
 Though harbengers of death lodge there his traine.

Or if thy loue of plaint yet mine forbears,
 As of a caitife worthy so to die,
 Yet waile thy selfe, and waile with causefull teares,
 That though in wretchednesse thy life doth lie,
 Yet growest more wretched then thy nature beares,
 By being placed in such a wretch as I.

95

Yet sighs, deere sighs, indeede true friends you are,
 That do not leaue your left friend at the wurst,
 But as you with my breast I oft haue nurst,
 So gratefull now you waite vpon my care.

Faint coward ioy no longer tarry dare,
 Seeing hope yeeld when this wo strake him furst:
 Delight protests he is not for the accurst,
 Though oft him selfe my mate in arme he sware.

Nay sorrow comes with such maine rage, that he
 Kils his owne children, teares finding that they
 By loue were made apt to consort with me.

Only true sighs, you do not go away,
 Thanke may you haue for such a thankfull part,
 Thanke-worthiest yet when you shall breake my hart.

96

Thought with good cause thou likest so well the night,
 Since kind or chance giues both one liuerie,
 Both sadly blacke, both blackly darkned be,
 Night bard from Sun, thou from thy owne Sun lights

Silence in both displaies his fullen might,
 Slow heauinesse in both holds one degree,
 That full of doubts, thou of perplexity;
 Thy teares expresse nights native moisture right.

ASTROPHEL

In both a mazefull solitarinesse:
In night of sprites the gasty powers to stir,
In thee or sprites or sprited gastleinesse:

But but (alas) nights side the ods hath fur,
For that at length yet doth inuite some rest,
Thou though still tired, yet still doost it detest.

97

Dian that faine would cheare her friend the Night,
Shewes her oft at the full her fairest face,
Bringing with her those starry Nymphs, whose chace
From heavenly standing hits each mortall wight.

But ah poore Night in loue with *Phæbus* light,
And endlessly despairing of his grace,
Her selfe (to shew no other ioy hath place)
Silent and sad in mourning weedes doth dight:

Euen so (alas) a Lady *Dians* peere,
With choise delights and rarest company,
Would faine drive cloudes from out my heauy cheere.

But wo is me, though ioy it selfe were she,
She could not shew my blind braine waies of ioy,
While I dispaire my Sunnes sight to enioy.

98

Ah bed, the field where ioyes peace some do see,
The field where all my thoughts to warre be traid,
How is thy grace by my strange fortune staid!
How thy lee shores by my sighes stormed be!

With sweete soft shades thou oft inuitest me
To steale some rest, but wretch I am constraind,
(Spurd with louses spur, though gold and shortly rained
With cares hard hand) to turne and tolle in thee.

While the blacke horrors of the silent night,
Paint woes blacke face so liuely to my sight,
That tedious leasure makes each wrinckled line:

But when *Aurora* leades out *Phæbus* daunce,
Mine eyes then only winke, for spite perchance,
That wormes should haue their Sun, and I want mine.

99

When far spent night perswades each mortall eye,
To whom nor art nor nature graunteth light,
To lay his then marke wanting shafts of sight,
Clof'd with their quiuers in sleeps armory;

W

With windowes ope then most my mind doth lie,
Viewing the shape of darknesse and delight,
Takes in that sad hue, which with th'inward night,
Of his mazde powers keepes perfit harmony :

But when birds charme, and that sweete aire, which is
Mornes messenger, with rose enameld skies
Cals each wight to salute the floure of blisse ;

In tombe of lids then buried are mine eyes,
Forst by their Lord, who is a sham'd to find
Such light in sense, with such a darkned mind.

100

O teares, no teares, but raine from beauties skies,
Making those Lillies and those Roses grow,
Which ay most faire, now more then most faire show,
While gracefull pittie beauty beautifies.

O honied sighs, which from that breast do rise,
Whose pants do make vnspilling creame to flow,
Wing'd with whose breath, so pleasing *Zephires* blow,
As can refresh the hell where my soule fries.

O plaints conseru'd in such a surged phraise,
That eloquence it selfe enuies your praise,
While sobd out words a perfect Musike giue.

Such teares, sighs, plaints, no sorrow is, but ioy :
Or if such heauenly signes must proue annoy,
All mirth farewell, let me in sorrow liue.

101

Stella is sicke, and in that sicke bed lies
Sweetnesse, which breathes and pants as oft as she:
And grace sicke too, such fine conclusions tries,
That sicknesse brags it selfe best graced to be.

Beauty is sicke, but sicke in so faire guise,
That in that palaness beauties white we see,
And ioy which is inseperate from those eyes:
Stella now learns (strange case) to weepe in thee.

Loue moues thy paine, and like a faithfull page
As thy lookes sturre, comes vp and downe to make
All folkes prest at thy will thy paine to asswage,

Nature with care sweates for her darlings sake,
Knowing worlds passe, ere she enough can find
Of such heauen stufte, to cloath so heauenly amind.

Bbb

ASTROPHEL

102

Where be those Roses gone, which sweetned so our eyes?
 Where those red cheeks, which oft with faire encrease did frame
 The height of honor in the kindly badge of shame?
 Who hath the crimson weeds stolne from my morning skies?
 How doth the colour vade of those vermillion dies,
 Which Nature selfe did make, and selfe engraind the same?
 I would know by what right this palenesse ouercame
 That hue, whose force my hart still vnto thraldome ties?
Galleins adoptiue sonnes, who by a beaten way
 Their iudgements hackney on, the fault on sicknesse lay,
 But feeling prooffe makes me (say they) mistake it furre:
 It is but loue which makes his paper perfit white,
 To write therein more fresh the story of delight,
 While beauties reddest inke *Venus* for him doth sturre.

103

O happie Tems, that didst my *Ssella* beare,
 I saw thy selfe with many a siniling line
 Vpon thy cheerefull face, ioyes liuery weare:
 While those faire planets on thy streames did shine.
 The bote for ioy could not to daunce forbear,
 While wanton winds with beauties so deuine
 Rauisht, staid not, till in her golden haire
 They did themselues (ô sweetest prison) twine.
 And faine those *Æols* youth there would their stay
 Haue made, but forst by Nature still to flie,
 First did with puffing kisse those lockes display:
 She so discheueld, blusht; from window I
 With sight thereof cride out; ô faire disgrace,
 Let honor selfe to thee graunt highest place.

104

Enuious wits what hath bene mine offence,
 That with such poysonous care my lookes you marke,
 That to each word, nay sigh of mine you harke,
 As grudging me my sorrowes eloquence?
 Ah, is it not enough, that I am thence,
 Thence, so farre thence, that scarcely any sparke
 Of comfort dare come to this dungeon darke,
 Where rigours exile lockes vp all my sense?
 But if I by a happy window passe,
 If I but stars vpon mine armour beare,
 Sicke, thirsty, glad (though but of empty glasse:)
 Your morall notes straight my hid meaning teare,
 From out my ribs, and puffing proues that I
 Do *Ssella* loue, fooles who doth it deny?

Eleuenth

Eleuenth song.

*Who is it that this darke night,
Vnderneath my window playneth?
It is one who from thy sighs,
Being (ah) exild, disdayneth
Euery other vulgar light.*

*VVhy alas, and are you he?
Be not yet those fancies changed?
Deere when you find change in me,
Though from me you be estranged,
Let my chaunge to ruine be.*

*Well in absence this will dy,
Leaue to see, and leaue to wonder:
Absence sure will helpe, if I
Can learne, how my selfe to sunder
From what in my hart doth ly.*

*But time will these thoughts remoue:
Time doth worke what no man knoweth,
Time doth as the subiect proue,
With time still the affection groweth
In the faithfull Turtle done.*

*What if you new beauties see,
Will not they stir new affection?
I will thinke thy pictures be,
(Image like of Saints perfection)
Poorely counterfeting thee.*

*But your reasons purest light,
Bids you leaue such minds to nourish?
Deere, do reason no such spite,
Neuer doth thy beauty flourish
More, then in my reasons sight.*

*But the wrongs loue beares, will make
Loue at length leaue vndertaking,
No the more fooles it do shake,
In a ground of so firme making,
Deeper still they driue the stake.*

*Peace, I thinke that some giue eare:
Come no more, least I get anger.
Blisse, I will my blisse forbeare,
Fearing (sweete) you to endanger,
But my soule shall harbour thee.*

ASTROPHEL

*Well, be gone, be gone I say,
Lest that Argus eyes perceine you,
Ovnish fortune's sway,
Which can make me thus to leaue you,
And from lowts to run away.*

105

Vnhappie sight, and hath she vanisht by
So neere, in so good time so free a place?
Dead glasse doost thou thy obiect so imbrace,
As what my hart still sees thou canst not spie?

I sweare by her I loue and lacke, that I
Was not in fault, who bent thy dazling race
Onely vnto the heau'n of *Stella's* face,
Counting but dust what in the way did lie.

But cease mine eyes, your teares do witnesse well,
That you guiltlesse thereof, your Nectar mist:
Curst be the page from whence the bad torch fell,

Curst be the night which did your strife resist,
Curst be the Cochman which did driue so fast,
With no worfe curse then absence makes me tast.

106

O absent presence *Stella* is not here;
False flattering hope, that with so faire a face,
Bare me in hand, that in this Orphane place,
Stella, I say my *Stella*, should appeare.

What saist thou now, where is that dainty cheere,
Thou toldst mine eyes should helpe their famisht case?
But thou art gone now that selfe felt disgrace,
Doth make me most to wish thy comfort neere.

But heere I do store of faire Ladies meete,
Who may with charme of conuersation sweete,
Make in my heauy mould new thoughts to grow:

Sure they preuaile as much with me, as he
That bad his friend but then new maim'd, to be
Mery with him, and not thinke of his woe,

107

Stella since thou so right a Princess art
Of all the powers which life bestowes on me,
That ere by them ought vnderaken be,
They first resort vnto that soueraigne part;

Sweet

AND STELLA.

369

Sweete for a while giue respite to my hart,
Which pants as though it still should leape to thee:
And on my thoughts giue thy Lieftenancy
To this great caule, which needs both vse and art.

And as a Queene, who from her presence sends
Whom she imployes, dismisse from thee my wit,
Till it haue wrought what thy owne will attends.

On seruants shame oft Maisters blame doth sit;
O let not fooles in me thy workes reprove,
And scorning say, see what it is to loue.

108

When sorrow (vsing mine owne tisers might)
Melts downe his lead into my boyling brest,
Through that darke fornace to my hart opprest,
There shines a ioy from thee my only light;

But soone as thought of thee breeds my delight,
And my yong soule flutters to thee his nest,
Most rude dispaire my daily vnbidden guest,
Clips streight my wings, streight wraps me in his night;

And makes me then bow downe my head, and say,
Ah what doth *Phabus* gold that wretch auaille,
Whom iron doores do keepe from vse of day?

So strangely (alas) thy works in me preuaile,
That in my woes for thee thou art my ioy,
And in my ioyes for thee my only annoy.

The end of Astrophel and Stella.

Bbb 3

HER MOST EXCELLENT MAIESTIE VVALKING IN VVANSTEED GAR-

DEN, AS SHE PASSED DOWNE INTO THE
groue, there came suddenly among the traine, one apparelled like an honest mans

wife of the countrey, where crying out for iustice, and desiring all the Lords and

*Gentlemen to speake a good word for her, she was brought to the pre-
sence of her Maiestie, to whom upon her knees she offered a sup-
plication, and vsed this speech.*

The Suiter.



Oft faire Lady; for as for other your titles of state statelier per-
sons shall giue you, and thus much mine owne eies are witnes-
ses of, take here the complaint of my poore wretch, as deeplie
plunged in miserie, as I wish to you the highest point of hap-
pinesse.

One onely daughter I haue, in whom I had placed all the
hopes of my good hap, so well had she with her good parts re-
compenced my paine of bearing of her, and care of bringing
her vp: but now alas that she is come to the time I should reape my full comfort of
her, so is she troubled with that notable matter, which we in countrey call matri-
mony, as I cannot chuse but feare the losse of her wits, at least of her honesty. O-
ther women thinke they may be unhappily combred with one maister husband,
my poore daughter is oppressed with two, both louing her, both equally liked of
her, both struiuing to deserue her. But now lastly (as this iealousie for sooth is a vile
matter) each haue brought their partakers with them, and are at this present,
without your presence redresse it, in some bloudy controuersie; now sweete
Lady helpe, your owne way guides you to the place where they encomber her:
I dare stay here no longer, for our men say in the countrey, the fight of you is in-
fectious.

And with that she went away a good pace, leauing the supplication with her Ma-
iestie, which very formallie contained this.

Supplication.

Most gracious Soueraigne,

*To one whose state is raised ouer all,
VVhose face doth oft the brauest sort enchaunt,
Whose mind is such, as wisest minds appall,
VVho in one selfe these diuerse gifts can plant;
How dare I wretch seeke there my woes to rest,
VVhere eares be burnt, eyes dazled, harts oppressed?*

*Your state is great, your greatnesse is our shield,
Your face hurts oft, but still it doth delight,
Your mind is wise, your wisdom makes you mild,
Such planted gifts enrich euen beggers sight:
So dare I wretch, my bashfull feare subdue,
And feede mine eares, mine eyes, my hart in you.*

Herewith

Herewith the woman-suiter being gone, there was heard in the woods a confused noyse, and forthwith there came out six sheapheards with as many fosters haling and pulling, to whether side they should draw the Lady of May, who seemed to encline neither to the one nor other side. Among them was Maister *Rombus* a schoole-maister of a village thereby, who being fully perswaded of his owne learned wisedome, came thither, with his authority to part their fray; where for answer he receiued many vnlearned blowes. But the Queene comming to the place where she was seene of them, though they knew not her estate, yet something there was which made them startle aside and gaze vpon her: till old father *Lalus* stepped forth (one of the substantiallest shepheards) and making a legge or two, said these few words.

May it please your benignity to giue a litle superfluous intelligence to that, which with the opening of my mouth, my tongue and teeth shall deliuer vnto you. So it is right worshipfull audience, that a certaine she creature, which we shepheards call a woman, of a minscall countenance, but by my white Lambe not three quarters so beautious as yore selfe, hath disannulled the braine pan of two of our featioust yong men. And wil you wot how? by my mother *Kiss* soule, with a certaine franiscall maladie they cal Loue, when I was a yong man they called it flat follie. But here is a substantiall schoole-maister can better disnounce the whole foundation of the matter, although in sooth for all his loquence our young men were nothing dutious to his clarkeship; Come on, Come on Maister schoole-maister, be not so bashlesse, we say, that the fairest are euer the gentlest: tell the whole case, for you can much better vent the points of it then I.

*Lalus the old
shepherd.*

*Then came forward Maister Rombus, and with many speciall graces
made this learned oration.*

Now the thunderthumping *loue* transfund his dotes into your excellent formositie, which haue with your resplendent beames thus segregated the emnitie of these rurall animals: I am *Potentissima Domina*, a schoole-maister, that is to say, a Pedagogue, one not a litle versed in the disciplinating of the iuuentall frie, wherein (to my laud I say it) I vse such geometricall proportion, as neither wanted mansuetude nor correction, for so it is described.

Parcare Subiectos & debellare superbos.

Yet hath not the pulchritude of my vertues protected me from the contaminating hands of these plebeians; for comming, *solummodo* to haue parted their sanguinolent fray, they yeilded me no more reuerence, then if I had bin some *Pecorinus Asinus*. I, euen I, that am, who am I? *Dixi verbus sapientisatum est*. But what sayd that Troian *Aeneas*, when he sojourned in the surging fulkes of the sandiferous seas, *Hac olim memonasse iuuebit*. Well well, *ad propositos reuertebis*, the puritie of the veritie is, that a certaine *Pulchra puella profecto* elected and constituted by the integrated determination of all this topographically region, as the foueraigne Lady of this Dame Maias month, hath bene *quodammo* hunted, as you would say, pursued by two, a brace, a couple, a cast of yong men, to whom the crafty coward *Cupid* had *inquam* deliuered his dire-dolorous dart.

But here the May Lady interrupted his speech, saying to him:

Away away you tedious foole, your eyes are not worthy to looke to yonder Princelie sight, much lesse your foolish tongue to trouble her wise cares.

May Lady.

At which Maister Rombus in a great chafe cried out :

Rombus.

O *Tempori, ô Moribus!* in profession a childe, in dignitie a woman, in yeares a Lady, in *ceteris* a maid, should thus turpifie the reputation of my doctrine, with the supercription of a foole, *ô Tempori, ô Moribus!*

But here againe the May Ladie saying to him,

May Ladie.

Leaue off good Latine foole, and let me satisfie the long desire I haue had to feede mine eyes with the only sight this age hath graunted to the world.

The poore scholemaister went his way backe, and the Lady kneeling downe said in this maner :

May Ladie.

Do not thinke (sweete and gallant Lady) that I do abase my selfe thus much vnto you because of your gay apparell, for what is so braue as the naturall beauty of the flowers, nor because a certaine Gentleman hereby seekes to do you all the honour he can in his house; that is not the matter, he is but our neighbour, and these be our owne groues, nor yet because of your great estate, since no estate can be cōpared to be the Lady of the whole moneth of May as I am. So that since both this place and this time are my seruants, you may be sure I wold looke for reuerence at your hands if I did not see something in your face which makes me yeeld to you; the troth is, you excell me in that wherein I desire most to excell, and that makes me giue this homage vnto you, as to the beautifullest Lady these woods haue euer receiued. But now as old father *Lalus* directed me, I wil tel you my fortune, that you may be iudge of my mishaps and others worthinesse. Indeed so it is, that I am a faire wench or else I am deceiued, and therefore by the consent of all our neighbours haue bene chosen for the absolute Lady of this mery moneth, with me haue bene (alas I am ashamed to tell it) two yong men, the one a forrester named *Therion*, the other *Espilus* a shepheard very long euen in loue forsooth, I like them both, and loue neither, *Espilus* is the richer, but *Therion* the liuelier: *Therion* doth me many pleasures, as stealing me venison out of these forrests, and many other such like prettie and prettier seruices, but withall he growes to such rages, that sometimes he strikes me, sometimes he railes at me. This shepheard *Espilus* of a mild disposition, as his fortune hath not bene to do me great seruice, so hath he neuer done me any wrong, but feeding his sheepe, sitting vnder some sweete bush, sometimes they say he records my name in doleful verses. Now the question I am to aske you faire Ladie, is, whether the many deserts and many faults of *Therion*, or the verie small deserts and no faults of *Espilus* be to be preferred. But before you giue your iudgement (most excellent Ladie) you shall heare what each of them can say for them selues in their rurall songs.

Thereupon Therion challenged Espilus to sing with him, speaking these sixe verses :

Therion.

Come *Espilus*, come now declare thy skill,
Shew how thou canst deserue so braue desire,
Warne well thy wits, if thou wilt win her will,
For water cold did neuer promise fire.
Great sure is she, on whom our hopes do line,
Greater is she who must the iudgement giue.

But

But *Espilus* as if he had bene inspired with the Muses, began forthwith to sing. whereto his fellow shepherds set in with their recorders, which they bare in their bags like pipes, and so of *Therions* side did the foresters, with the comets they wore about their neckes like hunting hornes in baudrikes.

Espilus.

*Tune up my voice, a higher note I yeeld,
To high concepts the song must needes be high,
More high then stars, more firme then flintie field
Are all my thoughts, in which I liue or die:
Sweete soule, to whom I vowed am a slaue,
Let not wild woods so great a treasure haue.*

Therion.

*The highest note comes oft from basest mind,
As shallow brookes do yeeld the greatest sound,
Seeke other thoughts thy life or death to find;
Thy stars be fal'n, plowed is thy flintie ground:
Sweete soule let not a wretch that serueth sheepe,
Among his flocke so sweete a treasure keepe.*

Espilus.

*Two thousand sheepe I haue as white as milke,
Though not so white as is thy lowely face,
The pasture rich, the wooll as soft as silke,
All this I giue, let me possesse thy grace,
But still take heede least thou thy selfe submit
To one that hath no wealth, and wants his wit.*

Therion.

*Two thousand deere in wildest woods I haue,
Them can I take, but you I cannot hold:
He is not poore who can his freedome saue,
Bound but to you, no wealth but you I would:
But take this beast, if beasts you feare to misse,
For of his beasts the greatest beast he is.*

Espilus kneeling to the Queene.

Iudge you to whom all beauties force is lent.

Therion.

Iudge you of Loue, to whom all Loue is bent.

But as they waited for the iudgement her Maiestie should giue of their deserts, the shepherds and foresters grew to a great contention, whether of their fellowes had sung better, and so whether the estate of shepherds or foresters were the more worshipfull. The speakers were *Dorc* as an olde shepherd, and *Rixus* a young foster, betweene whom the schoole-maister *Rombus* came in as moderator.

Dorc as the shepherd.

Now al the bleffings of mine old grandam (silly *Espilus*) light vpon thy shoulders for this honicombe singing of thine; now of my honestie all the bels in the towne

could not haue sung better, if the proud heart of the harlotrie lie not downe to thee now, the sheepes rot catch her, to teach her that a faire woman hath not her fairenesse to let it grow rustish.

Rixus the foster.

O *Midas* why art thou not aliue now to lend thine eares to this drile, by the precious bones of a hunts-man; he knowes not the bleaying of a calfe from the song of a nightingale, but if yonder great Gentlewoman be as wise as she is faire, *Therion* thou shalt haue the prize, and thou old *Dorcus* with young maister *Espilus* shall remaine tame fooles, as you be.

Dorcus. And with cap and knee be it spoken, is it your pleasure neighbor *Rixus* to be a wild foole?

Rixus. Rather then a sleepish dolt.

Dorcus. It is much refreshing to my bowels, you haue made your choise, for my share I will bestow your leauings vpon one of your fellows.

Rixus. And art not thou ashamed old foole, to liken *Espilus* a shepherd to *Therion* of the noble vocation of hunts-men, in the presence of such a one as euen with her eye only can giue the cruell punishment?

Dorcus. Hold thy peace, I will neither meddle with her nor her eyes, they sayne in our towne they are daungerous both, neither will I liken *Therion* to my boy *Espilus*, since one is a theeuish proller, and the other is as quiet as a lambe that new came from sucking.

Rombus the schoole-maister.

Heu, Ehem, hei, *Inspidum, Inscitium vulgorum & populorum.* Why you brute Nebulons haue you had my *Corpusculum* so long among you, and cannot yet tell how to edifie an argument? Attend and throw your eares to me, for I am grauidated with child, till I haue endostrinated your plumbeous cerebrosities. First you must diuisionate your point, *quasi* you should cut a cheese into two particles, for thus must I vniforme my speech to your obtuse conceptions; for *Prius diuidendum oratio antequam definiendum exemplum gratia*, either *Therion* must conquer this Dame *Maia* Nimphe, or *Espilus* must ouerthrow her, and that *secundum* their dignity, which must also be subdiuisionated into three equall *species*, either according to the penetrancie of their singing, or the meliority of their functions, or lastly the superancy of their merits *De singing satis*. *Nunc* are you to argumentate of the qualifying of their estate first, and then whether hath more infernally, I meane deeply deserued.

Dorcus. O poore *Dorcus*, poore *Dorcus*, that I was not set in my young dayes to schoole, that I might haue purchased the vnderstanding of master *Rombus* misterious speeches. But yet thus much I concerne of them, that I must euen giue vp what my conscience doth find in the behalfe of shepheards. O sweete hony milken Lommes, and is there any so flintie a hart, that can find about him to speake against them, that haue the charge of such good soules as you be, among whom there is no enuy, and all obedience, where it is lawfull for a man to be good if he list, and hath no outward cause to withdraw him frō it, where the eye may be busied in considering the works of nature, and the hart quietly reioyced in the honest vsing them. If temptation as Clarks say, be the most excellent, which is so fit a life for Templers as this is, neither subiect to violent oppression, nor seruile flatterie, how many Courtiers thinke you I haue heard vnder our field in bushes make their wofull complaints, some of the greatnes of their Mistresse estate, which dazled their eyes and yet burned their harts; some

some of the extremitie of her beauty mixed with extreame cruelty, some of her too much wit, which made all their louing labours folly. O how often haue I heard one name sound in many mouthes, making our vales witnessers of their dolefull agonies! So that with long lost labour finding their thoughts bare no other wooll but dispaire, of yong Courtiers they grew old shepheards. Well sweete Lams I will end with you as I began, he that can open his mouth against such innocent soules, let him be hated as much as a filthy fox, let the tast of him be worse then mustie cheefe, the sound of him more dradfull then the howling of a wolfe, his sight more odible then a toade in ones porrage.

Rixus. Your life indeede hath some goodnesse.

Rombus the schoole-maister.

O face, face, or all the fat wil beignified, first let me dilucidate the very intrinsicall maribone of the matter. He doth vse a certaine rhetoricall inuasion into the point, as if indeed he had conference with his Lams, but the troth is he doth equitate you in the meane time maister *Rixus*, for thus he sayth, that sheepe are good, *ergo* the shepheard is good, An *Enthimeme à loco contingentibus*, as my finger and my thumbe are *Contingentes*: againe he sayth, who liueth well is likewise good, but shepheards liue well, *Ergo* they are good; a *Sillogisme* in *Darius* king of *Persia* a *Coniugatis*; as you would say, a man coupled to his wife, two bodies but one soule: but do you but acquiescate to my exhortation, and you shall extingnish him. Tell him his maior is a knaue, his minor is a foole, and his conclusion both, *Et ecce homo blancatus quasi liliū.*

Rixus. I was saying the shepheards life had some goodnesse in it, because it borrowed of the countrey quietnesse something like ours, but that is not all, for ours besides that quiet part, doth both strengthen the body, and raise vp the mind with this gallant sort of actiuitie. O sweet contentation to see the long life of the hurtlesse trees, to see how in streight growing vp, though neuer so high, they hinder not their fellowes, they only enuioussly trouble, which are crookedly bent. What life is to be compared to ours where the very growing things are ensamples of goodnesse? we haue no hopes, but we may quickly go about them, and going about them, we soone obtaine them; not like those that haue long followed one (in troth) most excellent chace, do now at length perceiue she could neuer be taken: but that if she stayed at any time neare the pursuers, it was neuer meant to tarry with them, but only to take breath to fly further from them. He therefore that doubts that our life doth not far excell all others, let him also doubt that the well deseruing and painefull *Therion* is not to be preferred before the idle *Esphilus*, which is euen as much to say, as that the Roes are not swifter then sheepe, nor the Stags more goodly then Gotes.

Rombus. Bene bene, nunc de questione prepositus, that is as much to say, as well well, now of the proposed question, that was, whether the many great seruices and many great faults of *Therion*, or the few small seruices and no faults of *Esphilus*, be to be preferred, incepted or accepted the former.

The May Lady.

Nono, your ordinarie braines shall not deale in that matter, I haue already submitted it to one, whose sweete spirit hath passed thorough greater difficulties, neither will I that your blockheads lie in her way.

Therefore o Lady worthy to see the accomplishment of your desires, since all your desires be most worthy of you, vouchsafe our cares such happinesse, & me that particular fauor, as that you will iudge whether of these two be more worthy of me, or whether I be worthy of them: and this I will say, that in iudging me, you iudge more then me in it.

This being said, it pleased her Maieſty to iudge that *Eſpilus* did the better diſerue her: but what words, what reaſons ſhe uſed for it, this paper, which carieth ſo baſe names, is not worthy to containe. Sufficeth it, that vpon the iudgement giuen, the ſhepheards and forreſters made a full conſort of their cornets and recorders, and then did *Eſpilus* ſing this ſong, tending to the greatneſſe of his owne ioy, and yet to the comfort of the other ſide, ſince they were ouerthrowne by a moſt worthy aduerſarie. The ſong contained two ſhort tales, and thus it was.

*Siluanus long in lone, and long in vaine,
At length obtaind the point of his deſire,
VVhen being aſkt, now that he did obtaine
His wiſhed weale, what more he could require:
Nothing ſayd he, for moſt I ioy in this,
That Goddeſſe mine, my bleſſed being ſees.*

*VVhen wanton Pan deceiv'd with Lions ſkin,
Came to the bed, where wound for kiſſe he got,
To wo and ſhame the wretch did enter in,
Till this he tooke for comfort of his lot,
Poore Pan (he ſayd) although thou beaten be,
It is no ſhame, ſince Hercules was he.*

*Thus ioyfully in choſen tunes reioyce,
That ſuch a one is witneſſe of my hart,
Whoſe cleereſt eyes I bliſſe, and ſweeteſt voyce,
That ſee my good, and iudgeth my deſert:
Thus woefully I in wo this ſalue do find,
My foule miſhap came yet from faireſt mind.*

The muſike fully ended, the May Lady tooke her leaue in this ſort.

Lady your ſelfe, for other titles do rather diminſh then adde vnto you. I and my litle companie muſt now leaue you, I ſhould do you wrong to beſeech you to take our follies well, ſince your bountie is ſuch, as to pardon greater faults. Therefore I will wiſh you good night, praying to God according to the title I poſſeſſe, that as hitherto it hath excellently done, ſo hence forward the flouriſhing of May, may long remaine in you and with you.

FINIS.

